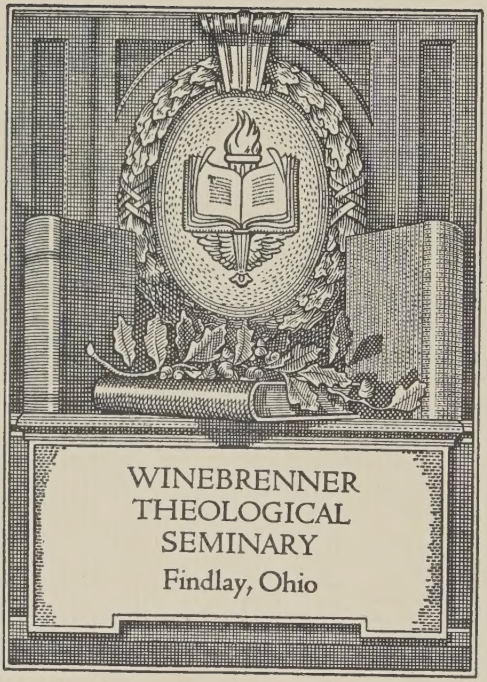
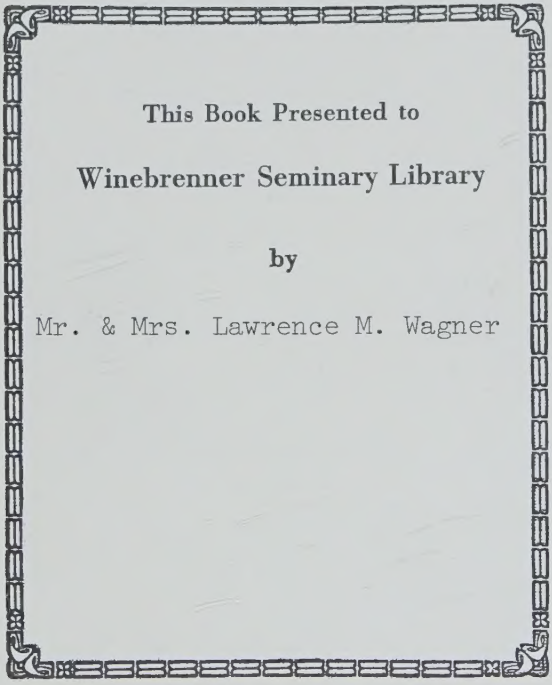
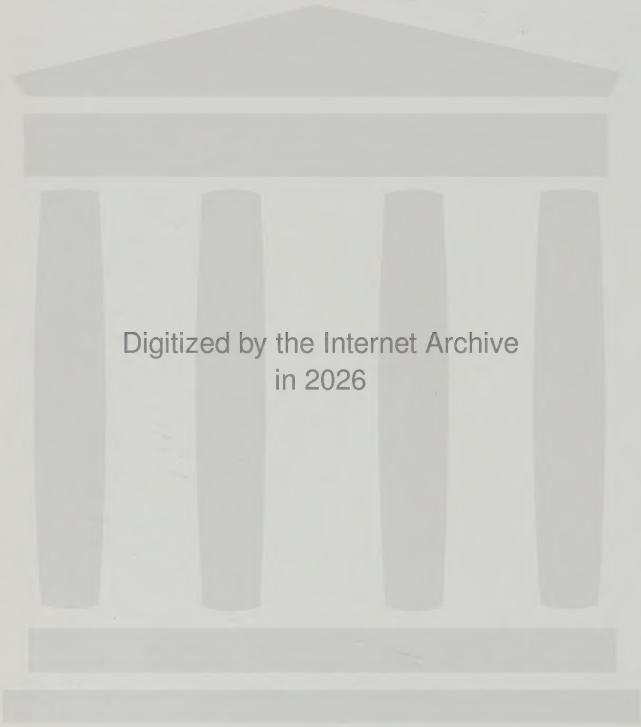

WINEBRENNER
THEOLOGICAL
SEMINARY
Findlay, Ohio

LIBRARY
WINEBRENNER THEOLOGICAL
SEMINARY




Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2026

https://archive.org/details/christiantheolog0000russ_l0q1

Christian Theology

Christian Theology

A Systematic Statement of Christian Doctrine for the Use of Theological Students

---

By
RUSSELL R. BYRUM

Revision Editor
Arlo F. Newell

LIBRARY
WINEBRENNER THEOLOGICAL
SEMINARY

WARNER PRESS
Anderson, Indiana

Fourth Printing—1972
Revised Edition—1982

Copyright, 1925
by
Gospel Trumpet Company

Printed in United States of America

EDITOR'S PREFACE

In every generation God's people must rethink their theology. By so doing we experience the fresh leading of the Holy Spirit as we are guided into the truth of God's Word, the Bible. At the same time we avoid the peril of dead traditions that no longer have significant spiritual meaning for the Church. Such rethinking of our theological roots is not without misunderstanding or opposition. It is natural to be concerned that we retain the truth of God's Word without compromise or disregard for its divine revelation in the past. Therefore, some will always desire to hold to the original, believing it to be more authentic. However, the beauty of the Bible is the fact that it is ever fresh and alive, constantly being more clearly revealed to meet the needs of each succeeding generation. The Light continues to shine in the darkness, giving direction for our lives as we endeavor to know the Truth.

We have attempted to retain the original intent of the author in the revision of this text rather than the personal interpretation of the editors. Dr. R. R. Byrum was held in high esteem by all the revision editors. It is because of this that we enlisted the aid of these recognized biblical preacher-teacher scholars from within the church to professionally carry out the revision. While retaining the original intent of the author, we have sought to remove outdated illustrative material and redundancies, and to amplify textual interpretation where new biblical knowledge has been revealed. Constantly in mind was the object of the author: to produce a textbook for Sunday school teachers, ministers, college students, and individual Christians. While revising this work through the aid of recognized academic scholars, we have maintained Dr. Byrum's desire that "the truths of Christianity were intended for the average person as well as the student and ought to be taught so all persons of ordinary intelligence can understand them." We cannot communicate what we do not personally understand or believe. R. R. Byrum believed what is contained herein and sought to share it with others. His clarity in communication and his commitment to truth as a scholar makes this text an indispensable aid to spiritual understanding. You will discover that the unique insights gained from the original Greek and Hebrew texts are presented by the revisers in understandable language.

It is our prayer that through this revised version you will discover personally the foundation of faith, once delivered unto

83- 0366

the saints. It is a faith growing out of an understanding of the divinely inspired Word of God that is contemporary for every culture in every period of history. As pastors and people let us become a part of a growing renaissance in the Church. Theology is alive and exciting! Let it become the basis for biblical expository preaching, personal Bible study, and a ministry of outreach through the Holy Spirit.

As a contribution to the church at large, Warner Press is pleased to present this revised edition of R. R. Byrum's *Christian Theology*.

Arlo F. Newell
Editor in Chief
Warner Press, Inc.
December 1982

AUTHOR'S PREFACE

The purpose of this work is to set forth in concise and systematic form the evidences, doctrines, and institutions of the Christian faith. Much of what is contained in the following pages has been given to students in the classroom as lectures from year to year and in the form of typewritten outlines which I have used in teaching.

In preparing this work the aim has been to treat the subject with such a degree of brevity as is consistent with clearness and strength of argument. I have had as my object in writing, the production of such a textbook as I should wish to place in the hands of students in the classroom beginning the study of systematic theology, and also I have sought to adapt the discussion to meet the needs of the many ministers who must gain most of their knowledge of the subject through individual private study. I have also endeavored so to present the subject that even Sunday school teachers and other laymen who seek to be informed in doctrine can, by a thoughtful reading of it, obtain a clearer view of Christian truth and a firmer conviction that it is truth. Certainly the truths of Christianity were intended for the average man as well as for the student and ought to be taught so all persons of ordinary intelligence can understand them. With this in view I have purposely avoided as much as possible an abstract style and technical terms, or when the latter are used I have often defined them. The omission of technical terms is also in harmony with the tendency of the more recent writers on theology, about one of whom it has been said that by him "theology has been freed from the bonds of a scholastic phraseology and taught to speak again an English pure and undefiled."

The subjects treated and the order of their treatment are such as are commonly found in a work of this kind. A theological writer can scarcely hope to say much that has not been stated in some of the many works of the past, but with the development of thought in each succeeding age a restatement of the truth is needed. New developments in science and religion require a change of emphasis in presenting the truths of Christianity. At the present time the tendencies to undue religious liberalism must be met by conservative Christian theology. As the deism of the eighteenth century and the Unitarian defection of the last century were successfully met

and overcome by strongly asserting and vigorously defending with sound argument the truths then attacked, so it will be in the present conflict. And yet while we strive in defense of the gospel, we do so with the happy confidence that truth will win, for men cannot long deny those great truths that are fundamental to the needs of their natures and to their present and eternal happiness.

I have endeavored here to present the truth positively. I believe what I have here written, and my convictions grow stronger continually with the study and reflection of the passing years. I prefer to glory in believing so much rather than in believing so little, because God's blessings are promised to those who believe rather than to those who doubt and criticize. I have aimed at clearness rather than a flowery style. Inasmuch as theology can be comprehended well only by a practical application of its truths to the heart and life, I have freely employed the homiletical method in these pages. The attempt to present theology abstractly is not only unscientific but uninteresting and even sometimes repulsive to the truly devout heart.

I desire to express appreciation for helpful suggestions for the improvement of this work from C. W. Naylor, E. A Reardon, and F. G. Smith, who have read it in manuscript form. I esteem their judgment highly because of their wide experience as practical preachers of the gospel and as writers on religious and theological themes.

With a fervent prayer to Him who is the source of all truth, and whose guidance I have constantly sought while writing the following pages, that by his blessing the perusal of them may be enlightening to their readers, this work is given to the public.

Anderson Bible School and Seminary,
Anderson, Indiana, December 6, 1924.

INTRODUCTORY NOTE

by F. G. Smith

The very fact that books on religious subjects still form the largest part of the literature of the Christian world proves beyond all question the supreme importance of the theme; that it does not belong to the dim, distant past, but possesses within itself the germs of immortality. It lives forever.

Systematic theology, because of the nature of the subject itself, calls for frequent restatement. The religion of the Bible embraces in its scope that which is of supreme importance to our race. Men everywhere are called upon to accept it. Its doctrines relate not only to our origin and final destiny, but they make great demands upon us now by impressing the law of accountability upon the conscience. It is the special province of theology to make these doctrines and obligations acceptable to the reason. But the intellectual demands vary in accordance with the progress and thought-movements of the times. Thus change in the thought-sentiment of any age may require a change in theological emphasis. In other words, the same subject must be stated in a different form or approached from a different angle.

If a work on systematic theology had been written in the early part of the fourth century, when the Arian controversy was at its height, its author would have given greater attention to the doctrine of the divine Trinity than has any writer in subsequent ages. In a theology written during the period of the Christological controversies the Person of Christ would have come in for a more elaborate treatment. About a hundred years ago necessitarianism and free will were great topics of theological discussion. Every theologian of the time enlarged upon that subject, from a conviction either that it was necessary for him to argue at length for necessitarianism, or else that since he was free he should use his freedom by opposing it.

It is perhaps natural that every generation should consider itself vastly superior to all preceding ones. We now smile when we read concerning some of the theological controversies of the past. But the problems of that day were very real to the people of that day. We should also remember that the law of human progress and development is still at work, and some day others who are faced with a different situation from ours will form their own estimate of

our efforts to meet the problems of our day. So it becomes us to be modest. But these problems are real to us and we must meet them.

During the last half-century the work of specialists in geology, paleontology, biology, and other departments of scientific research has given rise to a new philosophy of life. This philosophy is gradually forcing its way from the institutions of higher learning down to our primary schools. It is already having its effect within the department of the church of today, and it calls for a fresh examination of the whole problem of theism and theology proper—the doctrine of God, creation, sin, divine revelation, and the relation of God to the world. This alone is sufficient reason for the appearance of another work on theology, a work adapted to the particular needs and demands of our time.

There is also another reason why we need a new treatment of the problems of theology. With all due respect to the efforts of past theologians, it must be admitted that most of them have labored either to create unique systems of theological thought or else to defend the particular schools with which they happened to be identified. Because of this particular bias it is practically impossible to point out a work on systematic theology that we can recommend unqualifiedly. We are now learning that no school of theology has a monopoly on the truth, but that elements of truth are to be found in all of them. We also see that the effort to emphasize particular doctrines to the exclusion of others, while effective to a certain extent in defending what may be believed to be true, is, nevertheless, not a very successful method of finding the whole truth. It is therefore evident that the only correct method in theology must to quite a degree be eclectic in character. It must bring together and unite in a systematic whole all the scattered principles of truth.

Another reason for the present work is worthy of particular mention. While as already intimated the older standard works on systematic theology are, on account of their particular bias, now unacceptable for general use, most of the more recent theologians show higher critical bearings and a tendency to capitulate to the demands of modern religious liberalism. We cannot but regard this as a danger signal. We believe that the great mass of Christian worshipers still believe in the substantial character of historic Christianity and are firmly convinced that it has for its foundation

eternal truth and verity. It is therefore fitting that a work on Christian doctrine, adjusted to the needs of our time, should now appear; a work soundly orthodox, committed to fundamental truth: God the supreme ruler of the universe; divine creation, the fall, redemption, divine revelation, miracles and prophecy, inspiration of the Scriptures; a super-human Christ, miraculously begotten, crucified as an appointed offering for sin, resurrected from the dead by omnipotent power, and exalted to the throne of majesty in the heavens, from whence in due time he shall come to earth again, visibly and personally, to "judge the quick and the dead."

It may be appropriate to say a word also concerning what may not properly be expected in any new work on systematic theology. In the first place, a great degree of originality as to subject matter should not be looked for. Theology has for ages engaged the careful attention of thousands of thoughtful minds. It would seem that truth has been approached for almost every conceivable angle and that the church has met almost every possible kind of heresy. The present-day author is therefore restricted, in that he does not have a fresh and original field of inquiry. At every turn he meets this sentiment, as succinctly expressed by another writer, "Whatever is true in theology cannot be new: and whatever is new cannot be true." He is therefore practically confined to a restatement of what has already been stated a hundred times or more. But as already intimated, there arises frequently the actual necessity of theological restatement. Causes operating both within the church and outside of it shift the points of chief interest and inquiry, and these call for new presentations of theological truth adapted to the particular needs of each succeeding generation. In meeting this demand, however, there may be the newness of additional emphasis and freshness in the individual style of presentation.

In view of the present-day conditions already referred to, the author has in this work given particular prominence to theism, apologetics, theology proper, and anthropology. It is not the ordinary doctrines of the Bible that are now made the subject of direct attack; it is rather the very foundations upon which the Christian structure rests. Another contributing factor may also be noticed. This work was designed primarily for a textbook in the Anderson Bible School and Seminary. The author, having in mind the general drift today toward modern religious liberalism—which subject is not adequately treated in other available books on

Christian doctrine—has felt the necessity of a more particular emphasis on the foundation principles of the faith. In my opinion this is a fortunate choice, for he has thereby made a more valuable contribution to our department of theological literature.

The author is teacher of systematic theology in the Anderson Bible School and Seminary, Anderson, Indiana. The present book is the natural outgrowth of his work in that institution. And while *Christian Theology* was designed primarily as a textbook for use in his theological classes, it need not and should not be restricted to them. My purpose in writing these lines is to introduce and commend it to a wider constituency. It is the product of patient, conscientious effort and is worthy of the careful consideration of students and of all truth-loving people everywhere.

TABLE OF CONTENTS

INTRODUCTION

I. Ideas and Contents of Theology **1**
1. Definition 1
2. Religion and Theology 1
3. Main Divisions of Theological Sciences 1
4. Other Designating Terms Used with Theology 2
5. Uses of the Term "Theology" as to Extent 3

II. Importance and Value of Theology **3**
1. Needed for Clear Conceptions 3
2. Needed for Strong Convictions 4
3. Needed for Intellectual Satisfaction 4

III. Sources of Theology **6**
1. Nature a Source of Theology 6
2. Revelation the Source of Theology 7
3. Erroneous Sources of Theology 8

IV. Method of Theology **10**
1. Need of System 10
2. Various Methods of Systemization 11
3. Method of This Work 11
4. Terminology 12

V. Qualifications for the Study of Theology **12**
1. Spiritual Qualificatons 12
2. Qualities of Mind 13
3. Educational Qualifications 14

Part I
EXISTENCE OF GOD, OR THEISM

Chapter I
ORIGIN OF OUR IDEA OF GOD

I. The Knowledge of God as an Intuition **17**
1. Intuition in General 17
2. Proofs that the idea of God Is an Intuition 18

II. Other Supposed Sources of the Idea **21**
1. From Animistic Superstition 21
2. Exclusively from Revelation 22
3. From a Process of Reasoning 22

III. What Does This Intuition Contain? **23**

Chapter II
EVIDENCES OF GOD'S EXISTENCE

I. The First-Cause, or Cosmological Argument **24**
1. The Law of Causation 25
2. The Universe Is an Effect 27
3. What the Argument Proves 28

II. The Design, or Teleological, Argument **28**
1. Nature of the Argument 28
2. Evidences of Design in Nature 30
3. Objections to the Design Argument 34

III. The Human-nature, or Anthropological, Argument **36**
1. The Argument Described 36
2. Argument from Man's Intelligence 36
3. Argument from Man's Freedom 37
4. Argument from Man's Moral Nature 37
5. Argument from Man's Religious Nature 38
6. Objections to the Human-Nature Argument 38

IV. The Ontological Argument **39**
1. Statement of the Argument 39
2. Theistic Value of the Argument 40

Chapter III
ANTITHEISTIC THEORIES

I. Atheism **41**
1. Meaning of Atheism 41
2. Unreasonableness of Atheism 42
3. Possibility of Atheism 42

II. Polytheism **42**
1. Meaning and Origin of Polytheism 42
2. Different Aspects of Polytheism 42

III. Pantheism **43**
1. Definition of Pantheism 43
2. Monistic Aspects of Pantheism 43
3. Defects of Pantheism 44

IV. Materialism **44**
1. Antitheistic Character of Materialism 44
2. Fruitless Attempt to Account for Thought 44
3. Reasoning from Analogy Defective 45

V. Naturalistic Evolution 46
1. Evolution Hypothesis 46
2. Naturalistic and Theistic Evolution 48
3. Difficulties of Naturalistic Evolution 49

Part II
EVIDENCES OF DIVINE REVELATION, OR APOLOGETICS

Chapter I
PRELIMINARY QUESTIONS AND PRESUMPTIVE EVIDENCES

I. The Proposition to be Proved 57
1. The Question Stated 57
2. The Importance of Knowing the Evidences 58
3. Present-day Task of Apologetics 60
II. Nature and Classification of Evidences 62
1. Probable, not Demonstrative Evidences 62
2. Rational and Authenticating Evidences 62
3. Main Classes of Positive Evidences 63
III. Probability of a Divine Revelation 63
1. Possibility of Revelation 63
2. Necessary as a Standard of Right 64
3. Necessary for Pardon of Sin 64
4. Necessary to the Understanding of Providence and Prayer 65
IV. Expected Divine Revelation Characterizes the Scriptures 66
1. Probable Contents of Divine Revelation 66
2. Probable Manner of Divine Revelation 66
3. Probable Attestation of Divine Revelation 67

Chapter II
EXTERNAL EVIDENCES

I. Genuineness of the New Testament 68
1. Method of Showing Genuineness 69
2. Genuineness Affirmed by Early Church Fathers 69
3. Genuineness Insured by Careful Canonization 71
4. Early Adversaries Never Denied Genuineness 72
II. Integrity of the New Testament 73
1. Evidence from Ancient Manuscripts 73

2. Corroboration of Ancient Versions and Quotations 74
3. No Material Change was Possible 75

III. Credibility of the New Testament History 76
1. Credibility of Gospel History Is Accepted by Those Familiar with the Events 76
2. The Writers Possessed the Requisites for Credibility 77

IV. Miracles 78
1. Possibility and Probability of Miracles 79
2. Possibility of Proving Miracles by Testimony 80
3. Proofs that Miracles Occurred 81
4. Proof of the Resurrection of Christ 86
5. Evidential Value of Miracles 88

V. Prophecy 90
1. Nature of the Argument from Fulfilled Prophecy . . . 90
2. Objections to the Argument from Prophecy 92
3. Predictions Concerning the Jews 94
4. Predictions Concerning Christ 97

Chapter III
INTERNAL EVIDENCES

I. Perfect Doctrines 101
1. God's Being and Attributes 101
2. Man's Moral Responsibility and Freedom 102
3. Man's Depravity and Guilt 102
4. Man's Spirituality and Immortality 103

II. Perfect Adaptation to Man's Needs 103
1. Salvation from Sin and Depravity 104
2. Enlightenment and Comfort 104
3. Resurrection of the Body 105

III. Perfect Morals 105
1. A Perfect Standard of Right 105
2. A Perfect Measurement of Conduct 106
3. Perfect Practicality 106

IV. Style and Incidental Allusions 107
1. Unity of the Scriptures 107
2. Languages and Literary Style 108
3. Historical Events 109
4. Incidental Allusions 110

Chapter IV
EXPERIMENTAL AND COLLATERAL EVIDENCES

I. Evidences from Christian Experience 112
1. Nature of Experimental Evidences 112
2. Effects of Christian Experience in Consciousness 113
3. Effects of Christian Experience in Character 114
4. Effects of Christianity at the Hour of Death 116

II. Effects of Christianity on Society 117
1. Promotion of Universal Brotherhood by the Gospel 118
2. Marriage and Family Relations Sanctified by the Gospel 119

III. Rapid Spread of Early Christianity 120
1. Hindrances to the Spread of Christianity 120
2. Natural Inadequacy of the Means Employed 121
3. Rapidity of the Spread of Christianity Unparalleled 121

Chapter V
INSPIRATION OF THE SCRIPTURES

I. Validity and Nature of Inspiration of Scripture 124
1. Proof of Inspiration 124
2. Theories of Inspiration 124
3. True Nature of Inspiration 126

II. Objections to Inspiration Based on Alleged Errors 128
1. Historical Errors 129
2. Scientific Errors 129
3. Moral Errors 132
4. Contradictions 133

Part III
NATURE AND WORKS OF GOD, OR THEOLOGY PROPER

Chapter I
THE ATTRIBUTES OF GOD

I. Possibility of Knowledge of God 137
1. God Can Be Known 137
2. Extent of Men's Knowledge of God 138
3. How God May Be Known 138

II. Nature and Classification of God's Attributes 139

1. Relation of God's Attributes to His Essence 140
2. Classification of Attributes 140
III. Metaphysical or Non-Ethical Attributes 141
1. Unity of God 141
2. Spirituality of God 142
3. Immutability of God 143
4. Eternity of God 144
5. Omnipotence of God 145
6. Omnipresence of God 146
7. Omniscience of God 147
IV. Moral Attributes 150
1. Holiness 151
2. Justice 153
3. Love 155
4. Mercy 158
5. Truth 160

Chapter II
THE DIVINE TRINITY

I. The Doctrine of the Trinity 162
1. Biblical Elements of the Doctrine 162
2. The Doctrine in Early Church Symbols 163
3. The Doctrine Stated 166
4. Mystery of the Trinity 167
II. Bible Proofs of the Doctrine 168
1. The Baptismal Formula 168
2. Paul's Benediction 169
3. Other General Trinitarian Texts 169
III. The Divinity of Christ 170
1. Divine Titles of Christ 171
2. Divine Attributes of Christ 174
3. Divine Works of Christ 177
4. The Worship of Christ 178
IV. The Personality and Divinity of the Holy Spirit 179
1. Personality of the Spirit 179
2. Divinity of the Holy Spirit 181
3. Procession of the Spirit 182

Chapter III
THE WORKS OF GOD

I. God's Work in Creation 185

1. Matter Created out of Nothing 186
2. Creative Work Not Necessary to God 188
3. The Genesis Record 189
4. Creation Days and Geologic Periods 189
5. Agreement of Moses and Science 194

II. Creation and Evolution 196
1. Evolution Not God's Method of Creation 196
2. Evolution and the Scriptures Irreconcilable 198
3. Facts Reconcilable with Progressive Creation 200
4. Objections to the Evolution Theory 203

III. God's Work in Providence 205
1. Natural Providence 206
2. Supernatural Providence 209

IV. Angels 213
1. Existence and Nature of Angels 213
2. Good Angels 215
3. Evil Angels 217
4. Demon Possession 219

Part IV
THE DOCTRINE OF MAN, OR ANTHROPOLOGY

Chapter 1
ORIGIN AND NATURE OF MAN

I. Unity of the Race 224
1. Antiquity of the Race 224
2. Problem of Race Distinctions and Unity 227
3. Physiological Argument 228
4. Psychological Argument 229
5. Philological Argument 229
6. Biblical Argument 230

II. Constituent Factors in Man's Nature 230
1. Dual Constitution of Man 231
2. The Theory of Trichotomy 233
3. How Man Is Superior to the Brute 235

III. The Origin of Souls 236
1. Theory of Preexistence 236
2. Theory of Creationism 237
3. Theory of Traducianism 238

IV. The Question of Immortality 239

1. Man's Body Created Mortal 239
1. The Soul Is Immortal 240

Chapter II
ORIGINAL MORAL NATURE AND STATE OF MAN

I. Primitive Man of a Lofty Grade 241
1. Constituted Relatively Perfect 241
2. Not a Barbarian 242
3. In the Divine Image 244
II. Conscience 244
1. The Discriminating Function 245
2. Impulsive 246
3. Retributive Aspect 247
III. Free Agency 248
1. The Question of Freedom Vital to Theology 248
2. Leading Theories of the Will 249
3. Proofs of Free Will 250
4. Objections to Free Will Answered 251
5. Real Freedom 253
IV. Original Righteousness 254
1. Nature of Original Righteousness 254
2. Proofs of Original Righteousness 256

Chapter III
FALL AND DEPRAVITY OF THE RACE

I. Original Probation 257
1. Probation Requisite for Moral Excellence 257
2. Positive Probationary Law Given 258
3. No Injustice in Adam's Probation 258
II. Origin and Nature of Sin 258
1. Nature of the First Temptation 258
2. Man's Fall and Its Effects 260
3. Nature of Sin 261
4. Sin Not a Divine Method 262
III. Nature of Original Sin 263
1. Sense of the Term 263
2. A Derangement of the Moral Nature 264
3. A Loss of the Holy Spirit 266
4. A Bent to Sin a Result of Depravity 266
IV. Extent of Native Depravity 266
1. The Question of Total Depravity 266

2. Degrees of Depravity 267
V. Proofs of Native Depravity 267
1. Expressly Taught in the Bible 267
2. Clearly Implied in the Scriptures 268
3. Ground for the Need of Regeneration 269
4. Universality of Sinning 270
5. Sinning in Spite of Restraints 270
6. A Natural Tendency to Sin 270

Chapter IV
MODE OF TRANSMISSION OF ORIGINAL SIN

I. Theories of Original Sin 272
1. Pelagian Theory 272
2. Augustinian Theory 272
3. Arminian Theory 273
II. Unscriptural Theories of the Transmission of Original Sin 273
1. Realistic Theory 274
2. Representative Theory 275
III. Law of Genetic Transmission 277
1. The Genetic Law 277
2. Men Are After Their Kind Morally 277

Part V
SALVATION THROUGH CHRIST OR SOTERIOLOGY

Chapter I
THE PERSON OF CHRIST

I. The Doctrine and Its Statement 283
1. A Vital Doctrine 283
2. Elements of the Doctrine 284
3. Creedal Statements 284
II. Two Natures in Christ 286
1. Complete Human Nature in Christ 286
2. Complete Divine Nature in Christ 286
3. Incarnation of God in Christ 287
4. Mode of the Incarnation 289
III. Union of Two Natures in One Person 290
1. Personal Oneness of Christ 290
2. Christ Is God-Man 291

3. Effect of Personal Union of Two Natures 292
IV. Criticism of Christological Errors 293
1. The Ebionites 293
2. The Gnostics 293
3. The Arians 294
4. The Apollinarians 294
5. The Nestorians 294
6. The Eutychians 295
7. The Lutheran Theory 295
8. The Socinian Theory 296
9. The Kenotic Theory 296

Chapter II
RECONCILIATION THROUGH CHRIST

I. Preliminary Questions 298
1. Offices of Christ 298
2. Sense of Reconciliation 298
3. The Fact of Atonement and the Doctrine 299
II. Theories of Salvation without a Reconciliation 300
1. Impossibility of Pardon 300
2. Forgiveness by Divine Prerogative 301
3. Pardon or Repentance 301
III. Biblical Statements Concerning the Atonement 302
1. Christ Died for the Salvation of Men 303
2. Christ Died in Our Stead 305
3. Christ Died to Propitiate God 306
4. Christ Died to Redeem Men 308
5. Christ Died to Declare God's Righteousness 310
IV. Reconciliation in the Old Testament Sacrifices 312
1. Animal Sacrifices Typify Christ 312
2. Old Testament Sacrifices Were Expiatory 313
V. Elements in the Biblical Doctrine of Reconciliation 315
1. Subjective Elements 315
2. Objective Elements 316

Chapter III
APPLICATION OF REDEMPTION

I. Unconditional Benefits of the Atonement 318
1. Individual Existence 318
2. Possibility of Universal Salvation 319

3. Salvation for Those Dying in Infancy 319
4. Power Requisite for Probation 320
II. Conditional Benefits of the Atonement 322
1. Salvation from Sin Conditional 322
2. Special Providence through Prayer 324
3. Future Blessedness 325
III. Universality of the Opportunity for Salvation 325
1. Christ Died for All Men 326
2. Salvation Is for All Men 327
3. The Gospel Is to Be Preached to All 328
4. God Wills the Salvation of All 328
IV. Predestination 330
1. The Calvinistic Theory 330
2. Election 332
3. Absolute Final Perseverance 336
V. Human Conditions for Salvation 337
1. Faith in Christ 338
2. Repentance 339
3. Obedience 340

Chapter IV
NATURE OF SALVATION

I. Justification 342
1. Sense of the Term 342
2. Forgiveness and Remission Included 343
3. The Basis for Justification 344
II. Regeneration 346
1. The Doctrine of Regeneration 346
2. The Ground of the Need of Regeneration 348
3. Nature and Effects of Regeneration 350
4. Possibility of Present Regeneration 351
III. Sonship 353
1. Children of God 353
2. Sonship by Adoption 353
3. Sonship by Birth 354
IV. Consciousness of Assurance of Salvation 354
1. Fact of Assurance 354
2. Nature of Assurance 355
3. Witness of God's Spirit 356
4. Witness of Our Spirit 358

5. Assurance in Relation to Doubt 359
V. Holiness of Life 360
1. The Sense of the Scriptures 360
2. Definitive Sense of Sin 363
3. Causes Leading to a Denial of Holy Living 364
4. Objections Considered 366

Chapter V
ENTIRE SANCTIFICATION

I. Sense of Sanctification 369
1. Other Designating Terms 369
2. No Specific Scriptural Sense 369
3. Its Sense as Here Used 370
II. Need of a Second Cleansing 370
1. Depravity a Ground for Twofold Cleansing 370
2. Depravity in the Regenerated 371
3. Distinction Between Regeneration and Sanctification 374
III. Proofs of a Second Cleansing 375
1. Sanctification for the Converted 375
2. Sanctification for the Church 377
3. An Entire Sanctification 377
4. Coincident with the Holy Spirit Baptistm 377
5. Two Cleansings in Old Testament Type 378
IV. Nature of Entire Sanctification 380
1. A Real Experience 380
2. Effects of Sanctification 381
3. A Definite Work 382
V. Attainment of Sanctification 383
1. Attainable in this Life 383
2. Conditions for Sanctification 384
3. Assurance of Sanctification 384

Chapter VI
BAPTISM WITH THE HOLY SPIRIT

I. Nature of the Baptism with the Holy Spirit 386
1. Expressions Representative of It 386
2. A Definite Experience 387
3. Distinct from Regeneration 387
4. Results of the Baptism with the Spirit 389

II. Gifts of the Spirit 391
1. Nature of Charismata 391
2. Not Given Alike to All 392
3. When Spiritual Gifts May be Received 393
III. The Gift of Tongues 394
1. Nature of New Testament Glossolalia 394
2. Purpose of Speaking in Tongues 396
3. Post-Apostolic Speaking in Tongues 398
4. Not the Evidence of the Holy Spirit Baptism 399
5. Proper Attitude Toward Speaking in Tongues 402

Chapter VII
DIVINE PHYSICAL HEALING

I. The Fact of Divine Healing 405
1. Scriptural Examples of Healing 405
2. Post-Apostolic Healing 406
3. A Present Reality 407
II. The Reasonableness of Divine Healing 408
1. An Aspect of Christ's Redemptive Work 408
2. Scripture Promises of Healing 409
3. The Divine Compassion 410
III. Nature of Divine Physical Healing 411
1. Definition of Divine Healing 411
2. God's Purpose in Healing 411
3. God's Method of Healing 413
IV. Conditions for Healing 414
1. Faith and Prayer 414
2. Anointing with Oil and Laying on of Hands 415
3. Attitude Toward Human Remedies 417
V. Objections to Divine Healing 418
1. That It Is Similar to Spiritualistic Healing 418
2. That There Are Failures in Divine Healing 419
3. That God Created Herbs for Medicine 420

Part VI
THE CHURCH, OR ECCLESIOLOGY

Chapter I
ORGANIZATION OF THE CHURCH

I. Idea of the Church 423
1. Sense of the Term 423

2. The Universal Church 424
3. The Local Church 425
4. Relation of the Church and God's Kingdom 425
II. The Fact of Its Organization 426
1. Theories of the Time of It Organization 426
2. The Fact Stated and Implied in the Bible 427
3. Figurative Representations of the Church 428
III. Nature of Its Organization 429
1. Different Forms of Church Organization 429
2. The Church Divinely Organized 430
3. The Human Agency in Church Organization 431
IV. Organization of Operative Agencies 433
1. Operative Agencies Needed in the Church 433
2. Relation of these Agencies to the Church 435

Chapter II
GOVERNMENT OF THE CHURCH

I. Officers of the Church 437
1. Classes of Officers 437
2. Pastors, or Bishops 439
3. Deacons 442
II. Nature of the Government of the Church 444
1. A Divine and a Human Aspect 444
2. Nature of Ministerial Authority 446
3. Number and Choice of Local Church Officers 447

Chapter III
APOSTASY AND RESTORATION OF THE CHURCH

I. The Apostasy of the Church 451
1. Two Aspects of Apostasy Predicted 451
2. A Rejection of the Teaching of the Word of God 455
3. A Rejection of the Rule of the Spirit of God 456
II. Sixteenth Century Reformation Partial 459
1. A Partial Return to the Bible 459
2. Human Ecclesiasticism Continued 459
3. Protestant Divisions 460
III. A Complete Restoration 463
1. Present Tendency to Unity 463
2. A Complete Reformation Predicted 465
3. A Return to the Scriptures 467
4. Rejection of Human Ecclesiasticism 468

Chapter IV
ORDINANCES OF THE CHURCH

I. Baptism 472
1. The Form of Baptism 472
2. Subjects of Baptism 484
3. Purpose of Baptism 488
4. The Essentials of Baptism 489

II. The Lord's Supper 490
1. A Christian Ordinance 490
2. Method of Observance 491
3. Purpose of the Supper 493
4. Erroneous Views 494

III. Foot Washing 497
1. The Injunction of Jesus 498
2. Objections to Foot Washing Considered 500
3. Significance of Foot Washing 504

Part VII
LAST THINGS, OR ESCHATOLOGY

Chapter I
THE LIFE AFTER DEATH

I. Immortality of the Soul 507
1. Rational Evidences 507
2. The Teaching of Scripture 510
3. Theory of Conditional Immortality 513

II. The Intermediate State 514
1. Question of an Intermediate Place 515
2. Not a State of Purgatory 515
3. Not a State of Probation 516

Chapter II
MILLENARIANISM

I. Two Theories Distinguished 519
1. Postmillenarianism 519
2. Premillenarianism 519

II. History of Millenarianism 521
1. The Idea Among the Jews 521
2. Millenarianism in the Early Church 521
3. Modern Premillenarianism 522

III. The Kingdom of Christ 523

1. Nature of Christ's Kingdom 523
2. Predictions of the Time of It Establishment 523
3. Christ's Kingdom Established at His First Advent . . . 526

IV. Hermeneutic Principles 527
1. Literal or Figurative Interpretation 527
2. Historical Interpretation 529

V. Revelation 20:1-6 530
1. Millenarianism Not Taught 530
2. Exegesis of Revelation 20:1-6 532

VI. Objections to Premillenarianism 533
1. No Double Resurrection 533
2. No Restoration of Judaism 535
3. No Three Comings of Christ 536
4. No Great Tribulation 537
5. No Personal Antichrist 537
6. No Need, Time, nor Place for Millennium 538

VII. Premillenarian Questions 539
1. The Earth Full of the Knowledge of the Lord 539
2. Universal Peace, Blessings, and Prosperity 540

Chapter III
CHRIST'S SECOND ADVENT AND ITS CONCOMITANTS

I. The Second Coming of Christ 542
1. The Fact of His Coming 542
2. The Nature of His Coming 542
3. The Time of His Coming 544
4. The Signs of His Coming 545

II. The General Resurrection 546
1. The Fact of a General Resurrection 546
2. The Nature of the Resurrected Bodies 548
3. The Question of Identity 549

III. The Final Judgment 550
1. Truth of a Future Judgment 550
2. Nature of the Final Judgment 552
3. Object of the Final Judgment 553
4. Standards of the Final Judgment 554

IV. End of the World 555
1. Truth of the Destruction of the Earth 555
2. Extent of the Destruction of the Earth 556

Chapter IV
THE FINAL DISPENSATION

I. Future Punishment 558
1. Proofs of Future Punishment 558
2. Nature of Future Punishment 560
3. Place of Future Punishment 563
4. Duration of Future Punishment 564
II. Future Blessedness 567
1. The Truth of Future Blessedness 567
2. The Place of Future Blessedness 567
3. The Nature of Future Blessedness 568

INTRODUCTION

I. Idea and Contents of Theology

1. **Definition** Theology is the science about God and of the relations existing between him and his creation. Such a definition is in harmony with the sense of the two Greek terms *theos* and *logos,* from which it is formed, and whose primary meaning is a discourse about God. It is the science of religion.

2. **Religion and Theology** -Religion is man's experience with the supernatural, with his Creator, and it is so grounded in the constitution of man that he is always and everywhere religious. Theology is the intellectual aspect of religion. Religion is spiritual experience, and theology is the rationale and explanation of it. Religion and theology are related somewhat as are the heavenly bodies and astronomy, the earth and geology, and the human body and physiology. As the stars and the earth existed before man had any knowledge concerning them, so men are religious before they formulate theology, and believe instinctively before they reason. Not alone Christianity, but every religion has its theology. Whatever reason the most degraded fetish-worshiper has for his religious actions, that is his theology, crude though it may be. And from that degraded form of religion all the way up through all the great ethnic religions and including Christianity itself, theology, or the intellectual aspect of religion, is a necessity of the mind.

3. **Main Divisions of Theological Sciences**—Theology in this broad sense is logically and commonly divided into four main divisions: (1) Exegetical, (2) Historical, (3) Systematic, and (4) Practical.

(1) Exegetical theology has to do with the interpretation of the Scriptures and includes the study of (a) biblical introduction both general and special; (b) exegesis proper, or the interpretation of the sacred text itself; (c) special departments such as prophetical interpretation, typology, and biblical theology. In relation to Christian theology as a whole, the function of exegetical theology is to provide the material from which the various doctrines are to be constructed.

(2) Historical theology treats of the development and history of true religion in all past ages and includes (a) the history of the Bible, or the record of God's dealings with men in revealing the

way of salvation as set forth in the Scriptures; (b) the history of the church, or the record of events relative to Christianity; (c) the history of Christian doctrine, which is in the truest sense historical theology. This branch of theology also provides material that has a bearing upon a proper presentation of Christian doctrine.

(3) Systematic theology, which is next in logical order, is Christian doctrine arranged in a system. It is not only a systematic arrangement of the various doctrines of Christianity, but also a systematic presentation of the various elements of a doctrine showing the process of induction by which it is determined. It not only decides that logically the doctrine of God must precede the doctrine of sin, but it shows the reasons in logical order why we believe there is a God and sin, and the nature of each. The subdivisions of this main division of theology will be given later.

(4) Practical theology has for its foundation systematic theology, as the latter has its basis in exegetical theology. It has to do with the application of theology to the individual life and the propagation of it in the world. It is both a science and an art. It includes (a) homiletics, or the preparation and delivery of sermons; (b) Christian ethics, or Christian duties; (c) pastoral theology, which includes all other methods and means relative to the propagation of the gospel not included in homiletics.

4. **Other Designating Terms Used with Theology**—Theology in its generic sense is also used with various other differentiating terms. Natural theology is used to designate that body of truths which may be learned from nature concerning God's existence and attributes, and concerning man's moral obligations to God. This knowledge includes not only what men actually learn direct and alone from nature without the aid of revelation, but also what may be so learned even though the facts are suggested by revelation. Many of the deeper truths of Christianity, however, cannot be known from nature. Natural theology, then, is a classification in respect to its source, and is commonly so called to distinguish it from revealed theology, or that class of truths known to us only by the Scriptures. Revealed theology is also designated according to its source. Dogmatic theology is to be distinguished from systematic and biblical in that it usually is devoted to the setting forth of the doctrines of a particular school of thought or sect. It deals with human creeds as its material rather than the Bible, or at least is not limited to the Scriptures. Biblical theology is the study of

those truths of theology furnished us by the Scriptures in the order and according to the method by which they are there given. It recognizes the progressive revelation in the Bible. As an example, if the biblical doctrine of sin is to be studied it traces it through the various books of the Old Testament, through the sayings of Jesus in the Synoptic Gospels, finds what John said about it in his Gospel and Epistles, and also traces it in the Epistles of Paul. It may thus trace a doctrine through the whole Bible or only in a particular portion of it. All true theology is biblical, but in this technical sense of the term a particular aspect of biblical study is described.

5. **Uses of the Term *Theology* as to Extent**—The term *theology* is used in three different senses as to extent: (1) It is used in the broad generic sense to include all the various aspects of theology and larger divisions of theological science. (2) It is used in the restricted sense of the original ground-term to designate the study especially about the nature and works of God. This is often called "theology proper" and is but one of the subdivisions of systematic theology. (3) It is used most commonly to designate systematic theology. This is in harmony with our first definition and is doubtless the most proper use of the term, because the true science about God must describe not only God's nature and works but also all the relations existing between him and his works. Then Christian theology in its proper sense is synonymous with systematic Christian doctrine.

II. Importance and Value of Theology

To speak flippantly or contemptuously of theology is to do so of "doctrine," concerning which the Apostle Paul admonishes Timothy to "take heed." This erroneous attitude is doubtless the result of abuses and error in attempts at theology and especially a reflection of that disposition of modern liberalism and free-thinking which would reject every divinely given standard of truth and exalt human reason instead. The devout and wise Christian will beware of such an attitude and also remember that there are not only false theologies or doctrines, but also true Christian theology or doctrines from God.

1. **Needed for Clear Conceptions**—Christian ministers or teachers especially need a knowledge of theology. It is their message. They should know what is truth in order that on the one hand they may not omit the teaching of important doctrines necessary

to the well-being of their hearers, and on the other that they may not add to the truth that which is erroneous. They need such knowledge that their message may be balanced and consistent with itself. They must not emphasize one aspect of truth or of Christian experience to the excluding or obscuring of other equally important truths. The successful preacher must get past that mere fragmentary knowledge of truth and attain to a comprehensive grasp of it. The quality of the preacher's theology determines largely what will be the character of his or her congregation as a whole and the individual Christian experience of each member. The doctrine preached to and accepted by people is the mold in which they are made religiously. It is the faithful preaching of sound doctrine that has affected all the great reformations of the church. It is also that which will enable the church to maintain a high standard of religious life when it is once attained.

2. **Needed for Strong Convictions**—And not only the teacher of religion needs a knowledge of theology, but every one will have firmer convictions of truth and be more stable in Christian experience if he or she knows the Christian doctrines as interdependent and mutually supporting each other. A bringing together of the teaching of Scripture and a careful study in the light of Scripture of any of the great fundamental doctrines of Christianity cannot fail to strengthen faith and enrich one in Christian experience. Such study will clear away confusion and inspire to more earnest piety and service. It is true that in the early stages of such study doubts may arise as the mind is confronted with problems that were before not supposed to exist; but such doubts are not dangerous as they at first seem, but are necessary to healthful progress. A blind piety that dare not think is certainly not of the enduring nature that can give permanence to Christian character. Neither will theological study deaden the affections, as has been wrongly supposed, if it is properly pursued. If the truth learned about God and his will concerning man is not merely held abstractly but applied to the heart and life, it cannot fail to make one a better Christian. It has been well said that "the strongest Christians are those who have the firmest grasp upon the great doctrines of Christianity," and "the piety that can be injured by the systematic exhibition of them must be weak, or mystical, or mistaken."

3. **Needed for Intellectual Satisfaction**—Man has not only an

emotional nature, but also an intellectual nature. God is the author of both, and designs that man serve him with both the heart and the mind. In fact, one's emotions are largely controlled by one's thinking.

But the question may be asked: Why a scientific arrangement of religious truth? Why may we not receive Christian truths as they are set forth in the Bible, and save ourselves the trouble of theological science? The human mind is constituted with an organizing instinct. The normal mind cannot rest in confusion of known facts, nor endure their apparent contradiction. The tendency to systematic thinking and arrangement of known facts is proportionate to the degree of one's mental culture and capacity. The mind is naturally so constituted that it must classify and arrange these facts of which it comes to know. God might have given truth in a scientific form instead of in historical form as it is set forth to a great extent in the Bible, just as he might have provided man food and clothes or secular knowledge without human effort. But work is a law of life throughout the whole creation. And in religion effort is needful, not only for the development of a beautiful Christian character, but also in order to have an adequate knowledge of things divine. In nature, God has furnished facts which men classify and systematize and from which they make inductions of other facts and principles which constitute valuable knowledge. The starry sky supplies the facts of astronomy, but it was only by generalizing from many of those facts carefully gathered that the important principle of gravitation was discovered. Likewise, in the Bible and in nature God has furnished us the facts of theology. Now he expects us to arrange these facts in logical order, and by such arrangement, reconciliation, and comparison to clarify our knowledge of those facts and by processes of induction or deduction even to learn other truths. As an example, the Bible furnishes us the facts that the Father is God, the Son is God, the Holy Spirit is God, and that these three are not identical, yet that there is but one God. These are the facts. Theology places the facts into proper relation to each other, and the result is the doctrine of the Divine Trinity. The doctrine of the twofold nature of Christ is likewise a product of theology, and was wrought out only after centuries of struggle. Still another reason for theology is that God has been pleased in the New Testament to supply us with parts of a system of theology already worked out, which is reason for believing he expects us to work it out still further.

As in other fields of knowldge the mind cannot be content with a multitude of undigested facts, so it is in theology. It has been demonstrated often that only as the mind knows Bible truth in logical order can it know really. This is the reason why in all ages and among all religious bodies systems of theology have been constructed.

III. Sources of Theology

The materials from which a system of Christian theology is constructed may be gathered from any source where they can be found. God himself is the ultimate source of theology, as the earth is of the facts of the science of geology. The two principal sources are nature and revelation. Nature is a mediate source and revelation is an immediate source of theological truths.

1. **Nature a Source of Theology**—By nature is meant God's creation in its widest extent. We may learn about God, not only from physical nature with all that it includes, but also much may be learned of him from the spiritual creation as we know it in man's mental and moral constitution. Not only in lower forms of creation, but also and especially in man, who is created in God's image, may much be learned. And, again, the divine truth nature reveals to us, includes not only that from man regarded objectively, but also those truths that may be known through intuition, the logical reason, and the moral nature. The character of God may be known in a certain measure by what he has made, much as we may know somewhat about a man by the work that he does.

That nature is a proper source of knowledge concerning God is also directly stated in the Scriptures. "The heavens declare the glory of God; and the firmament showeth his handiwork. Day unto day uttereth speech, and night unto night sheweth knowledge. There is no speech nor language where their voice is not heard. Their line is gone out through all the earth, and their words to the end of the world" (Ps. 19:1-4). Here the inspired writer asserts that nature teaches men about God and that such witness is perpetual though it is not given in articulate speech. The Apostle Paul not only asserts this same fact, but also directs attention to the fact that the clearness of the revelation of God in nature is such that men's consciences are thereby obligated to serve him. "That which may be known of God is manifest in them; for God hath showed it unto them. For the invisible things of him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are

made, even his eternal power and Godhead; so that they are without excuse: because that, when they knew God, they glorified him not as God, neither were thankful" (Rom. 1:19-21). A neglect of this important source of divine truth is a great loss. While revelation is far more important as a source of theology, yet the Scriptures are intended not to exclude but to supplement the facts we learn from nature. The reversion from nature as a source of theology by Watson and others is doubtless due to the undue stress on it by the deism or "natural religion" with which they came into conflict. Deeper love for God and a clearer knowledge respecting him are the inevitable consequences of a devout contemplation of his works in nature.

2. **Revelation the Source of Theology**—However much we may study God in nature, yet it is evident that the truth there learned is incomplete and insufficient to enable us to serve him acceptably. It is here that deism unduly stressed the value of natural theology. The history of mankind is evidence enough of the insufficiency of the light of nature to show men the way to God. It failed to deliver the ancient Gentile world from its gross wickedness, and modern heathenism still testifies that even with all its elaborate philosophies "natural religion" has failed to save the individual or lift up society. Something more is needed.

The manifestation of God in nature needs the illumination of a supernatural and immediate revelation. This revelation must begin where the natural ends and tell more than can be learned from natural sources. Nature makes known the existence of God, but revelation is needed that we may know his relations with men and how to serve him acceptably. Sin is a fearful fact that is evident in the individual heart and life and in the life of the race, but revelation is needed to make known the glorious truth of free pardon through the sacrificial suffering of a Divine Redeemer. Future retribution and life beyond this life are universally recognized because they are an intuition of man's nature, but what comfort can come from such knowledge if no divine revelation tells us how to be ready? Such a supernatural revelation is needed, and such we have in the Christian Scriptures. This divinely attested revelation is *the* source of theology.

Revelation is not necessarily limited to the Scriptures, as both before and since the Scriptures were given God has been pleased to reveal himself supernaturally to pious persons. Such revelation

is desirable and needed under certain circumstances, but it is not valuable as material for theology, and because not divinely attested to men generally is not properly a source of theology except as it harmonizes with and supports the truth already revealed in the Scriptures.

Revelation is to be clearly distinguished from natural theology, not that its theology is unnatural, but to show that its communication is supernatural and direct. Nature and revelation have appropriately been called "God's two great books." God is equally the author of both. They are not contradictory, but complementary of each other. Nature is first in order of time, but revelation is first in importance; and except for the reality of the truths of revelation, nature would not be what it is. And with revelation, nature is a more fruitful source of truth than it could otherwise be.

3. **Erroneous Sources of Theology**—The Roman Catholic church holds its traditions, according to the decree of the Council of Trent, to be an equal source of truth or authority with the Scriptures. Doubtless in the period of the apostles the traditions of these holy men had certain value in this respect; but because of the corruption of the church resulting in a consequent corruption of the traditions, they certainly are not now a proper source of theology. Neither the decrees of the church nor those of any individual or company of men representing a body of Christian people are proper material for theology. Creeds, symbols, or confessions, both ancient and modern, even though such are formulated by the concurrence of every member composing a religious body, cannot be admitted as a source of true Christian theology.

A second mistaken source of theology is mysticism. Mysticism claims an immediate insight into truth independent of nature or revelation. In relation to religious truth, it professes a direct and personal revelation from God. It is doubtless scriptural and in harmony with the facts of the best Christian experience to allow such higher communication with God. There is a true mysticism that means much to the Christian in spiritual illumination and higher experimental knowledge of divine truth. But this is not an additional revelation equal to the Scriptures; it is usually only an illumination of that already revealed. In all the past centuries mysticism has not added an essentially new truth to what is known of God through nature and revelation. That false mysticism which

pretends to add to the truths of Scripture various ideas, often unscriptural, that "the Lord showed" to the mystic, is to be rejected as a source of theology.

A third mistaken source of theology is rationalism. This error is the opposite of mysticism in recognizing too much of theology as from man while mysticism recognizes too much as coming directly from God. Reason in the broad sense has an important place in receiving and appropriating the facts of revelation. But that common tendency is wrong which would make mere human reasoning in the narrow sense the ultimate source of all divine truth, even to the exclusion of the truths of Scripture if those truths do not agree with previous conclusions of reason.

Is the inner Christian experience, or Christian consciousness, a proper source of theology? Every devout Christian recognizes the reality of Christian experience. He or she is aware of a remarkable change that took place in his or her soul at the time of accepting Christ and which has continued to be realized more or less vividly since that time. May that person by a careful study of this experience know the essential nature of conversion? Often devout persons have accepted their own experience as a source of truth and preached it as a standard for all men, measuring all others by their own experience. But such standards are as various as the number of those whose experiences they represent. Therefore, they cannot be a proper source of theology. Another class who hold the Christian consciousness or experience as a source of theology are those too liberal theologians who assume that revelation was originally given only through experience, and not in words; that the truths contained in the Scriptures were originally the result of inner experience only, and that consequently truth may as well be learned from Christian experience today as a source of theology.

Doubtless Christian experience is corroborative of the teachings of revelation, and by such experience one can more clearly interpret the Scriptures. If one has experienced regeneration, he will more clearly understand the words of the Apostle Paul, "If any man be in Christ, he is a new creature." The Christian experience of an individual or of a particular age will necessarily modify the conception of theology for that person or age, but this does not mean it is a proper source of divine truth. It cannot be a proper source, because of the variation already mentioned. This variation is due to one's natural temperament, environment, and to outside

influence, and especially to the theology he holds. The Mohammedan's religious experience differs much from that of the Buddhist because their beliefs differ. Likewise the experiences of the Roman Catholic and Protestant are not the same; and as a result of varying belief, experience differs between Calvinists and Arminians, and between Unitarians and Trinitarians. Even with those holding the same general creed, experience varies according to their particular individual interpretation of their creed. Evidently, therefore, the law of Christian experience is that such experience is the *result* of Christian truth, or the individual conception of it, and not its cause; it is the offspring of theology and not its source.

IV. Method of Theology

1. **Need of System**—Experience has furnished abundant proof that the truths of religion, like any other branch of knowledge, can be more clearly grasped by the mind if those truths are presented in a logical order. The constitution of the mind requires such presentation. Also by such systematic arrangement of theological facts it is possible to draw out general principles, and by such generalization to increase theological knowledge. The results gained by such systematization are sufficient justification of it. And in view of this the ungrounded objections that religion is of the heart and not of the head, or that systematization makes for religious bigotry, need not be considered. The ancient theologians, including even such able writers as Origen, Augustine, and John of Damascus, who is commonly represented as the father of systematic theology, lacked system in their theological writings. And it is safe to say that as a result of this lack of orderly treatment there was a corresponding lack of clearness in their theology.

Two opposite dangers must be avoided in the arrangement of theology—oversystematizing on the one extreme, and fragmentariness on the other. Oversystematizing has been a not uncommon fault of modern theology and has placed an unnecessary burden of repetition and speculation upon it. In an attempt to make a perfectly balanced system, writers on the subject have yielded too often to the temptation to resort to speculation to fill up in their systems the gaps that resulted from a lack of revealed truth on certain subjects, such as the nature of the Divine Trinity or of events at the second advent of Christ. Others in endeavoring to keep away from this danger have fallen into the opposite one of treating the subject in a fragmentary manner that fails to satisfy the mind and to exhibit many truths that may be known.

2. **Various Methods of Systematization**—A great variety of methods of arrangement have been followed in the treatment of theology. The order of presentation of the different parts of theology is determined largely by the type of mind of the writer. But especially is it determined by the particular aspect of the subject to be emphasized. There is nothing in the nature of the subject to require oneness of method in systematizing the doctrines of theology. Those who follow the analytic method of Calixtus begin with the idea of blessedness, the assumed end of all things, and reason to the means of securing it. Others, including Chalmers, begin with sin, man's disease, and reason to the remedy. Others approach the subject from still other angles and by other processes. The purpose of many theologians of the past and present has been to find one doctrine or principle out of which all others may be developed. Doubtless no such unity is possible. The inductive, not the deductive, is the true method of theology. Theology must be constructed from the various elements to be found in nature and revelation, and cannot be deduced from one general principle or doctrine, whether that doctrine be Christ, sin, blessedness, or any other.

3. **Method of This Work**—The most common order of treatment of theology, and the one followed in this work, may be properly termed the synthetic method. It consists in bringing together the various elements of theology and arranging them into a logical whole. This mode of treatment is in conformity with the nature of the subject. The order of the larger divisions of this work, beginning with God and passing to the consideration of events at the final consummation, is not only a logical order, but to a considerable extent the chronological one. The order of this work is as follows:

I. Introduction.
II. Existence of God, or Theism.
III. Evidences of Divine Revelation, or Apologetics.
IV. Nature and Works of God, or Theology Proper.
V. Doctrine of Man, or Anthropology.
VI. Salvation through Christ, or Soteriology.
VII. The Church, or Ecclesiology.
VIII. Last Things, or Eschatology.

It is probably sufficient as an apology for this division and arrangement of the subject that it is clear and logical, and designed to give a degree of prominence and emphasis to the various

leading phases of theology that will be helpful to a comprehensive grasp of it. Also these divisions in this order do not vary greatly from that followed by many respected theological writers.

In the present work the results sought seem to require as many main divisions as are made of the subject. A certain writer strongly criticized the discussion of the divine revelation after theism, as is done by Strong, on the ground that it logically precedes theology and belongs in the introduction. In reply it may be reasoned that it is logical to show there is a God before the notion of a revelation from him can be given consideration. Certainly the vital importance of the proofs that the Scriptures are a divine revelation and the present controversy on the question are reason enough for the prominence given apologetics here.

4. **Terminology**—Theological writers of the past have been much given to the use of technical terms of Greek origin, and as a result their works have been forbidding to the uneducated person. The leading writers of the present generation, however, have almost without exception reverted to simple, everyday terminology, which is certainly a great gain. Doubtless the technical terms have the advantage of definiteness in their favor, and are preferable from the strictly scientific viewpoint; but the simpler terms are desirable for practical purposes, and the practical end of theology must not be lost sight of. The word *man* is a better term than *anthropology*, and *salvation* than *soteriology*. In this work the main divisions are designated with simple descriptive terms, and to these are added the technical terms to furnish whatever superior definiteness attaches to them and to explain and to be explained by the simpler designation.

V. Qualifications for the Study of Theology

1. **Spiritual Qualifications**—Probably the most important qualification for the study of theology is a pious spirit, even though it is not the only one needed. Nothing can take the place of a personal experimental acquaintance with God and a sincere desire to please him. Only to one with such an attitude of heart does God reveal his truth. Jesus said, "If any man will do his will, he shall know of the doctrine, whether it be of God, or whether I speak of myself." To know the science about God as it ought to be known one must know God himself, and this is possible only by experience. A mind unsympathetic toward truth cannot understand the truth. It is here that the destructive critics of the Bible have so

commonly failed as experts in that in which they assumed to be authority. Rightly to understand regeneration one must have been regenerated. To know the nature of the Holy Spirit baptism one must have been baptized with the Holy Spirit. Not that experience is the source of truth, but such experience does mean much for a proper conception of that truth revealed in the Scriptures. And especially does one need the enlightenment of the Spirit of God. "For the Spirit searcheth all things, yea, the deep things of God. . . . The things of God knoweth no man, but the Spirit of God."

2. **Qualities of Mind**—Everyone may profitably study theology, but all are not equally endowed with those native and acquired qualities of mind that are especially valuable in such study. The successful study of theology requires not only a devout heart, but a well-balanced and thoroughly disciplined mind. Because theology has to do with the greatest subject in the universe, it is deserving of the thought of the most powerful intellects. Students of theology need mental equilibrium. They must be able to reason well, to discern relations clearly, and to move accurately from premise to conclusion. Also they need keen insight and careful discrimination. While it is true that "the wayfaring men, though fools" may experience Christianity, yet a keen mind is needed to grasp the deep and sometimes abstract things of God. A trained mind is needed, as only such a mind can gather together and hold in its grasp many facts at once, and suspend judgment in the drawing out of general principles until mature consideration of all the elements in each is given. Also not only a logical mind is needed but a well-developed power of intuition is needed. Certain first truths, such as the existence of God or the reality of the future life, can be known better by intuition, or the mind's primitive convictions, than by processes of demonstration or logic.

Other qualities of mind needed are love for truth, sincerity, reverence, humility, candor, patience, loyalty to facts, and the courage of one's convictions. Love for truth will keep one from the opposite extremes of conservatism and progress. Extreme conservatism makes much of the "old paths" whether they are right or not, and persistently holds to the way in which it happens to be even though the Spirit of God is endeavoring to lead into a richer and deeper spiritual life than that yet attained. It prizes the truth already gained and has the advantage of a settled state, but this is

done at the expense of progress into a clearer light and truth, and also it leads into undesirable dogmatism. The extremely progressive attitude is also equally dangerous in causing one to cast away tried and tested truths that have been bequeathed as a sacred treasure by godly men of the past for what seems to be truth but is not. But proper love for truth will lead one to seek for greater light and at the same time cause him to hold fast all that he has received that is really truth.

3. **Educational Qualifications**—A thorough knowledge of the Bible is of first importance to the study of Christian theology. Biblical theology must precede systematic theology. Students of theology must first know their Bible as to its contents. This will enable them to gather together the various facts of Scripture bearing on a subject. Next they must know the meaning of their Bible. If they misinterpret the meaning of the statements of Scripture they will probably fail to formulate sound doctrines from them. They should also be familiar with the history of Christian doctrine, as it has been held in past ages and as it is held by those of their own time. Without such knowledge they are liable to commit themselves to a theory that has been exploded centuries ago. A familiarity with the original languages of the Scripture will be found of great value in interpreting it.

Nor will students of theology find knowledge of secular branches amiss. A knowledge of history, philosophy, and human nature is valuable. Especially do they need to study physical science as well as mental science, as from these modern infidelity under the cloak of science is attacking Christianity and the theologian must be prepared to defend the truth. Students of theology should also be familiar with the life and spirit of their own times if they would successfully refute the current errors and adapt their message to those to whom they speak. This means they must not be recluses, but people who know the thoughts of the living as well as the writings of the dead. To know people one must mingle with them. Without such association to give freshness to one's thought one is almost certain to become mentally stagnant and abstract.

PART I
EXISTENCE OF GOD, OR THEISM

Part I
THE EXISTENCE OF GOD

Barry L. Callen, Revision Editor

CHAPTER I

Origin of Our Idea of God

I. The Knowledge of God as an Intuition

Discussions about the existence of God range in their reference from a very general, even pantheistic concept of God to a very specific concept such as that revealed in the Scriptures and characteristic of Christianity. By the phrase "existence of God" we are here referring at least to the existence of an Infinite Person who was the creator and is the sustainer of all things.

Belief in the existence of God apparently is a phenomenon which has occurred among persons in all times and places. Such belief is as widespread as religion itself. Indeed, although it certainly can be perverted, belief in the existence of God is a fundamental aspect of true religion. It appears to be part of every person's experience, there to some degree from the begining and developing variously throughout life.

What is the source of this universally experienced belief in God's existence? There are three basic answers usually offered: (1) intuition; (2) reasoning; and (3) divine revelation handed down by tradition.

1. **Intuition in General**—By intuition we mean knowledge being gained by the inherent activity of the mind giving rise to important insights. This is to be distinguished from knowledge gained by external instruction, internal reasoning or personal experience. It is a particular source of knowledge sometimes known as first truths or innate knowledge. A. H. Strong stated that "a first truth is a knowledge which, though developed on occasion of observation and reflection, is not derived from observation and reflection." The mind is so constituted that its nature is to recognize certain things as true without the need of proof or instruction.

Human intuition is able to perceive truths of the senses, of physical circumstances and of the moral nature. Beauty, for instance, is known intuitively. When circumstances are right, a person just knows that things equal to the same thing are equal to each other. The sheer reality of space and substance are known naturally and are understood to be givens which do not require a conscious process of instruction, demonstration or logical necessity. Causality is self-evident. The very idea that every effect has a cause is assumed to be true. Only in the abstractions of some philosophical speculation is this or other intuitive truths denied. Likewise, the great truths of God, moral obligation and future existence are known intuitively and are questioned only when the mind is influenced by the abstractions of speculative theories.

Persons perceive and act in response to the great truths of intuition without first reasoning about them. These truths, in fact, are necessary as a basis for the reasoning process and the life of action. The simplest act requires the assumption of important truths. When I take my pen to write I demonstrate my belief in (1) substance, of which the pen consists, (2) space, in which the substance exists, (3) self, a personal reality without which the pen could never write, (4) time, the context only within which anything can happen and (5) causation, a purposeful will apart from which all creative accomplishment is impossible.

The reality of intuitive knowledge is evident from what has been stated thus far and, as illustrated above, certain conclusions are generally recognized as being self-evident truths learned from common intuition. From these we are able to identify two criteria by which we may judge certain other claims to truth, claims whose intuitive character are sometimes questioned. These criteria are *universality* and *necessity*.

Intuitive knowledge which can be depended upon as genuine knowledge must be something which is perceived universally and is absolutely necessary. These criteria are inclusive of each other, because what is necessary is universally experienced as such and what is perceived by all must be so necessary that it cannot reasonably be called into question.

2. **Proofs that the Idea of God Is an Intuition**—In affirming that the knowledge of God's existence is innate in human experience, let it not be supposed that a complete apprehension of God in all his perfections is possible by this means. It is here affirmed

only that the idea of a superior being on whom we are dependent and to whom we are responsible is a universal and necessary intuition. Doubtless this fundamental idea of God should be and can be vastly broadened and clarified by careful reasoning, but only by a supernatural revelation can we have accurate knowledge of the nature and will of God.

Let us evaluate the proposition that the idea of God is an intuition by applying the tests of universality and necessity, the essential criteria of innate ideas.

(1) *Universality of the Idea of God.* What is the proof that the idea of God is universal? It is a fact of history that the vast majority of the race have been religious persons and thereby have acknowledged their belief in a superior being or beings. Such belief was characteristic of the ancient Egyptians, Babylonians, Syrians, Greeks, Romans and others past and present.

Occasionally it is objected that whole tribes have been discovered which seemed to possess no idea of God whatever. On closer investigation, however, this has not proven to be the case. And it is not unreasonable to suppose that such a clarification is always likely in regard to persons who initially appear to be atheistic. In some instances missionaries have labored for years among isolated people before discovering their general belief in the supernatural since these people were reluctant to share with strangers their most deeply held convictions.

What if a tribe of genuine atheists were found to exist? Would the existence of such persons be proof that belief in the existence of God is not normal for mankind? Or would the discovery of an irrational group of persons prove that reason is not normal for humankind? Would it not be better to assume that the persons exhibiting the unusual trait apparently have lost an important part of human nature? Surely the fact that some persons are born deaf suggests nothing about the normality of hearing. Conversely, the fact of infanticide among some people surely does not disprove the reality of parental affection among most people.

Again, it is objected that the idea of God does not have its source in a universal intuition because there are some persons, even educated persons, who are professed atheists. The unreasonableness of the atheistic position will be shown later, but here it may be said that it is only by philosophical speculation that one comes to such a view. The existence of some atheists no more

disproves the intuitive knowledge of God than the intuition of substance is disproved because some philosophers deny it in favor of a speculative system of idealism.

With the proof of the universality of the idea of God, this idea is shown to meet the first criterion of authentic intuition. We now turn to the second.

(2) *Necessity of the Idea of God.* Proof of the universality of the idea of God is essentially proof that the idea is also necessary. Its necessity is a prime cause of its universal presence. A few persons may deny the being of God, but the denial is contrary to their nature as persons, is temporary and is caused by the influence of a false philosophical theory. As soon as that theory is out of mind such persons naturally revert to the intuitive conviction of God as surely as a pendulum when unconstrained hangs perpendicularly to the horizon.

The necessity to man of the idea of a personal God has been well demonstrated in the history of certain of the great world religions. Buddhism was atheistic in its creed as originally held and Hinduism was pantheistic. But their millions of devotees were human and a primitive conviction in them that God is and that he is a person was so strong that, in spite of their creeds, they have acted out such convictions. The divinely implanted tendency to pray was so irresistible that they could not refrain from it. In fact, Buddhists have felt compelled to modify those very atheistic tenets of their faith because such tenets were found to lack correspondence with a great demand of human nature. This is proof that the idea of God is necessary and therefore proof that the idea of God is an intuition.

Beyond these criteria of universality and necessity, it is altogether reasonable to infer that the idea of God is a first truth because of its vast importance in determining moral obligation and man's present and eternal welfare. As Robespierre said, "If God did not exist, it would behoove man to invent him." If the idea of God were not an intuition, it ought to be. That the knowledge of a matter of such vast consequence should be left to the uncertainties of educational processes, or should be a mere accident of the mind's circumstances, is inconceivable. The only proper original source of the knowledge of God is in the constitution of the mind itself. The idea of God must be available to all alike, not merely to those who are so fortunate as to be taught

about him or whose rational powers are sufficiently developed to arrive at such knowledge by logical processes.

The Scriptures themselves nowhere attempt the proof of the existence of God. It is assumed as being a truth already known and accepted. The opening verse of the Bible names God as the Creator, but does not wait to introduce him. Doubtless this is because both the inspiring Spirit and the wise human writer recognized the superfluity of such an introduction. This scriptural support for the innate knowledge of God will have no value, of course, in proving his existence to an unbeliever except as corroboration of proofs from other sources. But it is important to believers in the divine revelation not only as corroboration, but as proof of the universality of such knowledge.

II. Other Supposed Sources of the Idea

1. **From Animistic Superstition**—Animism is a pattern of belief which understands certain rocks, trees, streams, springs, caves, etc., to be animated or inhabited by spirits which must be worshiped and which will do injury to those who neglect such worship. These spirits are feared and worshiped as gods. Naturalistic evolution and other antitheistic philosophies relate the origin of religion and the idea of God to such animistic superstition and even argue that religion itself is the result of a process of evolution. They assume that animism was common to primitive man, that from that superstitious fear of spirits came the worship of many idols in the forms of various images, that with increased culture there evolved a higher polytheism, and that from this came the monotheistic idea of a Supreme Being.

We have no sympathy with this theory. Our objection to such an origin of the idea of God arises from more than its contradiction by the teaching of the Scripture. This theory is not true to the plain facts of the earliest history of the race. From the history of religion it is clear that the tendency of religion has been to degenerate rather than to rise to a purer form. Such as been true of the various great religions, including the people of ancient Israel who were continually departing from the exalted form of worship given them by Moses. And even Christianity has struggled against the degenerating tendencies which are doubtless to be accounted for on the ground of depraved human nature. The theory that our idea of God came by a process of evolution from a primitive fear of imaginary spirits in material objects is a groundless assumption.

LIBRARY
WINEBRENNER THEOLOGICAL
SEMINARY

What does the actual history of religions have to say on this subject? Were the primitive ideas of God polytheistic or monotheistic? According to the most dependable authorities, the earliest religions of mankind were purely monotheistic and disallowed a belief in many gods. This was true of the religion of ancient Egypt and the primitive religion of the Chinese. The very ancient Aryans, from whom sprang the Hindus, Persians, and most of the great European nations, held monotheism.

2. **Exclusively from Revelation**—It is the opinion of some theologians that the mind is capable of a knowledge of God only by supernatural revelation. It has been reasoned in support of this view that such persons as Adam, Abraham and Moses, to whom God gave such revelation, had the clearest knowledge of God and, to the extent that men have been remote from these original revelations, either geographically or chronologically, they have held less correct ideas of God—unless they had the scriptural records of those revelations. This view is attractive to those who reverence the Word of God and stand in opposition to the false claims of "natural religion." Occasionally, however, involvement in a particular controversy has caused such persons to overstate their point at the expense of a legitimate acceptance of the natural intuition of God's existence. Revelation is needed to enlarge and develop the innate idea of God, but, unless man already possessed the idea of God, the revelation from God would not appear to have authority, whether that revelation were transmitted by oral tradition or by the Scriptures.

3. **From a Process of Reasoning**—Many of those who reject the idea of God as an intuition would locate the origin of the idea in a process of reasoning. Doubtless the mind is capable of learning about God by rational processes, but such a method of first obtaining the idea is more a theoretical possibility than an actual fact. The mind does not wait for some logical process of reasoning. When the proper conditions exist, the idea "flashes on the soul with the quickness and force of an immediate revelation."

That reasoning is not the means of gaining the idea of God is further evident from the fact that the strength of many persons' conviction of the being of God is not in proportion to their powers of reason. Multitudes of persons who could not grasp the logical arguments of the divine existence have nonetheless possessed an unwavering conviction of its truth, while others of extraordinary reasoning power have remained skeptics.

What then is the place of reasoning as a means of knowing about God? First it must be allowed that rational arguments do much to enlarge and extend our intuitive idea of God. We can thus come to a clearer apprehension of his character and attributes. Again, these arguments for the divine existence have value in confirming that the intuitive conviction is indeed true, as by reasoning we may prove the accuracy of the intuition that the whole is equal to the sum of all its parts.

III. What Does This Intuition Contain?

To know that any particular thing or person exists, one necessarily must know something about the nature, properties, qualities, characteristics, or attributes of that thing or person. Such knowledge by definition is inseparable from the knowledge of the existence of the thing. Therefore, to know *that* God exists is necessarily to have some idea about *what* God is.

The intuition that God exists contains some idea of his nature. This does not mean that by intuition alone one can know God with the adequacy necessary to be guided dependably in the performance of all human duties. The gross misconceptions that have burdened much human thought about God are sufficient proof that, at least in their present depraved condition, persons do not intuitively know the nature of God in important respects. Yet when all this has been said, the fact remains that God's nature is known in a considerable measure. This intuition of God implies: (1) a personal being who may be properly worshiped; (2) a perfection of moral character in God that places persons under moral obligation to him; and (3) a power above on whom persons are dependent. At least this much is contained in the intuition of God.

CHAPTER II

Evidences of God's Existence

Although belief in God's existence is a human intuition and arises spontaneously under proper conditions, yet theistic arguments have great value as corroboration and confirmation of this innate idea. Rational evidences should not be despised as being useless. The mind craves rational satisfaction concerning this great truth, a satisfaction such as only logical argument can give.

Intuition alone is not in a good position to meet the subtle attacks of skepticism. False reasoning must be met with rational argument. A process of formal argumentation is helpful in developing the intuitive idea of God, explaining it and illustrating it. Though the mind instinctively believes before philosophy has begun to set its proofs in order, yet the mind naturally seeks to supply to itself a logical account of its belief.

However conclusive the proofs of theism may be, it is always to be remembered that the knowledge of God is not dependent upon them. The arguments are not held to demonstrate the fact of God, but they do show a high degree of probability of the divine existence. Also, each such argument need not be regarded as proving the whole doctrine of theism. One argument may prove one fact about God, and others other facts; so the various arguments constitute a series of partial proofs that is cumulative in nature.

The most common arguments for theism are four in number: (1) The First-cause or Cosmological; (2) the Design or Teleological; (3) the Human-nature or Anthropological; and (4) the A Priori or Ontological. To these is sometimes added a fifth—the Biblical or Revelation Argument.

I. The First-Cause or Cosmological Argument

This argument for the Divine existence is based upon the fact of causation. Regarding the universe in its present form as an effect, it reasons that it must have had a sufficient cause. Because something cannot come from nothing, and something now exists, therefore something existed prior to that which presently exists. That which first was explains that which followed. It further reasons that the original cause which was responsible for the beginning of the universe must have been an eternal cause, a cause free to choose and able to implement a choice to bring into being

the world of matter. This free and adequate cause can be no less than an eternal person, infinitely great, whom we know as God.

This argument may be restated helpfully in syllogistic form as follows:

Major Premise—Everything begun must have had a sufficient, pre-existing cause;

Minor Premise—The world in every part is continually changing;

Conclusion—Therefore the world must have a cause outside of itself and the original cause must have been external, uncaused, and characterized by free will.

Two truths are assumed by the cosmological argument. One is the principle of causation and the other is that the universe is an effect of a cause outside itself. If these are shown to be true, the argument is sound and is highly suggestive of God's existence.

1. **The Law of Causation**—Causation is self-evident and is universally recognized. It is a truth so universal and so necessary that it must be regarded as an intuition of reason. That every event must have a cause is the belief of all persons. And a cause, to be a genuine cause, must be sufficient for the result accomplished. If it is not, it could hardly be a cause.

Only in philosophical speculation do persons ever think of denying the principle of causation. Such men as Hume and Mill have had the boldness to deny it theoretically, but they themselves, in reasoning about the origin of the world and of the things it contains, do not fail to employ the truth of causation. They have maintained that the idea of cause is the result of associating in our minds one thing with another and by the observation of invariable sequence, wrongly assuming the first thing to be the cause of the second. But common sense tells us that there is more in the relation of what we call cause and effect than mere regular succession. There is not more regular succession than day and night, yet who would suppose night is caused by day and day is caused by night? Or who would say that summer and winter cause each other merely because they follow each other?

But cause is more than the mere antecedent of an event. It is an antecedent which is responsible for an event which followed. The cause of which we are immediately conscious is the operation of our own wills. We take a book from a shelf and lay it on the table. We know that the location of the book on the table is the result of a cause and that personal will is that cause. We know the book

would never have passed from the shelf to the table except for a cause. Likewise, we may properly regard every event as being the result of a cause even though we may not be aware of that cause. It is true that there may be dependent causes, ones that are themselves the results of other causes, but reason requires an original and eternal cause of all these dependent causes, one that is wholly independent and free.

But the objector to the First-cause Argument professes to find an alternative in the idea of an infinite, regressive series of dependent causes. But such an infinite series of causes and effects is unreasonable, because a mere series of changes must itself have had a cause. The infinite-series idea is like the chain that is falsely said to hang on nothing. To follow back through any number of dependent causes as links in a chain is not to find the first and real cause. The mind cannot be content to rest in such an endless-series idea, but instinctively leaps to the thought of an independent first cause. Further disproof of the infinite-series idea is needless since few persons believe it. It is only an awkward objection to sound theistic argument.

Again, it is objected that the idea of a necessary, independent first cause ignores the possibility that the world may be regarded as being many interacting parts with each as dependent causes. It is as if the points of four pencils were placed upon the table and the tops leaned against each other in the form of a pyramid so that they were mutually self-supporting. We readily admit that the universe is constituted with these interacting, dependent causes. It is a fact of science and is open to the observation of all persons.

Sandstone is formed from beds of sand and beds of sand are the result of the crumbling of the stone again. The blood is kept pure by the respiration of the lungs, and yet the lungs cannot continue to function except by a supply of pure blood. But allowing that all of this is obvious, these interacting dependent causes still need a cause for their being and interaction. An accumulation of dependent causes does not constitute an independent cause, since independence cannot originate in dependence. Back of all interacting dependent causes, then, must be an independent cause which caused their interaction, just as an independent external cause must have arranged the pyramid of pencils so that they would support each other. Reason requires, not only for the series of causes but also for the interacting system of causes, a real and independent cause of that series or system.

Any real cause, then, must be an original cause, not merely an intermediate link in a chain of dependent causes and effects. The mind will be content with nothing less than that cause which supports the most distant dependent cause. Nothing cannot be a cause. Something exists now and it could not have come out of antecedent nothingness; so something must always have existed, something which caused all things that now are.

Again, any real cause must be a free cause. If it acts of necessity, it is dependent and must itself be only an effect, the result of another cause. Only an independent cause can be a free cause; and an independent, free cause certainly implies a free will in a conscious, independent being. Persons have the power of first cause of certain effects because of their free will.

Both from intuition and from rational processes, then, it is certain that real original cause is to be attributed only to a personal will; therefore, to whatever extent it can be shown that the world is the result of a cause exterior to itself, we have proof of a personal God as creator.

2. **The Universe Is an Effect**—As it now exists, the universe is an effect. Nothing is more strongly stressed by modern science than that both organic and inorganic nature are the result of a process and came to be what they are through a process. Man evidently is of comparatively recent origin according to science. Before man, other forms of life had a beginning, and beyond them was a period when no life existed. Even the evolutionary hypothesis holds that all things which now exist had a beginning and have been evolved from a primordial state. But this beginning also must have had a cause, for a beginning is an event and every event must have a cause.

A spontaneous generation of the primitive life is hardly admissible with science and is practically a denial of the principle of causation, as will be shown later. Also, that alleged primordial state cannot have been the eternal and original cause of all, for if it were eternal it would have been mature, fully developed. And if so, it could not have further developed into a universe. Also, if it were eternal it necessarily would have been immutable and could not have changed. But if it changed, that is proof that it was not eternal, but was like all other changing forms of matter—a result of a cause. The minute physical divisions of matter certainly bear the marks of being caused and therefore are not eternal or self-existent.

3. **What the Argument Proves**—With the assumptions, then, of the principle of causation and the universe being an effect of which no sufficient cause is to be found in itself, reason requires an adequate extra-mundane cause, eternal and uncaused, possessing free will and omnipotent power. These necessary qualities point strongly to the personality of the first cause. The Cosmological Argument, then, furnishes proof of theism with a degree of certainty little short of a demonstration. It sets forth the fact of a first cause, that that cause must have been eternal, uncaused, unchangeable, omnipotent, free, and, we may safely say, a personal Cause who was and is God.

II. The Design or Teleological Argument

1. **Nature of the Argument**—The Design or Teleological Argument reasons from evidences of design and from apparently orderly and useful arrangements in nature to an intelligent cause.

By design is meant the selection and pursuit of ends. It is the choosing of an end to be attained, the selection of proper means to accomplish it, and the use of the means to attain the end chosen. When at the foot of a rocky cliff we see broken fragments of rock of unequal sizes and irregular shapes strewn about, we decide at once that their sizes, shapes and locations are the result of chance. But when we see hundreds of bricks of equal size, even color, and faces all bearing one imprint, laid in straight, level rows in hard mortar and forming a perpendicular wall with suitable openings for windows and doors, we decide the qualities and arrangement of them are the result of intelligent purpose and design. It is not necessary that one have seen the bricks manufactured and laid in the wall to know that the wall is the result of design. The very fact of their orderly and useful arrangement is abundant proof of purposeful planning by an intelligent being.

The Design Argument may be given in syllogistic form as follows:

Major Premise—Orderly and harmonious cooperation of many separate parts can be accounted for only by the assumption of an intelligent cause;

Minor Premise—The world everywhere exhibits orderly and harmonious cooperation of all its parts;

Conclusion—Therefore the original and absolute cause of the world is an intelligent cause.

As in the works of man we reason from evidences of design to the assumption of an intelligent designer, so we may properly

reason from evidences of design and adaptation of means to ends in nature to the assumption that the author of nature was intelligent. It is not necessary that we have known by direct observation and experience of its original designing that an intelligent agent was behind nature. It is enough that from our experience we are able to recognize the characteristic signs of the previous working of intelligence. Then when we see these signs we are able to identify them as the result of an intelligent mind. The very nature of design is such that it implies intelligence and, wherever evidences of design are found, it is certain that they are related to intelligence.

Orderly and useful arrangement in nature are obvious and unquestionable. Evidences of design are apparent everywhere and are conclusive proof that the author of nature was an intelligent person. Modern science assumes that nature is rationally constructed. Its very experimental processes seek systematically to discover and understand the rational order that pervades the universe. Except for that dependable uniformity of nature which necessarily is the result of design, science would be impossible. The results of chance cannot be understood as meaningful and scientifically systemized by the mind. *But the universe can be understood by the mind, showing clearly that it is the result of a mind.*

It may be objected that the orderly arrangements in nature were not *designed* to be useful, but have been made useful only because they were capable of being so adapted by the will of man. In response, the person who says that the eye sees merely because it can see, the ear hears merely because it can hear, the hand handles only because it happens to be capable of doing so, and that none of these is designed to perform such functions, says what universal common sense refuses to accept. After all, could it not be said that the locomotive draws its train merely because it can draw it, not because it was built to do so, or that the printing press prints books because it can do so, not because it was designed to do so? How much more reasonable it is to believe that apparent designs and useful arrangements are the result of the deliberate selection and pursuit of ends, that the beneficial functioning of nature is as it is because a kind and gracious Father designed it so for the sake of his children!

What being, said Cicero, that is "destitute of intellect and reason could have produced these things which not only had need of reason to cause them to be, but *which are such as can be*

understood only by the highest exertions of reason?" (De Nat. Deorum, II, 44).

The Design Argument can be illustrated helpfully as follows: If in crossing a field I strike my foot against a stone and I ask how it came to be there, I might reply that it has just been there forever. But if later in my walk I find a watch and the question of the origin of the watch is raised, the answer must be very different. A casual observance of its mechanism—of its wheels with cogs exactly fitting into each other, of its springs, of the relation of part to part, and of its exact adjustment so that it measures time precisely—furnishes convincing proof that it is a reliable example of human design and not the result of mere chance. And even the discovery in the watch of useless, broken, or deranged parts would not invalidate the reasoning that it was designed originally by an intelligent mind.

This process of reasoning from observed design to assumed designer may properly be regarded as unanswerable. Advancement in science has served more to illustrate this argument than to raise questions about it.

We might take the illustration of the watch one step further in order to deal with a common objection. Suppose that the watch I found in the field not only contained a fine mechanism for the measurement of time, but also contained within itself an elaborate machine shop with lathes and the other necessary machinery for manufacturing other watches superior to itself. Suppose that there was evidence that the watch had evolved from an inferior watch and that a long process of increasingly sophisticated watches had gone on. Would such a remarkable ability for improved reproduction in that hypothetical watch disprove a designing intelligence behind that race of watches?

If watches came from other watches, they would not be so immediately the result of the design of an external intelligence. But certainly the cause that originated them and was involved in that first watch is inherently behind the later developments and remains superior to them. If evolution were admitted as a process in nature, instead of invalidating the idea of design and the design argument for God's existence, it would actually strengthen it. Whether the theory of evolution be regarded as true or false, we may consistently note evidences of design as proof of an intelligent creator.

The Design Argument is probably the simplest, commonest, and most convincing of all theistic proofs. It is frequently referred to in the Scriptures. "The heavens declare the glory of God; and the firmament sheweth his handiwork" (Ps. 19:1). In Romans 1:20 the Apostle Paul affirms that God's eternal power may be clearly seen in the things that are made. Secular philosophers and Christian thinkers of all generations have appealed to it in proof of theism. Truly God has not left himself without a witness among men.

2. **Evidences of Design in Nature**—The evidences of intelligent design in nature are countless. They may be found on every hand. They may be seen in the movements of the planets far away in the starry sky and also in every minute insect on the earth. In all the realm of inorganic nature they are to be found, as well as in every plant that grows. And again, they may be found in large numbers in each of the bodies of both animals and men. They appear, not only in single organs, but in the relation of organs to each other. Evidences of design are also apparent in the adaptations of the world to the life of plants and animals, and of the organs of animals to their instincts. A few examples will serve at least as an indication of the nature of the evidence.

The remarkable operation of an intricate machine often fills a thoughtful person with wonder about the far-seeing design and intelligence of its inventor. But how much more wonderful is the human body and how much more does it show design! What machine is so perfect in its mechanism and operation as is this one? All its parts, organs, and functions are delicately adjusted to each other. It repairs its defective parts while in operation and generates its own energy.

If the intricate lens of a camera manifests design, how much more does the human eye? Their general principles are similar, but how much more perfect is the eye than the lens of a camera! It is not merely an opening in the head or a nerve center. It has a lid as a means of protecting the tender ball and that lid moves with wonderful and calculated quickness. The ball is not set immovably in its socket, but has muscles so attached that it can be turned in all directions in the field of vision. Again, the structure of the eyeball is wonderfully adapted to the light and to the function of seeing. The opening to the lens is contracted or enlarged by a most delicate arrangement of muscles that are not dependent upon the will, but operate in response to the stimulus of the light itself. The

lens is capable of such exact adjustment that the rays of light are refracted in such a manner as to bring them to a proper focus on the retina. Spread out on this retina is the only nerve in the body susceptible of light and color. These are but a few of the evidences of design in the structure of the eye. What unthinking credulity must that be which would attribute the intricate wonders of the eye to chance or some other nonintelligent cause! And if it be objected that the eye, with all its wonders, may be the result of evolution, it is not necessary to argue the point, but only to say in reply: Then how far-seeing and intelligent must have been the designer to implant the power to effect by a process of evolution that wonderful organ as we now know it.

Likewise the ear is not a mere opening into the head, but a very delicate and complicated device for catching sound-waves and producing the sensation of hearing by means of the auditory nerve. It is a far more wonderful mechanism than that exhibited in a telephone and, as the telephone bears undeniable evidence of design by man, so does the ear argue for a designing creator. If space would allow, proofs of design might be shown in other parts and processes of the human body.

Not only in simple organs is design shown, but also in the relation of organs to each other and to the conditions under which men and animals live. Fish, furnished with gills to live in the water, also have fins and a tail especially adapted to swimming. Birds, furnished with wings suitable for flying in the air, also have hollow bones and feathers which make flight possible. The bird with long legs for wading in the water also has a long neck, while the bird that floats on the water has webbed feet and feathers impenetrable by water. Man, with a superior mind capable of wonderful planning has an upright body with hands capable of executing all that the mind conceives. Man's hand is far better adapted to complicated forms of work than is the hand of any other created species.

What wise design is shown by this relation of organs! And fully as remarkable is that design shown in adapting organs to the instincts of particular species. Carnivorous animals have claws and teeth suited to catching and eating their prey, while those with an instinct for eating vegetables have teeth and stomachs fully adapted to their instinct.

A still more remarkable example of design is the provision for the support of the young even before they are born. With mam-

mals, the breasts or udder of the mother begin to swell and store a supply of milk. As soon as the young are born the most nourishing food possible is ready for them. Similarly, a food-supply is also stored in the egg. Certainly here is proof of a wise, foreseeing mind that designed these things to be as they are.

Even in inorganic nature we see evidences of an equally wise design. Except for the fact of the evaporation of moisture in the atmosphere by heat and its condensation by cold, life would be impossible on the earth. On warm summer days life would be destroyed by intense heat except for the fact that heat is absorbed by the moisture of the earth, vegetation, or bodies of water as the water becomes vapor. Likewise, on cool summer nights vegetation would die of frost and cold, and life would consequently soon become extinct on the earth, except for the condensation of the vapor in the atmosphere into the dew; as it thus condenses, a vast amount of heat stored during the day is given out and the temperature is kept moderate. What a wonderful provision is this! It is either a proof of design by a kind creator or else a result of chance. The atheist may be credulous enough to believe the latter, but the common sense of mankind has always felt constrained to attribute it to the design of a heavenly creator.

It is a general law of nature that bodies contract as they cool. Water becomes heavier as it cools and the cold water settles to the bottom, while the warmer remains at the top. But by a special law of nature, ice does not first form at the bottom of a body of water. Instead, when the temperature of that water at the bottom falls to about four degrees above the freezing-point it begins to expand and becomes lighter, causing ice always to form on top first. Except for this special law the larger bodies of water in the temperate zone would soon become solid masses of ice, frozen from the bottom to the top. They would not melt during the entire summer and all life in them would perish. If this special provision in nature does not show design in nature, then what could show it? Even the theory of evolution cannot account for such a provision; it must be regarded as a direct result of design.

The power of gravitation is so common that we are inclined to overlook it. But suppose that the attraction of gravitation were but one-fourth as strong as it is. How difficult it would be to keep our houses on their foundations and what a task it would be to keep one's balance on windy days! Or imagine the drawing of gravitation

four times as strong as it is now. How tired one would become just supporting one's own body weight, let alone trying to carry anything else! Or suppose the axis of our earth were perpendicular to our sun instead of inclined; then no changing seasons would ever be known, but only one long, monotonous, changeless temperature. Surely a kind creator has wisely designed all these things.

3. **Objections to the Design Argument**—It is sometimes objected to the foregoing reasoning that nature does not always appear to bear evidence of design. Apparently useless and rudimentary organs in animals are pointed out as examples. The spleen, for instance, is sometimes cited as an example of a useless organ. But it may only properly be said that its use is not known to be important. Physiologists are seeking to learn more about its purpose. The mere fact that animals may live when it is removed proves only that it is not necessary to life, not that it has no purpose.

Some organs may have a relatively insignificant purpose or one that is not known or little appreciated. But such a circumstance is not a meaningful argument against the larger design. Indeed, knowledge of the important functions of the large majority of the organs of the body gives such evidence of design in creation that present ignorance of the use of a few organs cannot invalidate it.

Again, the Design Argument is sometimes challenged by the alternate assertion that all may have come about as a result of chance. Inasmuch as they are few who thus elevate the creative accomplishments of chance, our answer may be brief. This objection will not be held by one who stops to think. It is affirmed that the world might have come to be by chance just as the *Iliad* might have been produced by throwing down quantities of letters. But everyone knows that so large a number of separate elements would not accidentally fall into orderly relationship though trials should be made throughout eternity.

Nor is the objection of "efficient cause" much better. It affirms that the eye is the cause of sight and that it sees because it can see, not because it was designed to see. It may properly be allowed that the eye sees because it can see, but also that it sees because it was made to see. This objection asks us to ignore the obvious marks of design and not to think. It is but little better, if any, than the objection of mere chance.

Another objection to the Design Argument consists in an appeal

to the theory of evolution as giving a sufficient account of the present, orderly constitution of nature. It is assumed that law, if given sufficient time, can accomplish all that has been accomplished. But this objection overlooks the very important fact that the law is not an agent, but only a method by which an agent works. Only beings are agents and unless a being were behind any supposed law of evolution, that law could have no efficiency. Whatever might be evolved by such a law must first have been brought into operation by the agent employing the method. Even Darwin, though he at first expressed the belief that natural selection excludes design, was inclined in later life to predicate designed laws which determine things generally. Then all the intelligent purpose shown in nature now must have controlled the evolution of it from the beginning. Therefore evolution could, at most, be no more than a method employed by an intelligent designer.

Objectors to the Design Argument sometimes assume that it is necessary to be extremely modest in our claims to theological knowledge. They assert that, because of finite intelligence, we are not capable of knowing that the world is a result of design and that all we can know is that things appear to be designed by an intelligent mind for certain ends. But do we not commonly assume that things are as they appear to be? Physical science bases its inductions on the appearance of things. Why can theology not do likewise? And if we cannot fully comprehend the infinite, does it therefore follow that we can know nothing of God's operation and design in nature? Because we cannot comprehend the vastness of limitless space, shall we cease to recognize what we can comprehend of it?

The last objection to which attention is called is that based upon the operation of instinct. It is said that as blind instinct operating through animals may accomplish results similar to those of intelligent purpose, so all that appears to be design may be the result of such a cause. In reply, let it be stated first that instinct may not be a blind impulse, but, as once defined, "a propensity prior to experience and independent of instruction." Certainly it is found only in organisms and should be regarded as belonging to the animal constitution. It evidently indicates great intelligence in the power that implanted such instincts. There simply is no reason for attributing instinct to blind force. Actually, instinct itself is a remarkable example of design and can be accounted for adequately

only by regarding it as an instrument of an intelligent mind.

In spite of all objections, the Design Argument for God's existence still stands in all its strength. Design is evident from both inorganic and organic creation. Marks of wise purpose are seen everywhere, far surpassing any human ingenuity and clearly supporting the correctness of our intuition of the existence of a personal God.

III. The Human Nature or Anthropological Argument

1. **The Argument Described**—The Human Nature or Anthropological Argument is frequently called the Moral Argument. We prefer the more comprehensive term *anthropological* which reasons from man's mental, moral and religious nature to the conclusion that the creator must have possessed a similar nature. In reasoning from effect to an adequate first cause, it is like the Cosmological Argument. As the material universe must have had a sufficient cause, so also must the soul of man. The purpose in setting forth this as a separate argument is that it shows the author of man's soul to be the possessor of a like nature. The lofty powers of the human spirit could never have come from nonintelligent matter and force, but must be assigned to a cause possessing qualities of a far higher grade. This argument also partakes of the nature of that from design by showing the adaptations of human nature to nature as a whole.

This argument may be stated in part in the form of a syllogism, as follows:

> *Major Premise.* As an intelligent and free moral being, man has had a beginning upon earth;
>
> *Minor Premise.* Nonintelligent matter and force are not an adequate cause of intelligence, free will and conscience in man;
>
> *Conclusion.* Therefore, as an effect, man's spiritual nature can be referred only to a cause possessing intelligence, freedom and a moral nature, which imply personality.

2. **Argument from Man's Intelligence**—Man's intellect must have had an adequate cause. But it cannot properly be attributed to the nonintelligent any more than we can expect fulness to emanate from emptiness. Mind cannot have come from matter. That they are essentially different in nature is the general conviction of mankind. Only in speculative theories is the distinction ever denied.

No two ideas are more widely different than those of mind and matter. Matter is known by its properties, but mind is known only by its phenomena. Also the terms describing each are essentially different. Thought is not conceived as having length, weight, area, color, thickness or temperature. Only in figurative usage can such terms be applied to mind and its phenomena.

Inasmuch as an effect cannot contain nor be greater than its cause, intelligence cannot have come from the nonintelligent. The cause of the human mind is an eternal mind; and because the human mind is, we know that God has mind.

3. **Argument from Man's Freedom.** Another fact concerning the nature of God that may be known from human nature is that God is a free being. The fact that persons possess free will proves origination from a source possessing free will. It is no more possible that human free will would have originated in that which is not free than that fulness could have come out of emptiness. The God of the pantheist never could have produced mankind. That persons have free will is the universal belief of mankind and is a belief denied only in speculative reasoning.

Humankind possesses a firm conviction about the reality of human freedom. Even when it is denied in theory, human words and actions betray the lingering belief. But this freedom is not like the water of a river flowing between its banks, which of necessity must flow toward the lower point and is free to do only that. Mankind has the power of alternative choice. Persons can change the course of a river and cause it to flow in any one of several directions. They can build houses, bend iron, or freely act on a body contrary to the power of gravitation. The fact of such freedom is evidence that the creator of mankind must also be free.

4. **Argument from Man's Moral Nature**—Our conscience, or feeling of moral obligation, implies One over us to whose law we are responsible. By the very constitution of our nature we have a sense of right and wrong. It is often expressed by the words *ought* and *ought not*. This sense arises from our recognition of One superior to us on whom we are dependent and who rightfully has authority over us. It has reference to law that we are under and which we recognize as right.

Conscience is real and its requirements are imperative. It cannot be denied or ignored without its reproof. It is not controlled by the will. We cannot free ourselves from its requirements. It demands

and rewards obedience and punishes disobedience. All of this points to a law over us. which in turn implies a giver and administrator of it, one who is over us and not appointed by us and one who is above us as a free, personal being.

It is probably this universal sense of moral obligation to God which has been the ground of the common conviction that God is. If there were no personal God, then the constant inclination to so believe would be a lie stamped indelibly upon human nature. But surely this cannot be. There must be a personal creator possessed of a moral nature which is reflected in similar attributes in the nature of humankind. Certainly the moral cannot come from the nonmoral.

5. **Argument from Man's Religious Nature**—Again, mankind's religious nature, the very tendency to worship, implies the existence of God. Man is incurably religious and has always and everywhere worshiped. This tendency to worship finds an adequate reference only in a being who as a person is capable of communion and as a perfect being is worthy of adoration.

Among all plants and animals and with regard to the physical nature of man there is found no desire, capacity, or necessity for which nature has not made adequate provisions. Plants require water and water exists for their satisfaction. Animals and persons have an appetite for food and appropriate food is provided to satisfy. This law of available satisfaction is a general law of nature. Shall we not, then, also suppose that there is a complement to the craving of human souls?

The animal nature is capable of full satisfaction by the material things of this world. But the human soul has aspirations for things beyond this world. It seeks for fellowship in a higher realm, spiritual and eternal. It has a capacity and desire for loving, trusting and worshiping a higher being on whom it feels dependent and whom it would fellowship. As thirst of the human body points to the fact of the existence of water, so certainly does the thirst of the soul prove the existence of God. One of these desires is as natural and as universal as the other. When millions of Christians testify that they have found a satisfaction for the soul's desires in a blessed fellowship and communion with God, who can confidently deny it?

6. **Objections to the Human-Nature Argument**—Various objections are made to this argument. The primary one is the charge

that it naively ascribes human qualities to God. The objection is well represented by Herbert Spencer as follows:

> "If we make the grotesque supposition that the ticking and other movements of a watch constitute a kind of consciousness, and that a watch possessed of such a consciousness insisted on regarding the watchmaker's action as determined, like its own, by springs and escapements, we should simply complete a parallel of which religious teachers think much. And were we to suppose that a watch not only formulated the cause of its existence in these mechanical terms, but held that watches were bound out of reverence so to formulate this cause, and even vituperated as atheistic watches any that did not venture so to formulate, we should merely illustrate the presumption of theologians by carrying their own argument a step further." (*First Principles of a New Philosophy,* pp. 94, 95.)

This objection is so well answered by Samuel Harris that his reply is given here and is deemed a sufficient answer:

> "The objection rests on the absurdity that, if a watch should become endowed with reason, it would still remain a mere machine, just as it was before, and therefore would see nothing in itself but mechanism, and could ascribe nothing but mechanism to its maker. But if a watch were endowed with reason it would no longer be a mere machine, but a rational person. Then contemplating its own mechanism it would infer, precisely as a rational man does in contemplating it, that it had a maker like itself in intelligence, but not necessarily like itself in mechanism. And should this intelligent watch ridicule all intelligent watches that believe they were made by an intelligent maker, it would be like Mr. Spencer ridiculing intelligent men for believing their Creator to be an intelligent being." (*The Self-Revelation of God,* pp. 434, 435.)

IV. The Ontological Argument

1. **Statement of the Argument**—The Ontological Argument is known as an *a priori* argument and usually includes all arguments for the divine existence that do not reason from effect to cause, as do those we have considered above. It endeavors to show that the real existence of God is involved in the idea of such a being. Because much stress has been placed upon it by theistic writers of

past centuries, it is stated here. It has been employed in varying forms by many eminent men, including Anselm (to whom the original form of it is attributed), Descartes, Samuel Clarke, Kant and Cousin. Anselm's form of the Argument is stated by Dr. Miley:

> "We have the idea of the most perfect being, a being than whom a greater or more perfect cannot be conceived. This idea includes, and must include, actual existence, because actual existence is of the necessary content of the idea of the most perfect. An ideal being, however perfect in conception, cannot answer to the idea of the most perfect. Hence we must admit the actual existence; for only with this content can we have the idea of the most perfect being. This most perfect being is God. Therefore God must exist."

This argument may be stated briefly as follows: Because there exists the idea of the most perfect being possible, such a being actually and necessarily exists.

2. **Theistic Value of the Argument**—This argument is open to criticism on the ground that the existence of the idea of a thing does not necessarily prove the existence of that thing. Certainly the argument is not true of all the fantastic ideas of superstitious people. Whatever theistic value the argument has, it has not been apparent to many capable thinkers, especially of the present. Whether or not its defect can be clearly stated, it certainly has limited value as a proof. We agree with the large proportion of modern theistic writers in the judgment that it is inconclusive as a proof of the existence of God.

CHAPTER III

ANTITHEISTIC THEORIES

Antitheism is understood here to include all theories that deny the doctrine of a personal God who is creator, preserver and ruler of all things. It includes atheism, polytheism, pantheism, materialism, and materialistic evolution. Materialism might be made to include positivism and also naturalistic evolution; but the classification here made, by which positivism is included under materialism and evolution is treated separately, is thought to be the most practical for the majority of readers. In the theistic proofs already given, we have sufficient disproof of all these theories. The purpose here, therefore, is to concentrate on the elements in them which are opposed to theism.

I. Atheism

1. **Meaning of Atheism** –Atheism is the open and positive denial that God exists. It is a position of pure negation and itself affirms nothing. It is a direct denial of what theism affirms.

Few persons openly profess to be atheists because the term itself is one of reproach. Those who deny the existence of a personal God usually profess belief in something impersonal as being God. Such persons assign to the place of God things like thought, force, motion, the "unknowable," the "infinite absolute," or moral order. But such persons, in their endeavor to save themselves from the disgrace of the merely negative position of atheism, do violence to the correct meaning of the terms *God* and *atheism*. God does not mean mere force and he who allows no other God than mere force is an atheist whether admittedly so or not.

2. **Unreasonableness of Atheism**—Atheism is a most unreasonable position. The most any reasonable person can say is "I do not know if there is a God." This is antitheistic agnosticism. What arrogant presumption on the part of a person to go to the length of actually claiming that "there is no God"! How can any person with finite capacities know that there is no God? Unless one is omnipresent—in every place in the universe at the same time – how can that person be sure that God is not existing somewhere? If one does not know fully every personal being in the universe, how can that person be sure that one known only slightly may not be God? A person must claim possesion of the infinite qualities of God in order to deny God's existence with confidence. If one is

not infinite in the knowledge of all places, times, and causes, how can that person say that God is not somewhere, that he has not been known to act in past ages, or that he has not caused certain things? Surely, "The fool hath said in his heart, 'There is no God!' "

3. **Possibility of Atheism**—To have doubts about the being of God is possible and certainly many honest persons have doubted. But it is quite another thing to assert that there is no God. For an honest and thinking person to deny the existence of God, and to do so without having to doubt the denial, is impossible. One certainly may arrive at a place where the conscious belief in God is confused by speculation. But with the removal of that speculative influence the doubting person naturally will revert back to a conscious belief in God.

II. Polytheism

1. **Meaning and Origin of Polytheism**—The word *polytheism* comes from two Greek words meaning "many gods." According to this theory the attributes and activities of the infinite God are distributed among many limited gods. The testimony of both the Bible and history is that the original religion of mankind was monotheistic (meaning "one God"), but that at an early date mankind apostatized from the worship of the one true God and began to worship many deities. From that early date and throughout human history polytheism has been widely prevalent.

The worship of a plurality of gods began in nature worship. Persons began to serve the creature more than the creator. They began to worship the various powers of nature with which they came into contact and by which they were benefited, especially the sun, moon, stars, fire, water and air. Then these supposed powers were personified and later it was assumed that a personal god ruled over each. Especially did the common people come to believe in the actual existence of these imaginary deities. To the contrary, however, the more enlightened persons usually have held either monotheism or pantheism.

2. **Different Aspects of Polytheism**—The character of polytheism has varied according to the traditions, culture and other influences prevalent among a given people. Among some persons it degenerated into fetish-worship. With the cultured Greeks of the past it was a way of expressing their refined humanitarianism by deifying their heroic men. In India, where it originated in pantheis-

tic philosophy, it has been carried to great extremes both in the number of deities and also in the degraded character of many of them. The Apostle Paul states that in their false worship the Gentiles sacrificed to demons and not to God (1 Cor. 10:20).

It is not inconsistent with the known facts of idol-worship or with the common usage of the term for demons to say that evil spirits have taken advantage of this apostate worship of polytheism. This accounts for the alleged supernatural element of polytheistic religions and in a measure for the faith many persons place in them. Probably the error of polytheism is sufficiently shown by the unity displayed in nature, the evil fruits of polytheism, and the positive proofs of theism.

III. Pantheism

1. **Definition of Pantheism.** Pantheism etymologically means that all is God or that God is all. It probably would be unfair to the notable philosophers holding this position to define it in the literal sense that the pen with which these words were written is a part of God or that the book held by the reader is a part of God. And yet the idea as represented by them seems to lead to such conclusions.

Difficulty attends every attempt to define pantheism because it has been conceived differently in different times and places. To describe its various aspects would require a lengthy history of it. The oldest form of pantheism is that of India where it has been prevalent for thousands of years. It also had a great influence in forming the philosophies of Greece. Modern pantheism had its origin shortly after the Reformation, with Spinoza as one of its ablest advocates.

2. **Monistic Aspects of Pantheism**—Pantheism is strongly monistic, affirming that there is but one substance. That one substance is God. Materialistic pantheism asserts that this one substance is matter. Idealistic pantheism assumes that this one substance is mind. But the common sense of mankind rejects these ideas and even the supporters of them do not always find it possible to act in conformity with them.

The common form of pantheism affirms that the one absolute substance has two modes of manifestation: (1) As thought it is mind; (2) As extension it is matter. Pantheism denies the personality of God and allows that he comes to consciousness only in the thoughts of men or higher created orders such as angels. It also

denies to God free will and affirms that all acts are of God and are necessary. In its very nature pantheism is strongly fatalistic. Spinoza consistently held that there is no real self-determination in the universe.

3. **Defects of Pantheism**—Pantheism is to be rejected for various reasons. Its fundamental principle of monism is an unprovable assumption that is contradicted by the facts of nature. Again, it is objectionable because it denies that God has intelligence, freedom, and personality and thus it fails to account for the first cause of the universe and the marks of design in the universe. Such an impersonal God as is conceived by pantheists offers no more than atheism with apparent religious overtones. It affords no divine fellowship, no divine person to receive love and worship. The God of pantheism does not deserve our reverence because we as persons are greater and he must be identified, not only with all the good in the world, but also with all the evil. Pantheism offers no kind heavenly Father to awaken in us devotion. It also fails to provide any ground for moral obligation. Not only in its essential nature, but also as illustrated by its history, it is only one step removed from athesim.

IV. Materialism

1. **Antitheistic Character of Materialism**—Materialism denies the distinction between matter and mind, affirming that all that exists is matter only, and that all phenomena are the actions of matter. It affirms that matter is eternal, possessing in itself the inherent power to develop all forms of life, including the power of thought. Not only does it deny the existence of the human spirit as a distinct, immaterial entity, but it also denies the existence of a personal God. It is at present probably the most prevalent of all the antitheistic theories. It allies itself with science and assumes to be one of the "assured results of scientific investigation." The materialism of modern science is not new. It is essentially the same as that of Epicurus of ancient times. It has maintained the same general antitheistic character, whether developed from Locke's philosophy or as later represented in the "Positivism" of Comte.

2. **Fruitless Attempt to Account for Thought**—Mind and matter are very different. Matter we know by its properties, but mind we know only by its phenomena. The terms that describe the nature of one are inadequate to describe the other. Persons instinctively have referred the qualities of matter to the substance called matter

and the phenomena of mind to another and different substance called spirit. Thought and feeling are known only through consciousness, but material things are known through sensation. Materialism, however, denies this fundamental and perennial distinction between mind and matter which has been the universal belief of mankind.

Materialism denies that intelligence is the cause of order in the world and affirms instead that such order is the cause of intelligence. With its denial of mind it attempts to account for thought by referring to the jarring atoms in the brain. It makes all thought the result of sensations. According to one materialistic theory, the nerves are caused to vibrate by a particular affection, and this vibration continues along the nerve until it reaches the brain. Here it produces a vibratory movement upon the atoms of the brain, which causes a sensation. By the frequent repetition of such sensations the vibratory movement acquires the power of repeating itself spontaneously—and behold, thought supposedly is the result! But this theory of thought is confronted with great difficulties, not the least of which is a lack of a unitary agent as a ground for memory. The transitory and constantly changing atoms composing the brain fail to provide such a unitary agent. This theory of the origin of thought appears to be superficial and unprovable.

3. **Reasoning from Analogy Defective**—By its denial of mind as distinct essence, and consequently by disallowing the existence of an infinite personal Spirit as creator of all things, materialism is confronted by the necessity of accounting for these things in some other way. An attempt is made by the use of certain analogies.

Materialists tell us that, as water is composed of oxygen and hydrogen and yet the properties of water are not to be found in these elements, so living matter is composed of such things as carbonic acid, water and ammonia, although the properties of living matter are not to be found in these elements. It is reasoned, therefore, that since nothing is necessary but the combination of its constituent elements to form water, so no life principle is necessary to be added to the combined elements composing living matter in order to bring about life. But their attempt at reasoning from analogy is a failure, because no meaningful analogy exists. Water, being a material substance, may be formed by combining its chemical elements; but life, intellect, sensibility, and will are not material in their nature. It is unsound reasoning which assumes that they may be derived from purely material elements.

Again, materialists attempt to reason by analogy from the conservation of forces. Because physical forces are convertible from one form to another, it is assumed that they may be converted into thought. But the sum of physical forces does not exceed the total of the forces themselves. They may be changed from one form to another, but never thereby diminished or increased.

Every argument presented above in proof of theism is an effective argument against materialism. That the material world is the product of intelligence and will is reasonable, but the materialistic theory that it is merely the product of matter and motion lacks credibility. Tyndall said, "The passage from the physics of the brain to the corresponding facts of consciousness is unthinkable. Granted that a definite thought and a definite molecular action in the brain occur simultaneously: we do not possess the intellectual organ, nor apparently any rudiment of the organ, which would enable us to pass, by a process of reasoning, from the one phenomenon to the other."

Materialism has all the defects charged against pantheism as far as religion is concerned. It denies to man's spirit a proper object of worship. Also, in denying free will, it denies the reality of morality and moral obligation.

V. Naturalistic Evolution

The subject of naturalistic evolution might well have been discussed in connection with Materialism, except for the fact that it is so prevalent and so distinct a theory that it deserves separate treatment. Evolution as a theory will be dealt with in the proper place. Here the only purpose is a criticism of the antitheistic aspect of the theory.

1. **Evolution Hypothesis**—Briefly stated, the theory of evolution is that all nature, inorganic and organic, or nonliving and living, has been developed from a lower or simpler form by the agency of forces resident in that simpler form. The theory presumes to account for the present orderly formations of the earth and for the formation and the movements of all the heavenly bodies from the same form of matter and by means of resident forces in that matter. In its narrower sense, the evolution theory attempts to account for the various species of plant and animal life by arguing that the present species have been evolved from lower species principally by a process called natural selection or the survival of the fittest in the struggle for existence.

The evolutionary hypothesis now so popular is of comparatively modern origin. The subject received but little attention until the publication in 1859 of the *Origin of Species* by Charles Darwin. Since that time the theory has been widely advocated in varying forms. In its beginning it was to a great extent atheistic and it has continued to the present to maintain generally atheistic tendencies.

In considering the evolution theory, two questions arise. The first is the question as to the actuality of the origin of species by means of evolution. The second question concerns the cause or law of such evolution if it is actual. Concerning the first, evolutionists suppose that long ago the first protoplasmic cell originated, under favorable conditions, in an environment of seawater. Through long geological periods, it is said, these cells gradually developed by means of inherent forces into all the varied forms of life that have since appeared upon the earth. Human life itself, it is said, appeared millions of years ago as one type of organism of the many that had been developed from the first life.

Let it be remembered that this is only a scientific hypothesis or theory. It has not been proved, nor is it known actually to have taken place. True science regards it as being only a theory. As long as many scientists remain tentative about the actuality of the theory, certainly theology should not build greatly upon it. What science demands of religion we may as properly demand of it, namely that it not build on imaginative and unproven assumptions.

Regarding the cause of this evolutionary change, a variety of opinions have been advanced by those who assume that evolution is a reality. Environment and sexual selection have been stressed as a cause, but natural selection, which may be defined as the survival of the fittest, is the most generally assumed cause. According to this theory, in the struggle for existence in times of stress the weaker die and the stronger members of species survive and propagate a higher type of their species.

It is worthy of notice that improvement of species is thus presumed to be the result of a law of selfishness. If mankind generally should come to obey the Golden Rule, which is doubtless the highest principle of duty dictated by moral reason and most conducive to the happiness of those who observe it, then mankind would cease to evolve. The tendency to help the weak, to build hospitals, infirmaries, and asylums and to conduct other forms of benevolent work would certainly result in the eventual retrogres-

sion of the human species. How strange that the welfare and improvement of the race should require the active denial of the noblest sentiments it has ever known! Surely the mere statement of such a theory is sufficient refutation of it.

2. **Naturalistic and Theistic Evolution**—It is proper and a matter of fairness to make a distinction between theories of evolution. They may be divided into two main classes, naturalistic and theistic. Naturalistic evolution disallows any divine creative work in the formation of the universe, but refers all to nature and forces resident in it. Theistic evolution admits a supernatural element or divine operation either at the beginning of the process or superintending it throughout. It agrees with naturalistic evolution as to the question of the evolutionary process, but differs radically with the naturalistic theory concerning the cause of that assumed evolution of the various forms of life.

Theistic evolutionists differ regarding the nature and extent of the divine operation in the presumed evolutionary process. One group assumes divine creations of the first life, of man's body, and of man's soul at the proper points in the process. Others regard evolution as God's method of creating. Instead of acting by divine fiat at key points in the evolutionary process, they assume that God constantly superintends and directs such development. A third group, which might be called semitheistic, assumes that God vitalized a few simple forms at the beginning and that, by natural forces only, there evolved from these all other forms that have appeared. This is essentially the view of Darwin.

Theistic evolution may somewhat modify the proofs of theism, but it no sense does it weaken them. That Being who can directly effect the marvelous forms of nature by a process of development under divine supervision or who can create simple organisms and endow them with power to evolve the highly organized species of the present time is certainly just as real and as truly personal as any conception of the divine can be. Therefore, inasmuch as it leaves the positive argument for theism in all its strength, theistic evolution need not be considered further in a discussion of antitheistic theories.

The purely naturalistic theory of evolution is by its very nature antitheistic. To disallow a divine element in creation is to disallow God, for if God is not creator, what is he and what rightful claim does he have on us for worship and obedience to his law? If he

created us, we owe him love and loyalty; but if he has no such claim upon us, his requirements are nothing short of injustice.

In rejecting a divine creation of mankind naturalistic evolution makes man a purely material being. It disallows man's fall, depravity and redemption as well as divine providence, the propriety of prayer and worship, and, if it is consistent, life after death. Consequently, its supporters deny the divine element in the Bible, the virgin birth and divinity of Christ, supernatural conversion, miracles and the hope of happiness after death. Instead they advocate an antisupernatural social religion that looks only to the affairs that concern this life. Much of modern antitheism allies itself with this naturalistic evolution.

3. **Difficulties of Naturalistic Evolution**—Insolvable perplexities confront the naturalistic theory of evolution at very important points in its supposed process. Its supporters may say that science is not obligated to assign original causes, but it may be answered that reason inevitably asks for a first cause and that naturalistic evolution, in attempting to meet the requirements of reason, has assigned as cause what it cannot prove to be an adequate cause. With its failure to explain certain problems confronting it, reason must reject the general position of naturalistic evolution.

(1) *It Fails to Account for the Origin of the Universe.* The theory of naturalistic evolution begins with a marvelous and unexplained reality out of which evolved all the high and complex forms of existence in the universe, even including mankind. According to this theory, the original, unexplained reality, without any guiding intelligence, formed out of itself the present universe. This vast universe, with all of its motion and order, supposedly came into being without the assistance of an intelligent mind. Such amazing activity was continued by this nebulous reality in the originating out of itself of living plants and animals in all their complexities. This remarkable achievement went on to form mankind, fully endowed with personality, intellect and will. In its new human form this remarkable reality began to reason out philosophies, develop fine arts, produce civilizations and literatures, build vast empires, make wonderful inventions, develop religion and theology (which it later discovered was all wrong). In the name of science this reality resulted in investigation concerning its own nature, and, behold, it made the disappointing discovery that it was really nothing at all! In human form it had supposed that it

was made in the image of God and that Jesus Christ, its noblest representative, of unimpeachable character and spotless conduct, was God incarnate. But it learned that even he was not really real.

Such is exactly what the theory of naturalistic evolution assumes. It dare not allow the operation of any outside influence, lest it lose its naturalistic character. Appropriating the words of Tyndall when urging for a new definition of matter,

> "Surely the mere statement of such a notion is more than a refutation. But the hypothesis would probably go even farther than this. Many who hold it would probably assent to the position that, at the present moment, all our philosophy, all our poetry, all our science, and all our art—Plato, Shakespeare, Newton and Raphael—are potential in the fires of the sun. We long to learn something of our origin. If the evolution hypothesis be correct, even this unsatisfied yearning must have come to us across the ages which separate the unconscious primeval mist from the consciousness of today. I do not think that any holder of the evolution hypothesis would say that I overstate or overstrain it in any way. I merely strip it of all vagueness, and bring it before you, unclothed and unvarnished, the notions by which it must stand or fall. Surely these notions represent an absurdity too monstrous to be entertained by any sane mind." (*Fragments of Science,* pp. 453, 454.)

But even if reason would allow the entertaining of the idea just described, the naturalistic evolutionist has the responsibility of showing the source of this original, unformed, and yet forming reality. Science may assume it as primordial, but reason is insistent on having an account of the source of this wonderful thing. If it be said that it is eternal, then the question arises, Why did it not ever remain what it originally was? What caused it to change when and as it did? Assuming this strange theory to be true and that our evolutionist friends were present as careful observers throughout the process of development from that primitive stage until the present, *how could they prove that no unseen, spiritual and personal power was operating through nature?* Here is another insurmountable obstacle to naturalistic evolution. With its failure to account for the origin of the universe, naturalistic evolution fails as a disproof of theism.

(2) *It Fails to Account for the Origin of Life.* In addition to its

failure to explain the source of the universe, and the cause of its early operation, naturalistic evolution finds another great difficulty in attempting to show the origin of the first life. In its nature it cannot allow divine intervention at this point, as does theistic evolution. All that is must have sprung entirely from that primitive circumstance, according to the theory. The theory requires spontaneous generation or life having arisen from the nonliving.

A few supporters of the theory have endeavored to evade the difficulties of spontaneous generation by assuming that the first life came to this planet on a meteorite from another planet! But unless a divine creator is admitted, the difficulty of spontaneous generation is merely transferred to another place, not explained. The gulf that separates life and lifeless matter is wide and deep. Any crossing of this impassable gulf is a mere conjecture of those who deny God.

That the failure to find proof of spontaneous generation, a life from nonlife, is fatal to naturalistic evolution is shown by the efforts of its advocates to produce such evidence. One has supposed that the first forms of life were of the nature of a slime formed in an environment of sea-water by an accidental combination of certain chemicals in proper proportions for its production. But no spontaneous generation of life has ever yet been known to occur, and it is reasonable to believe that it never will occur. It is a well-recognized fact in science that life comes only from life.

(3) *It Fails to Account for Man's Body*. The failure of evolution to prove spontaneous generation of life from the nonliving is weakening to the theory. The failure of proof of the theory at a point so vital to it is reason enough for asking that it give proof of other important points on which it rests. Especially is proof demanded that man evolved from the lower animals. The theory requires that he did so evolve. But if a theistic cause is allowed for animal life, then who can say that divine intervention may not be the cause of man, both body and spirit?

Man differs from all lower animals, not only in the high grade of his mental powers, but also in bodily form and stature. This wide difference between man and lower animals cannot be allowed to have resulted from a sudden leap, because the evolution theory requires very gradual changes. The theory requires, then, that there must have been literally millions of transitional forms that lived during millions of years leading up to man from that early

animal ancestor. If these transitional forms or links between man and animals ever lived upon the earth, as evolution assumes, there would necessarily be many traces of them in fossilized skeletal remains in the geological strata formed during or since the time they lived. Remains of animals are found in large numbers; but of these supposed intermediate forms between man and animals, of which there must have been very many both of kinds and number, not one has been found. Thoughtful minds may therefore doubt whether they ever existed.

It is true that certain fossil remains have been discovered which have been hailed as examples of these supposed intermediate forms; but when carefully examined by experts these have not proved conclusively to be such. There really is no conclusive proof that man's organic nature is the result of evolution. Therefore, naturalistic evolution has failed to provide an adequate account of the origin of man's body.

(4) *It Fails to Account for the Origin of Mind.* Major difficulties confront the theory of naturalistic evolution as has been shown in its attempts to account for the origin of the universe, the origin of the first life, and the origin of man's organic nature. A fourth difficulty is in accounting for the origin of man's mind from what this theory presumes originally to have been nonliving and nonintelligent matter.

Only that can be evolved which has first been involved. Nothing can arise out of matter which was not inherently in it. Mind is a faculty of the soul, which is a spiritual essence and is different in its very nature from material things. Material facts or phenomena will not combine with mental facts or phenomena. Reason will not combine with figure or form; thought will not admit of being measured in feet and inches. These are different in their nature and belong to entirely different spheres of being. That this difficulty of contradictory categories is real is shown by the fact that sometimes even evolutionists themselves have had difficulty explaining how matter can be the ground of mental facts.

Even if we were credulous enough to accept the theory of the evolutionists that matter could somehow transform itself into mind, yet another and still greater difficulty must be met. How did matter, which has always been governed by fixed mechanical laws, become independent of such laws and acquire free will? It is evident that man has both mind and the power to choose his

course of conduct. Surely necessity cannot contradict itself by creating the free.

The fact is that naturalistic evolution can give no adequate account of the origin of free will. Neither can it account adequately for the conscience in man, which is grounded in free will. These fundamental qualities of the spiritual man must be accounted for since they are unquestionably real. But, in light of the failure of naturalistic evolution to account for them in man, it cannot stand as a credible theory of origins.

PART II
EVIDENCES OF DIVINE REVELATION, OR APOLOGETICS

Part II

EVIDENCES OF DIVINE REVELATION OR APOLOGETICS

Wilma Perry, Revision Editor

CHAPTER I

Preliminary Questions and Presumptive Evidences

I. The Proposition to Be Proved

1. **The Question Stated**—Are there sufficient reasons for believing that the Christian Scriptures are the divinely inspired Word of God? Is Christ divine? Is his revelation of God and the authenticity of his teachings affirmed by Scripture? Is there sufficient evidence for this declared truth? Christian apologetics answers these questions affirmatively, by setting forth such reasons or evidences. As used in this connection, "apologetics" implies, not an excuse for that which is unjustifiable, but *a reason for believing the truth.*

Error shrinks from the light, but truth fearlessly welcomes it. Historically Christianity has invited investigation of its claims. It asks of us no blind faith. It can produce evidence of the truthfulness of all it affirms. Skeptics often base their arguments on unproved assumptions or theories. Unbelief may result from either an ignorance of the evidences that support Christianity, or from an unwillingness to accept these facts. Honest doubters are often such because they are not familiar with the evidences. David Hume, the Scottish philosopher and skeptic, admitted, as Dr. Johnson says, that he had never read the New Testament attentively. Doubtless there would be fewer skeptics if all would, before making an assault on Christianity, decide first to examine it, as did Lord Lyttleton and Gilbert West. In order to assault Christianity more effectually, they decided first to examine it. After investigating the evidences fairly, they became believers and defenders of Christianity.

2. **The Importance of Knowing the Evidences**—A knowledge of the evidences of Christianity cannot be exaggerated since such knowledge becomes for the investigator both an intellectual and a moral (spiritual) problem, one that has a great bearing on his present and eternal welfare. The claims and requirements of Christianity, therefore, are of vital concern to every person. None can be conscientiously indifferent toward them. The most devout Christian, who believes that the Bible is the Word of God, ought also to be familiar with the evidences of the truth it proclaims. Unquestioningly, he may believe the Bible as he has been taught by others. However, it is better that he believe the facts that support his faith by becoming thoroughly familiar with these evidences. In so doing he shall experience the joy of knowing the infallible proofs of the divine authority of the Scriptures. It becomes his duty, as for every Christian, to study the evidences of Christianity. This will increase his confidence in the Scriptures and in the God revealed in them. His own convictions will then enable him to propagate the truth convincingly to others. Furthermore, it will prepare him intellectually and spiritually to meet the false arguments presented by cults or other anti-Christian groups.

Without a reason for his faith the Christian may become a prey to skepticism. Although one's experience of faith in the God of the Scriptures may become the most powerful influence upon his life, such evidence alone will not enable one to defend one's belief against the subtle argument of the atheists. Nor will it save him from considerable intellectual confusion. The Christian ought to be thoroughly familiar with the facts that support his faith.

If the investigation of the proofs of Christianity are important to the believer, how much more important must these proofs be for persons who doubt the authority of the Scriptures and reject them. Doubters surely should make every possible effort to know all the facts before committing themselves to open infidelity. To reject the Scriptures as God's Word is to reject one's Creator and to spend one's life and one's influence against him!

Great minds wrestle with truth and always will. An *apologia* recognizes the tension existing between classical Christianity's theism and the modern mind, knowing that the problem lies not in the truth but in the perception of what truth is. This tension is distorted by the ramifications which emotions or prejudice impose upon it.

It should be kept in mind that many of the best men of the past and present — men of broad minds and keen insights, much learning, careful discrimination, and unquestioned honesty– have been earnest believers. They have come to grips with the question, If Christ of the Bible is not who Scripture declares him to be, who or what shall men *substitute* for him? And the second question is even more personal: What apparent attitudes toward himself prevent a man from surrendering his will to the Christ revealed in the Scriptures? These two questions leave one obligated like any reputable scientist, to look for facts—observable evidence and demonstrable reasons for believing or disbelieving the truth revealed in the Bible.

Another reason why this study is important is that of discrimination—understanding the difference between the incomparable excellence of the doctrinal and moral teachings of the Bible and those proclaimed by another whose claims to divine inspiration for his teachings are questioned both by historians and theologians. Historians studying religious teachings and behavior within a certain time-frame in history often find religion practiced within a given culture used as a safeguard against the terrors of the unknown, or as a superstitious belief explaining natural or moral order. Some theologians, on the other hand, have attempted to *interpret* religion by subordinating divine revelation, as explained in the Bible, to reason; the supernatural to natural phenomena; and intellectual maturity to religious fantasies. Others reduce religion to the question of meaningfulness in the life of an individual as perceived by his or her bias or situation in life.

Deism attempted to substitute its "natural religion," by rejecting the Scriptures and Christ and yet holding to a "functional theism" which declared that the existence of God rested on moral grounds. Deism proved to be one of the great failures of any system that professed religion. In France, where it was supported by the government, approved by leaders of influence, and accepted by the people, deism was so thoroughly organized that it appropriated Christian houses of worship. Yet it had no power and no soul, and was soon acknowledged by one of the leaders of the country as being far inferior to that for which it had been exchanged.

The evidences supporting Christianity should be studied impartially and honestly. The subject is too important to be studied with prejudice. But because of men's depravity of heart, too often

they do not study this subject as they would a question of history or science. They are often unwilling that the Bible should be proved to be the Word of God because they do not wish to feel obligated to obey it. It demands submission, and man's proud heart rebels. Christianity promises knowledge of the truth only to those who desire to obey it. It is inconsistent with present probation that the evidences of the truth should be such as would compel belief on the part of those who prefer to doubt.

A further reason why men reject the Bible is that it demands acceptance as a revelation freely given of God, and man's pride leads him to prefer reasoning out his own philosophy instead. Rather than to receive truth as a gift, they prefer to discover, because this reflects more honor on themselves, whereas the truly honest seeker for truth will come to the investigation in the humble attitude of a learner. He will accept facts only. He will not be hasty in coming to a decision, but will learn the facts and then deliberatly draw proper conclusions.

3. **Present-day Task of Apologetics**—From its beginning, Christianity has had its claims opposed by skeptics and defended by apologists. The objections by these opposers have always been of the same general character, though they varied in details. And apologists also have varied their methods and emphases in meeting the nature of particular attacks against Christianity. Hence, the defenses of Christianity of the present day must be such as will meet current assaults by skeptics.

For background let us first consider five periods which may distinguish the history of apologetics.

(1) The earliest preachers addressed their message to the Jews who opposed Jesus and his teachings. To them, Jesus was not the promised Messiah nor did his ministry correspond with their perception of Old Testament prophecies and events in the life of the anticipated Messiah.

(2) As the apostles and other early followers of Jesus propagated the gospel beyond the boundaries of Jewish thought and life, another form of skepticism confronted them. Christianity was rejected as the one true religion. The Scriptures were rejected as being a divine revelation and the doctrine of one God was denied. Prominent opposers of Christianity of this period were Celsus and Porphyry. Christian apologists answering these disclaimers were Justin Martyr, Tatian, and Athenagoras, whose writings argued in

favor of the life-transforming power of Christianity. Although other arguments were used at the time, it should be remembered that the experimental proofs seem to have been largely used as Christian evidence by the apologists in this period.

(3) The third period of Christian apologetics came as a result of the rise of deism in the eighteenth century. Lord Herbert advocated a natural religion in which he denied all that is distinctively Christian, although he professed belief in theism. David Hume later advocated universal skepticism. The result was English deism, German rationalism, and French atheism. This wave of universal skepticism laid the groundwork for future rejection of the idea of God. This strong tide of skepticism was stemmed successfully by Christianity's able apologists who set forth the evidences of Christianity with a thoroughness never before known. Eminent among these were Joseph Butler and William Paley. Butler's *Analogy of Religion* and Paley's *Evidences of Christianity* helped turn back the tide of infidelity and restore men's faith in the Bible.

(4) Following on the heels of deism came another form of skepticism, the destructive force of higher criticism, identified by its strongly rationalistic approach. It denied any inspiration of the Scriptures which constitutes them in any real sense the Word of God, or an authoritative revelation of truth. It denied the divinity of Christ and other supernatural manifestations described in the Scriptures. Aligning itself with materialistic evolution, higher criticism often had a strong antitheistic tendency. Christian apologists were challenged to adapt arguments used in the past or to produce others to support the truth on those points where it was being assaulted.

(5) Present day apologists are confronted with several varieties of modern theoretical atheism. Basic to this skepticism is the belief that religion hinders intellectual progress and that if it were not for the fetters religion imposes on men's minds they could more effectively be guided by their own reason in finding ways to define and interpret truth. One can see how this form of atheism denies the supernatural simply by rejecting *any* form of theism. The agnostic professing to suspend judgment about the existence of God contends that worshiping false gods is in reality, the worship of no god. Modern skepticism says Christianity has failed to change man's moral behavior, to implement social justice, and to effect needed changes in the political order.

Another premise inherent in modern thought is the belief that God as an ultimate being is a subjective question rather than a metaphysical one, the important question being: "What meaning does faith in God have for *me*, *my* existence, *my* survival, *my* comfort, *my* hope?" According to this theory, if God is meaningful to a person, he exists; if God is not meaningful to him, he does not exist.

II. Nature and Classification of Evidences

1. **Probable, Not Demonstrative Proofs**—The nature of some truths is that their truthfulness can be demonstrated, while the proof of these truths is such that the opposite is not conceivable. But other facts equally true and capable of proof cannot be demonstrated, but are *proved by probable evidence.* All historical facts are dependent upon such proof. The evidences of Christianity are probable, not demonstrative, since the giving of Christian revelation and the origin of Christianity took place in the past. Probable proofs, however, may furnish as great certainty as demonstrative proofs, if the evidence is sufficient. Accepted probable proofs are that George Washington was the first President of the United States, that Napoleon Bonaparte lived, and that Abraham Lincoln signed the Proclamation of Emancipation and died at the hand of an assassin. The divine origin of the Bible and Christianity may be certainly known by evidences of a similar nature, if those evidences are sufficient in themselves. And it is in the light of such proofs regarding the divine origin of Christianity that unreasonable demands for further substantiation are often made by skeptics or immature thinkers, not accustomed to weighing evidence. Therefore, to require *demonstrable* evidences of the divine origin of Christianity is unreasonble.

An important rule for weighing probable evidences is that the proofs of Christianity are not to be taken singly, but together, since the *strength of Christian evidence lies especially in its cumulative nature.* The vast amount of evidence all pointing in the same direction has the value of a demonstration.

2. **Rational and Authenticating Evidences**—Another important distinction necessary for properly studying evidences for Christianity is one commonly disregarded by rationalistic skeptics: that of identifying both rational and authenticating evidences. *Rational evidence shows why a thing must be true. Authenticating evidence shows why we should believe it is true.* Rational evidences are

employed in supporting those truths pertaining to "natural religion" such as the existence of God, moral distinctions, free will, and immortality. Authenticating evidences attest a messenger or message as of God and show why we should accept the message on the ground of that testimony. Examples of authenticating evidences are miracles and prophecy. Similar evidences are the basis for the claims of "revealed religion" regarding the Trinity, atonement, and pardon. Modern skeptics have difficulty with both, since the rules of rationalism ignore the fact that there may be good reasons for believing a proposition true though one can not see any reason why it is true except that it is affirmed by a well-attested witness. Christian apologetics properly employs both rational and authenticating evidences.

3. **Main Classes of Positive Evidences**—Various classifications may be made of the evidences of Christianity. For our purpose they may be grouped into four main divisions, similar to those made by Paley in his *Evidences* and other writers since his publication. They are as follows: (1) *External evidences,* including the authenticity and credibility of the Scriptures, miracles, and prophecy; (2) *Internal evidences,* which reason from the degree of perfection of the doctrinal and moral standards of the Bible, its adaptation to man's needs, its harmony with nature, the harmony of its parts, and the character of Christ; (3) *Experimental evidences,* which appeal to the effects of Christianity on believers' hearts and lives; (4) *Collateral evidences,* which reason from the rapid spread of Christianity when first propagated, its effects on society where propagated, and its acceptance by eminent persons. These four classes are sometimes called "positive" evidences.

Another class of proofs not to be overlooked is designated "presumptive" evidences. The rationale for this kind of proof rests on the fact that God can reveal himself to man and that man needs this revelation of God's nature and purpose. Hence, it is not unreasonable to suppose that God has made himself known to man in this fashion. And since the Bible agrees with this presumption about God and man, it may be believed as a record of that revelation from God.

III. Probability of a Divine Revelation

1. **Possibility of Revelation**—No one who believes in the existence of a personal God can consistently deny the possibility of his giving a revelation of truth to man. Those who object to revelation

on the ground of its impossibility do so, in nearly every instance, because they hold a pantheistic or similar anti-theistic conception of God, whereas those who believe in divine revelation contend that nature is not the limiting force prohibiting God from revealing himself. The author of intelligent communication, or of spiritual insight for that matter, though he is a purely spiritual being, is not to be limited so that he cannot communicate with human spirits in union with material bodies. Nor is man, with his finite knowledge of truth, unable to *receive* a revelation from the Omniscient One, as some believe. Divine revelation rests on God's initiative, in that he adapts his omniscience and his message to the finite mind of man. With this premise the difficulty regarding the *possibility* of revelation vanishes.

2. **Necessary as a Standard of Right**—If one considers reasonable the supposition that man was created in God's own image, it is likewise reasonable that man needs a divine revelation through which he may know truths necessary for his highest good and God's glory. History attests the fact that men in all ages have expressed a hope that such a revelation would be given.

Another presupposition holds that because of man's perverted moral nature, his conscience is not a satisfactory guide. Nor can human reason and philosophy, which often reflect men's conflicting opinions, serve as sufficient moral guides. Furthermore, a great number of persons would be incapable of understanding philosophy. Most of the philosophies followed by man indicate their need to be supplemented by a message from God, since the wisest of philosophers have themselves often gone astray religiously. Some have been immoral and taught contrary to moral standards. A number of anti-theists missed the mark widely. Socrates urged divination, and was given to fornication. Plato taught that to lie is honorable. Cato was a drunkard, and condoned suicide. Seneca approved fornication, and advocated self-murder. Surely a revelation is needed so man can know the divine standard of right.

3. **Necessary for Pardon of Sin**—Man is capable of feeling a moral obligation to God; thus all men recognize *intuitively* that some things are morally right and others morally wrong. The feeling that they have sinned, are guilty, and deserve penalty, is sensed among men everywhere. Where shall they find pardon for their sins? Nature gives no reason for expecting pardon. Her laws are inexorable. Nature cannot pardon her violaters *personally*. He

who puts his hand into the fire will be burned. He who thrusts a knife into his heart will die. He who steps off a precipice is dashed to pieces. Reasoning from nature's laws, one cannot expect pardon. On the other hand, if one holds to the fact that this is a moral universe, designed and sustained by God, he soon learns that he cannot violate moral laws with impunity. If sinners go unpunished, how then is God's moral order respected? And God, although he is sole sovereign, may not properly pardon by divine prerogative if he is to govern righteously. Yet man must be pardoned if he is to be happy. Intuitively, he hopes that pardon is possible through the goodness of God, but reason forbids this. And nature and reason give no hint of atonement. This wonderful truth is brought to men only through divine revelation, which explains divine salvation. Since *man needs pardon, revelation points the way for him to find it. This is strong reason for expecting a divine revelation.*

4. **Necessary to the Understanding of Providence and Prayer** Trust in God and his loving care rests on one's knowledge of the Providence of God, which evokes man's highest love for his Creator. Man needs to know that God loves him, that his watchful eye is over him and, through God's fatherly care, that he can enjoy the benefits that come to him. Nature does not make clear the God-man relationship. And because man needs this affinity with God, he should seek God's glory through this relationship, and his own true happiness. A divine revelation explaining the nature of this affinity is therefore antecendently probable.

Prayer, like religion, is almost universal: most men have a disposition to pray and do so at some time in their lives. It is therefore assumed that this desire to pray springs from an innate tendency within man. But without a divine revelation, how may one know that God will hear and answer? All we learn about God from nature would lead us to assume that God's dealings with us cannot be changed by prayer, since an all-wise ruler of the universe could not change his course at the asking of any one of his creatures without creating great confusion everywhere. This reasoning illustrates why deists or other anti-theists are characteristically prayerless persons: they may feel no need to pray. Or they may refuse to pray because they do not reverence or obey God as their Creator. Other questions that can only be answered by divine revelation persist: "What is prayer's purpose?" "Will it be answered?" "How much should one pray?" "What constitutes acceptable prayer?"

"Do the prayer rituals practiced by ancient man or modern cults define acceptable prayer, such as certain prayer postures, repetitive prayer phrases, etc.?" "Are these things effective in persuading God to grant an answer to prayer?"

IV. Expected Divine Revelation Characterizes the Scriptures.

The antecedent probability of a divine revelation thus far discussed is not a reason for assuming the Christian Scriptures are that revelation, but merely reason for assuming the probability of a revelation that might have been given orally to the patriarchs prior to Moses or to other individuals. The Scriptures presuppose revelation is to be attested later by more positive proofs, but now we are considering only those evidences essential to the presumptive proofs that the Scriptures are that antecedently probable revelation. *Our task is to show what can reasonably be expected to be the nature and characteristics of a divine revelation, and then show that the Scriptures bear such marks.*

1. **Probable Contents of Divine Revelation**—A revelation adequate to our purpose must (1) furnish a holy and benevolent object of worship and show man's relation to it; (2) show the possibility of pardon of sin without the sacrifice of God's righteous character, and also the conditions by which man may obtain such forgiveness; (3) show the nature of, and conditions for, a restoration of man's original nature so that he can live righteously; (4) present a perfect standard of doctrine and morals; (5) reveal the nature and extent of divine providence, and teach us how to pray. The Bible does this with remarkable clearness because it is adaptable to human conditions and understanding generally.

2. **Probable Manner of Divine Revelation**—Any supernatural revelation of truth must be given in a manner which harmonizes with the laws of human thought and man's capacity to comprehend such truths. It is not supposed that God would alter the function of the human mind in order to reveal his truth. Nor does God expect man to be entirely passive in his reception of divine revelation. Mental assimilation requires a certain amount of intellectual activity, not blind impressions imaged on the senses. Divine revelation is given not merely in words, but in life and action. And it has been given gradually—first expressed to particular persons, a particular nation, then to the world—so that it could be properly understood. The scriptural order is that of presenting first the simple before moving on to more complex spiritual teachings.

3. **Probable Attestation of Divine Revelation**—A worthy revelation, to be accepted, must be sufficiently attested as coming from God, supernaturally revealed, and bearing the marks of supernatural origin as a testimony to those to whom it is directed. It must reveal the infinite God, Creator of nature and for whom all nature exists. And there can be no better evidence that the giver of the revelation is the author of nature and is of infinite power than the manifestation of miracles *transcending the powers of nature.* Prophetic utterances of future events, which later came to pass in detail, also attest to the infinite wisdom and foreknowledge of the author of that revelation. The Scriptures bear abundant marks of such supernatural attestation.

We may conclude that instead of an antecedent improbability precluding the idea of revelation, as skeptics sometimes affirm, there is a very strong antecedent probability of a divine revelation to humankind. There are also reasonable presuppositions of what should be the contents, method, and attestation of such a revelation. To admit these grounds of probability practically requires the admission that the Scriptures are of divine authority. However, we do not assume that these presumptive evidences are conclusive in themselves, but suggest only that they do nullify the presumptions *against* revelation. All presumptions must be argued within the province of logical discussion and used to furnish a basis for the positive arguments to follow.

CHAPTER II

EXTERNAL EVIDENCES

The Christian apologist is not confronted with the scarcity of evidence, nor in any lack of strength in the proofs of his argument. His difficulty lies in making the right selection of these proofs and in discriminating within the mass of positive evidences, and arranging and presenting these facts so that the reader recognizes their importance in justifying his argument.

There are two classes of external, or historical, evidences: *miracles* and *fulfilled prophecy*. It is from these divine interventions that the attestation of the Scriptures may be shown. Such signs and wonders are appealed to by the Scriptures as proofs that God was with those professing to speak in his name. The validity of the divine authority of the Scriptures rests on these proofs. For example, to those who were eye-witnesses of the miracles of Jesus and his apostles, the evidence that they were messengers from God was immediate and convincing. But to those living in subsequent times, the value of such proofs is inherent in the credibility of the witnesses reporting these events. The reporting of miracles and the accuracy of that testimony as it is transmitted to those living in a different age is important. For those miracles must have the same evidential value to us today as they had to those ancient eye-witnesses. The need for proof of the genuineness and credibility of the prophecies in the Scriptures is much the same as for miracles. As distinct aspects of external evidence, miracles and prophecy attest to the divine authority of the Scriptures today. It is important that we show first the genuineness of the Scriptures by four criteria: (1) they were written by their reputed authors; (2) the integrity of these authors is without question; (3) the translation of their writings has been preserved for us substantially uncorrupted; and (4) the credibility of the writers indicates that they were dependable and truthful in recording the facts. Christian apologetics requires only the plain facts fairly considered to establish its claims.

I. Genuineness of the New Testament

The matter of genuineness of the New Testament centers around this question: Were the books written by their reputed authors, and not forged at a later date as the works of those whose names they bear? A genuine document is one written by the one whose

name it bears, and is the opposite of a spurious writing.

1. **Method of Showing Genuineness**—The method employed for determining the genuineness of the New Testament is like that used for any other book: the method of tracing its history back to the time of its reputed author.

John Bunyan wrote *Pilgrim's Progress,* an allegory on the Christian life, in 1628. So history says. But what is the proof that this book is the product of John Bunyan? The first evidence is that copies of various early editions of it may be found in the British Museum inscribed with his name. Not only is Bunyan's work universally received, but every age since his time has attributed it to him, as did the period in which he lived. Writers who quote his work assume that this book is unquestionably by him.

In its literary style, *Pilgrim's Progress* bears the marks characteristic of Bunyan's time and country. Its teachings and spirit are in exact harmony with religious standards of the Puritanism of the period in which Bunyan was a prominent preacher. Such evidence is valid whether a book was written hundreds of years ago or two thousand years ago. Evidence of this nature attests to the authorship of all the great writings of the past, whether they are the classical writings of the Greeks and Romans or the sacred writings of Hebrews and Christians. It is reasonable to believe that *the New Testament does not require a different kind of evidence for its genuineness because of its religious character,* since these writings may be traced in all Christian literature back to the days of the apostles.

The proof of genuineness varies in kind and in quantity. Sir Isaac Newton, whose name is synonymous with loyalty to facts, said, "I find more sure marks of authenticity in the New Testament, than in any profane history whatever."

2. **Genuineness Affirmed by Early Church Fathers**—Proof exists showing that the New Testament has existed under the names of its several authors from the fourth century to the present. And since the canon became finally settled during that century, the genuineness of those writings has been generally accepted. Those familiar with the history of the civilized world know that references to the New Testament are interwoven with the history and literature of the last sixteen hundred years. At least three ancient manuscripts of the New Testament still in existence, bearing the names of their authors and held as sacred treasures in three of the

world's great libraries, date their existence from the fourth century. In a single leap we may go back to 325 A.D., within less than two hundred and thirty years of the death of the last of the apostles. And in that same century, the fourth council of Carthage, in 387 A.D., published a list of the books of the New Testament that agrees perfectly with the canon of the New Testament as we know it today. Similar lists may be found in the theological writings of Augustine and Jerome, which were published about the same time. Eusebius, elected bishop of Caesarea in 315 A.D., published in his *Ecclesiastical History* a list of the books of the New Testament that agrees exactly with our New Testament both as to books and authors. He writes that there was some question about the books of James, Jude, 2 Peter and 2 and 3 John, and Revelation; but adds that they were generally received and that he himself accepts them.

In the third century we find proofs of genuineness similar to those already mentioned from the fourth century. Origen was born in 184 A.D., less than one hundred years after the death of the apostle John. Active in 230 A.D., Origen was probably the most learned in the Scriptures of any of the Greek fathers. According to Jerome, he had the Scriptures memorized. One living so near the time of the apostles and of such wide knowledge must be regarded as possessing dependable information concerning the authorship of the New Testament. Origen's list of New Testament books includes none not accepted today and all of those we recognize except the Epistles of James and Jude. His omission of these was evidently unintentional, since in other writings he acknowledges them as belonging to the canon.

Going back to the last half of the second century we find among the eminent church fathers Tertullian, who was born about 150 A.D., less than fifty-five years after the last apostle. He was a voluminous writer in defense of Christianity, who quoted much from the New Testament, including all the books except four of the shorter epistles. He gave no list of accepted New Testament books; however, there is little reason to suppose he doubted them.

Irenaeus was born in 120 A.D. and became a disciple of Polycarp, who was personally acquainted with the apostle John. He testifies that each of the four Gospels was written by its reputed author. Justin Martyr, who died in 148 A.D., quotes from the Gospels, and Papias, born in 80 A.D., was a "hearer of John"

and a disciple of Polycarp. He gives valuable testimony to the Gospels of Matthew and Mark as being written by their reputed authors.

The Gospels were accepted as genuine by the apostolic fathers, who knew the apostles personally. Genuine writings of three of the church fathers have come down to us: that of Clement of Rome, who died in 101 A.D.; Polycarp, who died in 166 A.D.; and Ignatius, who was martyred in 107 A.D. These three have left us in their writings over one hundred quotations from the New Testament, representing every book but four (2 Peter, Jude, 2 and 3 John). As conclusive proof of the genuineness of the New Testament we look to these early writers' confirmation of the authorship of the New Testament books and regard them with the greatest respect.

We have traced the records of the New Testament documents back to the time when the apostles lived. The evidence of their genuineness is complete, and is probably stronger than that supporting Greek or Roman classical writings. Yet these classics are accepted as genuine. What validity is there in the argument that some New Testament documents were "forged by learned monks during the dark ages?"

3. **Genuineness Insured by Careful Canonization**—The writing of the New Testament was a gradual process. Several books were written for the immediate purpose of supplying particular needs in the early church. These writings were distributed geographically in countries or cities throughout the Roman Empire. They were regarded as authoritative and divinely inspired Scriptures and studied along with the Old Testament Scriptures (see 2 Peter 3:16). Copies were multiplied and distributed among the churches. Eventually these writings were collected into one volume known as the New Testament. Tertullian, born a little more than fifty-five years after the death of the apostle John, refers to this collection as the "New Testament," composed of two parts, the "gospels and apostles."

The process of canonization covered considerable time. The New Testament documents were widely scattered throughout the churches and slowness of travel and communication at the time combined to defer the collection and approval of these books into one volume. It was the second century before most of the New

Testament was generally accepted as canonical; but it was not until the fourth century that a few of the books in it were no longer questioned by some. This careful investigation of the facts and the discrimination made in selecting the books of the canon reflect their genuineness. During this period eminent Christian writers wrote catalogs of the New Testament books. Two classes of canonical books were known as "homologoumena" (i.e., acknowledged), and those called "Antilegomena" (disputed). Twenty of the twenty-seven books were in the first class. The remaining seven were disputed books: Hebrews, James, 2 Peter, 2 and 3 John, Jude and Revelation. The question raised was not about their content but whether they were written by their reputed authors. James and Jude styled themselves as "servants," instead of calling themselves "apostles." John called himself an elder. Some of the earliest catalogs admitted books as canonical that later writers questioned. The variation of these lists denotes the careful discrimination that preceded the acceptance of all the books into the canon.

Careful discrimination as to canonical writings was desirable to the early Christians for various reasons. First, these documents were greatly revered and read in the churches as *inspired Scripture.* According to Justin Martyr and Tertullian, this was a common practice in the second century. It can easily be understood why great care to exclude all spurious and apocryphal documents was necessary, since heretics were ready to forge writings in the name of the apostles, to support their erroneous teachings. Secondly, in the Diocletian persecution, Christians were often called upon to give their lives in defense of their sacred Scriptures. When life or death was the issue, greater care was exercised in discrimination against apocryphal documents. Thirdly, the early church highly regarded the apostles' writings; therefore, the certainty of their authenticity was essential to the faith. This prompted the learned men of the time—philosophers, rhetoricians, and theologians—to investigate all of the books included in the New Testament over a long period of the early church's history. Books were accepted only on the most certain grounds of their genuineness. Apologetics requires the proof of genuineness of those books recording the miracles of Jesus and the apostles, namely, the Gospels and the Acts of the Apostles. We have not only this proof of their genuineness but of all other books of the New Testament also.

4. **Early Adversaries Never Denied Genuineness**—Some skeptics

have charged Christianity with being defended only by its friends, but it should be noted that among the formidable enemies of ancient times, none are known to have questioned the genuineness of the New Testament. They attack those books seeking internal flaws and endeavoring to show contradictions, but never do they dispute their genuineness. Thus the acceptance by pagan foes of Christianity of the genuineness of the New Testament books provides convincing proof of their authorship.

For instance, Porphyry, who wrote about the year 270 A.D., was the most deadly foe early Christianity had. He had every advantage of learning, ability, and position to discover any ungenuineness in Christian Scriptures. In his writings he acknowledged the value of such claims, but made no attempt to disprove the books of the New Testament as spurious writings. It is assumed that he knew the evidence which supported their genuineness but refrained from attacking them on this premise.

And Celsus, living less than eighty years after the death of the apostle John, was another noted adversary of Christianity, who flourished in 176 A.D. He too, was a learned man, well acquainted with the Gospels of Matthew, Luke and John and several of the Epistles, from which he quotes not less than eighty times. He, like Porphyry had full opportunity to prove the New Testament books spurious. He did not and his silence on this subject is remarkable.

Another proof that must be considered here is the nature of the language in which the New Testament was written which corresponds with the time and circumstances of the writing and also with the characters and degree of culture of the authors.

II. Integrity of the New Testament

A critique of the New Testament involves the question of its integrity. How do we know that its text is pure and that it has not been corrupted by repeated copying during the centuries, since such errors could contribute to a loss of its original meaning?

Another question concerns the existence of any of the original manuscripts of the inspired writers. To date, there are no known originals extant. However, God has not left his Word without witness. Proofs of various kinds have been produced from a number of reliable sources which date our present New Testament close to the apostolic period in which they were written.

1. **Evidence from Ancient Manuscripts**—Various manuscripts of the New Testament are extant and numerous. Manuscripts of

the Bible collected by scholars may be counted in the thousands, and twenty-six hundred or more have been collected for editing critical editions of the text *in the original languages.* These ancient writings date back several hundred years before the oldest printed Bible was produced in the middle of the fifteenth century. Others date back to the eighth century, and a few to the fourth century. And it is thought that a number of the fourth century manuscripts may have been destroyed during the Diocletian persecution in 302.

Three of the most valued ancient manuscripts are: the Sinaitic, which is housed in the British Museum in London; the Vatican Manuscript, in the Vatican at Rome; and the Alexandrian Manuscript, in the British Museum. All three manuscripts date back to the fourth century and are corroborated by hundreds of other manuscripts which verify our text today.

Some critics object to the thousands of different readings of the New Testament in these ancient manuscripts. This criticism need not alarm the Christian apologist, since only minor variations have been found in these different manuscripts. Errors are considered to be unintentional mistakes made by copyists, such as omissions or transpositions in letters or the substitution of words of similar meaning, all having little effect upon the text and none on doctrine, duty or the factual evidences needed for their verification. Assurance as to the purity of the texts comes from the careful comparison of these manuscripts made by scholars, which is a continuing process.

2. **Corroboration of Ancient Versions and Quotations**—The New Testament was originally written in Greek. The propagation of Christianity in lands where the Greek language was not commonly known required the translation of the New Testament into these languages, which were made at a very early date. Probably the oldest is the *Syriac,* or *Peshitta,* a translation into the Aramaic for use in the Syrian churches as early as the second century. According to Syriac scholars there *could* have been translations before the close of the first century. When compared with the Greek texts these translations were found to be practically identical, though they were not brought into contact with our Greek New Testament until the sixteenth century, having been in the keeping of the Eastern churches. This remarkable confirmation of the integrity of the New Testament text shows its similarity to the content of the Syriac Version written in the second century.

The Old Latin Version was translated in North Africa about 170 A.D. for the Latin-speaking churches. Jerome revised this text which is known as the Vulgate (383-404), the accepted authorized text of the Roman Catholic Church. Again the agreement between the Greek text and the Vulgate shows the latter to be practically the same as that of the second century.

The Old Latin omits Hebrews, James, and 2 Peter; whereas, the *Peshitta* contains all the books of the Bible except 2 Peter, 2 and 3 John, Jude, and Revelation. However, the two translations combined attest to the existence of all the books of the New Testament except 2 Peter as having appeared in the churches as early as the second century, and that they were substantially the same as we have them now.

Several other versions also have value in establishing the integrity of the sacred texts. Among them are the Septuagint of the Old Testament, translated 250 B.C.; the Coptic, or Egyptian, 200 A.D.; the Gothic, fourth century; Ethiopic, 400 A.D.; the Armenian, fifth century; the Slavonian, ninth century; and the Arabic, tenth century.

The uncorrupt preservation of the sacred text can be proved not only by comparison with ancient versions, but by the many quotations to be found in the Christian writers of the first three centuries. Sir David Dalrymple found the entire New Testament was quoted by them with the exception of eleven verses. How marvelously has God preserved for us many infallible proofs of the integrity of the text of the New Testament!

3. **No Material Change Was Possible**—That a corruption of the sacred writings did not occur has been shown. Why it could not have occurred is also evident. Shortly after the sacred books were published copies began to be made so that in a short time they were scattered throughout the civilized world. These writings were revered as divinely inspired Scripture and read privately and in the churches. They were jealously guarded against any important changes in their text or meaning. To suppose any overcredulous person could have interpolated in the text legendary stories of miracles does not seem plausible, since this would have called for changes in copies throughout the world. If this had been possible, such changes could not have been kept secret from either scholars or skeptics. For Christianity had too many enemies who would not have permitted friends of Christianity to change the sacred

writings. And Christians watched that heretics did not have the opportunity to change them. The purity of these writings demonstrates the method God chose to preserve their integrity. In some ways the preservation of the integrity of the sacred text is better than if the original manuscripts had been preserved, unless they had proved to be autographed copies by the inspired writers!

III. Credibility of New Testament History

How does one know that the history related in the New Testament, especially in the Gospels, is worthy of being believed? Even if the integrity of the sacred writings is accepted it is conceivable that a history may be genuine and yet not true to facts. Therefore, in the evidences of Christianity, nothing need be left to assumption. The evidences supporting the historicity of the Gospels is overwhelming. Our purpose here is to show that New Testament history is true.

1. **Credibility of Gospel History Is Accepted by Those Familiar with the Events**—One of the surest proofs that the miracles and other events of the gospel history are worthy of belief is the fact that they were believed and propagated by multitudes at the peril of their lives, persons who lived at the time and places where the events are alleged to have occurred. We have certain proof also that the Gospels were circulated in the very land where their events occurred during the lifetime of the people who witnessed the things described. Had they been published in a part of the world so far from the scene of the events no one could have investigated or testified to their truthfulness. Or if they had not been published until more than a century after the events, no one living could have confirmed their statements as a living witness. But the writer of the first Gospel testifies that he was an eye-witness of the events described. He wrote his Gospel to the Jews among whom events in Jesus' ministry took place. He wrote and published it in Palestine, where Jesus spent his life. And he published it while the majority of those were still living who witnessed these events.

Doubtless, if the author of this Gospel had misstated the truth about any important fact mentioned, this error could not have passed unchallenged in that age of culture and religious controversy. Critical scribes, Pharisees and Sadducees sought diligently to catch Jesus in his words. It is certain they would have readily denied any false statement as to known facts at a later period when so many of Jesus' disciples had fallen away. Since the entire

gospel history reflects adversely on the Jews of that period, especially their rulers and priests, why did they not deny Matthew's statement that Jesus opened the eyes of two blind men at Jericho on the occasion of his last journey to Jerusalem? Or why did they not refute the account of the darkness that covered the land for three hours at Christ's death on the cross? Or why did they not contradict Luke's story about a lame man's healing by Peter at the temple gate?

Neither Jews nor Greeks, in all their opposition to Christianity, attempted to discount the *truthfulness* of the gospel writers' accounts of events pertaining to Jesus' ministry. Their silence indicates that they knew the events related were true and so widespread that to deny them would have made these critics appear ridiculous. Instead, they have attributed Jesus' miracles to the power of Beelzebub, but *they did not deny their occurrence.*

Thousands of Christians of that period faced persecution, imprisonment, and death itself. Yet they affirmed their belief in the events recorded in the Gospels. Many of them were themselves eye-witnesses to these events. Would men choose to suffer dishonor, privation, persecution, and violent deaths in defense of something they knew to be false? On the other hand, if these men knew the things they taught to be true they could not doubt them. Their reason for their affirmation of these things under such circumstances is one reason for our believing them today.

2. **The Writers Possessed the Requisites for Credibility**—To be a credible witness one must have adequate knowledge and dependable honesty. At this point one might ask "Did the Gospel writers possess these qualities?"

That they had full opportunity to know the facts concerning the events they relate is certain. Matthew and John were with Jesus throughout his ministry. They lived with him, learned at his feet, and witnessed his miracles over and over again. They were among his most intimate friends. They could not have been deceived. Nor is it likely that they could have been so carried away by enthusiasm that they would have imagined in detail the persons, time, place, and other circumstances recorded in their writings. Do we dare assert that such enthusiasm exaggerated the supernatural events recorded in New Testament history? To do so would be to suspect these Gospel writers of being dishonest historians. Furthermore, their writings do not reflect upon them as men conscious of

intention to deceive. The historian, unlike the fiction writer, focuses on the time, place, and other circumstances relating to a given event that can be investigated by another. It is in this style the gospel writers tell their story and hammer out their apostolic histories of events surrounding Jesus' ministry.

John tells of a man named Lazarus who lived in Bethany with his two sisters, Martha and Mary, of his death and burial after four days of mourning, and of how Jesus in the presence of Lazarus' friends, called him out of the tomb alive. It is not likely such details are told by deceivers. Political events referred to by the gospel writers were also described in detail and have proved to be correct. But the most convincing proof that these writers were honest in their accounts is the fact they were willing to suffer disgrace, persecution, even death in defense of what they wrote! What then could have been their motive for deception? What had they to gain but loss of life? And when they were offered the choice between recanting their faith and death, they all without hesitation chose death. Apparently they were firmly convinced of what they wrote.

IV. Miracles

Jesus and his apostles proclaimed that they were divinely sent messengers commissioned to impart to humankind a revelation of the way of salvation. Their credentials, as ambassadors of God, were certain works which they describe as miracles. Jesus recognized the propriety of persons' requiring of him proofs of his claims. And he appealed to his works as credentials when the Jews said, "What sign showest thou then, that we may see, and believe thee? What dost thou work?" And when another asked if he were the promised Messiah, he said, "The blind receive their sight, and the lame walk, the lepers are cleansed, and the deaf hear, the dead are raised up."

Jesus uses these evidences to attest the fact that he was a messenger sent from God. What then, is better proof that one is a messenger of God than power to perform miracles? Is not the power this messenger exercises superior to that of nature and thus assumed to be the power of him who constituted nature? In his book *The Encounter Between Christianity and Science,* Richard H. Bube, professor of Materials and Science and Electrical Engineering at Stanford University writes, "The God of Christianity is a God who can work and has worked miracles. The out-working

of the physical world is ever at the disposal of the Upholder of the universe."[1] Then to strengthen his argument Bube adds this thought, ". . . God must have done what he can do."[2]

We recognize here the similarities that exist between the credo of the scientist and the theologian, when each refuses to defend his views with philosophical or theological platitudes, or with his own prejudices. Bube reminds us that, ". . . men of science can also be dedicated disciples of Jesus Christ and members of his Church. It is also their purpose to witness to the Christian community that the methods and conclusions of science can play a significant role in the understanding, exposition, and application of Christianity."[3]

New Testament writers not only affirm that miracles were performed, but describe them in detail. This encourages us to consider their account as sufficient reason for believing miracles to be sure evidence that Christianity and the Scriptures are of God. However, still further proof of the validity of the Gospel accounts must be sought. We must consider certain objections to miracles that skeptics have raised before giving further proof of their reality.

1. **Possibility and Probability of Miracles** G. P. Fisher defines a miracle as an "event which the forces of nature including the natural powers of man—cannot of themselves produce, and which must, therefore, be referred to as supernatural agency." And Bube explains miracles saying, "It may well be that the proper way to think of a miracle is not as a suspension of natural law by God, but rather as the utilization by God of a mechanism *about which we are ignorant.*"[4] (the italics are mine.) Fuller definitions than these may be found, but these two express the main characteristic of a miracle. A miracle is not necessarily a violation or a contradiction of natural law. Neither does it involve a suspension of natural law, but only the entrance of another power that operates independently of nature. For example, the power of gravitation was no more suspended when Jesus walked on the water than it is when a boy throws a ball into the air. The ordinary function of nature was merely transcended.

"Apparent conflicts between the interpretation of natural revelation (science) and the interpretation of the biblical revelation (theology) have often arisen because of an attempt to find ultimate causes in nature (i.e., to subordinate the biblical revelation to the natural revelation) or of an attempt to find

secondary mechanisms in the Bible (i.e., to subordinate the natural revelation to the biblical revelation). The two revelations are different in purpose, in scope, and in means of apprehension. Failure to recognize, however, that the two revelations are complementary and not contradictory is a constant source of confusion."[5]

At this point we call attention to Bube's warning that "Christians must not mistake science's preoccupation with immediate mechanisms as in itself a denial of the existence of ultimate causes. Certainly, Christians must not fall into the error of thinking that the scientific discovery of immediate mechanisms removes the need for the underlying ultimate causes."[6]

Many volumes have been written concerning the probability of miracles. Skeptics have endeavored to show an antecedent improbability of the occurrence of miracles. And much that has been said about revelation has a bearing here. For if man has a great need of a divine revelation and God's goodness, it is to be reasoned that a revelation is probable. It is apparent from the existence of moral law and moral beings that nature does not exist for its own sake, but for the use of moral beings. And it is reasonable to expect God to work miracles independently of natural law when he sees it is advantageous for man's moral excellence. The presumption that man's sinfulness and depravity have resulted in the creation of a need of such supernatural manifestations as a means of his recovery or spiritual restoration becomes apparent at this point in our defense of Christianity.

2. **Possibility of Proving Miracles by Testimony** It is not uncommon for skeptics to contend that because a miracle is so contradictory to all human experience, it is more reasonable to believe that any amount of testimony is false than it is to believe the miracle actually occurred. By this simple formula Hume and others have attempted to sweep away all the Christian evidences from the many accounts of miracles recorded in the Bible or in Christian history.

A principal fallacy in this argument is that it makes one's own personal experience the measure of *all human experience.* If this were true, no new or unusual event or fact could be learned except by the senses. This would also discount the truth that most of the things we know we learn through testimony. If then, it is more reasonable to believe any amount of testimony false, rather than

to believe an event true that is beyond the realm of our personal experience, the majority of men must forever remain ignorant of most of the facts they now know. For they could not know that great geysers exist, nor the size of the earth, the depth of the ocean, the distances in outer space, the height and role of mountains, facts pertaining to radiophone, wireless telegraphy, quasars, satellites and other current phenomena, except by the testimony of those who have seen them or can demonstrate their use. Such information relies on testimony for its validity. And people accept or reject testimony concerning unusual but possible events, not because it accords with or contradicts their experience, but according to the credibility or incredibility of the witness.

If a party of eminent scientists exploring a newly discovered land should return with the astonishing report that they found mountains there consisting of solid gold, the question would not be, does this agree with or contradict our experience? But, is their testimony credible? If these persons were trained mineralogists capable of determining what is gold and what is not, and if in the past they had proved themselves to be truthful men, their testimony should not be rejected as insufficient ground for believing those mountains of gold exist.

Or if twelve men known to be intelligent and truthful tell of seeing a certain man dead and buried in a tomb, we believe their testimony without difficulty. Furthermore, if they tell us that they saw him raised from the dead by an adequate cause—the power of God—for the purpose of authenticating a revelation of God to men of the way of salvation, which is certainly adequate purpose, there is no reason why their testimony should not be accepted as readily as their testimony of the man's death and burial.

Hume's argument against miracles relies on the fallacy of self-contradiction. This argument seeks to overthrow our faith in human testimony, suggesting that it discounts the general experiences of men. How can we know what the general experiences of men are except by their testimony? Or how can we know we have challenged the credibility of human testimony when we have used testimony to discredit it?

3. **Proofs that Miracles Occurred**—We come now to the vital question: "Did miracles actually occur in the ministry of Jesus and his apostles?" If they did occur, this reality was discernible by men's senses. The raising of Lazarus from the dead, the feeding of

the multitudes with five loaves of bread and two fishes, the opening of the blind eyes of Bartimaeus, or the curing of the lame man at the gate Beautiful—all could be brought to the test of the senses. And like other historic events, a credible record of them could be transmitted to those of later ages.

There are other reasons than the above supporting the credibility of the record we have of miracles recorded in the New Testament. These are:

(1) *They were done publicly.* For the most part, the Bible miracles were performed before many witnesses, including persons sympathetic toward Christ and those who opposed him. They were not done privately as are the accounts of visions and divine directives given to other prophets. For example, supernatural things were related to Mohammed such as the night visits of the angel Gabriel to him and the transmission to him from heaven of various portions of the Koran, the holy scriptures of Islam. Persons of all classes and in great numbers witnessed the miracles performed by Jesus and his apostles: the rich and the poor, the learned scribe and Pharisee, the common fisherman and farmer, rulers of considerable influence and experience like Nicodemus, and Roman military men such as the centurion of Capernaum. The miracles of Jesus were not done alone in the quiet Galilean villages, but at the great annual festivals of the Jews in Jerusalem. They were performed before multitudes gathered in crowded temple courts, or before the synagogue, or along public highways thronged with pilgrims come to celebrate the Jewish Passover, and before the assembled thousands who came with their sick and diseased for healing or to sit at his feet and learn of his teachings.

(2) *They were of great number and variety.* Impostors pretending to perform miracles usually find it less difficult to pretend to but few. But the ministry of Jesus as described in the Gospels was filled with miracles. Not fewer than forty are described in detail, which the writers allude to as being representative examples of many others which Jesus did. Jesus cured all kinds of diseases—not of a few selected persons, but of all who came to him. He raised the dead on at least three occasions. Twice he fed the multitudes with a very small quantity of food. He turned water into wine. He stilled the storms on Lake Galilee. His marvelous works attested to his omnipotence and his love for people.

(3) *The miracles were performed over a long period of time.* The marvelous works of Jesus and his apostles continued through-

out the three years of his personal ministry and for many years during the ministry of his apostles. They could have been examined again and again, since persons healed or raised from the dead continued to live in the localities where these miracles were performed. Evidence as to their authenticity and permanence were thus open to investigation.

(4) *They were performed by unlearned men.* The followers of Jesus who performed these miracles were not men of learning, influence or wealth. They were unable, as mere men, to carry out a scheme of imposture that would not have been detected by their numerous enemies at that time.

(5) *The miracles were examined but never denied.* These miracles recorded in the New Testament were examined at the time they were performed and for many years afterward. Open-minded persons like Nicodemus examined them and believed Jesus' claims as a consequence. However, the miracles were also critically examined by his enemies, who were many. The claims of Christianity were opposed both by the state and by other religions. Judaism and paganism, led by powerful priesthoods alike sought to destroy it. Powerful rulers of the state, like the Scribes, opposed it. It is quite likely that if these enemies of Christianity could have convinced others that the miracles were fraudulent, they would have done so. It is true that the disciples failed to heal a demoniac boy, but Jesus instantly healed him and told them the cause of their failure. The chief priests would have had little need to stain their hands with the blood of Jesus if they could have shown his miracles were not genuine. They were compelled to acknowledge their reality even if they did falsely ascribe them to the power of Satan. In the presence of such enemies and in times of severe persecution Jesus and his apostles appealed to their miracles as proof that they were of God. Peter did so in his Pentecostal sermon and later when he was brought before the Sanhedrin for healing a lame man. The enemies of Christianity "denied" the reality of these miracles by destroying the miracle-workers. If they could have done otherwise they would have done so.

(6) *They were acknowledged by friends.* Most of the friends of Christianity were so because they believed in the miracles they had witnessed, or experienced themselves. They understood that to accept Christianity meant disgrace, poverty, persecution, even death. If they had found these miracles to have been a hoax they

would not have accepted Christ as the Son of God. Because they knew the miracles to be real, they accepted Christ as a teacher come from God. They sometimes, as a result of persecution, forsook Christianity, but none was known ever to have confessed he or she was mistaken about the reality of Jesus' miracles. We have no record of any of them confessing they were deceived into supposing these miracles were real. As converts they would have opportunity to know whatever secrets may have belonged to the working of the New Testament miracles. When Judas Iscariot, one of Jesus' early disciples betrayed him unto death, there is no record that he at any time discounted the authenticity of Jesus' miracles. Why did Judas not give such testimony at Jesus' trial? He would have been paid well for doing so. His answer was: "I have sinned in that I have betrayed innocent blood."

(7) *The miracles were acknowledged by enemies.* The enemies of the gospel had abundant opportunity to test the miracles of Jesus as to their genuineness, and had strong reason for doing so. It is certain they did examine them. But their failure to deny the reality of them is a strong testimony to their genuineness. Apparently they did not risk the exposure of their own hypocrisy by giving positive testimony to the miracles of the gospel. Yet their silence has given positive affirmation of their genuineness. Since the credibility of the gospel history has been shown elsewhere, we now look for comments from the gospel's enemies in order to show that they acknowledged the reality of these miracles. Anti-Christian writers have acknowledged that Christ wrought miracles. The Jewish writers in the Talmud acknowledged these miracles as having occurred, but referred them to magic or other sources than the will and power of God. Heathen writers also acknowledged that Christ wrought miracles. Celsus acknowledged that Christ wrought miracles by which people were influenced into believing he was the Messiah, although he ascribes to magic the secret of their power. Porphyry, Lucian, Hierocles, and Julian, the emperor, admit that miracles were performed. Julian attempts to make light of them by asking, "Why should so much stir be made about a person who merely 'opened the eyes of the blind, restored limbs to the lame, and delivered persons possessed?' "

(8) *Christ's claims were based on miracles from the beginning.* The religion of the Bible is the only world religion which *at its beginning* appealed to miracles as evidence of the divine authority

of its teachers. Most false religions claim miracles for their founders, but such miracles were appendages of religions already operative, and were not the evidence by which the authority of the religions was first established. Miracles, like those of Mohammed, were witnessed by no one except the performer of them; consequently, they have little validity when compared with the miracles recorded in the Bible. Conversely, when Christianity had few sympathetic followers, the boldness of the biblical claims for the reality of miracles becomes more apparent. Had these miracles not been what they were professed to be, they would never have been accepted by the millions who became Christianity's adherents during the centuries immediately following Christ's earthly ministry. Belief in miracles seems reasonable as historical evidence; to suppose they did not occur is to imagine that their witnesses imagined them!

The foregoing eight points leave little room for discounting through rationalization the authenticity of the New Testament miracles for one cannot explain the entire gospel history on natural grounds.

The theory of Paulus that the records of miracles are "honest but uncritical interpretations of natural events" has been disproved. This theory while supporting the honesty of the gospel writers, raises questions about the integrity of Jesus in his claims in the message he sent back by John the Baptist's messengers recorded in Luke 7:22.

The mythical theory of Strauss assumes that as a result of the prevailing Messianic ideas of the Jews that miracles would be worked by the Messiah when he came, the people unconsciously objectified those ideas which took on the form of miraculous history. In objection we ask, If Christ did not work such miracles, how did he succeed in convincing the people of his Messiahship?

In his rationalistic theory, Renan makes Jesus an unwilling yet an intentional deceiver. This theory supposes that Jesus played the part of deception in merely pretending to work miracles in response to the unwelcome but popular demand for them. This theory tells us that Jesus, who unsparingly denounced hypocrites, was himself constantly engaged in practicing hypocrisy; that he who imparted the loftiest ethical teaching men have ever known, continuously pretended what he knew was false, that the most spotless life was stained with deception. These rationalistic theories are unscientific

both in their methods and in their conclusions. History does not confirm them. Only those who are unwilling to believe in the supernatural could be appealed to by such arguments.

4. **Proof of the Resurrection of Christ** Another method of proving the genuineness of Gospel miracles is to examine the evidence of *particular* miracles. By this means we may determine whether the original witnesses had competent knowledge to judge the alleged miraculous occurrences. The greatest of all miracles is the bodily resurrection of Christ from the dead. As the apostles affirmed, this miracle is fundamental to Christianity. With the credibility of the gospel history established, we may now appeal to the facts concerning the Resurrection which are recorded in the New Testament. What are the facts that friends and enemies of Christ admit?

Our appeal is to biblical history. The resurrection of Christ was predicated in the Old Testament by David, and was foretold by Jesus himself. History attests that he was crucified on a cross, and after six hours he died there. Later his executioners recognized that he was dead and did not break his legs to hasten death as they did the legs of those who were crucified with him. But it order to make sure of his death, one of them ran a spear into his side, which would have caused death had it not already occurred. He was pronounced officially dead by the centurion in answer to Pilate's inquiry. He was placed in a tomb where he lay for about thirty-six hours. At the end of this time his body was missing from the tomb in spite of the fact that the guard was there to keep the disciples honest and the seal was on the door to keep the guards honest.

Now, the body could have been removed only by enemies, his friends, or himself. Who did it? If his enemies did it, they could have had no other motive than to exhibit the body in disproof of any claims of his resurrection. Nor did the apostles produce his body to the enemies of Christ, which they would surely have done if it were in their possession. Yet they boldly affirmed Christ's resurrection before the assembled multitudes in Jerusalem and before the Sanhedrin itself. Other events indicate that the apostles lacked the courage necessary for so daring an act as to steal Christ's body. The charge of the disciples stealing the body was so unreasonable that Matthew, who relates it rightly, considers it needs no refutation.

It was the time of full moon, and Jerusalem and its environs were crowded with Passover pilgrims, and such a theft would certainly have been detected by the soldiers or others. And it was unlikely that all the guards would have fallen asleep on duty at the tomb, when to do so meant certain death according to Roman law. And if they had done so they would not voluntarily have confessed it under such circumstances. On the other hand, how could they truthfully testify to that which they said occurred while they were asleep? And if the disciples of Jesus had stolen the body, the guard would have reproached them for doing so. There is no record of this incident. Furthermore, it is unlikely that men who upheld the high ethical standards which they taught and willingly died for, would be dishonest enough to deceive people in this manner. This leaves us to presuppose that the body of Jesus was removed by Jesus himself, as he had foretold.

One of the most certain evidences of his resurrection is the different appearances of Jesus to his disciples in his resurrected body, after his death. Twelve times, by many witnesses, he was seen alive after his burial. These witnesses talked with him, ate with him, and touched him. They saw in his hands and feet the prints of the nails by which he was fastened to the cross. These appearances continued over a period of forty days. Luke refers to them as "infallible proofs." In most instances Jesus' appearances were witnessed by a number of persons, and at one time more than five hundred persons saw him after his resurrection. It is unreasonable to assume that these experiences of the disciples were the result of hallucination or the product of their own imagination or enthusiasm. For if they had been victims of hallucination, they would have continued and increased their numbers as a result of their emotional excitement. This did not happen. At the end of forty days they suddenly stopped increasing their fellowship. They did not stop because of increased opposition to their cause. Nor were they unduly credulous in believing Christ had risen from the tomb. Yet the resurrection of their Master was so certain to them that the belief of it gave them remarkable boldness, enabling them to proclaim this great truth everywhere. Their unwavering faith in the resurrection of Christ was such that F. C. Baur, an eminent representative of Christianity's critics, confesses that no explanation can be given for it. He concludes that, "There is only one explanation—namely, that the fact occurred."

Frank Morison, in his remarkable book *Who Moved the Stone?,* tells how his own skepticism was canceled out by the clear-cut background of the facts surrounding Christ's resurrection. As a reporter his intention was to do an intensive study of the life of Christ and "to investigate the origins of its literature, to sift some of the evidence at first hand, and to form his own judgment on the problems it presents."[7] He confesses that "things emerged from the old-world story that previously I should have thought impossible. Slowly but very definitely the conviction grew that the drama of those unforgettable weeks of human history was stranger and deeper than it seemed. It was the *strangeness* of many notable things in the story that first arrested and held my interest. It was only later that the irresistible logic of their meaning came into view."[8] So reads the confession of one who, in the spirit of contemporary incredulity of our day, came to the empty tomb to scoff, and went away believing.

Perhaps Morison's words are representative of the attitude of every skeptic, confronted with the facts emerging from the background of antiquity, out of which the New Testament emerged. For as Morison says, "It is not that the facts themselves altered, for they are recorded imperishably in the monuments and into pages of human history. But the interpretation to be put upon the facts underwent a change. Somehow the perspective shifted—not suddenly, as a flash of insight or inspiration, but slowly, almost imperceptibly, by the very stubbornness of the facts themselves."[9]

5. **Evidential Value of Miracles**—The purpose of the miracles recorded in Scripture is to attest to the doctrines taught there as being true. They are not, however, direct evidence of the truth of those doctrines, or else a new miracle must have been given in proof of each new doctrine taught. They indirectly confirmed the message taught by certifying to the divine authority of the religious teacher who worked them and delivered the message. Miracles alone do not prove a man to be a divinely commissioned teacher. He must not only work miracles, but those miracles must be accompanied by the purity of the life and doctrine of that teacher. This was the reasoning Nicodemus gave for acknowledging Jesus as the Christ. His teachings were not contradictory to previously well-attested revelations, nor was the manner of his life contradictory to them. Had this been true, he could not be God whatever his works might have been.

(1) *Counterfeit miracles.* These miracles consist of supernatural or wonderful events attributable to evil spirits or performed by men through natural means beyond our knowledge. Examples of them in antiquity were the supernatural works performed by Egyptian magicians who withstood Moses; or those of Simon, the sorcerer at Samaria; in modern times the cures and apparitions which accompany modern sorcery and spiritualism. These are not miracles in the truest sense. It is not unreasonable or unbiblical that demon spirits should do extraordinary works for the purpose of deceiving men. Under the heading of counterfeit miracles may also be classed the spurious miracles imputed to Jesus in the apocryphal writings, which were rejected by those deciding what New Testament facts should be accepted in the canon. Apparently some of the medieval miracles were of the same nature.

Counterfeit miracles can be distinguished from the genuine in various ways. Primarily true miracles have a valid purpose which they are designed to accomplish. They must be accompanied by a degree of dignity consonant with divine claims, and performed by persons of ethical and moral character. And they must have sufficient substantiating evidence.

(2) *Modern Miracles.* The greatest manifestations of miracles have taken place during those periods when special revelations of truth needed to be attested—for example, at the time of Moses, the prophets, and Christ himself. Yet this does not exclude divine miraculous working at any time as a matter of divine intervention, benevolence, or certification to men in *any age,* God's existence or antecedent revelation.

It is according to Scripture and the experience of devout Christians in all ages that God answers prayer, and that he not only answers, but that some of those answers are supernatural and miraculous in their nature. Modern miracles continue to become more evident, especially in the supernatural healing of the sick through prayer and faith. Miracles have occurred throughout the history of Christianity.

Another purpose of modern miracles is to assist those in need of such help as is not possible by ordinary processes of nature or when circumstances are beyond their control. An important purpose for modern miracles is doubtless the direct manifestation of God's love, and benevolence to draw men to himself. *To elicit man's love for God is in itself a miracle.* Miracles attest to the

Scriptures by making God's love and his promises operative in our lives. God has not left himself without witness even in our troubled world, even as he has in all previous ages.

V. Prophecy

Prophecy as used in the Scriptures not only means making known the will of God generally, but rather the predicting of future events that could not be known by human wisdom alone, but only by means of direct communication from God. The possibility of prophecy presents no difficulty if we allow that God is a person and is possessed of omniscience. Hence, God may attest to his messengers by manifesting his omnipotence through them in miracles, or his omniscience in wisdom. It is also antecedently probable that he should manifest his omniscience through them in predicting future events for the same purpose.

1. **Nature of the Argument from Fulfilled Prophecy**—The future is hidden from most of us. No one can know certainly by any human wisdom what tomorrow will bring forth. We may reason from existing causes or past experiences that certain events are probable, but in such reasoning the element of uncertainty must be recognized. We may predict that a man in good health will die and be fairly sure that our prediction will not fail. But if we attempt the prediction that a particular person, at a given time, and in a certain place, and by a specific method will die, the possibility of such predictions is unlikely and the probability that they will come true even more so. Such predictions would be unlike the Bible prophecies since they would be little more than human guesses. They also would lack validity and divine purpose.

In authentic prophecy, God reveals future events in his own unique way and to whomever he chooses to use for his purpose. For example, scriptural writers foretold future events claiming they were divinely sent messengers, whose task was to predict events which would come to pass centuries later. The accuracy of their predictions cancels out the charge that their work was a fraud. Prophecy is another kind of miracle, a divine knowledge manifested for man's good. Its evidential value rests on its fulfillment. When the predictions are fulfilled and understood they give weight to the divine witness similar to that of the miracles described in the New Testament revelation. Prophecy is not valid as conclusive evidence for Christianity. The proof from prophecy is not dependent upon ancient testimony and the genuineness and cred-

ibility of the historical writings transmitting such testimony to us, but is before our eyes in the present day fulfilment of various predictions of Scripture. Another important consideration concerning the argument from prophecy is that it grows continually stronger during the years with every new fulfillment.

Biblical prophecy was first uttered in Eden immediately after man's fall into sin and has continued throughout Bible history. Prophetic fulfillment began to be accomplished hundreds of years before the time of Christ, and shall continue to the end of the world. Prophecies are great in number as well as in variety. Predictions concern individuals and nations, Israel and heathen peoples, Jews and Gentiles, the kingdom of God and the kingdoms of the world, Christianity and false religions. They all have a connection with the great theme of the Bible—Christ and salvation through him. Many prophecies have already been fulfilled. Others shall be fulfilled in God's own timing; they are yet to come. Others may never be fulfilled because their fulfillment is contingent upon conditions which were never met by individuals or peoples concerned. None can be shown to have failed.

Evidential value of prophecy requires that it shall have been given a long period of time before the happening of the event predicted. Many of the Scripture predictions possess this requisite, others do not. An example of a prediction following immediately after it was made may be found in Matthew 21:2, 3 when Jesus instructed two of his disciples to go into a near-by village where they would ". . . find an ass tied, and a colt with her. . . ." Those who heard the prediction and later experienced its fulfillment recognized this event as a demonstration of Jesus' omniscience. And on the strength of this testimony of his superhuman knowledge their testimony has value for us as do other miracles of that period.

A unique requisite of a biblical prophecy is that nothing must exist to make probable the event to merely human prescience. If Jesus' prediction of the destruction of Jerusalem by the Romans had been given at an advanced stage of the siege, it could have had little value as evidence; but having been spoken forty years before, during a period of universal peace, and given in many details, it has significant value.

A prophecy must not be ambiguous nor yet be so clear that its fulfillment is revealed or secured. Many Scripture prophecies,

especially those about Christ, markedly meet this requirement. For example, the fifty-third chapter of Isaiah gives an elaborate prediction concerning Christ's suffering and death. What this prophecy meant and how it was to be fulfilled perhaps was as difficult for those living before the time of Christ as it was for the Ethiopian eunuch who asked Philip to explain this passage to him. But if one is acquainted with New Testament history this passage in Isaiah becomes quite clear.

2. **Objections to the Argument from Prophecy**—Probably the most common objection to prophecy as Christian evidence is that the alleged prophecies are not predictions but history, and were written *after* the events occurred. This objection can be a misrepresentation of the facts, and as such can be a refusal to consider or research the prophecies one by one in order to check out their validity. In the nineteenth century certain rationalists noted for their work in higher criticism of the scriptural texts, attempted to show that some of the prophetic books of the Bible should bear a later date. In spite of such intensive criticism, many of the more important evidences from prophecy remain in all their strength. In a later discussion of particular prophecies the historical proof of their prophetic nature will be shown.

A common antecedent objection to prophecy is that all events are either necessary or contingent. If they are necessary events, it is argued they are made necessary by contemporary existing causes which affect them, and consequently they may be foreseen and predicted by careful calculation from those causes by men without divine aid. If they are contingent, or dependent upon free choice, it is objected that they cannot be foreknown either by God or men. If this objection were sound, no prophecy could have any value as evidence of divine confirmation of revelation. Weaknesses in both arguments are difficult to detect. The occurrence of most events is determined by previously existing causes, but those causes are often so hidden from men that knowledge of them is impossible, and consequently the effects cannot possibly be known. A prediction of such events constitutes valid evidence of revelation. In reply to the second objection, it is only necessary to say that foreknowledge is to be clearly distinguished from foreordination. Knowledge is not determinative of an event but is determined by the event. The knowledge concerns the event that is to occur, but the event is not *caused* by the foreknowledge of it by either God or

man. God, being omniscient, may foreknow contingent events, and by making them known through his messenger give evidence to all men that such person's message is from God.

A third objection states that many of the Scripture prophecies are so obscure that a critical thinker cannot be certain he understands to what the prediction refers, and consequently cannot know whether it has been fulfilled. The Christian apologist notes that there are many predictions which are quite clear and to these he makes his appeal, contending that one need not concern himself about obscure prophecies since future history may make evident the meaning of some of them. It does not, therefore, seem necessary to prove that large portions of scriptural prophecies have been fulfilled. One may rest his case upon the genuineness of the prophecies that are clearly evident as predictions of events men could not possibly know: it is these predictions that prove the Scriptures are from God.

A proper conception of the purpose of prophecy is helpful in accounting for the obscurity of some of it. Its purpose is not for furnishing detailed plans for the future. Nor is it intended to be profitable only as Christian evidence to those who live after its fulfillment. It is to benefit those who live before the occurrence of the events predicted by making known to them in broad general outline things to come. In this way the prophecies encourage the hopeless and warn the careless to be perpared for the future. Notable examples of this purpose are the prophecies of Christ's first and second advent. Admittedly, other prophecies have value in this respect but are of no apologetical worth.

Some critics of prophecy have pointed out that spiritualists, through communication with deceased persons or demons are also able to predict future events. Allowing the validity of such predictions, one can not compare these with divinely given prophecies in order to weaken the Christian evidence for revelation. Predictions made by spiritualists are usually concerning things of less significance than those found in the Bible. They fall below those of Scripture in the time spanned by them, in dignity, and in purpose. Furthermore, predictions that proceed from a finite being may fail in their fulfillment as likely as not.

In conclusion it should be remembered that biblical prophecy must be corroborated by holy conduct and doctrine already in harmony with divinely revealed truth.

Within this context Bible prophecies may be classified as follows: Predictions (1) about Jews; (2) about Gentile nations; (3) about Christ's first coming; (4) about the origin and history of God's kingdom; (5) about Christ's second coming. In the following discussion we shall study the evidences concerning prophecies about the Jews and those concerning Christ

3. **Predictions Concerning the Jews**—Many biblical prophecies about the Jews have been wonderfully fulfilled. Attention should be directed to those relating to the Babylonian captivity and the return, or to Jesus' remarkable prediction of the destruction of Jerusalem by the Romans, which was fulfilled forty years later. And for those skeptics who charge that prophecies are often written at a time subsequent to the events described, attention is directed to predictions given at the beginning of Israel's history, which were not fulfilled until after the beginning of the Christian dispensation, and, in other important particulars, are being fulfilled only at the present time.

In the twenty-eighth chapter of Deuteronomy is given a detailed prediction of the punishments that should come upon the Jews if they should violate the covenant with God which they had solemnly agreed to keep. Detailed descriptions of these judgments show them to be prophecy, not a feeling of national guilt for their wrongdoing or apprehension of future calamities to befall them. These predictions were uttered by Moses prior to 1400 B. C. Thus evidence is given here that the Old Testament prophecies existed long before the time of Christ. This is easily shown by references to them by Jewish writers, in the Septuagint Version, and by other quotations from the New Testament writings, which have been verified by scholars. Another testimony to their existence is given by Gibbon in his classical work on the last days of the Roman Empire. He dates Old Testament writings as early as 250 B. C., as having been translated from the Hebrew into Greek. Since Gibbon made no claims to being Christian, his testimony is all the more interesting.

Although a number of events described in Deuteronomy of God's punishment for the Hebrews' disobedience may have been fulfilled at the time of the Babylonian captivity, more careful consideration reveals that many of these did not reach fulfillment then, therefore must be referred to a later time, perhaps during the destruction of Jerusalem by the Romans. The Bible states that

"The Lord shall bring a nation against thee from far, and from the end of the earth, as swift as the eagle flieth; a nation whose tongue thou shalt not understand; a nation of fierce countenance, which shall not regard the person of the old, nor show favor to the young." The Romans were literally from "far" and were almost as remote as any people known to the Israelites. Their language was not only different from theirs, but from a different family of languages. Their destruction of the Holy City was "swift as the eagle flieth" and their ruthlessness in war has seldom been surpassed.

How reasonable was it to think that Moses could predict Israel's punishment for their rejection of Jehovah and the crucifixion of his Son by the Romans, who did come suddenly and from a great distance; who were unknown to the Israelites; and who were especially merciless in their treatment of the Jews? Would it not have been more likely, had he been guessing, for Moses to credit this overthrow of Jerusalem to one of the several powerful nations nearby which surrounded Israel?

The prophetic description of Jerusalem's rape by the Romans was not that it would be open warfare. Nor was it to be a surprise attack. Rather prophecy declared, "He shall besiege thee in all thy gates." The siege culminated in the breaking down of their "fenced walls," yet did not occur until after a long battle during which the Jews suffered from prolonged famine. During this famine, fathers and mothers killed and ate their own childern. These facts are related by Josephus, a Jewish historian, who was an eyewitness to these horrors. The comparison with Moses' prophetic description of this siege reads like history attested to by its accuracy and carefulness of detail, indicating that these remarkable fulfillments are more than coincidences. They agree with the events that took place at the time.

The slaughter was so great during the siege that, as the Bible predicted, "few in number" survived. They were, as the prophet had said, "plucked from off the land whither thou goest to possess it." He had promised that "the Lord shall scatter thee among all people, from the one end of the earth even to the other." No other people has been so widely scattered for so many thousands of years and yet retained their identify. Today they are scattered among the nations in both hemispheres.[10]

According to biblical prophecy, the Jews were to preserve their

identity as a race. This is one of the marvels of history. They are as distinct a people today as they were thousands of years ago, although history describes them as a race of persecuted wanderers without a country of their own. Yet they maintain a distinct racial existence! We ask again, "How did Moses know centuries before it came to pass, that his people should have such an improbable history?[11]

The Bible predicts that this people should be despised and persecuted for, ". . . among these nations shalt thou find no ease . . . And thy life shall hang in doubt before thee; and thou shalt fear day and night, and shalt have none assurance of life" (Deut. 28:65-66). So persecution has been their portion during their recognition as a people, during the Middle Ages, at the time of the Crusades, following the Reformation—in Germany, England, France, Spain, Russia, and in almost every land where they have lived in considerable numbers. Even in the United States (2 million Jews) they are discriminated against, opposed by secret societies, criticized by periodicals and books, and in a certain sense ostracized by society generally. How could Moses have know centuries ago that this would be the fortune of his people? Skeptics who question the authenticity of biblical prophecy must find an answer to this question.

Dimot speaks of these people today:" . . . the 'vessel,' broken for two thousand years, has been mended. The curtain is falling on the twentieth century."[12] He further questions,

> "Are the Jews destined to survive another two thousand years to fulfill an as yet unrevealed role?"[13] And looking back on the *Diaspora* he writes, "A civilization if born, reaches its maturity, and dies. This is the pattern of history. So it was with the Babylonians, the Persians, the Romans. WHY NOT THE JEWS? How have the Jews survived throughout four thousand years of human history? Why has this small band of people continued to exert such influence on so many civilizations? From their ranks have come Moses, Christ, Spinoza, Marx, Freud, Einstein.[14] What is the vitality that flames among the Jewish people, contrary to every historical precedent?"

Perhaps Dimot is correct; theirs is indeed a history of "illogical survival."

For nearly nineteen hundred years Jerusalem was in the hands of the Gentiles (Arabs). But in 1948-1949, Israel's war of independence dramatically brought the old biblical prophecies to life, and it was in this war that a new Jewish nationalism emerged. And although on May 20, 1948, Old Jerusalem fell to the Arabs, it was no later than the nine-day war of 1967 that the Israelis won their honored capital once again. And as Dimot writes, "Today, as once before, we have as in the past, the state of Israel and the Diaspora. But, as in the past, the State of Israel today is a citadel of Judaism, a haven of refuge, the center of Jewish nationalism where dwell only two million of the world's twelve million Jews. The Diaspora, although it has shifted its center through the ages with the rise and fall of civilizations, still remains the universal soul of Judaism."[15]

As apologists for Christianity we may well ask, "What further has the Bible, particularly the New Testament, to say on the subject of the Diaspora?" The evangelist Luke gives Jesus' prophecy of the destruction of Jerusalem (which was fulfilled forty years later) in these words: "And they shall fall by the edge of the sword, and shall be led away captive into all nations: and Jerusalem shall be trodden down of the Gentiles, *until the times* of the Gentiles be fulfilled" (italics are mine) (Luke 21:24). But what does the New Testament have to say of modern Jerusalem now under the rule of the Israelis? Or does it speak to a different kind of "chosen people" under the lordship of Jesus Christ, "everyman's Messiah?"

4. **Predictions Concerning Christ** The first prophecy of the coming of Christ was given immediately after the fall and before the expulsion of Adam and Eve from Eden. It predicted that the seed of the woman would bruise the head of the serpent. This was fulfilled by Christ who overcame both Satan and sin. Old Testament Scriptures are filled with predictions of the coming of Christ and the nature of his salvation, all written centuries prior to their fulfillment.

In addition to biblical predictions describing certain future events, the Bible also uses types and institutions for this purpose. For example, the passover lamb was a remarkable prophecy of Christ given fifteen hundred years before the Christian era. One of the most detailed prophecies is found in Isaiah 9:6, 7: "For unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given; and the government shall be upon his shoulders, and his name shall be called Wonderful,

Counselor, The mighty God, The everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace. Of the increase of his government and peace there shall be no end, upon the throne of David, and upon his kingdom, to order it, and to establish it with judgment and with justice from henceforth even forever." Since Jesus Christ came exactly as these predictions declared, we have proof of the divine authority of the Scriptures and of the divinity of Christ.

The exact time of Christ's coming was also foretold by the prophet Daniel in his "seventy weeks' prophecy" in Daniel 9:24, 27: "Seventy weeks are determined upon thy people and upon the holy city, to finish the transgression, to make an end of sins, and to make reconciliation for iniquity and to bring in everlasting righteousness, and to seal up the vision and prophecy, and to anoint the most holy" (v. 24). That this prediction refers to Christ is certain since he is named in verse 26. Days here, as in other time-prophecies, represent a year and the "week" means not seven days but seven years. This idea was common among the Jews. Their law, for example, required that they leave their land untilled every seventh year, that the land might rest as they rested from work each seventh day. The seventy weeks were to be counted from the going forth of the command to restore and rebuild Jerusalem mentioned in Ezra 7. This, according to biblical chronology, was 457 B.C. Counting seventy weeks, or 490 years, from this date, we have A.D. 33. On this date all the aforementioned predictions were fulfilled. The first of these events was the anointing of the Most Holy: "Unto the Messiah the Prince shall be seven weeks, and three score and two weeks." (Dan. 9:25) This date correlates with 26 A.D., the year of Christ's baptism and anointing for this ministry. According to all dependable biblical chronologists, Christ was born four years before the common date given for his birth. After the sixty-nine weeks, Messiah was to be cut off. How long after is not stated in verse 26, but by referring to verse 27 we learn that in the midst of the week "the sacrifice and the oblation" should cease, which took place when Christ, the true sacrifice, died on the cross. During the three and one-half years that followed, the covenant was confirmed with many for one week—seven years (see v. 27). Here the time of the most important events in human history was plainly foretold, accurate to the date and given nearly five hundred years beforehand.

The place of Christ's birth was also foretold: "But thou, Bethle-

hem Ephratah, though thou be little among the thousands of Judah, yet out of thee shall he come forth unto me that is to be ruler in Israel; whose goings forth have been from old, from everlasting" (Mic. 5:2). Here the Son of God is referred to as the Eternal one, in a prophecy uttered seven centuries before he came. And Bethlehem has been accepted without question as his birthplace.

Christ's genealogy was on public record at the time the Gospels were written and correlates with other scriptures stating that he came from Abraham, Isaac, Jacob, Judah, and David. Few, if any, have dared to dispute these records. And it is upon this fulfillment the Jewish Christians would especially rest their faith.

In that wonderful fifty-third chapter of Isaiah we find at least ten separate predictions about Christ which have been indisputably accepted.

(1) "There is no beauty that we should desire him" (v. 2). Because Christ came not with worldly pomp as an earthly king, he was not accepted by the Jews who were anticipating their Messiah.

(2) "He is despised and rejected of men; a man of sorrows, and acquainted with grief" (v. 3).

(3) "But he was wounded for our transgressions, he was bruised for our iniquities" (v. 5). That he was wounded and bruised undeservingly is well known.

(4) "He was oppressed, and he was afflicted, yet he opened not his mouth" (v. 7). When falsely accused and abused by his captors, "he answered never a word."

(5) "He was taken from prison and from judgment" (v. 8). Neither before nor after his trial was he put in prison as was Barabbas, and as accused or condemned men are, but was arrested, tried, and executed all in a few hours' time.

(6) "He was cut off out of the land of the living" (v. 8). Christ was killed—he did not die a natural death.

(7) "He made his grave with the wicked, and with the rich in his death" (v. 9). He was buried in the sepulcher intended for a rich man, and it was guarded by wicked soldiers.

(8) "He shall prolong his days" (v. 10). After death, his days were to continue, which is a clear prediction of his resurrection from the dead.

(9) "He was numbered with the transgressors" (v. 12). He was crucified between two thieves, and died as a criminal.

(10) "He bare the sin of many, and made intercession for transgressors" (v. 12). He suffered that others might be saved from sin, and he prayed for his enemies while he ws hanging on the cross.

Isaiah's predictions about Christ's death read like a fifth Gospel, *yet they were written hundreds of years before Christ's coming.* The detailed accuracy of this prediction as well as those recorded elsewhere in the Bible, is remarkable. Their number, variety, the great sweep of time spanned by these prophecies, and their exalted nature, are sure marks of divine foreknowledge.

The prophet Micaiah, when imprisoned by Ahab for prophesying adversely concerning a battle Ahab was soon to enter, said to the king, "If thou return at all in peace, the Lord hath not spoken by me" (1 Kings 22:28). Like Micaiah, we can rest the divine authority of the Scriptures upon the fulfillment of their prophecies, because they never fail, and their fulfillment is proof that God has indeed spoken by the Bible.

NOTES

[1]Richard H. Bube, *The Encounter Between Christianity and Science,* William B. Erdmans Publishing Company, Grand Rapids, Michigan, 1968, p. 76

[2]*Ibid.,* p. 76.

[3]Bube, p. 76.

[4]Bube, p. 77.

[5]Bube, p. 70.

[6]*Ibid.*

[7]Frank Morison, *Who Moved The Stone?,* Zondervan Publishing House, Grand Rapids, Michigan, 1930-1971, p. 12.

[8]*Ibid.*

[9]*Ibid.,* Preface.

[10]Max I. Dimot, *Jews, God and History,* Signet Book, New American Library, Times Mirror, 1301 Avenue of the Americas, New York, New York 10019, 1962, from the Table of Contents: p. ix. Today there are over twelve million Jews in the world; two million or more live in Israel. Dimot gives a streamlined review of the four thousand years and the six civilizations which have cradled the Jewish people, examining some of the perverse factors in one of history's most 'illogical survivals' —that of a nation which has proclaimed itself God's Chosen People, and almost has the world convinced of it."

[11]*Ibid.,* p. 418.

[12]Dimot, p. 420.

[13]*Ibid.*

[14]Dimot, p. 421.

[15]Dimot, p. 418

CHAPTER III

INTERNAL EVIDENCES

Internal evidences are found within the Bible itself. This has not been true of the evidences thus far considered. In a former chapter a distinction was made between authenticating and rational evidences. External proofs are authenticating in nature, furnishing reasons why we should believe the Bible is true, while internal evidences are, in great measure, of the class of rational proofs. And although they show why we should BELIEVE the Bible is true, they also show why it IS true in important particulars, by showing that Bible teaching is consistent with the character of God and with the nature and needs of man as indicated by sources other than revelation. Typical of this kind of argument is that of Bishop Butler in his famous work, *Analogy of Religion, Natural and Revealed,* in which he contends that if the Scriptures are in harmony with the light of nature, if they agree with the intuitions of man's moral reason, if they are adapted to his soul's needs, they must be true. And they augment the light of nature while they perfectly harmonize with it, hence they must be from him who constituted nature. However, many internal proofs are *exclusively* authenticating in their nature.

I. Perfect Doctrines

The doctrines of the Scriptures are in harmony with religious truth known intuitively.

1. **God's Being and Attributes**—Intelligent men through the intuitive faculty and logical reason have believed in the existence of a personal Supreme Being. God has been regarded as a being infinite in all perfections. This idea of God is presented in the Bible, and as such is in harmony with the light of nature. This does not tell us what may be known naturally about God. The conception of his being and his attributes which Scripture affords us is more perfect than can be known without revelation. No such lofty representation of God is to be found in any writing other than the Bible. Nowhere in the Bible can we find support for pantheism, as believed by the Hindus, nor of atheism, as held by Buddhists. The God of the Bible is not represented as being cruel, unjust, licentious, capricious or malignant, as non-Christian religions sometimes represent him. Common sense, therefore,

declares that God's character, as described in the Bible, seems more plausible to the thinking man.

2. **Man's Moral Responsibility and Freedom**—The Bible declares that man is created in the image of God and, possessing moral freedom, is accountable for his acts, attitudes, and beliefs. It states clearly the precepts pertaining to what man shall and shall not do, promising reward for obedience and punishment for disobedience. *The idea of man's moral responsibility is fundamental in the teachings of the Scriptures.* This is clearly implied in God's dealings with man from the time of his creation. It is implied in every commandment, in every promise of blessing, in all warnings of judgments, in the life and death and atonement of Jesus, and in all the work of salvation. The concept that man is a free moral agent is also an intuition. Men everywhere recognize with some degree of conscience, what they ought or ought not to be or do. This becomes more apparent among men who are acquainted with the Bible. Should the Bible have denied that man is a free moral agent, accountable to himself, if not to his Creator, as some religions declare, it then would not prove to be the Word of God. But its harmony with those inherent attributes of man and with his consciousness of right and wrong provides more evidence that what the Bible says, God says.

3. **Man's Depravity and Guilt**—The Bible teaches that man is sinful, in character as in conduct. The third chapter of Genesis presents proof of the origin of sin in man, pointing up the need he has for salvation. He is guilty of transgressing God's laws and this disobedience is of a sinful character which leads to sinful conduct. Sinfulness is depravity of nature. The *sense* of sinfulness is found to be evident among even primitive tribes who practice offering propitiatory sacrifices for their penance. The Bible also makes a clear distinction between moral and physical evil. It far surpasses in clarity all conceptions of evil that are possible without it, though it is in harmony with men's consciousness in this respect. If the Bible denied moral evil, as do some philosophies, if it confused moral with physical evil as is done in some heathen religions, or if it disallowed natural depravity as does Pelagianism or deterministic psychology, then it could not be accepted as truth or as a divine revelation. But by recognizing these great truths of human consciousness, it shows itself to be, not only truth, but from the Source of truth, by the perfection of its doctrine.

4. **Man's Spirituality and Immortality**—Another aspect of the Bible's perfect doctrine is in is teaching that man has a spiritual nature and that he is immortal. In this the Bible clearly distinguishes between body and spirit. It is the spirit of man that is believed to be made in the image of God, and is, therefore, immortal like him. The immortality of the soul is recognized throughout the Bible, and is fundamental to scriptural teaching generally. Without this doctrine the Bible would be meaningless. The Bible gives no uncertain sound concerning life beyond this life. In this it is definite and positive. Materialists may deny immortality, deists and rationalists question it, and humanists argue against it; but hope springs eternally in the human breast saying immortality is surely so.

If, like the ancient Sadducees, the Scriptures contradicted the common consciousness and intuition of men concerning immortality, they could rightly be accepted as not true. But the Bible teachings show them to be true since immortality comes from God and is like him in nature.

5. **Present Probation and Future Retribution** Biblical teachings about moral responsibility imply another fundamental truth—present probation, meaning that men in this life are on trial. And probation implies another fundamental truth—future retribution. Spiritual and material inequities are evident in this life. Not infrequently wicked men prosper, spreading themselves like "green bay trees," while righteous men suffer injustice, affliction, persecution, even death by martyrdom. All this implies and requires for the sake of justice that there shall be a proper adjustment of rewards and punishments *beyond* this life. Probation on earth, retribution hereafter, is a clear biblical teaching. Most men are conscious of this truth, whether they admit it or not. Believing this, they also believe the Bible.

Furthermore, to deny free will, moral responsibility, sin, spirituality of man, and immortality logically requires the denial of present probation and retribution hereafter. The Bible does not deny these fundamental truths. Rather it supports them with a definiteness that infers that men could not have known such truths by themselves. Only God's revealed Word has brought such teachings to their minds.

II. Perfect Adaptation to Man's Needs

Another class of doctrines found in the Bible other than those

known by intuition, may be known only by revelation; such doctrines are the trinity of God, the divine-human nature of Christ, the atonement, salvation by faith, and the resurrection of the body. Such doctrines are not known through human reason, yet they correspond remarkably to the needs of man's nature and what he intuitively knows. This harmony between biblical teachings and human attributes suggests that they are true and of God.

1. **Salvation from Sin and Depravity**—Nature offers no remedy for man's sinfulness, nor can it promise salvation from his depraved condition. Men may try by their own works to earn justification, by praying, afflicting themselves, giving alms, making pilgrimages to "holy" places, all of which give little or no assurance of acceptance by God. The Bible, however, does offer free pardon for sin.

Reason suggests that it is inconsistent with God's holiness for him to pardon except atonement be made to show that God is upright and worthy of respect as moral sovereign. This atonement, the Bible declares, was made by Christ. *Pardon is granted only through faith in Christ.* This atonement required a God-man to effect it. This God-man, as divine Savior, is presented in the Bible in both the Old and New Testaments.

Pardon for past sins is useless unless the tyranny of sin is overcome so men can refrain from allowing sin to rule their lives. The Bible promises regeneration as an accompaniment of pardon. Here again the provisions of the Bible correspond with the needs of man in furnishing what he lacks. Thus the doctrines of revealed religion wonderfully complement those of natural religion, by promising to supply human nature that which is not available from any other source. This act of regeneration attests to the presence of God in his revelation to man.

2. **Enlightenment and Comfort**—After his experience of justification and regeneration, man still needs additional help from God. His knowledge is too limited to discern what he should do under many of life's circumstances. His will does not automatically provide him God-control above circumstances, and he is often at a loss to know what would please God, or what course should be followed in affairs which have an important bearing on his spiritual and eternal well-being. He senses a need for enlightenment and guidance from a superior intelligence. Amid the sorrows and troubles of life, he recognizes the need of a "holy Presence" who can furnish consolation and strength in his distress. The Bible points

to his need for the Holy Spirit of God, who will come into the believer's life as a guide and comforter (the Paraclete; the Helper; the Sustainer). Once more God's supply is matched with human need. Who but God could have conceived of a supply so perfectly fitted to the need?

3. **Resurrection of the Body**—A further illustration of the correspondence of revealed with natural theology is the doctrine of the resurrection of the body. Neither by logical reason nor by intuition could one know that the dead body will be raised to life again. But both intuition and reasoning lead to the belief in life after death. Man was created both body and spirit. His body is part of his essential nature. Is it therefore unreasonable to think that his body should be lost to him forever? The resurrection of the body then is necessary for the satisfaction of man's instinctive desire for the preservation of an essential part of his nature. It is the Bible doctrine of the resurrection of the dead that has dispelled the darkness of the tomb and the fear of death. It meets this deep need of man's nature and gives us reason to believe that it is God who has given us this hope as the Bible claims.

Could a religion so wonderfully adapted to man's needs, so perfectly harmonious with the facts of nature, so exalted in character, have come from any human wisdom, especially from those humble Galileans by whom Christianity was first preached?

III. Perfect Morals

The Scriptures clearly distinguish between right and wrong in men's conduct. The ethical standard of the Bible, especially in the teachings of Jesus, is the most lofty man has ever known. No man questions their ethical quality, even when comparisons are drawn between them and the best of human philosophers—Socrates, Plato, or Seneca. Whatever excellence is to be found in these ethical systems is marred by inconsistencies and glaring errors that place them below the moral level of the New Testament. Great leaders of non-Christian philosophies (religions) have sought to adapt their moral and ethical teachings to the standards inherent in Jesus' teachings. The Sermon on the Mount is considered universally to be sublime in its ethical demands on men's attitudes and behavior. This teaching alone reflects the omniscience and perfection of Jesus the Christ.

1. **A Perfect Standard of Right**—The ethical standard of the Bible is noted for its comprehensiveness as well as for its high

standard of right. It asserts no evil is excused by God. Rather than being a mere code of ethics imposed upon men, it proposes instead life-principles that are exalted and unchallenged as to their rightness. Bible precepts illustrate ethical principles. The great foundational principle of Christian ethics is love: supreme love to God and demonstrable love to one's fellow men. Jesus summed up this divine principle in these words: "Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy strength, and with all thy mind; and thy neighbor as thyself." On these words hang all the ethical teachings of the Scriptures. This law assumes that he who loves will fulfill all moral precepts. If one loves his fellow men as himself, he will keep the Golden Rule: "All things whatsoever ye would that men should do to you, do ye even so to them." Jesus required men to do positive good to others according to this rule: It is not merely negative in forbiding us to do what we would not have others do to us. This rule reflects the divine nature of its Author, who alone was absolutely perfect.

2. **A Perfect Measurement of Conduct**—The ethics of the Bible are perfect in their method of judging the moral quality of actions. Mere external conformity to right precepts is not accepted as right, except as the motive prompting such actions is right. "Whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her hath committed adultery with her already in his heart." The motive for an action is that which determines the deserts of him who does it. If he mistakenly believes an act is wrong that is not in its essential nature contradictory to any right principle or precept, he cannot perform such an act without incurring guilt before God. Or if he honestly but ignorantly believes he should do that which is evil according to the absolute standard of right, he may do it with a clear conscience. This, according to the Bible, is the only right standard of judgment for finite beings. It reflects God's understanding of our humanness.

3. **Perfect Practicality**—The Bible presents an exalted standard of morals and of human behavior while at the same time offers divine help in attaining those standards. It is assumed that obedience to moral requirements of Scripture is natural to one who disciplines himself in love and seeks to show that love both to God and to man. Without regeneration and the aid of the Spirit of God, however, full conformity to the ethical standard of Scripture is impossible. The Bible furnishes a perfect standard of conduct and it also makes provisions for conformity to it. This aspect of

moral requirements which the Scriptures present exceeds that of others known to men. Here again may be seen the mark of perfection that indicates divine origin.

IV. Style and Incidental Allusions

Some facts and allusions found in the Bible are of the nature of circumstantial evidence cited as support for its divine authority. If taken singly they may be inconclusive to most minds, but if considered together they afford positive evidence that is equal to a demonstration of the divine authority of the Scriptures. A brief mention of them is indicative of the nature, variety, and irresistible weight of this class of proofs.

1. **Unity of the Scriptures**—The Bible is composed of sixty-six separate books, written by at least thirty-six different authors, during a period covering sixteen centuries. The style of these books varies in form and content. Some are prose, some are poetry, some are books of law, while others are historical writings; some are prophecy with symbols, others are simple epistles. The writers wrote under differing circumstances, from many different countries, to different peoples, for different purposes, on different subjects, in various conditions, and influenced by different circumstances. The writers came from different socio-economic classes and socio-economic backgrounds—some were kings, others shepherds, courtiers, cowherds, physicians, farmers, men of science, prophets, priests, military leaders, tax-collectors, lawyers, fishermen, rich and poor, educated and illiterate.

With such variances in conditions and authors it is altogether improbable that there should be any unity or agreement in the Bible. No other book pretending to unity was ever written under such unfavorable circumstances. Composed of sixty-six such books, the Bible nevertheless, is one unit in its theme and purpose. It is one book, whose principal subject is to make men aware of the history of the redemption of man through Christ. The same spirit pervades all its books. Its theme is salvation through Christ. Close study reveals that there is remarkable agreement in its content in spite of what appears to be divergence and contradiction. Critics through the centuries have failed to show one real contradiction in the books of the Bible. Are there other books beside the Bible, written by as many authors during so many centuries and under such a variety of circumstances, that possess such unity and agreement as a whole? There is no evidence that the writers

planned their work together. The particular writers could not intentionally have fitted their writing into its place in the whole because the whole did not exist until the last book was written. Yet from Genesis to Revelation there is a gradual and progressive unfolding of truth adapted to the purpose it accomplished.

This unquestionable unity of content and purpose verifies the claim that it is the work of One superintending and supernatural Mind. To attribute to chance such writing requires a credulity far in excess of that which skeptics charge Christian believers.

The Bible as divine revelation is like different parts of a great temple, wrought by numerous workmen, in many places and under different conditions, which when brought together fits into one great whole because all was designed by the single mind of the architect.

2. **Languages and Literary Style**—Every living language constantly undergoes change. New terms are added, old ones become obsolete, and meanings of terms and idioms change. In the Hebrew language alone, scholars have noted three distinct periods during which this language changed. The first change appeared in the writings of Moses. The second period of linguistic change occurred during the time when the books of Judges, Samuel, Kings, Chronicles, the poetical books, and several of the earlier works of the prophets were written. This is the period of the purest Hebrew. The third period produced the writings of the later prophets and the remaining historical books of the Old Testament. In this period many foreign words, phrases, and idioms were incorporated into the pure Hebrew. Shortly after the last book of the Old Testament was written, the Hebrew language became a dead language, for the Jews adopted the Aramaic language from those peoples among whom they lived during their exile from their own country. It is assumed that the books written in "pure" Hebrew must have been written prior to the exile because they show no Aramaic influence. It is important to note that with these changes in the Hebrew language there has been little or no substantive change in the *content* of the Old Testament writings. And the gradual change in the language found in the Scriptures agrees with the claims of the books themselves as to the time of their origin.

The Greek language also underwent many changes with the passing of the centuries. The New Testament was not written in the Greek of Homer, or in the classical Greek of Plato and

Aristotle, but in the common Greek dialect prevalent throughout the countries in the East following the conquest of Alexander. Mixed with the Greek are many Hebraisms throughout the New Testament. This popularizing of the language reflects the ordinary learning and literary background of the New Testament writers. Here again, we see evidences of the genuineness of these writings. The Bible was written at the time and under conditions to which its writers commonly refer. The men's literary attainments and socio-economic status harmonize with their writing style. However, the distinct differences in style in the various books show them to be the work of different persons, with different types of minds and education, not the product of a single writer who may be assumed to have forged them.

Incidental corroborations such as those which appear throughout the New Testament writings are not usually found in spurious writings. Even the peculiarities of the characters of the writers themselves, as we know them from what is said and about them in the New Testament, are reflected in their style of writing. Some writers used simple, plain speech to convey their ideas, while the Apostle Paul, an educated man, wrote with greater complexity. The boldness, energy, and zeal which characterizes his writing correlate with Luke's description of this man as he knew him. Luke's description of Paul's character and disposition was written in the Book of Acts.

3. **Historical Events**—The history recorded in the Bible has been shown to correspond with known facts presented in other historical documents. Secular history affirms the Bible's claims to being a book of history. However, some critics are supposed to have found various points in Bible history which they attribute to error. For example, critics have raised questions concerning the biblical report of Belshazzar, king of the Chaldeans. Secular history, at an earlier period gave no record of him; but Sir Henry Rawlinson has shown, by deciphering cuneiform inscriptions, that Belshazzar was regent during the absence of his father, Nabonidus, the last of the Chaldean kings. Here is more evidence that the Book of Daniel was written by one who knew about this comparatively unimportant fact of history so intimately that he could give it in its proper context in his writings, proving that he wrote near the time of the events described.

This same familiarity with historical facts is reflected in the his-

torical allusions which abound in the Bible, indicating that these writers lived in the times they are said to have lived. For example, the names of several rulers, who, the Bible states, ruled over parts of Palestine during different periods, differed in their provincial powers, titles, and activities. These facts agree with authentic historical writings furnished by contemporary historians. Two incidental allusions may be of interest to the reader. Two that are corroborated by secular history are the references to the variation of opinion among the Jews in Jesus' day concerning whether it was lawful to pay "tribute to Caesar," and the banishing of the Jews from Rome by Claudius Caesar (Acts 1:2). Such historical accuracy in minute details is possible only to a contemporary writer of integrity.

4. **Incidental Allusions**—Probably of all the internal evidences none have greater evidential value in proof of the genuineness and authenticity of the Bible (for one who is willing patiently to investigate them) than the many incidental allusions to customs, to contemporary history, to topography of the country traversed, and to personal characteristics of historic characters.

An example of incidental allusion to customs is that of the anointing of Jesus' feet by the woman who was a sinner. During the process of the meal, she came into the Pharisee's house where Jesus was reclining at the table as was the custom. His feet were extended backward away from the table. And, "she stood at his feet behind him . . . and anointed them with the ointment." Only a person living in a land where the custom of reclining at the table was practiced would be likely to make an allusion to this custom. Similar examples could be cited and may be found in commentaries and works on Bible history.

Incidental allusions to the nature of the country traversed by the Israelites in passing from Egypt to Canaan, by Jesus on his journeys, or by the Apostle Paul on his missionary tours, furnish circumstantial evidence that the writers were witnesses of the territory described. For an appreciation of the details given on Paul's journeys and of the persons accompanying him, read Conybeare and Howson's *Life and Epistles of the Apostle Paul.* The evidence here is conclusive that the writer, Luke, was Paul's fellow traveler and an eyewitness of the things he described. Here is further proof that this part of the Bible was not forged during the Middle Ages, as some skeptics have insinuated.

A single example of the correctness of character sketches of historic persons mentioned in the Bible is that of Herod the Great. The Gospel writer tells of Herod's insane jealousy of the infant Jesus when the magi inquired about him who was "born king of the Jews," of Herod's subtle scheme to find Jesus that he might kill him, and of his cruel slaughter of the infants in Bethlehem. The weight of this proof rests on the character of Herod referred to in secular history as one of the cruelest and most jealous men in the annals of world history. His jealous hate led him to murder his wife's brother Aristobulus, the aged prince Hyrcanus, his own wife, Mariamne, whom he had loved very much, and his two sons Alexander and Aristobulus. Remarkable, isn't it, that Matthew should record Herod's revolting deeds in such careful detail.

In summary, if the Bible were deprived of all the external evidences of its divine origin, it would still contain in its own pages abundant credentials of its divine authority in its perfect doctrines, unrivaled ethics, its adaptation to man's needs, its literary style, and in the vast number of allusions which prove that the Bible was divinely inspired and written by its alleged writers.

CHAPTER IV

EXPERIMENTAL AND COLLATERAL EVIDENCES

The manifestation of the supernatural in any form in connection with the Scriptures or with Christianity proves them to be of God, since it cannot be reasonably accounted for on natural ground. Evidences already described are: manifestations of supernatural knowledge in the utterance of prophecy, and the manifestation of supernatural holiness and wisdom indicated by the moral and religious standard contained in the Scriptures. Now we propose to show the supernatural effects of Christianity in the inner consciousness and in the character and conduct of the individual believer, as well as on society as a whole where the gospel is preached and believed.

A tree may be known by its fruits, as Jesus taught; so likewise we may know teachers of religion, for it seems proper to judge religions, too, by their fruits. This form of testing is universally approved and convincing. If the tree bears good fruit, the goodness of the tree is not questioned. If the fruits of Christianity are good, then it must be good; and if good, it must be from God as it claims. If, on the other hand, it is not from God, its claims are false and it is evil; and if evil, its fruits would also be evil.

I. Evidences from Christian Experience

Experiential evidence may be the most powerful of all Christian evidences, one easily comprehended and appreciated by an illiterate person, yet worthy of respect from the most learned. Christian experience is open to all for both observation and trial, and it is one evidence on which most Christians can rest their faith.

1. **Nature of Experiential Evidence**—The man whom Jesus healed of blindness gives a strong witness to the nature of experiential evidence. When questioned by those who doubted the validity of his experience he answered them, "One thing I know, that whereas I was blind, now I see." The Christian believer knows positively that once he was bowed down beneath a burden of guilt and a slave to his own sinful nature, but that after conversion his soul was filled with peace and he was free from the bondage of sin. Millions of Christians testify to the validity of this experience. Even if skeptics question it, does it now seem unreasonable to

believe that all of these Christians were deceived? Although this experience in the consciousness of the Christian may not have direct evidential value to *unbelievers,* this does not discount the honest and intelligent testimony about such an experience. Such testimony ought to be considered. But we are not dependent upon their testimony alone. In the individual lives of believers there comes through conversion a radical change of character and outward conduct. This change is often so definite and extraordinary that it can be properly attributed to nothing else than the miraculous power of God. These modern miracles occur daily and in every city or village in lands where evangelical Christianity is preached. Truly God has not left his truth without witness. Dr. E. Stanley Jones wrote of this experience: "The same power that was working in Jesus would be working in us—the same quality that sets everything in the right direction."[1]

The divine origin of Christianity rests upon the incarnation. Jesus is the incarnation of God, and his word, when internalized by the believer, becomes the incarnate gospel—*the living Word.* Since it cures mankind's moral malady, its origin must be divine.

2. **Effects of Christian Experience in Consciousness**—The claim of the Bible to be the book of salvation is in harmony with the experience of multitudes of Christian believers who have found that by following its directions they have attained deep peace and soul-satisfaction. The claim has been substantiated. No knowledge can be more certain to a person than the knowledge of his own inner thoughts, emotions, desires, motives and intentions. A person of sinful character and life is conscious of thoughts and emotions corresponding to his nature. He is conscious of a feeling of guilt before God, and of the impelling influence of his own sinful nature. He is aware that he loves the impure and desires the association of sinful men rather than the association of the righteous. One of the characteristics of the sinful life is rebellion toward God's Word. This rebellion bears its own fruit—evil thoughts, unholy attitudes, uncontrolled emotions, sinful deeds.

But suppose he submits himself to the claims of the gospel, and trusts in the mercy of God through Christ for salvation. Suddenly he experiences a *change in his inner consciousness—he is pardoned and converted.* He feels like a new creature. This is more than a change of belief. It is a change of heart! His affections take a new direction. He no longer is set on sinful and worldly activities, nor

does he hold such values dear. He is now concerned with that which is holy. Heretofore he had ignored and disobeyed God; now he loves and surrenders his will and life to God, finding in this surrender "joy unspeakable and full of glory." He now seeks and treasures the fellowship of other Christians, who become some of his dearest friends. Turning from the things he once loved (counted so very important), he now seeks righteousness. Purity in God's sight is of prime importance. The pursuit of holiness becomes for him as it does for every devout Christian, a life goal. His heart becomes tender and full of compassion. His internal violence is curbed and eventually replaced by new and strong benevolent desires and a genuine humility which replaces his sinful pride.

Other beliefs have produced strong excitement, and effected great emotion, but *only the gospel transforms men's lives instantaneously.* It should be remembered that radical changes such as these in character and dispositions are not imaginary. Deep within his own consciousness, the believer knows of a certainty that these changes have been made by God.

3. **Effects of Christian Experience in Character**—The Christian experience affects not only the inner consciousness of the believer, but also changes his character and outward conduct. Skeptics may scorn the testimony of Christians concerning their consciousness of an inner change, but this radical change in outward conduct that accompanies belief in Christ is apparent even to unbelievers. The inner change of the affections, inclinations, and desires that accompanies conversion is followed by a corresponding change in conduct from sinning to a life of holiness. The extent of this outward change is determined by the degree of one's former depravity and sinfulness.

This change was tremendous in the life of Saul of Tarsus. Formerly he had been a bitter opponent of Christianity, devoting his energies to persecuting the followers of Christ. After his conversion he demonstrated unusual wisdom, patience, endurance in suffering and pain, while becoming one of the most able preachers in the early church. Christ had changed suddenly and completely this man's character and conduct.

The change in outward conduct has been evident in the lives of Christians throughout the ages, and these are not a few obscure instances. Men of profligate life, abandoned to wickedness, slaves of evil habits, have been instantly changed! Evil habits, to which

they were enslaved for years, are suddenly broken. They are free to choose a new course of conduct. This power to change did not come from within themselves but from God, and they no longer desired to return to their old sinful ways. This change in outward conduct is so marked that one must be credulous indeed to credit it to natural power. Furthermore, these changes are not likely to be evident except where the gospel has been effective in their minds and hearts. Care must be exercised here in distinguishing between intellectual belief and the gospel principles *internalized.*

Skeptics may question the effects "believing" may produce in the believer's life. But the apologist may raise this question as a counter argument: "Why cannot men produce other systems of doctrine that will bring similar results?" Or, "Why has no other system capable of producing such results been demonstrated in any age through history?" Other systems of belief have produced tranquility and quietness of spirit and emotion, or excitement as the case may be, but *only the gospel of Jesus Christ has transformed men's lives instantaneously.*

With the exception of the individuals who profess Christianity but who are untrue to its spirit, sincere Christians have always been noted for their goodness of character and uprightness of conduct. Living a sinful life while professing Christianity is regarded as hypocrisy by the true believer. Critics of this spiritual failure are justified in doubting the validity of such experiences. But Christians historically have been men and women of good will. They are sensitive to the needs of the poor, the deprived, those whom society treats unjustly. They often deny themselves comforts and pleasures that others may have necessities, freedom, or relief from suffering. They have gone to the ends of the earth to uplift humanity. This is more than a humanitarian sentiment, for to the Christian giving a cup of cold water to a thirsty man becomes a demonstration of the gospel principles and values he has built his own life upon.

The lives and confessions of unbelievers have not bestowed honor upon their *unbelief,* or stopped their attacks upon Christianity. Leaders of intellectual warfare against the gospel have apparently been unable to live differently than the life force that motivated them—their own egos. They formulated principles for others but the stream of their influence could not rise above its source. Hume, for example, was regarded by fellow skeptics as

being as nearly virtuous as human frailty would permit. Yet Hume's writings condoned suicide and considered adultery as necessary to obtain all of life's advantages, counting a woman's infidelity as of slight inportance. Bolingbroke was a libertine whose intemperance and lust were unrestrained. Blount shot himself when his sister-in-law, whom he seduced, refused to marry him. Tindal was given to vice in general and his lifestyle indicated a total lack of principle. Voltaire was noted for his violent temper and his disregard for family loyalty and familial love. Rousseau confessed that he was a liar, a thief, and a debauched profligate. His lewd conduct with women of disrepute was widely known. He ruined the characters of other women and left his illegitimate children to be cared for by public charity. Thomas Paine's first wife died from sexual abuse; his second wife left him because of neglect and unkindness. His third wife was the wife of a man whose hospitality Paine enjoyed while he seduced his wife. Paine was also found guilty of a breach of trust in an office given him by Congress which forced him to resign. And finally, the lady in whose house he died reported that he was continually drunk.

These and other examples of atheistic intellectuals illustrate the depth of immorality that men reach when their hearts do not match the purity of their minds. What a contrast are the holy lives of the great Christian leaders of history!

4. **Effects of Christianity at the Hour of Death** –The most honest hour of a man's life is the hour of death. The true Christian has victory over the grave, and sin; the sting of death is gone. One who had witnessed such a death, said long ago, "Let me die the death of the righteous, and let my last end be like his." What can be more sublime, more beautiful, more triumphant than the passing of a righteous man to a better and brighter world? Testimonies given by persons pronounced clinically dead attest to the wonders of God's love and the joy of life beyond the grave. Thousands of dying saints have spent their last breath in expressing ecstatic joy at the blessed hope that for them is becoming a reality. Like the Apostle Paul when the eternal reward was near, they have triumphed in faith and are ready to be with Christ. In such an hour as this, one does not hear of devout Christians expressing regret that they had surrendered to the claims of the gospel.

How does the unbeliever die? What brings comfort to him? Joy? Hope? What in his belief system sustains him in the hour of death?

What consolation *can* such beliefs give? Their resignation and quietness at death, often as not, is their resignation to the inevitable, their recognition of the fact that death is inevitable and that it is useless to struggle against it. Even when there is a lack of fear, there surely is no joy, no happy anticipation in the death of one who disbelieves the God of the Bible who sent his Son to deliver us from such an hour of alienation as this.

History tells us that some infidels have recanted their unbelief in the face of death. Voltaire when he was told by his physician that he could live but a short time, responded, "Then I shall go to hell." Why should an atheist be afraid of hell? Yet Voltaire, while surrounded by his atheistic friends, called for a Christian minister, signed his recantation of infidelity, and professed to die in the church. His death, as observed by his own physician, was the death of an impious man, and terrible indeed.

Paine, another skeptic, is reported to have renounced his infidelity at death. Can we surmise that hopelessness in the mind of the atheist makes unbearable his final hour on earth? The Christian, in contrast, approaches the inevitable and solemn hour of death with confidence not in himself but in his Savior, who himself was resurrected and has promised him life beyond the grave. In death, the Christian knows of a certainty that Jesus Christ is both Author and Finisher of life. The fear of death holds no power over the believer who understands that the same power that raised his Lord from the tomb, shall also raise him from his grave. In this hour Christ is Final; the Christian is known by his fruit—faith, peace, and hope—and by his belief that life is good, a tree of God's own planting.

II. Effects of Christianity on Society

The beneficent influence on society, when it has been given a place in a particular culture, is one of the strongest evidences for the validity of Christianity. Many non-Christian cultures owe much to the influence of Christianity for their own civilization. By comparison one may note the conditions of these peoples before Christianity was introduced to their culture. A prime example is the culture and value systems of ancient Greeks and Romans prior to the preaching of the gospel in their society. History usually describes the glory of these civilizations by presenting the positive influence of their learning, philosophy, science, art, law, and morals. However, gross obscenity in their religious rites, cruelty,

incest, murder suicide, polygamy, infanticide, slavery and oppression flaws these civilizations and the characters of many of their greatest philosophers, emperors, and moralists. It was the purifying power of the Christian gospel that reshaped the history of these peoples.

Striking examples of continued Christian influence and change upon different civilizations are abundatly supplied by history. In some instances, where the grossest forms of sin had been practiced, within a few years after the gospel was received by a people, great moral and social changes have taken place.

In modern civilizations the devastating effect of atheism was often accompanied by a wave of vice and crime during pre-revolutionary and post-revolutionary periods and prior to the establishing of a new form of government built on atheistic philosophy. With this came also the loss of personal and political freedom.

It should be noted here that in speaking of Christianity *per se,* we are not referring to Christendom, which is the organized form of the Christian religion. Its history is not always simon pure; and in the thinking of contemporary observers who have shown concern over the true Christian witness, the gospel expressed in individual and corporate lives may be doomed to cataclysmic changes in the future, perhaps even to oblivion—particularly when it is identified only with Western civilization and its economic values and policies.[2]

True Christianity is universal. God is no respecter of persons or cultures. And Jesus Christ came to be the Saviour of the *world.* To surrender to Him and the principles He taught men about the kingdom of God, is to identify with the God of Creation, who is now the God of Redemption. It is He who leaves His stamp upon society wherever any people take Him seriously.

1. **Promotion of Universal Brotherhood by the Gospel**—History recounts that in pagan cultures stranger and enemy have been almost synonymous, whereas, the principle of the Golden Rule, the Great Commandment, and the parable of the Good Samaritan have created in men's emotions and practices universal brotherhood, or at least some semblance of that ideal. That the Gospel of Jesus Christ deserves much of this credit is evidenced by the contrast with ancient and some contemporary cultures.

The antithesis of universal brotherhood and the dignity of man

is apparent in the inhuman treatment of prisoners of war, cruelty to slaves, and the persecution of peoples whose race or religion differs from the power figures in a given nation. The Holocaust in Nazi Germany and the persecution of the early Christians in Rome have marred man's story of civilization. The Jews in modern Germany were the victims of genocide and the Christians were tormented and killed in the Roman arena as entertainment for royalty and other spectators considered to be leaders in that nation. Rome, Athens, or Corinth had no hospitals or other charitable institutions which showed concern for the orphans, the aged, or the insane. Little more may be said of Europe during the twelfth through the sixteenth centuries, before the Christian teachings and the spirit of beneficence affected these countries, setting public sentiment against this kind of insensitivity to the rights and needs of unfortunate human beings.

Christianity ameliorated the condition of slaves and in modern times led to the abolition of slavery as an institution in Christian countries. It outlawed dueling, mitigated the cruelties of war by campaigning against it as useless destruction of mankind, too costly and futile to merit its horrible practice among nations. Drunkenness and other forms of vice have been made illegal in certain instances.

The strong feeling of brotherhood and equality created through Christian principles and practices are effectively but slowly destroying the evils of class and race inequities, exposing oppressive governments, and corruption in political and religious leaders today. Such results follow in proportion as evangelical Christianity is given place.

2. **Marriage and Family Relations Sanctified by the Gospel**—Ancient cultures were stained with the blood of murdered infants. In Rome infanticide was common, since the law gave the father permission to kill or sell into slavery his adult children at his will. Some of the greatest sages, philosophers, and moralists of Greece-Solon, Plato, and Aristotle—upheld infanticide by arguing in favor of it. In both Greece and Rome the murder of one's own new-born children, or their abandonment to hunger and death by wild beasts, was allowed by law and approved by public sentiment. One so humane as Plutarch mentions the merit of the abandonment of all his children by Attalus, King of Pergamos. A Roman could legally dismiss his wife if he so chose, and, even for trivial offenses, put her to death.

It is against this dark backdrop of human history that the light of Christianity shines. Wherever and in whatever period of history Christian influence is allowed to reshape civilization, it has, and labor is ennobled, industry encouraged, progress promoted, learning advanced, science and art developed, poverty, vice, crime, cruelty—even to animals—is exposed and condemned by laws and public sentiment needed to bring about necessary change.

Christianity seeks to bring about good. It recognizes that an evil tree cannot bring forth good fruit, hence it replaces such evil with trees bearing the goodness of God.

III. Rapid Spread of Early Christianity

Three hundred years after the beginning of Jesus' personal ministry, the whole Roman world had deserted paganism and become nominally Christian. The gospel had been preached in the remotest countries of the then-known world. Under similar conditions, no other religion has been known to spread so rapidly, and it would appear that natural causes were entirely inadequate to produce the marvelous and far-reaching results accomplished by early Christianity.

1. **Hindrances to the Spread of Christianity**—Christianity had to surmount several obstacles, any one of which was capable of impeding the progress of the gospel. These obstacles were: (1) Christianity excluded all other religions, not only Judaism, out of which it grew, but paganism which it deemed worthless. Christianity called all men to forsake their former beliefs and to believe and follow the teachings of Jesus Christ. (2) Such exclusiveness incurred the hatred and opposition of the powerful priesthoods of all religions. Chief opposers were the Jewish priests who had opposed Jesus and his apostles earlier. It was those who had obtained their living by the worship of Diana who persecuted Paul in Ephesus. (3) The magistrates and other civil authorities, influenced by the priests, opposed the gospel as they had collaborated in the crucifixion of Christ. (4) Jewish doctors and philosophers were also arrayed against Christianity because it set their wisdom at naught. (5) The common people opposed Christianity because it exposed their sins, by stripping them of their own self-righteousnes and hypocrisy. (6) The crucifixion of the leader of the movement while it was in its infancy brought discouragement and depression to his followers in the beginning of the work. With such powerful odds against it. the wonder is that the gospel did not perish at its

very start. The fact that it was able triumphantly to surmount all these is evidence that there was a supernatural power supporting Christianity.

2. **Natural Inadequacy of the Means Employed** Let us review the apparent inadequacy of the means employed in proclaiming the gospel that produced such phenomenonal results. (1) It was mostly propagated by unlearned men of a despised race. This fact alone makes the obstacles to the progress of the gospel appear the more formidable. The Jews were regarded by the ruling classes as barbarians and despised as such. The apostles were little known Galileans, despised by other Jews. Ignorant of the teachings of Jewish theologians or heathen philosophers, the apostles were nonetheless strikingly profound in their arguments. As the Bible says, God chose the weak things of the world to confound the wise and mighty. Early Christian leaders had little wealth to give them status or influence; they had no strong position in civil power, and they did not court human favor. (2) The gospel itself was an invitation to believe in a crucified Jew not merely as a good man, nor as a prophet, nor as a king, *but as the Son of God.* This claim to divinity could alone have defeated early Christianity, even if Christ had been an honored philosopher of Greece. But being a Jew and having been subjected by a Roman governor to a death which was inflicted only on the lowest criminals, the gospel would have seemed the least likely of all messages to find acceptance. (3) The message was repugnant to men because it demanded that the believer forsake not only his vilest sins, but all sin. Furthermore, he had to be willing to forsake all that he had: houses, land, family, father, mother, brother, sister, wife, children—and his own life if need be. It is indeed a marvel that this message was accepted by anyone. The inadequacies in the methods used to accomplish the wide-reaching results of the gospel lead to the conclusion that, as the gospel itself claims, the invisible power and Spirit of God worked through these humble messengers and their message, to accomplish the purpose of God.

3. **The Rapidity of the Spread of Christianity Unparalleled**– During the seventy years from 30 to 100 A.D., strong churches were raised up throughout the Roman world. Even far-off Britain heard the gospel during this time. The only religion whose progress approximates that of Christianity is Mohammedanism. However, the circumstances and methods used in the spread of Islam bear

no similarity to those used by early Christianity. And a comparison between the two leaders of these great religions points up natural circumstances versus supernatural. Mohammed was by marriage rich; Christ was poor. Mohammed was of a powerful and honorable family in Mecca, the most respected city of his nation; Christ was of an unknown family living in an obscure village in despised Galilee. Mohammed began his work among the chief leaders of Mecca; Jesus chose his first twelve disciples from among the unlearned fishermen on the shores of Galilee. Mohammed began his work in an age favorable to the acceptance of his religion, an age noted for ignorance and superstition, and described by historians as the "Dark Ages;" Christianity began to be propagated in the Augustan Age, the golden age of Rome, when the science, philosophy, and theology of the ancients was in the full blaze of its glory. Mohammedanism arose in Arabia among an ignorant and barbarous people, in one of the least enlightened parts of the world; Christianity arose in the metropolis of a nation noted for literature and intelligence, among schools and synagogues. Mohammed was favored by divisions in both social and political conditions; Jesus appeared in a time of universal peace, when all false religions were at liberty to combine against him. Mohammed required no self-denial of his followers, but rather sanctioned the strongest passions. He enticed human nature. But the gospel repelled it, requiring self-denial and suffering. As long as Mohammed depended upon persuasion alone, he gained very few disciples. Only when he took the sword and gave men the choice between conversion and death did he gain many converts. Early Christianity resorted to no such forcible means, but depended only upon the preaching of the gospel. The spread of Mohammedanism was due to these adequate natural means. It is as easily explained as the spread of the power of Alexander, or Caesar, or Napoleon. But the natural agencies employed in the spread of early Christianity were entirely inadequate to account for the results accomplished. Only on the ground that God was with Christ and his apostles can the success of early Christianity be accounted for. This success was a miracle, and possible only with the power and favor of God.

NOTES

[1]E. Stanley Jones, *The Way to Power and Poise,* (New York: Abingdon-Cokesbury Press, 1949), p. 57.

[2]See Muggeridge, *The End of Christendom* (Grand Rapids, Mich., William B. Eerdmans Publishing Co., 1980).

CHAPTER V

INSPIRATION OF THE SCRIPTURES

I. Validity and Nature of Inspiration of Scripture

Scholars critically studying Scripture have found the subject of inspiration to be a significant problem of interpretation. Most agree that the Bible is divinely inspired in some sense or in some parts. The real problem confronting them is the *nature* of its inspiration.

1. **Proof of Inspiration**—The Christian Bible is no ordinary book. This is shown by proofs of its authenticity and credibility, evidences supporting the fact that its writers were divinely inspired, by the accuracy of its predictions of future events, by its perfection in moral standards and doctrines as demonstrated in individual lives and in society as a whole, by the simplicity and unity of its parts, and by its adaptation to man's deepest needs. The proof that the Bible is a divine revelation is reason for believing that God would not have left its writing to human fallibility, but would have so directed it that it should accurately express his truth. Internal evidences may be found within the Bible itself which support the nature of its divine inspiration.

Jesus testified to the inspiration of the Old Testament by quoting it as "the Word of God" (Mark 7:13), and by declaring "the Scriptures cannot be broken (John 10:35). Paul confirmed this authenticity of the divine revelation saying, "All Scripture is given by inspiration of God." (2 Tim. 3:16). And Peter assured the early church that "Holy men of God spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost" (2 Pet. 1:21), and referred to Paul's letters to the young churches as being scriptural in content and purpose, comparable with the Old Testament writings (2 Pet. 3:16). The strongest proof of the validity of divine inspiration of the Scriptures is in the internal characteristics reflecting supernatural wisdom and knowledge.

2. **Theories of Inspiration**—The subject of divine inspiration poses a difficult problem, one generating much misunderstanding. From an early date, extreme notions of inspiration have been common to both Jews and Christians. Jewish rabbis, two thousand years ago, held the Mosaic writings in such reverence that they claimed God had handed them down to Moses *already written.*

According to their tradition, when Moses went up into Mount Sinai he found Jehovah making the ornamental letters in the book of the law! They maintained that the book of the law was so divine that God himself spent three hours each day studying it! In a similar fashion, Mohammedans assert that the Koran, their sacred scripture, was communicated directly by the angel Gabriel to Mohammed and that the original copy is preserved in heaven, that it was written in perfect Arabic, and that through succeeding centuries it has been preserved from all error or inaccuracies by copyists through the miraculous divine guardianship of Allah.

The early Christians, as did those living in the Middle Ages, held extreme views regarding the divine inspiration of the Bible, similar to the views of the rabbis. It is true that Martin Luther was inclined to judge Scripture freely, even calling the Epistle of James "an epistle of straw," because of its emphasis on works rather than upon faith which seemed to contradict the teachings of the Apostle Paul. But Luther's immediate successors strongly supported divine inspiration of all Scripture due to their Protestant idea of an infallible Book, replacing the infallible church theory of Rome.

Present theories of inspiration vary from the mere natural or institutional inspiration on the one extreme to absolute mechanical dictation on the other. The *natural* theory holds that the inspired writers merely possessed a higher development of natural insight into truth which is common to all men to some degree, or that they were motivated by unusual moral and religious insight, similar to the inspiration experienced by the great artists and philosophers whose works have made them famous. This theory would make the Bible a book without *authority to obligate men's consciences* and place it on the level with the Koran, Vedas and other sacred books. This theory may prove to be self-contradictory in that the writers of one religion are inspired to write what those of another are inspired to pronounce false. In a sense, this is but another denial of the divine inspiration of the Bible.

The *dictation* theory, on the other hand, is highly supernatural, making the Bible almost entirely a divine product, leaving to human writers only the role of passive instruments. It is true that the Ten Commandments were written directly by the finger of God, and in a few instances God's words spoken by an audible voice are recorded, but the bulk of the Bible was given *by God through men.* This theory of dictation fails to account for the

manifestly human element in the Scriptures, the peculiarities in style that characterize and distinguish the productions of each writer from those of other. It is also improbable that God would tell the writers many of these facts of Bible history that they already knew. In fact, the dictation theory is not regarded as viable by thoughtful scholars today.

3. **True Nature of Inspiration**—A credible theory of divine inspiration of the Scriptures must allow for both the human and divine element in the production of the Bible. Extremists who have emphasized only one side of these elements have given undue prominence to either the human or the divine to the subordination of the other. This leaves the critical student of the Bible with the problem of determining to what extent each element can be verified. The apologists need a practical understanding of biblical inspiration since its divine aspect, like the twofold nature of Christ, is not possible for us to know fully; yet sufficient may be known positively to furnish us with a practical understanding of biblical inspiration.

Before we attempt to define inspiration, let it be said that it is to be distinguished clearly from revelation. Noah and Abraham received revelations from God but no proof exists that they were inspired of God to write. Nor did Matthew rely on revelation to support his call. This experience is found within the material means of its own historical context (Matt. 9:9). Daniel's prediction of Christ's coming (Dan. 9:24) was revealed to him by Gabriel in a vision but was written at a subsequent time, when he was inspired to write what had been revealed to him previously. It is reasonable for us to believe that the writers of Psalms, the prophetic books, and the epistles of the New Testament all had divine revelation and divine inspiration *at the time they wrote.* But the fact that they had both experiences simultaneously is no evidence that the one is included in the other. To regard inspiration as including revelation leads only to confusion and false assumptions. Revelation has to do with God's imparting and man's receiving of truth, whether those truths were received supernaturally, as in the case of Daniel, or naturally as with Matthew's call. Understanding these truths has little to do with the substance of divine inspiration in their publication. Matthew's historical record is no less inspired than Daniel's prophecy. "This distinction between revelation and inspiration is commonly made by systematic writers" (Hodge,

Systematic Theology, Vol. I., p. 156). Failure to make this distinction has often been the foundation for objection to the full inspiration of the Bible. It is unreasonable to think that God, in giving revelation to men, mixed it in with a mass of mere human ideas so that no one could tell what was God's Word and what was not. Such would be without authority to bind men's consciences, and be but little better than no revelation.

There is no proof, scriptural or rational, that all parts of the Bible are not equally inspired. "All Scripture is given by inspiration of God" (2 Tim. 3:16). Although this scriptural passage has been questioned, its meaning here is supported in the original Greek by so eminent a Greek church father as Chrysostom, and by such scholars as Dewette, Bishop Moberly, Wordsworth, Archbishop Trench, Dean Burgon, and Doctor Tragelles.

The Christian apologist is confronted here with this question: If some parts of the Bible are *not* inspired, then who will tell us which parts are inspired? Scholars on this subject do not seem to agree. There is the tendency among those who deny plenary, or full, inspiration to weaken concerning the authority of the Bible, accepting only certain statements as truth, only as they appeal to *their* reason, interpretation, or translation. Reason requires that if we are to regard the Bible as God's inspired word, we must accept all parts of it as equally inspired.

But to affirm all parts of the Scriptures are equally inspired is not to say all parts are equally important in the sense that all parts have equal religious value. The Sermon on the Mount or Paul's great charity chapter (I Cor. 13) have a greater religious significance than does the Book of Kings. Yet the Book of Kings is inspired as surely as is the Gospel of Matthew or the first epistle of the Corinthians. Infallible inspiration of Scripture does not mean that the original utterance of the words of Satan and of wicked men were said as recorded, such as "Ye shall not surely die," or "Crucify him." It is only the *recording* of these events by sacred writers that is divinely inspired. This means that the essential facts of the events were kept from error and the message of God was preserved for men even to the end of the age. Inspiration does not mean that the writers were infallible at other times or that they had perfect knowledge of the subjects about which they wrote. Paul wrote about the essence of the gospel in I Corinthians which this church needed to remember, yet he could not remember the

names of some persons whom he had baptized (1 Cor. 1:16). Moses wrote of the creation of the universe, but this does not mean that he knew the scientific facts pertaining to this creative act of God. Only the Spirit of God is believed to have had perfect knowledge and the human writers are believed to be inerrant in writing the *essence of the biblical truth.*

That the Scriptures are divinely given is shown by such texts as 2 Timothy 3:16 and 2 Peter 1:21. Here we see that Scriptures are the result of the interworking of the human and divine. God adapted his truth to ordinary human intelligence by shaping it in human molds. This divine inspiration of the sacred writers was not an external force, acting upon them from without, but was from within and through their natural faculties, intelligence, and personality. The Holy Spirit enhanced the powers of those natural qualities by making use of them with "all the personal peculiarities of the writers, together with their defects of culture and literary style" (A.H. Strong). Defects of diction do not negate the truthfulness of the biblical statements. This view is known as the dynamical or verbal inspiration theory. But since both these terms have been used to denote the mechanical-dictation theory, they should be used with care.

Careful study of the Scriptures shows how divine inspiration affects both the thought and the words of Scripture. Wm. Evans explains inspiration saying, "Yet it affected the words not directly and immediately by dictating them in the ears of the writers, but mediately, through working on their minds and producing there such vivid and clear ideas of thoughts and facts that the writers could find words fitted to their purpose."

God, the Holy Spirit, caused the divine message to be faithfully recorded. The writers wrote that message in the language they would ordinarily use. Thus the Bible, though written by fallible men, is still an infallible guide as far as the original writings are concerned in that they were divinely inspired.

II. Objections to Inspiration Based on Alleged Errors

Much has been said about errors in the Scriptures. However, we need not doubt the Bible since we have many positive proofs of its inspiration. Difficulties in translations and other critical treatment of its interpretation need not cause us to doubt its divine authorship. Errors in the Bible are not usually concerned with moral or religious teaching, which is the heart of the Scriptures as a divine

revelation. Problems lie in areas of interpretation as it relates to history, science, and the dating and interpretation of recently found manuscripts which have thrown new light on certain portions of the Bible. Many renowned scholars have not found proof of the existence of serious errors in the Scriptures. However, consideration is given here to the most commonly cited errors by scholars of the liberal school.

1. **Historical Errors**—The Bible's purpose is not that of recording historical events *per se*. Yet, as truth has been historically revealed, the Bible consists largely of history. The question arises: Is it historically correct? When in some cases it has *appeared* to have been incorrect, later documents and archeological digs have shown this not to be true. For example, the biblical record of a Hittite empire great enough to war with Egypt was affirmed by critical historians to be incorrect, but inscriptions were found that proved the biblical account to be a true record. Serious scholars expect other findings to substantiate other events described in the Bible, which may have been assumed to be historically incorrect.

Real errors due to the mistakes of copyists, are quite likely. Such errors may not necessarily fault the original writings, however. Mathmatical errors may give the impression that the events in which numbers have been rounded off are not historically true. And varying accounts of the same events are also cited as errors in history. Careful investigation has shown these errors to be those of incompleteness of the records rather than as an error or contradiction. Each of the four evangelists gives the inscription on Jesus' cross, but no two give it alike. Yet none of these writers contradict each other. Each writer gives what he regarded as the essential part, and probably the sum of the four accounts is the total inscription. Or if one is patient, time may yet reveal an inscription of that period that may confirm all four writers' reports. In another instance Matthew mentions two Gadarene demoniacs, but Mark mentions only one. If Mark had declared that there was *only one,* then he would have contradicted Matthew. This he did not do and seems content to describe the principal demoniac and leaves the account incomplete regarding the second. This type of error may be found in any exhaustive history of the world.

2. **Scientific Errors**—The Bible makes no claims at being a book of science. And it is concerned with science only as reference to it is of value in stating religious truth. Doubtless the human

writers did not have the advanced scientific knowledge of the present day, but it is not likely that *the Spirit of God would contradict the Creator God.* It is up to man—in science and in biblical scholarship to use extreme caution in *interpreting what the Bible says.*

Consider the Scriptural reference to the "four corners of the earth," which was understood by the ancients as referring to a flat earth; but is it not more likely that the idea intended is merely the four points of the compass, a popular expression of that day indicating the idea of entirety, but in language that unscientific men of all ages could understand. The assumption would be that honest men with correct scientific knowledge would readily understand that this poetic reference was not intended to be an accurate scientific description of this phenomenon, or that it had any bearing, from the inspirational point of view, on what God's Spirit wanted men to accept as a religious message.

Joshua's war experience refers to the sun standing still. Is this, we might ask, truth in a popular form like the references we make today to sunrise and sunset? Likewise, the Bible's reference to creation, when interpreted correctly, should harmonize with the unfolding truths science may provide us in geology, cosmology, astronomy, anthropology and other sciences. Apparent contradictions between the Scriptures and the research of biblical scholars or scientists, may prove to be a matter of *interpretation,* as we acquire more data needed for a better understanding of truth the biblical writers have given us. Continuing biblical scholarship seeks to preserve the purity of the biblical text and the *essence of divine revelation.*

Scientists themselves are quick to acknowledge that not everything can be understood through the scientific method. Bube contends that: "The techniques of science are those that are suitable for interpreting the natural revelation of God."[1] Emphasizing this point he adds: "Apparent conflicts between the interpretation of natural revelation (science) and the interpretation of the Biblical revelation (theology) have often arisen because of an attempt to find ultimate causes in nature (i.e., to subordinate the Biblical revelation to the natural revelation) or of an attempt to find secondary mechanisms in the Bible (i.e., to subordinate the natural revelation to the Biblical revelation). The two revelations are different in purpose, in scope, and in means of apprehension."[2]

Modern Christians need not resign their faith to the skeptics. Biblical scholars, like the scientists, need to remain aware of the fact that the road to truth is seldom free of human error. For, as Sproul contends, ". . . it is the road that must be taken if we are to think at all."[3] It should also be kept in mind that the question of God's existence falls within the providence of both human error and deep emotional psychological prejudice. And biblical scholars must understand the clear distinction between the Creator and the *process* of creation. Sproul explains that "the fact experts disagree does not mean that a question is insoluble. The obvious reason is, of course, because experts are capable of making mistakes. The greatest minds are subject to error. There are innumerable ways in which errors can be and are made in the process of rational debate."[4]

In his book, *If There Is a God, Why are There Atheists?,* Sproul addresses both science and biblical scholarship, warning them of the possibility of human error in reaching certain conclusions pertaining to ultimate truth. He lists four such errors which may lead to disagreement about objective truth (science): "(1) epistemological errors; (2) formal errors in reasoning; (3) factual errors in empirical investigation; and (4) psychological prejudice that distorts conclusions."[5]

Addressing the problem of atheism Sproul says, ". . . the New Testament maintains that unbelief is generated not so much by intellectual causes as by moral and psychological ones. The problem is not that there is insufficient evidence to convince rational beings that there is a God, but that rational beings have a natural antipathy to the *being* of God (italics mine). In a word, the nature of God (at least the Christian God) is *repugnant* to man, and is not the focus of desire or wish-projection. Man's desire is not that Yahweh exists, but the He doesn't. The New Testament sees not only atheism but human fabricated religion as being grounded in such antipathy."[6] He explains further: "In Theological terms, what results from the repression is the profession of atheism either in militant terms, or its less militant form of agnosticism, or a kind of religion that makes God less of a threat than He really is. Either option, atheism or religion, manifests an exchange of the truth for a lie. The truth is exchanged for the lie simply because the lie seems easier to live with."[7] (italics mine).

Certain objections have been raised concerning the biblical

account of the age of man. Biblical genealogies often present problems for the anthropologists, and it should be noted here, that the Bible does not state how long man has been on the earth, since it is neither a book of history nor a book of science. The fact that some scientists claim an age for man on earth all the way from ten thousand years to five million years or more is reason for believing they do not have any very exact data from which to judge the correctness of the Bible.

Dr. Chuck Camplejohn, an eminent physicist, asked in a public lecture that Christians pray for scientists who search for more objective truth about nature and the universe, explaining that science makes no claims to understanding spiritual matters of theology. He believes the Bible explains *what* happened, while science tells *how* it happened; and that as science acquires the technical background needed to better understand the universe, there should be no contradiction between science and the Scripture.[8]

In summary, the Bible states that man needs a divine revelation; science makes no claims for understanding the spiritual nature of man. The Bible allows faith to interact with reason while implying that man cannot live by reason alone, but is held responsible to God for using this God-given resource in understanding and obeying his Creator. Natural science may attempt to liberate man from the tyranny of the unknown, but the Bible speaks to man's deeper needs. The Christian apologist contends that the authenticity of divine revelation, like the existence of God, cannot be limited to man's reason while at the same time it does not transcend it.

3. **Moral Errors**—Critics of the Bible sometimes claim that the Bible contains immoral accounts that are unworthy of being read by children or pure-minded adults. They err in overlooking the fact that the Bible holds up the highest standard of morals known. The description of immoral conduct may be given neither to be condoned nor condemned. For example, David's sin with Bathsheba; Jael's killing of the sleeping Sisera (recorded for another purpose than its moral quality); conduct regarded as that of good men judged by the standards of their day which were given prior to the high moral standards of the New Testament; Abraham's having a second wife, or a concubine, Hagar, yet he was considered to be a righteous man, one whom Jews and Jewish leaders revered; or the extermination by the Israelites, at God's command, of other

warring nations. Such commands were given based on God's sovereign and righteous judgment of individuals and nations.

The mistake commonly made is that of judging people of ancient times and in Oriental countries by our Western standards of propriety and morality. People of the highest purity of mind and morals in Eastern lands now, as in the past, speak freely in mixed company of matters considered improper for such mention in the West. Here the claim of error in morality of the Bible is unwarranted.

Probably the most frequent criticism of error concerns the imprecatory Psalms. For example, "Break their teeth, O God, in their mouth" (Ps. 58:6), which Dr. Sheldon says is not inspired writing but an expression of "hot human passion." In this Psalm, as in most of the imprecatory writings, authorities tell us that the tense of the Hebrew is future, not imperative, therefore, they are predictions not imprecations—these announcements of God's just judgments are not a prayer for them. The error here is in taking a symbol for a literal fact. The breaking out of the great teeth of the young lions described in the remainder of the verse is a symbol for making the wicked harmless. In the New Testament we see that these imprecatory Psalms are divinely inspired and are to be interpreted as predictions as indicated in Peter's interpretation (Acts 1:20) of Psalm 69:18-25. In this Scripture he interprets a prediction concerning Judas Iscariot, expressly stating that it was spoken by the Holy Ghost through the mouth of David (Acts 1:16). Who, then, is to say this is a mere human utterance, or an expression of human passion, in the light of this positive statement in the Scripture?

4. **Contradictions**—Critics sometimes claim that the Bible is full of contradictions. However, informed scholars studying such apparent contradictions in the light of other evidences—history, linguistics, comparative exegesis—say that as we learn the facts we may later find that few, if any, real contradictions, exist.

H. C. Sheldon claims that by comparing Deuteronomy 10:1-5 with Exodus 37:1-7 he found a contradiction with reference to the ark of the covenant. In the first reference, Moses said that he made the ark of the covenant, and in the second reference that Bezaleel made it. May not Moses have meant that Bezaleel made it under his supervision, Moses being the designer and Bezaleel the carpenter?

The foregoing errors are not the only ones, others not mentioned may also be explained. But in the event the Bible was convicted of error in secular matters the inspiration of its religious message would not necessarily be affected, inasmuch as many able scholars have failed to find the proof of the existence of such error. Until its existence is proved, why not suppose the divine element in the inspiration of the Scriptures has excluded error in the statement of facts both secular and religious?

NOTES

[1]Bube, p. 69.

[2]*Ibid.*, p. 70.

[3]R. C. Sproul, *If There Is a God, Why are There Atheists?*, Dimension Books, Bethany Fellowship, Inc., Minneapolis, Minnesota, 1974, p. 33.

[4]Sproul, p. 32.

[5]*Ibid.*, p. 33.

[6]Sproul, pp. 56, 57.

[7]*Ibid.*, pp. 77, 78.

[8]Chuck Camplejohn, a scientist with a Ph.D. in physics and electromagnastatics (one of the chief design engineers of the electrical and electronic facility for Launch Complex 39 at Cape Kennedy for Saturn V Project and Apollo Series). A lecture for FGBM, 1980. Re Omega Tape Service Division, 10 PH02, P. O. Box 5050, Costa Mesa, CA 92626. All rights reserved.

PART III
NATURE AND WORKS OF GOD, OR THEOLOGY PROPER

Part III

NATURE AND WORKS OF GOD, OR THEOLOGY PROPER

Milo L. Chapman, Revision Editor

Chapter I

THE ATTRIBUTES OF GOD

Having shown that God exists and that he has given a relation of religious truth in the Scriptures, the next question for consideration both in importance and in logical order is, Who is God? Our idea of the nature and operations of God is of fundamental importance. It determines what is the nature of our religion and theology. This is the point of divergence among polytheism, pantheism, and Christianity, between Unitarianism and Trinitarianism, and even in a degree between Calvinism and Arminianism. This study about the nature of God is the study of theology in the more restricted and exact sense of the term.

I. Possibility of Knowledge of God

1. **God Can Be Known**—It is not possible to know that God is, without having some knowledge as to who God is. In its very nature the first idea necessarily includes the second in a measure. The common convictions of mankind and the plain statements of the Scriptures give no uncertain testimony concerning God as knowable. It was predicted by the prophet that "the earth shall be full of the knowledge of the Lord" (Isa. 11:9). Also it was predicted "All shall know me" (Heb. 8:11). Even of the heathen it is said, they knew God, but did not like to retain that knowledge (Rom. 1:28).

There would be no need of any argument to show that God is knowable except for the sophistry of certain philosophers who attempt by their unsound reasoning to disprove a truth more certain than any of their premises. The argument as set forth at great length by Hamilton, Spencer, and Mill is in brief essentially as follows: The absolute is necessarily unknowable because knowledge requires a knower and a known, or a relationship, and the

relative is opposed to the absolute. Also it allows God to be infinite, but affirms he is therefore unknowable because knowledge implies limitation and, it is said, limitation is contradictory to infinity. But the argument when reduced to simple language is nothing more than an affirmation that nothing can be known at all that cannot be known exhaustively and perfectly. When the argument is thus stated, it is seen at once to be false. Most of the objects of which we have knowledge are knowable to us only in part. Self-knowledge is but partial. We cannot know the mystery of our physical life, yet we know we have living bodies. We do not know what thought is, nor how the mind acts on the body, yet we know we have minds and we know we think. Even if we cannot conceive exhaustively of the weight of the earth, yet we know certainly the earth is and somewhat of its properties and form. God is not only a subject of faith, but also of knowledge.

2. **Extent of Men's Knowledge of God**—An error opposite to the foregoing is that held by certain ancient as well as some modern philosophers, that God can be fully known. But these philosophers held pantheistic views of God and therefore self-knowledge with them is the knowledge of God.

Doubtless infinity in God excludes full knowledge of him by finite beings. Our knowledge of God can be only partial. He cannot be conceived of in the sense of our forming a mental picture of him, but he is conceivable in the sense that he is thinkable. Also to affirm that God can be known by us is not to say that he can be comprehended in the sense that our understanding of him is perfect. If God could be fully known by our finite minds, he would be no god. We know that God has unlimited power to act, but how he does it we cannot know. We know he knows all things, but concerning his mode of knowing we do not understand. We know his love is boundless, but here also our knowledge is limited. As we know space but not in its infinite extent, as we know duration though not eternity, so we know God really but not exhaustively.

3. **How God May Be Known**—The mode by which we form an idea of God is the same as that we employ in forming our ideas concerning the facts of consciousness in our fellowmen, which is by comparison with ourselves. We are the children of God. Therefore, in certain respects, we are like him and he is like us. It is proper that we should ascribe to him those qualities of our own

natures but in an unlimited degree. Throughout his works in nature we see proofs that God has knowledge, emotion, volition. We know what these are in ourselves as rational beings and we rightly decide they are the same in God. To the idea of these qualities in ourselves we add the idea of infinity and thus have our idea of God.

Doubtless some would make the charge here that such a conception of God is anthropomorphic. One can reply, first, is it not better to liken God to the highest we know, the human spirit, than to liken him to one of the lowest things we know, mere physical force, as is usually done by those who are shyest about anthropomorphism? This likening of God to the most exalted part of human nature, not to the physical part, we readily admit is anthropomorphism in the proper sense of the term, and we see no valid ground for objection either to such a mode of thinking of God or to the use of this term to describe such a conception, as do those who profess so great a horror of anthropomorphism. Men of all religions have always thought of God in this way. Also it is the principle which Paul assumed in addressing the Athenians. "Forasmuch then as we are the offspring of God, we ought not to think that the Godhead is like unto gold, or silver, or stone, graven by art and man's device" (Acts 17:29).

But we not only know God by our own natures which are in his image, but we also know him through the revelation of himself in the Scriptures. With the proof of the divine authority of the Scriptures already given, we may now properly go to them as authority. And not only do we have the many statements of the Bible as to the nature of God, manifested in human form. This manifestation of God in the person of his Son is the surest of all methods of knowing God. It was truly said by Jesus, "He that hath seen me hath seen the Father." Therefore, God is not only the subject of faith, but he is knowable as Person.

II. Nature and Classification of God's Attributes

God is known to us by his attributes, and any true definition of him must be in terms of his attributes. Doubtless an exhaustive definition of the infinite God is not possible to any finite creature. Yet it is possible for us to state what are those characteristics which differentiate him from all other beings.

Many definitions of God have been constructed, varying in form according to the purpose for which they were formulated, or

according as particular aspects of his nature are made prominent. W. N. Clarke has given a definition of God that is very enlightening and excellent for the purpose intended, as follows: "God is the personal Spirit, perfectly good, who in holy love creates, sustains, and orders all" (*Outlines of Christian Theology,* p. 66). This definition has a practical end in view. It describes the nature of God's essence, exalts him above all others, and names the high motive that prompts all his works. It is simple, yet very comprehensive. But though it is practical, yet it fails to tell us certain things about God concerning which the mind seeks to know and which may be known. The definition given by the *Westminster Catechism,* and which Dr. Hodge considers "probably the best definition of God ever penned by man," is as follows: "God is a Spirit, infinite, eternal, and unchangeable in his being, wisdom, power, holiness, justice, goodness, and truth." However, it is not sufficient merely to define God. God comes to us as a person in the ultimate sense. He speaks and acts and in so doing he reveals himself as Lord. If this were not so we would not know him, we would at the most only know about him.

1. **Relation of God's Attributes to His Essence**—The attributes of God are those characteristics which make him what he is, and which are essential to the idea of God and the ground for his various manifestations.

But it is improper to confound the divine attributes with the divine essence and with one another in such a sense that they are mere human conceptions of God with no other basis than the imperfection of the finite mind. The attributes of God inhere in the divine essence. They are not mere manifestations existing apart from any essence. They are attributes or characteristics of God as weight or extension are qualities of a material object. Attributes are inconceivable apart from that essence which is their basis. They belong to the essence of God as such, and are as inseparable from it as weight and temperature are from a material thing. They are to be distinguished from those relations of God not essential to his nature. Creation is not a divine attribute because God would still have been God if he had never created anything. The divine essence is manifested throught the attributes. To know God is to know his attributes.

2. **Classification of Attributes**—Much learned labor has been expended in efforts to make scientific classifications of the divine

attributes. Many methods of classification have been devised, but the great diversity of these methods is evidence that none of them has enough in its favor to give it general recognition. It is doubtful whether an exact scientific classification could add much to the understanding of the attributes. Order is the only purpose of classification, and the purpose of order is clarity. The classification here followed may lack in the elaborate scientific arrangement sometimes sought, but it has the advantage of simplicity and is often followed. All the attributes are grouped in two classes in agreement with the two aspects of the divine nature-the metaphysical and the moral. The metaphysical are sometimes aptly called natural attributes. At least seven divine characteristics belong to this class: (1) Unity, (2) spirituality, (3) immutability, (4) eternity, (5) omnipotence, (6) omnipresence, (7) omniscience. The moral or ethical attributes are not fewer than five: (1) holiness, (2) justice, (3) love, (4) mercy, (5) truth.

III. Metaphysical or Non-Ethical Attributes

1. **Unity of God**—The term "unity" as here used is liable to be misunderstood or at least there is a danger of our grasping only a part of its significance, but probably for lack of a better term a definition of the one used is desirable. Unity is predicated of God in two senses. First, he is *one* to the exclusion of all others. Unity signifies his absolute solitariness in the rank of independent and original being. He is not one of a class, as is a man. He has no companion, as in dualism or polytheism. Second, he is not an aggregate or compound of separable units, as in Greek myths, but is simple being. Such oneness, however, is not to be understood as excluding such interior distinctions as the various attributes, nor the threefold personality in that one divine indivisible essence.

The Scriptures clearly teach this unity. "The Lord he is God; there is none else beside him" (Deut. 4:35). "The Lord our God is one Lord" (Deut. 6:4). "I am the first, and I am the last; and beside me there is no God" (Isa. 44:6). I am the Lord, and there is none else, there is no God beside me" (Isa. 45:5). "There is one God" (1 Tim. 2:5). "There is none other God but one" (1 Cor. 8:4). These statements were uttered in opposition to the prevalent polytheism of the time when spoken and doubtless support the two aspects of divine unity aforementioned. Nature also affords abundant proof of divine unity. Amidst all the endless diversity of nature there is also a wonderful harmony. As science advances in

the discovery of the laws of nature the harmony of nature is the more confirmed. In the cosmological argument for the divine existence it was shown that nature requires a first cause. As certainly as it points to the existence of a cause, it indicates that that cause is one.

The Bible affirms the unity of God. Also there is no logical need for allowing more than one God, and without a reason for supposing a plurality of gods the law of parsimony in logic excludes such a conclusion. Polytheism is not a product of reason, but as the apostle Paul implies in the first chapter of his Epistle to the Romans, the result of a depravity so degraded that the creature is worshiped instead of the creator.

2. **Spirituality of God**—By this expression is meant that God is a spirit, or that he is of spiritual substance. The theistic conception of God implies spirituality. Even idolaters usually do not think of their image as their God, but rather as a symbol or abode of a spirit which they worship. In some of their images is an opening to a cavity into which the spirit is supposed to enter.

When we affirm that God is a spirit we mean first, negatively, that he is not a material substance. He has no body, and none of the properties of matter can be properly predicated of him. Consequently he is not like a material being, with bulk, form, parts, or extension, but is invisible and intangible. Those scriptural statements which seem to represent him as having bodily parts, as eyes, ears, and hands, are anthropomorphic and are mere adaptations in language to represent knowledge attained or actions executed such as man accomplishes by the use of such organs. God appeared to Abraham and to Jacob in the form of a man, to Moses in the form of fire in a bush, to Israel as a pillar of cloud or fire, and as a bright light at other times. These manifestations which are technically known as theophanies are, however, not indicative of the essential nature of God, but are only forms assumed for the occasions.

Secondly, in attributing spirituality to God we mean positively that he possesses all those exalted qualities of a spirit which constitute personality. To say that God is a spirit we imply: (1) that he is not a mere idea, but a real substance, though not a material one; (2) that he is an individual substance and not a mere principle or power; (3) that he has intellect, sensibility, and will, and therefore is a person; (4) that he possesses self-consciousness;

and (5) that because he is a rational voluntary being, he is also a moral being.

The proof that God is a spirit is very explicit in the Scriptures. "God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth" (John 4:24). He is "the Father of spirits" (Heb. 12:9). "The God of the spirits of all flesh" (Num. 16:22). "Now the Lord is that Spirit" (2 Cor. 3:17). Rational evidence that God is a spirit is also not wanting. In all the theistic arguments we found proofs of free-will and personality which imply spirituality. Also, spirituality in God necessarily results from ascribing to him infinite and absolute perfections. Matter is necessarily inferior to spirit because of those limitations and imperfections that belong to it.

When we affirm that God is a spirit we say that which we do not fully comprehend. Neither do we know what matter is. But as we can know somewhat of the nature of matter by its properties, so we know somewhat of spirit by its phenomena and by our own consciousness. And by our knowledge of what is the nature of the human spirit we arrive at a knowledge of what is the nature of the divine spirit. It is not important that we know what is the nature of the essence of spirit, but it is important that we know what are the powers of spirits.

3. **Immutability of God**—By this we mean God never changes as to his nature and attributes. He is necessarily unchangeable because he is perfect. Any changes must be for better or for worse. But a being who is perfect cannot become better, and it is equally inconsistent to perfection to change to worse. Nothing could exist in a perfect being to cause him to change to worse and no cause outside of him could so affect him. God's perfections in an indefinite degree exclude the idea of any such thing as growth or evolution. That modern theological and philosophical theory that God grows is based upon the unscriptural and unreasonable idea that God is now imperfect and finite. But immutability in God should not be confused with immobility, nor interpreted in such a way as to antagonize the doctrine of divine personality. God is unchangeable in his essential nature, but he is capable of action. God is forever just. He rewards goodness, but if one whom he has been rewarding for goodness should cease to be good and should become evil the very immutable justice of God would require him to change his course of dealings with that person. Those representations in the Scriptures of God's "repenting" of that which he

had done should be understood as anthropomorphisms. They merely describe a change in his course of action, in conformity with his unchangeable attributes, as a result of a change in the moral character of those persons concerned. But for the righteous his goodness is always the same.

The Bible clearly teaches that God is unchangeable. "I am the Lord, I change not" (Mal. 3:6). "Every good gift and every perfect gift is from above, and cometh down from the Father of lights, with whom is no variableness, neither shadow of turning" (Jas. 1:17). He is "the same yesterday, and today, and forever" (Heb. 13:8). The immutability of God is a truth of reason. Because he is infinite in all perfection nothing can be added to him nor taken away from him.

4. **Eternity of God**—Eternity is infinite duration. Time is limited duration. By the eternity of God is meant that his existence is without beginning and without end. But more than mere infinite duration is involved in the eternity of God. It is his nature to exist, and necessary existence is involved in the very idea of his being God. The supposition that at some time in infinte duration God did not exist is self-contradictory. Our finite minds utterly fail to grasp the full significance of the eternity of God's being, but reason will not admit of its denial. To reject it is to accept the unthinkable theory that all things originated out of nothing, or that all that is, including God himself, will be utterly annihilated.

Divine eternity in connection with God's infinite knowledge must be considered in another aspect. Doubtless in relation to the temporal order in the world which he has created, God knows things in succession. Here his knowledge is not determined by what he is in himself, but by his relation to the world. Infinite knowledge requires that his knowledge of events be not only immediate and complete, but also that he know succession as men know it. Without such knowledge a gradual revelation of truth in logical order would have been impossible.

The eternity of God is often affirmed in the Bible. The very name "Jehovah" which God gave to himself and by which he is commonly called means "I am" or the eternal living one. "I am hath sent me unto you" (Exod. 3:14). "Before the mountains were brought forth, or ever thou hadst formed the earth and the world, even from everlasting to everlasting, thou art God" (Psa. 90:2). He is "the high and lofty One that inhabiteth eternity" (Isa. 57:15). He

is "the King eternal" (1 Tim. 1:17). In the cosmological argument for the existence of God is rational proof that God is eternal. Whatever dependent causes are to be found in nature, the mind requires an independent first cause and that cause must be personal as a free cause and eternal as an uncaused cause, else there was an uncaused beginning. But neither an uncaused beginning nor an infinite series of dependent causes are thinkable or possible.

5. **Omnipotence of God**—By omnipotence is meant the almightiness of unlimited power of God, or that God has power to do all things which are objects of power. We get our idea of power from our own consciousness. We are conscious of originating effects by our own wills. There is that in ourselves which causes other things to be, and we call it power. In us power is confined to narrow limits. Most of the effects we produce are by the use of means. We cannot will a book into existence, but can cause one to exist by the use of means. This limited causal efficiency in ourselves as we know it in consciousness furnishes us an idea of the nature of that infinite causal efficiency in God. When from our idea of power as it exists in us all the limitations are removed, we have an idea of that unlimited power of God. We must employ means to effect results, but God wills and it is done. We may lack the means to do all that we will, but God, whose efficiency is independent of means, has no such limitations.

But it is erroneous to assume that God can do all things. Some things are not objects of power nor doable in their nature. The Bible states that God cannot lie. God's power is not irresponsible or separate from his other attributes, but is limited by the perfections of his character. His nature is self-consistent. He cannot do that which is contradictory. He cannot cause a thing both to be and not to be at the same time. He cannot make an old man in a minute, because such an idea is contradictory. He cannot do the irrational. He cannot make a world where three plus three will equal seven, or where the angles of a triangle will not be equal to two right angles. Neither can he do that which is morally wrong, because of the holiness of his own character. It is physically and naturally possible that God should do evil, but morally impossible, because he will not. God cannot lie, neither can he cause it to be well with the wicked while they continue in wickedness.

Another important fact concerning omnipotence is that it does not imply that God exercises all his power. He has power to control the exercise of his power according to his holy character

and wise purposes. If it is not so he is the slave of his own power and not omnipotent. He can do all he wills to do, but will not do all he can do.

The Bible says, "I am the Almighty God" (Gen. 17:1). "There is nothing too hard for thee" (Jer. 32:17). "With God all things are possible" (Matt. 19:26). "The Lord God omnipotent reigneth" (Rev. 19:6). As first cause or creator of all things his power must exceed every other power. Probably logical proof cannot be given that God is more than most powerful, but rational evidence that his power is greater than all other powers combined is practically equivalent to evidence that he is all-powerful. The fact that he is necessarily infinite in other attributes is ground for affirming also omnipotence of him.

6. **Omnipresence of God**—By this is meant that in some sense God is everywhere and fills infinite space with his presence. We may be sure of the fact of his omnipresence, but the sense in which it is true is a subject very difficult for thought. Such infinity of God in relation to space is doubtless as difficult for comprehension by finite minds as is any other infinite idea. Certainly we are not to regard God as omnipresent in the sense of an infinite multiplication of his spirit because his spirit is necessarily one and individual as was shown under the unity of God. Neither is it proper to suppose it is by an extension of his parts or by diffusion of his essence throughout infinite space as the air is diffused over the surface of the earth. Since God is a spirit it cannot be correctly said that a part of God is here and another part is there. Negatively this much can be said with certainty.

Both the Scriptures and reason furnish ground for believing God is everywhere present in his range of knowledge and action. There is no doubt that he is omnipresent in his ability to know and to do. But the most difficult question in relation to the subject is, Is he omnipresent in the sense that his essence is everywhere in its entirety always? Such a view has been not uncommonly held, and this essential omnipresence has been regarded as action. But it is not clear that such a sense of omnipresence is necessary to universal knowledge and action, and to many careful thinkers there seems to be no conclusive proof of an omnipresence of God's essence. Whether God is essentially omnipresent or not, it is certain that he is potentially so. On this point Dr. Sheldon has said, "Being is defined by the modes and the measure of its

activity. As was observed in another connection, greatness depends, not on space filling bulk, but on range of action possible or actual. Now God is the one agent whose range of action is unlimited. This is the meaning of his omnipresence. He is present to all things as acting immediately upon all things. What makes distance to us is the limitation of our power of immediate action. For God no such limitation exists. One thing therefore is just as near to him as another, or, to say the same thing in different terms, he is equally present to all things" (*System of Christian Doctrine,* pp. 170, 171).

That sublime utterance of the Psalmist about God's omnipresence well represents the scriptural teaching on the subject. "Whither shall I go from thy spirit? or whither shall I flee from thy presence? If I ascend up into heaven, thou art there: if I make my bed in hell, behold, thou art there. If I take the wings of the morning, and dwell in the uttermost parts of the sea; even there shall thy hand lead me, and thy right hand shall hold me" (Psa. 139:7-10). "Am I a God at hand, saith the Lord, and not a God afar off? Can any hide himself in secret places that I shall not see him? saith the Lord. Do not I fill heaven and earth? saith the Lord" (Jer. 23:23, 24). "For in him we live, and move, and have our being" (Acts 17:28). Such are the clear statements of Scripture concerning God's omnipresence. Reason also teaches that the God who creates, sustains, and orders all must necessarily be everywhere present. Unless he is thus ubiquitous he cannot be God in the true sense.

7. **Omniscience of God**—With the proof that God is eternal and omnipresent, that he inhabits eternity and fills immensity, it logically follows that he is in possession of all knowledge. The fact of omniscience is inseparable from the omnipresence and eternity of God. Since his presence extends to all duration and all space, he must have immediate and complete knowledge. This is omniscience. Omniscience includes a perfect knowledge of all existences or events in the past, present, or future—actual and possible. That the range of God's knowledge includes foreknowledge, or prescience, is evident, not only from the foregoing reasoning concerning his eternity and ubiquity, but also (1) from his knowledge of himself which is the source and cause of all other existences and events, (2) from the fact of his prediction in the Bible of future events, and (3) from the general truth of his infinity.

Omniscience is incomprehensible to finite minds as are all other

infinite ideas. Especially is the idea of any real prescience beyond the grasp of men's minds, since they have no experience of such a thing. But the chief difficulty in prescience is met within the attempt to harmonize divine foreknowledge of men's acts with the doctrine of their freewill and moral responsibility. It is reasoned that if the future actions of men are foreknown they must necessarily be predetermined, or made certain, and if they are predetermined they are no longer free acts, and if not free acts men are not morally responsible. But it is further argued that freedom and moral responsibility are among the most certain facts of consciousness and therefore must be true. It is consequently assumed that certain knowledge of future contingencies is not possible. But such a conclusion is contradictory to the fact that the Bible contains many predictions of future events in which the human element and men's free-wills are as surely concerned as in any event. Since these facts of consciousness and the truth of prophecy are both actual and certain, then they are not contradictory nor exclusive of each other as has been sometimes reasoned. Such reasoning is unsound, because it fails to make an important distinction between certainty and necessity. Knowledge is not causation, and foreknowledge is not predetermination. To affirm an event *will be* is not to affirm it *must be*. Both affirmations denote the certainty of the event, but *will be* implies that the opposite is possible while *must be* states that the opposite is not possible. God's foreknowledge of an event is due to the certainty of that event, but the event does not come to pass because God foreknows it. God foreknew the awful carnage of world wars and the fact that Christ would be crucified, but who will dare to say that his prescience caused either? God may know that an event *will be* and yet know that it *may not be* or need not be.

Another difficulty in the doctrine of prescience is his offers of grace and use of means for the salvation of particular men when he foreknows they will always reject his offered mercy. It is apparently true on the ground of God's prescience that God does seek to save those he knows will not be saved. There would be no reason for his dealing differently toward them if he knew they would be saved. If such procedure excludes divine prescience, then prescience disqualifies God as moral ruler, for the only alternative course of dealing with the wicked would be for God merely to allot destinies to men on the ground of what he foresees they would choose if placed on probation. Such a course would exclude

moral government. But moral government is a fact and necessary to men's highest good, and the moral ruler instead of being disqualified by prescience would be unqualified without it. No one could properly be trusted with the destinies of all men unless he absolutely knew the future. Prescience is not inconsistent with the use of means by God for our salvation exactly as if he did not foreknow our final choice and destiny.

A similar objection to divine foreknowledge is that it is inconsistent with the goodness of God for him to create human souls that he foreknows will do wickedly and finally be lost. But the denial of prescience to God would not obviate the difficulty. Even if God's knowledge were as limited as ours, he would know that to create a race of beings with free-will and moral responsibility would make possible their final penal doom. Therefore the objection concerns not God's prescience, but his goodness. It is the problem of theodicy, one of the most difficult in theology. Probably, this is one of the ways of the Lord that are "past finding out."

As we have defined omniscience it includes prescience, not only of all events actual, but also possible; not only of what *will be,* but what *can be.* There are difficulties in this view. It is to affirm that God knows an inconceivable amount more as possible than as actual. It means that God knows what would have been the future history of the world if the world wars or any other decisive war had resulted oppositely, what different conditions would have been if our foreparents in Eden had not yielded to temptation or if the unnumbered free choices of men had been different, or what free wills would have done under different conditions, or what free wills that never existed would have done if they had been created. The difficulty here is principally the difficulty of infinity which is beyond our comprehension. But a greater difficulty confronts is if we disallow to God a foreknowledge of the possible as well as of the actual. It would be to deny to him practical omniscience. He could know his universe only as it is and could not understand its possibilities. He could not intelligently choose its course, because he would know only the consequences of but the one course. In fact, it would exclude his intelligent direction of the universe and the theory of existence attending such a belief would not be essentially different from fatalism.

The divine omniscience is clearly stated in the Scriptures. "The

eyes of the Lord are in every place, beholding the evil and the good" (Prov. 15:3). "Great is our Lord, and of great power: His understanding is infinite" (Psa. 147:5). The truth in either of these texts concerning omniscience complements that in the other. No portion of Scripture more fully describes God's omniscience than the first twelve verses of the one-hundred-and-thirty-ninth Psalm, a part of which was quoted in proof of omnipresence. "Neither is there any creature that is not manifest in his sight: but all things are naked and opened unto the eyes of him with whom we have to do" (Heb. 4:13). If all things are opened to his view he must be infinite in knowledge, and that must include foreknowledge. "New things do I declare: before they spring forth I tell you of them" (Isa. 42:9). The latter text clearly implies foreknowledge. The same is necessarily implied in every prediction of the Bible. A few texts that should be understood as anthropomorphic in their nature seem at first to represent God as not omniscient, but as a whole the Bible clearly teaches that he is.

Divine omniscience is of vital importance to religion. It is only on the ground of God's omniscience in its fullest sense, including prescience, that we can implicitly trust his providence, and feel assured that he will direct us aright. If he did not know all things, then he would not be worthy to be trusted with the eternal welfare of our souls, and those trustful relations with him that now bring us such deep peace would not be possible. The marvelous adjustments of nature, the vast reach of the laws of nature, the many marks of wise design, and especially the human mind with its capacity for indefinite improvement all point to a source whose knowledge is infinite.

IV. Moral Attributes

Our inquiry concerning the nature of God now leads us from the non-ethical attributes which are especially modes of activity to those attributes which represent qualities of character, or the moral characteristics of God. Contemplation of the natural attributes of God fills a devout person with awe, but when he meditates on the moral attributes his soul is bowed down with reverence and his heart glows with love for God.

In the anthropological argument for the existence of God it was shown that because man has a moral nature and that the moral cannot come out of the non-moral, therefore his maker must be a moral being. Unless God had a moral nature no rational account

can be given of such qualities in man. But it is certain man has, implanted deeply in his nature, feelings of moral obligation and a sense of ought and ought not with respect to moral duties. Proof of a moral nature in God is evident, not only from man's inner consciousness, but also from the experience of society as a whole. It is true that when the experience of society is viewed at short range, it often appears that the affairs of men are not under the control of an overruling moral intelligence. Evil seems to prevail over the good, wicked men prosper and spread themselves "like the green bay-tree," the righteous are afflicted undeservingly, and as is doubtless needed for the moral excellence of men, it appears that no guiding hand of a good God rules the world. But the larger perspective afforded by history and society in its broader aspect is evidence to the contrary. To whatever degree nations or communities have become corrupted morally, destruction has threatened them. Nature and history afford indications of a moral ruler of the world, but the Christian consciousness has no question here. To it no truth is more certain.

Under the general classification of the moral attributes long lists have been given. But many of these attributes are comprehended in others. The present tendency is to reduce the number of them to include only the more comprehensive ones. The moral attributes are sometimes reduced to two: holiness and love. And doubtless all important moral qualities of God may be comprehended under these terms. Some persons would include all under one designation—holy love or loving righteousness. But properly to emphasize the more important aspects of God's character for practical purposes we will consider God's moral nature under five attributes.

1. **Holiness**—Throughout the Bible both in the Old Testament and in the New the assertion is continually made that God is holy. Representative texts are as follows: "Who is like unto thee, O Lord, among the gods? Who is like thee, glorious in holiness . . .?" (Exod. 15:11). "I am the Lord your God . . .I am holy" (Lev. 11:44). "But thou art holy, O thou that inhabitest the praises of Israel" (Psa. 22:3). "Holy and reverend is his name" (Psa. 111:9). In Isaiah's vision the seraphims cried, "Holy, holy, holy, is the Lord of hosts" (Isa. 6:3). "But as he which hath called you is holy, so be ye holy in all manner of conversation; because it is written, Be ye holy; for I am holy" (1 Pet. 1:15, 16).

Holiness means conformity to law in its broader and more common usage, and is often used synonymously with righteousness.

It is most generally used of character, but it may be used with reference to conduct. A man whose character and conduct are especially in harmony with the law of God is said to be holy. But God is anterior to and superior to all law. Therefore the question may well be asked, "Can the holiness of God be defined in the above sense?" In reply it may be stated that for practical purposes it is sufficient to say that a thing is wrong because God has forbidden it. Yet thoughtful minds must perceive at once that right is not constituted such by God's merely willing it so. It is right in its very nature, and he wills it because it is right. It is not coceivable that God should will that men hate each other, but he does will that they love each other. He wills it because it is right that they should love each other. There are unchangeable principles in ethics and religion as there are in mathematics. It is as unthinkable that these ethical principles should be otherwise as that two plus two should equal five. Therefore God is holy, not in the sense that he conforms to a law enacted over him, but in that he is perfectly conformed both in character and actions to eternal principles of righteousness. It is his very nature to be in such perfect harmony with that which is right, to approve that which is virtuous and to condemn and disapprove the impure.

But a more practical idea of the holiness of God is possible if viewed with regard to its different aspects. It has been described as having three elements. First, God is holy in the sense that his inner character is one of perfect goodness. This perfect goodness in God is the sum and result of all his moral excellences very much as is goodness in a man in a lesser degree. An essential of God's holiness is his possession of all moral qualities in a perfect degree. The second sense in which God is holy is that his actions are always perfectly holy in consistency with the perfect holiness of his inner character. He never acts contrary to his character; therefore he acts always in conformity with principles of righteousness. Men can sometimes maintain right conduct only by acting in opposition to inner impulses and character, but God always acts freely. His holy inner character not only determines his holy conduct, but furnishes the inspiration for it. Though it is possible for God to do evil in the sense that he has free-will and power, yet it is morally impossible because it is absolutely inconsistent with his perfect holiness of character.

A third element in God's holiness is that he makes that inner

moral excellence of his own character which determines his own conduct the standard for the conduct of his creatures also. He requires men to act as he acts. "As he which hath called you is holy, so be ye holy." He could not be consistent with his own character nor true to his own perfect goodness if he required anything less from his moral creatures than conformity to those same principles of right that are the standard of his own actions. God's purpose in creating men was that they might glorify him by being holy, and his own holiness and self-consistency is the ground for demanding holiness in them. Neither does he demand of them the impossible. His method of producing holiness in the conduct of men is the same as that by which it exists in his own conduct. He provides for depraved men holiness of character through the work of salvation. The truly sanctified man is holy in his conduct in conformity to the holiness of his character. The practical aspect of God's holiness then is in providing a standard for holiness in men.

Because of his infinite goodness of character God must forever approve that which is good and disapprove the evil with an infinite intensity. His infinite holiness will ever be the condemnation and terror of the wicked and the loving admiration of the righteous, who will always feel it is appropriate to worship him as in the words of inspiration. "Holy, holy, holy is the Lord God of hosts; the whole earth is full of his glory."

2. **Justice**—That God is just is frequently affirmed in the Scriptures. "All his ways are judgment: A God of truth and without iniquity, just and right is he" (Deut. 32:4). "Justice and judgment are the habitation of thy throne: mercy and truth shall go before thy face" (Psa. 89:14). "There is no God else beside me; a just God and a Savior" (Isa. 45:21). "Just and true are thy ways, thou King of saints" (Rev. 15:3).

Divine justice as here used means that attribute in God's nature which causes him to render to all men what they deserve of either reward or punishment. It is a form of the divine holiness and is often described as righteousness. To affirm that God is just or righteous is to say that he will certainly do what, and only what, ought to be done. He will be absolutely fair to all. In the popular thought of this divine attribute of justice, it is too often regarded as merely a disposition in God to inflict penalty for sin. But justice in God is much more than the certainty of punishment for sin. It

does insure this, but also much more. It insures the right degree of both reward and punishment. God will punish the wicked, but no more than they merit, and he will reward the righteous as much as they deserve. He will be perfectly fair to all men, both good and evil. He sees, not only the evil, but also the good that men do.

The perfect holiness of God's own nature and those eternal principles of right by which he is guided require that he reward righteousness among his creatures, and also that he feel displeasure toward and punish those who disobey his precepts. All his creatures owe to him as their creator absolute obedience and subjection. The moral universe is constructed and conducted in conformity with holiness. To sin is to go against this law of the universe, and to those who do so the consequence is inevitable. The infliction of punishment either as to the fact or degree of it is not done arbitrarily by God. Right requires that God do it and he would not do right if he did not do it.

Because we are made in the image of God, we may properly judge what is the nature of the attribute of justice of God, by comparing with it the sense of justice possessed by men. In men this sense of justice is a state of the sensibility or feelings that results from the presentation to the mind of those facts that have to do with those concerned. This sense is of the same class of mental states as the sense of the beautiful, or of the fit. Such a sense of justice exists in all men. We intuitively feel when a fellow man does a good and noble act of self-sacrifice that he should be rewarded, and if one commits a foul crime in purposely doing a great injury to a helpless person we feel he deserves to be punished. As all possess this sense of justice so it is alike in its requirements in all, when all understand the object of justice alike. It is true that to one person an act may appear to deserve punishment while to another it merits reward, but this difference in judgment is due to lack of full knowledge of the facts on the part of one or both concerning the said act. But when facts are apprehended alike by all men their sense of justice will agree as to deserts. Because principles of truth and justice are always the same, this sense of justice must be the same in God as in man, except that because his knowledge is perfect justice must also be so. Our method of knowing divine justice is anthropopathic, but it were vain to tell us we cannot thus know what is just in God.

But what is the purpose of God's infliction of penalty for sin? Among men wrongdoing is punished with more than one end in

view. Civil government and law exist for the public welfare, for the protection of the weak against the strong. But government is only efficient to the extent that its laws are respected and obeyed. Therefore, those who violate the law are punished that others may be deterred from doing likewise. But if punishment of the law-breaker is merely for the purpose of upholding the dignity of the law that others may be happy, then he suffers solely for the advantage of others, and the infliction of suffering in such a case would be unjust. If one does not deserve to suffer, justice forbids the infliction of suffering upon him. Therefore administrative justice must have a basis in retributive justice. The thief cannot be justly imprisoned solely to deter others from stealing, nor to prevent his stealing more. The only proper ground for punishment of the thief is that he deserves to suffer. In cases of very flagrant crime a whole community rises up and demands that the perpetrator be punished. They may not stop to consider the beneficial effects of such punishment on their government, nor the possibility of the criminal's being reformed by the penalty. Neither is their demand necessarily prompted by hot anger. They are moved by an outraged sense of justice. They intuitively feel it is right and fitting that he should be punished. And doubtless such is the principal reason why God inflicts punishment on sinners—because they deserve it and it is right and fitting that it be meted out to them. God's purpose then in administering punishment is primarily as retribution, but it is also for the vindication of his law and moral government.

3. **Love**—No truth is more clearly stated in the Bible than that love is a characteristic of God. Some of the most exalted utterances of divine inspiration set forth this truth. An example is the great word of the apostle John "God is love" (1 John 4:8). By this expression is meant that love is God's abiding quality or characteristic. It is not a temporary disposition, but it is his essential nature to love. Another text of equal significance is, "God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son" (John 3:16). "And we have known and believed the love that God hath to us. God is love; and he that dwelleth in love dwelleth in God, and God in him" (1 John 4:16). "But God commendeth his love toward us, in that, while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us" (Rom. 5:8). These are sufficient Scriptural proof that love is a divine attribute. The next point for inquiry is concerning the nature of love in God.

Love may be defined as an emotion that causes one to crave the presence or possession of the object loved and to desire to promote the welfare of that object. In the light of such a definition a twofold aspect of love is evident: the desire to possess the object and the desire to benefit it. From two sources we may obtain help in understanding what love is in God. First we may learn what it is by comparing it with love as it exists among men who are created in his image. The second source is that grand example of the love of God that was exhibited in Christ.

Love as exhibited in human life is both a craving for and a living for its object. Both of these elements always exist in love, but in varying proportions. In its lowest form love is largely a selfish craving for its object. In its more exalted manifestation this selfish disposition is largely, but not entirely, lost in a desire to benefit the object loved. The noblest form of human love, that which exists in the mother for her child, has a large degree of this unselfish element in it. Her love moves her to much service and self-sacrifice for its well-being, even sometimes to the laying down of her own life. And yet though her love is so self-forgetful, it desires reciprocation. The craving to be loved in return by the one loved is an essential and inextinguishable part of love. Judging then from what we know of love as it exists in us, we conclude that love in God must contain in perfectly balanced proportions these two impulses. He desires first to give himself for the good of those he loves, and secondly he desires that they respond by loving him and giving themselves to him in return. In a being of perfect goodness as is God no attribute can be more desirable and helpful to others than holy love.

Also the manifestation of God's love in Christ and his work agrees with our definition of love in its double aspect. God so loved the world that he gave his Son, which was in reality a giving of himself. God gave his best for men. Jesus gave his life for them. But this is not all of the expression of God's love in Christ. He is likened to a shepherd who goes out at great self-sacrifice to find his lost sheep. He would not only help, but also possess the object of his love. Christ expresses the love of God as a self-giving for men's well-being and a desire that they give themselves to him in return. Therefore love in God is of the same nature as love in us, but perfect in degree.

But love in its highest form does not necessarily imply approval

of its object, as is often wrongly assumed. Such is not true of the highest type of love as we know it among mankind. How often the love of good parents continues to follow a wayward child even though they strongly disapprove of the child's conduct. A godly mother may loathe the vile sins of a wicked son, but in spite of his vileness she loves him with a love that never wavers. She desires, even at great personal loss to do him good and to turn him to righteousness. And such is the love of God. Therefore he loves sinners, and freely gives his best for their welfare. Even his perfect holiness does not exclude his loving sinners, nor is it in any way incompatible with such love, but rather holiness and love are necessary to each other. Without love God would not be holy, and without holiness he could not be love. Perfection in either one of these attributes requires perfection in the other.

That God is love is affirmed by the Scriptures and since they have been shown to be the Word of God we should believe it is true on that ground if there were no other reasons for believing it. But when we look about us and see how many benefits come to men to increase their happiness, when we consider that they might have much more misery than they now have, and when we see positive marks of a kind providence we are constrained to believe for these reasons also that God is good and loving. These things must not be forgotten. Nevertheless, insoluble perplexities present themselves when we attempt to reconcile with the idea that God is infinitely good and powerful the fact of the existence of evil in the world. In other words, if God possesses perfect goodness and infinite power why did he make evil possible? The opposer of theism supposes he has here a conclusive argument in favor of his position. Theists may not be able to answer the question, but certainly the opposer has many more and greater difficulties in maintaining his theory.

Atheists, materialists, pantheists, and fatalists find no difficulty in this, the problem of theodicy, because they assume all things are as they are because they could not be otherwise. But theists must regard evil as being a contingency—that it might not have been. Evidently God does not compel men to sin, nor does he will that they do so. He might have prevented evil by refusing to create men or by creating them without the capacity to do evil. But to exclude the possibility of sin would have also excluded rewardable virtue. Then man could have had only automatic excellence and he would

have been only an automaton, not a free moral being. But the question again arises, how could an infinitely good God create a race of free moral beings when he evidently foreknew that many of them would sin and suffer the penalty of sin?

Various attempts have been made to answer the question. The universalist proposes final salvation for all. The optimist says all that is, is best. The annihilationist thinks to find a solution in annihilation of the wicked. Others have vainly attempted an answer by referring the origin of sin and evil to a previous existence, while Calvinists seek relief in the idea that sin is decreed by God and is a part of God's plan. Space forbids a full statement and refutation of these inadequate and unscriptural theories. It is sometimes said that God gave men the power to refrain from sinning and that therefore whatever evil comes upon them as a result of their own sin they deserve. It is held that eternal blessedness should be made possible to the race, even at the expense of future punishment to some who sin and therefore are justly punished as the result of their own choices. This view sufficiently vindicates the justice of God. But still the question remains, why did God make it possible that some should suffer in order that others might be blessed?

This is the real question of theodicy. Attempts have been made to show that existence under any condition is a blessing and better than non-existence. If such could be shown to be true the problem would be solved, but such cannot be certainly proved. Probably the problem of theodicy must remain for the present one of the inscrutable mysteries. Many such mysteries must be admitted to exist in connection with known facts both in religion and science. In spite of this mystery concerning the existence of evil in God's universe, mankind is possessed of an inalienable conviction that God is good. Men cannot intelligently complain against God for giving them existence. Normally their joys vastly outweigh their sorrows. But sorrows do come. Yet men do not complain against God, because he has shown goodness at infinite self-sacrifice in providing a remedy. The existence of evil among men presents a dark picture, but there is light in the gospel of Christ. Everlasting happiness is made possible by God. And men cannot avoid the conviction that God is good.

4. **Mercy**—Mercy is love for the miserable. Being a form of love, it is sometimes included under the latter in treating of the

attributes of God. But inasmuch as mercy has so large a place in Christian revelation and in the relation of God to sinful men, it is not improper that Christian theology should give it separate treatment for emphasis. The condition of the object of love is that which gives love the character of mercy. Mercy is not only the disposition to treat, but also the act of treating, an offender less severely than in strict justice he deserves to be treated, especially when such lenience is the result of benevolence or compassion.

Various other terms closely related in meaning to mercy are pity, compassion, forbearance, long-suffering, clemency, grace, and pardon. Grace is favor shown to the undeserved. Pardon, forgiveness, or mercy is favor shown to those who justly deserve punishment. Pardon is mere remission of the outward penalty deserved by the offender, forgiveness is dismissal of the displeasure of the offended toward the offender, but mercy seeks the highest possible good of the offender. Mercy then in its fullest and broadest sense is worthy of Him who alone is love. No fact has greater significance for a world of sinners than that glorious truth that God is merciful. "His mercy endureth forever."

The truth of divine mercy is clear only in the light of revelation. Indications of divine goodness are abundant in nature, but there violations of its law are punished inexorably. No mercy is found there. But the Bible is filled with affirmations that God is merciful. A few of them are sufficient. "The Lord, the Lord God, merciful and gracious, long-suffering, and abundant in goodness and truth, keeping mercy for thousands, forgiving iniquity and transgression and sin" (Exod. 34:6, 7). "The Lord is long-suffering, and of great mercy, forgiving iniquity and transgression" (Num. 14:18). "The Lord is merciful and gracious, slow to anger, and plenteous in mercy. He will not always chide; neither will he keep his anger forever. He hath not dealt with us after our sins; nor rewarded us according to our iniquities. For as the heaven is high above the earth, so great is his mercy toward them that fear him. As far as the east is from the west, so far hath he removed our transgressions from us. Like as a father pitieth his children, so the Lord pitieth them that fear him. For he knoweth our frame; he remembered that we are dust" (Psa. 103:8-14). Each of the twenty-six verses of the 136th Psalm ends with the statement of the great truth, "His mercy endureth forever."

Like love, mercy is evidently similar in God to what it is in us. It

is not merely a form of thought with God, but it contains an emotional element. If it is not benevolent feeling in God, then it ceases to be mercy in a sense that gives a blessed assurance of help in time of need.

5. **Truth**—The attribute of truth in God may well be considered under two aspects: veracity and fidelity. By veracity is meant that God is truthful in his statements. Because God is truth in this sense we may safely believe the statements of divine revelation. Veracity in God is a result of both absolute knowledge and of holy feeling. Unless he possesses unlimited knowledge we cannot be certain that he always knows the truth, and therefore his statements may contain error. But the most important element in the divine veracity is his perfect moral character that results in holy feeling. This is that which is most highly esteemed among men as an assurance of their veracity. Veracity in God requires that his revelation be true, but not that it be all the truth. There is much truth, no doubt, which is beyond our grasp. The revelation of such would not only be useless, but would obscure the truth that otherwise could be understood. Neither does veracity require that a divine revelation be such that it be incapable of being misunderstood.

By affirming the fidelity of God we mean that he is faithful. What he has promised he will perform. Human promises may fail of performances because unforeseen circumstances arise that make fulfillment impossible, and also because in some instances the promises themselves are deceitfully given. But with God omnipotence guarantees the fulfillment of his promises as far as ability is concerned and his holiness gives assurance of his voluntary faithfulness. Men often fulfill their promises from no higher motive than for mere personal honor or conventional pride, but God's faithfulness is the result of holy sensibility and perfect moral character. Because of this his promises are sure. They cannot fail, because God is true to an infinite degree. This is the ground of the Christian's unwavering trust in the fulfillment of God's promises.

Chapter II

THE DIVINE TRINITY

By the divine Trinity is meant the union of the three persons—Father, Son, and Spirit—in the one Godhead. The idea of a divine trinity is peculiar to the religion of the Bible. No non-Christian religion knows any such doctrine as that of Christian Trinitarianism. Polytheistic religions have often grouped their gods variously, and not infrequently this grouping has taken the form of triads. But such triads represent tritheism, being mere groups of divinities without historical connection seemingly, and evidently without similarity to the Christian idea of three persons in one Godhead. Such triads among heathen divinities have been sometimes suggested by the ancient conception of three divisions of the universe: heaven, the earth, and the underworld. An example of such a triad is that of the ancient polytheistic nature worship of Babylonia in which Anu is represented as the god who ruled in heaven, Bel on the earth, and Ea under the earth. Another cause for grouping in triads is the family idea or the idea of a god, his wife, and their child. Among non-Christian religions, the triad of Hinduism—Brahma, Vishnu, and Siva—is the nearest approach to the divine Trinity.

The doctrine of the Trinity is not only peculiar to Christianity, but it is also necessary to it. It is a great error to suppose this doctrine is a mere speculative truth of no practical value or interest to Christians generally. It is fundamental to Christianity. Christianity would cease to be Christianity without it. It is that which determines the nature of the religion of all true Christians as to inner belief and experience. Many Christians are doubtless unable clearly to state the doctrine, but nevertheless they believe it as to its various elements.

If there is no Trinity there is no divine Christ. If one believes Christ is not divine, consistency requires him also to believe that there is no adequate sacrificial atonement for sin, and that the atonement has no greater value than its moral influence. And if no adequate sacrifice for sin has been offered, pardon and regeneration as an instantaneous work of grace must be given up. In short, he must substitute salvation by works for salvation by faith. Belief in the doctrine of the Trinity is that which distinguishes between an evangelic and a rationalistic religion. These are not only

theological consequences of antitrinitarian belief, but the history of Unitarianism confirms such statements. Not only the older Socinianism, and the New England Unitarianism, but also the modern "liberal Christianity" rejects the divinity of Christ, and all unite in rejecting all the other doctrines before mentioned. With them salvation is by character and not by grace through faith. It is a mere natural process. The denial of the Trinity logically and actually leads to a faith essentially different from evangelic Christianity and an entirely different interpretation of the New Testament throughout. The doctrine of the Trinity is not useless as has been affirmed, but vitally important to Christianity. If it is not true, we are yet in our sins.

The truths of Christianity thus far considered are of such a nature that their truthfulness must be admitted on rational grounds. Now we approach a doctrine of pure revelation. But with the proof of the divine authority of the Scriptures already considered, we may properly accept their testimony as adequate reason for our belief of it. Though the doctrine of the Trinity may not be discovered by the reason, yet when it is revealed by Scriptures it is found to be, not contradictory to reason, but logically necessary to the Christian system.

I. The Doctrine of the Trinity

The truth of the divine Trinity, like other aspects of Christian doctrine, is not stated in the Bible, but the elements of the doctrine are clearly stated there even though it appears to be done incidentally in many instances. The consideration of the subject involves questions of fact, and also questions of the harmony of the facts. And it should ever be borne in mind that the facts must stand even though they cannot be harmonized satisfactorily to all minds. Our first aim should be to learn the Bible facts, and then seek to harmonize them. Even if an attempt to harmonize them results in no more than showing they are not contradictory, the doctrine may reasonably be accepted. Our aim then should be first to set forth the constituent elements of the doctrine as found in the Scriptures.

1. **Biblical Elements of the Doctrine**—The first fact of the Bible that is a constituent element of this doctrine is the unity of God. Whatever else the Bible may say, this fundamental truth must not be denied. Trinity must not be assumed to be tritheism. The Bible constantly affirms that God is one in that he has no equal or

companion and also in that he is not compounded. This has been shown in discussing the divine attribute of unity. God's unity is a fundamental truth in the doctrine of the Trinity.

The second Bible fact that must be given consideration here is that divine attributes and titles are ascribed, not only to the Father but also to the Son and to the Holy Spirit. They are all alike represented to us as being God, equal in power and glory. But the terms Father, Son, and Spirit are not to be understood as mere distinctions in designating one being as a matter of emphasizing different relations of God to men. The Scriptures represent each of the three as saying I of himself. The Father addresses the Son with the pronoun "thou" (Heb. 1:9), the Son addresses the Father as "thou" (John 17:5), and they speak of the Holy Spirit as "he" and "him" (John 14:26). They act upon one another and are objects of one another's action. These facts point to three distinct persons who are God. But the fact is that their attributes are the same, and these are qualities of and inseparable from the divine substance; therefore the substance of the Father, Son, and Holy Spirit is the same. These then are the vital facts of the Scriptures from which the doctrine of the Trinity is constructed. God is one, yet in some sense he is three. He is one as to essence, but three as to personality. Fuller scriptural proof of these facts will be given in the appropriate place, but these are the facts as clearly set forth in the Bible.

2. **The Doctrine in Early Church Symbols**—Doubtless at a very early period in the church's history the foregoing truths of the Bible concerning God's threefold nature were held as they are by many devout Christians today as separate, distinct facts without any attempt being made to harmonize them. Such unquestioning faith was all right for practical purposes as long as conditions remained such in the church that a harmony of these truths was not needed. Soon, however, heresies arose which emphasized some of these facts to the exclusion of the others. Ebionites denied the divinity of Christ. Gnostics regarded him as a mere emanation from God, dependent, and not equal with God. Sabellians regarded the same person as at once Father, Son, and the Holy Spirit, these three names being used merely to express different relations of God to men. The Arians affirmed Christ is not eternal, but that he is the first and highest of all created beings.

It was the purpose of withstanding the evil influence of these

heresies that the Christian doctrine of the Trinity gradually began to be formulated. Often great Christian truths have been held as objects of faith long before they have been set forth in doctrinal form and their various elements harmonized. Sometimes such formulation of doctrinal truths takes place only when it becomes necessary to offset opposing heresies. The conflict of the early church with the Arian heresy was especially fruitful in leading to the formulation of the Trinitarian doctrine. Because of the sharp contention between the opposing factions, the Emperor Constantine was moved to convene the First Ecumenical Council, which met at Nicea, in Asia Minor, in the year 325 A. D. One of the objects of this council was to frame a statement of this Christian doctrine that would include all the scriptural elements and harmonize with the religious convictions of Christians generally. Though creeds or statements of faith, because humanly constructed, have sometimes obscured rather than elucidated the Bible teaching, it still must be allowed that the mature thought concerning the divinity of Christ of many such fearless defenders of the truth as Athanasius enabled them in framing this Nicene creed, or symbol, to state the doctrine of the Trinity with a degree of clearness that has seldom if ever been surpassed. The Nicene symbol as given by H. C. Sheldon in his *History of Christian Doctrine* is as follows:

"We believe in one God, the Father Almighty, maker of all things visible and invisible. And in one Lord Jesus Christ, begotten of the Father, the only begotten, that is, of the essence of the Father, God of God, and Light of Light, very God of very God, begotten not made, being of one substance with the Father; by whom all things were made, in heaven and earth; who, for us men, and for our salvation, came down and was incarnate, and was made man; He suffered, and the third day He rose again, ascended into heaven; from thence He cometh to judge the quick and the dead. And [we believe] in the Holy Ghost. And those who say, there was a time when He [the Son] was not; and, He was not before He was made; and, He was made out of nothing, or out of another substance or thing, or the Son of God is created, or changeable or alterable—such the Holy Catholic and Apostolic Church condemns."

Due to the fact that this statement of faith was formulated for the purpose of upholding the true divinity of Christ and not

especially to affirm the fact of the Trinity, the result was deficiency in its statement concerning the Holy Ghost, of whom it merely affirms belief. Athanasius and others held this statement to imply belief in the Trinity, while their opposers denied that such a meaning was intended. The consequent confusion resulted in the calling of the Council of Constantinople in 381 A. D. That council amended the Nicene creed by adding an affirmation of the divinity and equality of the Holy Ghost with the Father and Son. But a still more definite statement of belief in the Trinity is that known as the Athanasian creed. It is of unknown authorship and not the product of a church council. Though it is not the fomulation of Athanasius, yet it is not improperly designated as it is, because it has had a vast influence in supporting the doctrine of the Trinity for which that heroic church father so earnestly contended. It is in part as follows:

"We worship one God in Trinity, and Trinity in Unity; neither confounding the persons, nor dividing the substance. For there is one Person of the Father; another of the Son; and another of the Holy Ghost. But the Godhead of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost, is all one; the Glory equal, the Majesty coeternal. . . . So the Father is God: the Son is God: and the Holy Ghost is God. And yet there are not three Gods: but one God. . . . The Father is made of none: neither created, nor begotten. The Son is of the Father alone; not made, nor created: but begotten. The Holy Ghost is of the Father and the Son: neither made, nor created, nor begotten: but proceeding. . . . And in this Trinity none is afore, or after another: none is greater, or less than another. But the whole three Persons are coeternal, and coequal. So that in all things, as aforesaid: the Unity in Trinity and the Trinity in Unity, is to be worshipped."

This remarkable statement of belief in the divine Trinity is regarded as being in harmony with and inclusive of all the vital elements of the Bible teaching on the subject, as well as representative of the faith of the church through the centuries. No later statements by theologians or church councils have succeeded in setting the doctrine in clearer light. "When we consider the incomprehensible nature of the Godhead, the mysterious character of the doctrine of the Trinity, the exceeding complexity and difficulty of the problem which the church had to solve in presenting the doctrine that there are three persons and one God, in such

a manner as to meet the requirements of Scripture and the convictions of believers, and yet avoid all contradiction, we can hardly fail to refer the church creeds on this subject, which have for ages secured assent and consent, not to inspiration, strictly speaking but to the special guidance of the Holy Spirit" (Charles Hodge: *Systematic Theology,* Vol. 1, p. 478).

3. **The Doctrine Stated**—The foregoing ancient symbols consist of a careful statement of the different scriptural elements of the Trinitarian doctrine set in proper relation to each other. But it is noticeable that they attempt only a formulation, not a philosophy, of the doctrine. They are objects for faith, but are not designed to satisfy the reason. Here the question may appropriately be asked, "Is a philosophy of the Trinity possible?" The care with which the ancient statements of the doctrine avoid attempting such a philosophy is evidence that their formulators doubted its possibility. Some later writers have endeavored to set forth a philosophical statement of the doctrine for the purpose of proving or illustrating it. But all attempts to reason out and illustrate that which is so evidently inconceivable are necessarily unsatisfactory. The intellect, sensibilities, and will in the soul of man have been much pointed to as illustrating trinity in God. They do show the possibility of a certain triplicity in unity, but such an illustration leads to the Sabellian rather than the true idea of the Trinity. We think no satisfactory philosophy of the Trinity is possible, because the idea is incomprehensible to men.

The doctrine may be stated, however, in such a manner that no fact of Scripture is omitted or contradicted. To do this it is necessary to avoid Unitarianism on the one extreme and tritheism on the other. God must be regarded as one being, yet three as to person. To affirm both unity and trinity of God is not to say that he is one and yet three in the same sense. Such would be absurd and it is not to be supposed that millions of intelligent Christians believe an absurdity. In some sense he is one, in another sense he is three. Probably for practical purposes no better distinction can be made between these two senses than to say, as is commonly said and as the church symbols affirm, that God is one as to substance, but three as to person. Such an idea is incomprehensible to us, but it has the practical advantage of showing that the scriptural facts of unity and trinity in God are not irreconcilable nor contradictory to each other. The term "person" as used in

relation to members of the Godhead is not to be understood as identical in meaning with its use in relation to men. But what man is competent to say that God cannot subsist in a mode peculiar to himself which we cannot comprehend because it is beyond the range of our experience?

With the fact established that the elements of the doctrine are not contradictory to each other, it is not unreasonable to believe them. Christian thought and faith may properly accept these truths of the Bible unquestioningly and without explication. This the devout heart does, and experiences in so doing the blessedness of believing.

4. **Mystery of the Trinity**—The principal objection urged against the doctrine of the Trinity is that it is an incomprehensible mystery and therefore the Unitarian charges us with illiberality for requiring belief in it. It has already been shown that the doctrine does not involve an arithmetical absurdity nor a contradiction by affirming that God is three and yet one, for these are not affirmed of God in the same sense. Yet when this is said the opposer still makes the charge of illiberality against those who insist on belief in the truth of the Trinity. That the doctrine contains much mystery we readily admit, and if we insisted that men comprehend the idea exhaustively we should indeed be unreasonable in our requirements. But all that is required for acceptance of the doctrine is belief of the truth of the Trinity as it is stated in the Bible. And it is not necessary that all its mysteries be elucidated before we can believe it.

If we may properly believe only that which is free from mystery, then how narrow indeed must be the range of credible truth! Mystery is met on every hand in nature. We know many facts through phenomena, yet do not understand the mysterious cause of the phenomena. That the mind controls the body is well known as a fact by consciousness, but what is the connection between the mind and the body is an inexplicable mystery. Science is well aware of the fact that gravitation operates in a marvelous manner in directing the course of the heavenly bodies, but what that mysterious power is and how it attracts is clothed in mystery. Mystery enshrouds many of the things we know most surely. We are familiar with the fact of physical life, but what it is we cannot know. The common grain of wheat of which our daily bread is made contains within itself the mysterious power when planted in

the ground to germinate and produce other similar grains of wheat. When we say God is a spirit we say what even Unitarians recognize as being a fact, but none of us know what a spirit is. It is incomprehensible to us even though we know it is true. Why, therefore, should we regard the truth of the Trinity as incredible simply because it is mysterious? With evidence that what the Bible says God says, and with clear statements there of the truth of the Trinity, it ought to be believed even though it is mysterious.

II. Bible Proofs of the Doctrine

In no place in the Scriptures does the word "trinity" occur. This has sometimes been regarded as evidence that Trinitarian proofs are not to be found there. But it might as properly be reasoned that because the words "omniscience" or "omnipresence" do not occur there that therefore the Scriptures do not teach that God knows all things and is everywhere present; or that because "Decalog" and "Pentateuch" are not terms of the Bible therefore the Ten Commandments and five books of Moses are not to be found there. The absence of the term in the Bible is no evidence that the truth for which it stands is not found there under other terminology. Rather it is because the truth of the Trinity is taught there that theology has made use of this term so well adapted to the brief expression of that truth.

It is also true that the Bible does not formulate or directly state the doctrine. Therefore it is not to be expected that in giving Bible proof of the doctrine any single passage may be given that adequately affirms Trinitarianism. The most certain proof is to be found in the vast multitude of texts that imply it by affirming the constituent elements of the doctrine—that God is one, that the Father, Son, and Holy Spirit are distinct persons, and that each of them is divine. When these elements are shown to be contained in the Bible and are set in proper relation, the doctrine of the Trinity is the result. The fuller exhibition of these elements will be given under other headings concerning Christ and the Holy Spirit. Here our purpose is to give only such passages as contain all the essential elements of the doctrine.

1. **The Baptismal Formula**—"Go ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost" (Matt. 28:19)). In this well-known injunction of Jesus, the implication is clear, (1) that the Father, Son, and Spirit are distinct, because each one is named in the one passage;

(2) that each is a person, because Christian baptism is to be in the name of each, which could be true only of persons; (3) that each is divine, because disciples can properly be baptized only in the name of the Divine Being. These facts also imply the equality of the three members of the Godhead. Whatever is implied here of the Father is also implied of the Holy Ghost. If "in the name of the Father" implies his personality, as much is implied of the Son and Spirit by the similar expressions concerning them. This passage has always been accepted by Christians generally as sufficient proof of the doctrine of the Trinity, and it certainly is worthy of much respect for critical thought. In this formula for baptism God has made provisions for this important truth to be kept constantly before the minds of the church as a fundamental truth of the faith.

2. **Paul's Benediction**—"The grace of the Lord Jesus Christ, and the love of God, and the communion of the Holy Ghost, be with you all. Amen" (2 Cor. 13:14). In this prayer the apostle prays, (1) to Christ for his grace or favor to the Corinthians; (2) to the Father for his love to be extended to them; and (3) to the Holy Ghost for his communion, or fellowship. Here the divinity of each of the three is evident. The personality of each is clearly implied, for only persons can show favor, manifest love, or be objects for the fellowship of men. The distinction of the three is unmistakably implied in the wording of the text. Every repetition of this prayer is therefore a recognition of the divine Trinity.

3. **Other General Trinitarian Texts**—Except for its probable ungenuineness, no text in the Bible would have greater value as proof of the Trinity than 1 John 5:7. "For there are three that bear record in heaven, the Father, the Word, and the Holy Ghost: and these three are one." This statement is practically an affirmation of the doctrine of the Trinity, but its absence from all the ancient manuscripts but one, from all the early church fathers, and from all the ancient versions except the Vulgate has been considered sufficient reason for its omission from most of the later English translations. It is supposed by scholars to be an interpolation, probably having been originally a marginal note, which was brought into the text unwittingly by an ancient scribe. Whatever may be the real degree of its right to a place in the sacred text, its conspicuous absence in the ancient texts has so discredited its genuineness that it has no value in support of the doctrine and so may as well be dismissed from consideration.

It was said by church fathers, "Go to the Jordan and you shall see the Trinity." On the occasion of Jesus' baptism the Father addressed the Son from heaven and the Holy Spirit descended upon him in the form of a dove (Matt. 3:16, 17). The least that can be said of this text is that it clearly distinguishes the three members of the Godhead. To most minds it is an important support of the Trinity. Certainly it is so if taken in connection with other texts. In Jesus' discourse to his disciples following the institution of the last supper, which is recorded in John 14, 15, 16, he tells them about the Father and addresses the Father, and promises to send to them the Holy Spirit, who will comfort, guide, and teach them. Jesus thus clearly recognizes the personality of all three and the works he ascribes to the Spirit, including showing "things to come" (John 16:13) clearly imply divinity and equality with the Father, and the Son.

Another text that distinguishes clearly, by naming them, three members of the Godhead and implies the divinity of the Spirit by attributing to him eternity is as follows: "How much more shall the blood of Christ, who through the eternal Spirit offered himself without spot to God" (Heb. 9:14). Still other texts of similar value may be cited. "For through him we both have access by one Spirit unto the Father" (Eph.2:18). "Elect according to the foreknowledge of God the Father, through sanctification of the Spirit, unto obedience and sprinkling of the blood of Jesus Christ" (1 Pet. 1:2). If the three last texts cited do not reach the goal of full proof of the Trinity, they at least have value as partial evidence and are valid proof in connection with those texts that supply whatever they may lack.

To many minds the foregoing proofs from the Bible are sufficient evidence of the truth of the doctrine under discussion, but it is well to remember that these are not the surest proofs of the Trinity; they are yet to be given.

III. The Divinity of Christ

That there is one God who is a person and that the Father is that one person is allowed by all theists. Proof of the divinity and personality of the Father is therefore superfluous here in support of the doctrine of the Trinity. All Unitarians admit these to be facts. Also the personality of Christ is generally admitted. That Christ is a person distinct from the Father has been shown and Unitarians usually recognize him as being so. The important and vital question concerns whether or not he is God in the highest

sense of the term. The whole argument turns on this point. If it can be shown from the Scriptures that Christ is divine and equal with the Father the real objection of Unitarians to the truth of the Trinity is answered. That Christ was truly human was denied by the ancient Gnostics, but today almost all classes allow he was a man. Unitarians deny and Trinitarians affirm he was also truly God. The truth must be determined by the words of Scripture. To exhibit and comment on all the Bible gives on the divinity of Christ would require much space. For the sake of brevity some of the more important Bible proofs are grouped under a few main heads.

1. **Divine Titles of Christ**—One of the methods by which the Scriptures teach the divinity of Christ is by calling him by the various names of deity. Certain terms are commonly used in the Bible to denote the Divine Being and these are used of Christ in the same sense. Nothing can be more reasonable than to understand that his being called God implies that he is God.

(1) *Christ is called God*—No more positive statement is possible than that found in the opening verses of John's Gospel. "In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. The same was in the beginning with God. All things were made by him" (John 1:1-3). Here Christ not only is given the divine title "God," but the direct and positive affirmation is made that he is God. That the term "Word," or as it appears in the Greek, "Logos," is used to denote Christ is certain from verse fourteen, where it is said, "The Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us." The opening words of the text affirm the preexistence and eternity of Christ. It does not state that in the beginning of created things, the Logos began to be or was created, but it affirms that "in the beginning *was* the Word." He was already existing when time and creation began, because, as the text further states, "*All things* were made by him; and without him *was not anything* made that was made." [italics mine] This statement absolutely excludes the possibility of his having been created himself, by affirming that he made all that was made; and surely he could not have made himself, for he could not have acted before he existed. Therefore he is eternal, and because eternal, divine.

Unitarians have not been slow to see that this text if interpreted as it reads is fatal to their theory, and have therefore endeavored to interpret it to harmonize with their teachings. They contend

that the omission in the original of the article before the second use of the word "God" requires the indefinite article in the English translation. Then the text reads, "In the beginning was the Word and the Word was with *the* God and the Word was *a* God." But the highest authorities in New Testament Greek state that usually if the article is used before both the subject and the predicate they are convertible and what is true of one is true of the other. Then if the inspired writer had thus repeated the article in this case he would teach the doctrine of the ancient Patripassians, that God and the Word were identical. But if he had done so then the last clause in the first verse would contradict the middle one that the Logos was *with* God, which implies that in some sense they were not identical. The preposition *"with"* implies a relation, which is not possible except there be more than one. Therefore the verse is in exact harmony with the idea of the divine Trinity. The Logos is both with God and yet is God. That he is God in the highest sense is clear from the statements that he is both eternal and creator. No language could have been used that would have better supported Trinitarianism. It is a mistake to suppose that the omission of the Greek article before the word "God" indicates another than the deity, as is shown by many texts as the following where it is omitted in the original text. "With men this is impossible; but with God [not *the* God] all things are possible" (Matt. 19:26).

When the apostle Thomas, who had doubted Jesus' resurrection, saw the Master in his resurrected form he exclaimed, "My Lord and my God" (John 20:28). These words of Thomas could not have been a mere ejaculation addressed to no one, else they would have been profane. But that they were not profane, and that they were true of him and not a mistaken idea of Thomas, is evident from Jesus' answer of approval which immediately follows: "But unto the Son he saith, Thy throne, O God, is for ever and ever" (Heb. 1:8). Here the inspired writer is endeavoring to show that Christ is superior to the angels, and therefore he quotes these words from the Old Testament in which he is called God. "God was manifest in the flesh, justified in the Spirit, seen of angels, preached unto the Gentiles, believed on in the world, received up into glory" (1 Tim. 3:16). This verse is true only of Christ, not of the Father. Therefore Christ is here called God. "For unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given: and the government shall be upon his shoulder: and his name shall be called Wonderful,

Counsellor, The mighty God, the everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace" (Isa. 9:6). "Behold, a virgin shall be with child, and shall bring forth a son, and they shall call his name Emmanuel, which being interpreted is, God with us" (Matt. 1:23). The ascription to Christ of the divine title "God" in the two foregoing texts is so clear that no comment is necessary. "Take heed therefore unto yourselves, and to all the flock, over the which the Holy Ghost hath made you overseers, to feed the church of God, which he [God] hath purchased with his own blood" (Acts 20:28). Here it is said that the church is purchased with the blood of God. Therefore Christ is called God.

"Whose are the fathers, and of whom as concerning the flesh Christ came, who is over all, God blessed for ever" (Rom. 9:5). This verse first affirms that Christ, as to his human nature, is descended from Israel, but in antithesis to the words, "According to the flesh" the Apostle says he is "over all," or the Supreme Being, and "God," who is "blessed forever." This is a clear affirmation that Christ is God, which was written to show that Jesus was not merely human. The last three words "God blessed forever" cannot properly be regarded as a doxology, as is done by Socinian and Arian writers, because according to the universal usage of the New Testament writers it should then read, "Blessed be God forever," which reading is inadmissible. Another reason why it cannot properly be regarded as a doxology is that if God were the subject, as it would be if this were a doxology, then the article should be used with it in the original, which is not done.

(2) *Christ is called Jehovah*—The name "Jehovah" is the highest and most distinctive name of the true God. It represents God as being the self-existing One. It is the name of himself God gave to Moses at the burning bush, and is commonly translated "Lord" in the English Authorized Version, but in the Revised Version is rendered "Jehovah." "And God spake unto Moses and said unto him, I am the Lord: and I appeared unto Abraham, unto Isaac, and unto Jacob, by the name of God Almighty, but by my name *Jehovah* was I not known to them" (Exod. 6:2, 3). It is an appropriate name for the Deity in that it expresses his attributes of eternity and immutability. But this name is used, not only of the Father, but also of Christ, showing he is divine in the highest sense.

"Behold, the days come, saith Jehovah, that I will raise unto

David a righteous Branch, and he shall reign as king and deal wisely, and shall execute justice and righteousness in the land. In his days Judah shall be saved, and Israel shall dwell safely; and this is his name whereby he shall be called: *Jehovah our righteousness*" (Jer. 23:5, 6, ASV). Certainly this righteous Branch of David who was to save God's people and who was to be their righteousness can be no other than Christ. And he is called Jehovah.

2. **Divine Attributes of Christ**—Certain characteristics, perfections without limitation, from their very nature can properly be attributed only to God. Yet such divine attributes are very often ascribed to Christ in the Bible either by positive affirmation or by implication. Therefore Christ must be divine in the highest sense of the term.

(1) *Eternity*—"Jesus said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, before Abraham was, I am" (John 8:58). No language could be used that would more clearly teach that eternity is an attribute of Christ. It does not merely teach preexistence of Christ, that he existed before his incarnation and even before Abraham. If this were all that Jesus meant he would have said, "Before Abraham was, I was." But he uses "I am" to show the Jews that he was not only fifty years old, which they denied; that he had not only seen Abraham, which they questioned; but that he is eternal. He described his eternity in words similar to those in which God affirmed his self-existent and eternal nature in speaking to Moses at the burning bush. The Socinian gloss, intended to evade the force of this text, which reads, "Before Abraham existed, I existed in the purpose and plan of God," is undeserving of notice.

"In the beginning was the Word . . . . The same was in the beginning with God. All things were made by him; and without him was not anything made that was made" (John 1:1-3). This text not only states that Christ existed prior to his incarnation, but it states that he is eternal. He is not said to have begun to be in the beginning, but that then he "was" already existing. He is described as creator of all things made; therefore he did not begin to be, else he created himself. Socinians have paraphrased this text to read, "In the beginning of Christ's ministry he was; his sentiments, sympathies, and purposes were with God—were accordant with the divine will; and he was God to his church." But such a superfluous truism, as this makes of the first clause, is unworthy of the inspired writer. Another statement from the same Scripture

writer plainly speaks of Christ as eternal. "That which was from the beginning, which we have heard, which we have seen with our eyes, which we have looked upon, and our hands have handled, of the Word of life; (for the life was manifested, and we have seen it, and bear witness, and show unto you *that eternal life, which was with the Father,* and was manifested unto us)" (1 John 1:1, 2). "I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the ending, saith the Lord, which is, and which was, and which is to come, the Almighty" (Rev. 1:8).

(2) *Immutability*—"Jesus Christ the same yesterday, and today, and forever" (Heb. 13:8). No language could more clearly affirm the unchangeableness of Christ. He is immutable as is the Father in the perfection of his nature and divine personality. In all the mutations incident to his incarnation he was unchangeable in this respect.

(3) Omnipresence—"And Jesus came and spake unto them, saying, All power is given unto me in heaven and in earth. Go ye therefore, and teach all nations. . . . and lo, I am with you always, even unto the end of the world. Amen" (Matt. 28:18-20). The promise of his presence with his disciples in connection with the command of Jesus to evangelize all nations was doubtless for their encouragement. He would be with them to assist them wherever they went. This implies omnipresence on the part of Jesus. The same divine attribute must be understood as being implied in his "upholding all things by the word of his power" (Heb. 1:3). A text even more definite, if possible, concerning the omnipresence of Christ is that in Matt. 18:20: "For where two or three are gathered together in my name, there am I in the midst of them." From the context it is certain Christ here means he is omnipresent as God has been shown to be omnipresent. He is present in every local assembly of his people, according to this text, to hear and answer their prayers, and to exercise government. In this very real sense Christ is the head of his church. He is present everywhere in that very practical sense of power to know and to do. Omnipresence is also implied in the words, "The Son of man which is in heaven" (John 3:13). These words were spoken while he was incarnate on earth. Even then he was potentially omnipresent in his range of knowledge and action. He healed the nobleman's son who was twenty-five miles distant, and knew of the death of Lazarus at Bethany while he was still beyond the Jordan. Such a potential

omnipresence is the only sense in which God may be certainly proved to be ubiquitous. Therefore Christ is equal with the Father in this attribute.

(4) *Omniscience*—The attributes of eternity and omnipresence necessarily imply omniscience in Christ in the fullest sense as they do in the Father. Unlimited knowledge in Christ is also necessarily implied in his relation as the final judge of all men. Only an omniscient person is fitted justly to judge the world. The Scriptures usually represent his omniscience as knowledge of men's inmost thoughts, which is possible only to God and which implies a knowledge of all things. "Lord, thou knowest all things; thou knowest that I love thee" (John 21:17). "Now we are sure that thou knowest all things" (John 16:30). He is frequently spoken of as "perceiving the thoughts" of persons and as "knowing what is in man." Also Jesus said, "As the Father knoweth me, even so know I the father" (John 10:15). Only an omniscient being could possibly know the infinite Father as that omniscient Father knows him.

One text seems to be contradictory to the foregoing proofs of the omniscience of Christ. "But of that day and that hour knoweth no man, no, not the angels which are in heaven, neither the Son, but the Father" (Mark 13:32). This is the strongest antitrinitarian text in all the Bible. But one lone text ought not to be so interpreted as to contradict many others equally clear and the whole tenor of Scripture. We should inquire then, is it capable of an interpretation in harmony with these many other texts that clearly teach Christ's divinity? The genuineness of the text has been questioned, but not disproved. The most common method of interpreting it by Trinitarian writers is to say that as man he did not know the time referred to, but as God he did know it. Such a distinction has been made between the divine and human consciousness in Christ in explanation of this text from Athanasius and the fathers before him to the present time. Possibly it is a proper exegesis of the text. If so then it must be protected against the Nestorian error of denying the unity of the human and divine natures in one person. Because of a failure to understand the text in the Trinitarian sense it should not be interpreted contradictory to all the sure Bible proofs of the Trinity.

(5) *Omnipotence*—That Christ was possessed of the attribute of almightiness is evident from the miraculous works of power recorded of him. These are so numerous it is needless to cite particular examples.

3. **Divine Works of Christ** Some works are of such a nature that they peculiarly belong to the Divine Being. If the Scriptures clearly represent these as being performed by Christ, then we must admit he is divine.

(1) *Creation*—No work is more truly the work of God than creation. Only God can be the creator of all things. In its nature it requires the divine attributes of eternity and omnipotence. But Christ is said to be creator of all things. "All things were made by him; and without him was not anything made . . . . He was in the world, and the world was made by him" (John 1:3, 10). "For by him were all things created, that are in heaven, and that are in earth, visible and invisible, whether they be thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers: all things were created by him, and for him: and he is before all things, and by him all things consist" (Col. 1:16, 17). "And, thou, Lord, in the beginning hast laid the foundation of the earth; and the heavens are the works of thine hands" (Heb. 1:10). All these texts clearly attribute creation to Christ. Therefore Christ is God. Yet he is not the Father. The doctrine of the Trinity is the only theory by which these facts can be harmonized. Conservation of all things, another divine work, is also attributed to him. "Upholding all things by the word of his power" (Heb. 1:3).

(2) *Pardon of sin and final judgment*—"And when he saw their faith, he said unto him, Man, thy sins are forgiven thee. And the scribes and the Pharisees began to reason, saying, Who is this which speaketh blasphemies? Who can forgive sin, but God alone? But when Jesus perceived their thoughts, he answering said unto them, What reason ye in your hearts? Whether is easier, to say, Thy sins be forgiven thee; or to say, Rise up and walk? But that ye may know that the Son of man hath power upon earth to forgive sins, (he said unto the sick of the palsy,) I say unto thee, Arise, and take up thy couch, and go into thine house" (Luke 5:20-24). In the nature of things only the one against whom sin is committed is qualified to pardon that wrongdoing. Jesus could consistently forgive moral transgression against God only on the ground that he was God. The Pharisees were right in their question "Who can forgive sin, but God alone?" Their error, like that of modern Unitarians, was in disallowing that Jesus is divine.

Christ will also be the judge of all men in the last day. "For we must all appear before the judgment-seat of Christ" (2 Cor. 5:10).

See also Matthew 25:31-46 and John 5:22, 27. Only one possessing full knowledge of every moral act and thought, and also a perfect knowledge of men's motives and just deserts for all, can justly judge the world. Only God possesses such knowledge, which amounts practically to omniscience. Therefore Christ is God.

4. **The Worship of Christ**—The Scriptures everywhere represent God alone as being the proper object of worship, and condemn the worship of all others most severely as idolatry. But Christ is described in the Bible as being worshiped with his approval and even by divine injunction. Therefore he is God, else Christianity supports rank idolatry.

"When he bringeth in the first begotten into the world, he saith, And let all the angels of God worship him" (Heb. 1:6). This text plainly demands the worship of Christ by angels in heaven. If he is a proper object of worship for them, he is also for us. But unless he is divine such worship would be idolatry. "All men should honor the Son, even as they honor the Father" (John 5:23). No higher honor can be accorded to the Father than divine worship. Jesus here unmistakably teaches we should honor the Son in the same degree, which means necessarily that we worship him as God.

Christ was worshiped by men full of the Holy Spirit who knew the truth. "And they stoned Stephen, calling upon the Lord, and saying, Lord Jesus, receive my spirit. . . . Lay not this sin to their charge" (Acts 7:59, 60, ASV). These are the words of the dying Stephen in the hour of his martyrdom, of whom it is specifically stated that at that time he was "full of the Holy Ghost" (v. 55), and is elsewhere described as a man of wisdom. We know he was one of the foremost preachers of the early church. He could not have been in error in this prayer. Yet he addressed his prayer and committed his soul to Christ, not the Father. Such prayer and worship as this is due only to God. If Christ be not God, then Stephen's dying prayer was not a whit above Mariolatry or idolatry. Worship and prayer to Christ was common to the apostles and early Christians. "Unto the church of God which is at Corinth . . . with all that in every place *call upon the name of Jesus Christ* our Lord" (1 Cor. 1:2). "Then they that were in the ship came and worshiped him, saying, Of a truth thou art the Son of God" (Matt. 14:33). The man born blind whose eyes Jesus opened said, "Lord I believe. And he worshiped him" (John 9:38). And

Jesus allowed their worship of him, which he certainly could not have done if it were idolatry. Of his thorn in the flesh, Paul said, "For this thing I besought the Lord thrice, that it might depart from me" (2 Cor. 12:8). The one to whom he prayed answered, "My grace is sufficient for thee" (v. 9). Then Paul said, "Most gladly therefore will I rather glory in my infirmities, that the *power of Christ* may rest upon me." [italics mine] Inasmuch as the one to whom Paul prayed gave him his power to endure this suffering and that power was the "power of Christ," it is clear that Paul prayed to Christ. This worship of Christ is evidence that he is God.

IV. The Personality and Divinity of the Holy Spirit

The third person of the divine Trinity is variously named "the Holy Spirit," "the Spirit of God," "the Spirit," when reference has been made to God "his spirit," and when God speaks "my spirit." His being designated Spirit is for the purpose, doubtless, of representing his relationship to the Trinity. As the Son is called the Word because he is the revealer of God, so the third person in the Godhead is called Spirit because he is the one who is especially the power or worker in the Godhead in effecting men's redemption. Christ atones for sin, but the Spirit convicts, regenerates, witnesses, and teaches. Among the early Christians, as with many devout Christians at the present, the truth concerning the Holy Spirit was held as it appears on the surface of the Scriptures without any attempt at harmonizing or formulating the doctrine. It was only when the church was confronted by the rise of heresies concerning the Trinity that the doctrine was carefully formulated and given exact expression. The two points of special importance in the doctrine of the Holy Spirit are his personality and divinity. Only Unitarians deny his divinity, but sometimes Trinitarians, who theoretically hold his personality, in their common thought regard him as a mere power or influence because of confusing in their minds his operations and his personality. Both his personality and divinity are essential elements of the Trinitarian doctrine.

1. **Personality of the Spirit**—A person is a being possessed of intelligence, will, and individual existence who can say "I," "thou," "he," "me," "mine." The Holy Spirit may be said to be a person because of his possessing these characteristics. Proof of his personality does not require that evidence be given of his having each of these several qualities. All may often be included in a single proof.

His personality is shown by the use concerning him of the personal pronoun. When he speaks he says "I." When he is spoken to, "thou" is used. When he is spoken of "he" or "him" is used. Such usage clearly implies personality. It is true that inanimate things are sometimes personified, but such personification is a mere figure of speech and except in very rare cases is evident, and in view of the facts creates no difficulty in this argument. "Separate me Barnabas and Saul for the work whereunto I have called them" (Acts 13:2). Here the Spirit uses the first person pronoun of himself. "But when the Comforter is come, whom I will send unto you from the Father, even the Spirit of truth, which proceedeth from the Father, *he* shall testify of me" (John 15:26). [italics mine] "Howbeit when he, the Spirit of truth, is come, he will guide you into all truth: for he shall not speak of himself; but whatsoever he shall hear, that shall he speak: and he will show you things to come. He shall glorify me: for he shall receive of mine, and shall show it unto you" (John 16:13, 14). Here in three verses the third person pronoun is used of the Holy Spirit nine times.

His personality is shown by his being associated with other persons of the Trinity. In the baptismal formula we are taught to acknowledge the Spirit as we do the Father and the Son. We are baptized in his name as in the names of them. Here the personality of the Father and Son are beyond question. No more reason exists for denying personality to the Spirit. It cannot be supposed we are to baptize in the name of the Father and also in the name of an indefinite form of his power. When the Apostle tells the Corinthians they were not baptized in the name of Paul, he means they were not made his disciples. In the same sense to be baptized in the name of the Holy Spirit is to acknowledge ourselves his disciples. And it is not to be supposed we are disciples of an impersonal energy. Also in the apostolic benediction (2 Cor. 13:14) the Holy Spirit is associated with the other members of the Trinity as a person among persons with an earnest prayer for his communion which is possible only to a person.

Especially is the personality of the Spirit shown by the ascription to him of personal acts. "The Holy Ghost said, Separate me Barnabas and Saul for the work whereunto I have called them. . . . So they being sent forth by the Holy Ghost, departed unto Seleucia" (Acts 13:2-4). If these words mean only that these brethren at Antioch felt impressed that these two men were

suitable for the work suggested, they are misleading. How the Spirit spoke we do not know, but that he spoke and that his message was definite is clearly affirmed. It is plainly the act of a person described here. "But Peter said, Ananias, why hath Satan filled thine heart to lie to the Holy Ghost" (Acts 5:3). It is not possible to lie to a power or a mere influence, but only to a person. "The Spirit itself maketh intercession for us with groanings which cannot be uttered" (Rom. 8:26). Only a person can thus intercede, especially with such intensity of feeling. Other works ascribed to the Spirit might be mentioned that constitute conclusive proof of his personality. He may be grieved (Eph. 4:30); affronted (Heb. 10:29) [NEB]; he reproves (John 14:13); teaches (Luke 12:12); witnesses (Rom. 8:16); comforts (John 14: 16); guides and predicts future events (John 16:13); regenerates (John 3:5), and sanctifies (Rom. 15:16).

2. **Divinity of the Holy Spirit**—As the vital truth concerning Christ is his divinity, so is the proof of personality concerning the Spirit important to the doctrine of the Trinity. When these are admitted the divinity of the Holy Spirit is usually accepted. Yet to fill out and strengthen the argument for the Trinity it is well also to give proof of this.

The Holy Spirit is often called God. "Know ye not that ye are the temple of God, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you?" (1 Cor. 3:16). Because the Spirit of God dwells in men they are here said to be the temple of God, which implies that he is God. "But Peter said, Ananias, why hath Satan filled thine heart to lie to the Holy Ghost? Thou hast not lied unto men, but unto God." (Acts 5:3, 4). If lying to the Holy Ghost is lying to God, then the Holy Ghost is God. The apostle Paul says in Acts 28:25, "Well spoke the Holy Ghost by Esaias the prophet," and gives a quotation from Isaiah 6:9 where the words are said to be those of Jehovah. The fact that the Holy Ghost is Jehovah is similarly shown also by a comparison of Hebrews. 10:15 with Jeremiah 31:31, 33, 34.

The Holy Spirit is also shown by the Bible to be possessed of various divine attributes. "How much more shall the blood of Christ, who through the eternal Spirit offered himself without spot to God" (Heb. 9:14). Only God is eternal; therefore the Spirit is God. The Holy Spirit is said to be omnipresent in that notable text in Psalm 139:7 which begins, "Whither shall I go from thy Spirit? or whither shall I flee from thy presence?" His omniscience is

declared by the apostle Paul in 1 Corinthians 2:10, 11 when he says the Spirit knows all things, "yea, the deep things of God." He is said to know the things of God as the Spirit of a man knows the things of a man. A proof of the divinity of the Holy Spirit is also found in the declaration that blasphemy against the Father or Son may be forgiven, but if it is against the Holy Spirit it may not be forgiven (Matt. 12:31). Certainly a dignity so exalted cannot be his except he is God.

The Holy Ghost is also recognized as God by the ascription of divine works to him. He operated in the creation of the world (Gen. 1:2). He inspired the writing of the Word of God; therefore he must be God. "For the prophecy came not in old time by the will of man: but holy men of God spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost" (2 Peter 1:21).

The Holy Spirit is not so commonly set forth in the Scriptures as an object of worship as is the Son, yet his worship-worthiness is implied in the proofs that he is God, especially in such texts as those that warn against the danger of blaspheming him. What has been said is sufficient evidence that inasmuch as he is of the same substance as the Father and Son he is therefore equal with them in power and glory. But as the Son is subordinate to the Father in the mode of his subsistence and operations in the world, so is the Holy Spirit represented as subordinate to both the Father and Son in that he proceeds from or is of the same substance with them and is sent by them to men.

3. **Procession of the Spirit**—The doctrine concerning the Holy Spirit and especially as to his relation to the other persons of the Trinity was very confused prior to the Council of Nicea. The church generally held the facts concerning him that are revealed on the surface of the Scriptures, but those who attempted to harmonize those facts often went far astray. The statement of faith formulated by the Nicene Council only repeated what was before stated in the Apostle's Creed, which merely said, "I believe in the Holy Ghost." As a remedy for the continued confusion, the Council of Constantinople, which met in 381 A. D., added to the earlier creed, "I believe in the Holy Ghost, the divine, the life-giving, who proceedeth from the Father, who is to be worshiped and glorified with the Father and the Son, and who spake through the prophets." The later creed, the Athanasian, states that the Spirit is consubstantial with the Father and Son; that He is

uncreated, eternal, and omnipotent, equal in majesty and glory; and that He proceeds from the Father and the Son. The Athanasian symbol includes two elements not found in the Constantinopolitan: that the Spirit is consubstantial with the Father and also the Spirit is said to proceed, not only from the Father, but also from the Son. At the Synod of Toledo in 589 the Constantinopolitan creed was amended by the addition of the word Filioque, "And the Son." The controversy resulting from the addition of this word was one of the principal causes that led to the separation of the church into the Greek and Roman divisions. The Athanasian creed represents the doctrine of the large portion of Christians ever since its formulation and is the faith of evangelical Christians today.

By the procession of the Spirit is meant the mode of his subsistence in relation to the Godhead. The Spirit's procession is an inscrutable mystery, as is the idea of the Trinity.

The Scriptures clearly affirm the procession of the Spirit from the Father. "But when the Comforter is come, whom I will send unto you from the Father, he shall testify of me" (John 15:26). It need not necessarily be understood that the sense of the term "proceedeth" as used here implies more than that the Spirit is sent from the Father to believers, but evangelical Christians of both the past and the present have commonly interpreted it to describe his mode of subsistence in the Godhead. But apart from what may be the true sense of this particular text this relationship of the Spirit to the Father called procession is a necessary and eternal one. If it were by an optional act of the Father, then the Spirit would not be eternal and therefore not God. Arianism would make Christ a creature of the Father and the Spirit a creation by Christ, but the true doctrine of the Trinity can admit nothing less than the eternity of them both. To say the Spirit proceeds from the Father is merely to say that he is of the same essence with the Father.

The procession of the Spirit from the Son also is not explicitly stated in the Scriptures. Yet it may be clearly inferred much in the same sense as is the Trinity itself. The relationship of the Spirit to the Son is the same as that to the Father. He is not only called the Spirit of God, but also the Spirit of Christ (Rom. 8:9). If the Trinitarian doctrine is true that he is not the Spirit of God in that he is related to God as a man's spirit is related to the man, but is only such in that he proceeds from the Father, then he must be the

Spirit of Christ in the same sense. Thus the Scriptures support the statement of the Athanasian symbol that the Spirit proceeds from the Father and the Son. Also the procession of the Spirit from the Son is a logical requirement on the ground that the Father and the Son are of the same essence. Again, it may be reasoned that because Christ as well as the Father sends, or pours out the Spirit on men, thus showing the Spirit's relation to both, the ground for such relation is in his proceeding from them both.

CHAPTER III

THE WORKS OF GOD

I. God's Work in Creation

The minds of men have always been exercised with the question of the origin of the universe. The universe is either eternal or else it began to be. Constant change in existing things is evidence that at least in its present form it is not eternal, but had a beginning. This is generally admitted. Plato assumed matter was self-existent, or eternal, and that God used it to construct the cosmos. Aristotle held eternity, not only of this matter, but also of its present orderly form. Pantheists identify God with matter and regard it as eternal and that by its power of self-action present things have been formed. Other theories have been advanced that attribute intelligence and self-action to nature itself. Another class of theorists are those who attribute the universe to purely physical, non-intelligent forces. An example of this class is the naturalistic theory of evolution of all things from a primitive nebula. All these pantheistic and naturalistic theories of creation are atheistic and were sufficiently refuted under theism. Human reasoning has struggled in vain with the problem of the origin of the world. Only in Revelation is it set in a clear light. The prevalence of the idea, if not the original conception, of the creation of the world out of nothing is due to the Bible, which clearly teaches that God created the universe out of nothing.

For clearness in thought it is important to distinguish between the several spheres of creative work. (1) Matter may be thought of as having been created and as existing independent of any orderly form of it. Matter and its properties are distinct only for abstract thought, but the existence of matter and its arrangement in orderly forms is an actual distinction. A chaotic state of matter is conceivable. It is possible to think of the matter which now composes the physical universe as having once existed in a shapeless mass. The Bible states that the time was when matter did so exist. "The earth was without form, and void" (Gen. 1:2). This distinction between the existence of chaotic matter and the cosmos is important for the purpose of showing that even though it could be proved that matter were eternal, it would not therefore follow that the cosmos or the orderly arrangement of nature is eternal,

nor its naturalistic development a necessary consequence. (2) We may also conceive of the formation of pre-existent matter into orderly arrangement in the shape of a sphere, with its various distinct substances, continents, seas, atmosphere, clouds, mountains, and strata. Such order is conceivable apart from the existence of any form of life. (3) The origin of all organic nature including plant and animal life is thinkable as having originated subsequently to matter and inorganic forms. (4) Still another distinct sphere of creative work is in the origination of mind. In its nature, its qualities, and the possibility of knowing it only through phenomena it is clearly distinguishable and altogether different from matter. Such distinctions are made in the Bible and the recognition of them is important to its proper interpretation.

1. Matter Created Out of Nothing—Not only in theology, but also in science and philosophy the question of the eternity of matter has ever been a source of conflicting views. Theological thought is not rationally limited to the creation of matter from nothing. The theistic argument is equally strong whether we reason that a divine person is necessary to the creation of the cosmos out of nothing, or whether we assume the eternity of matter and reason that he is required to change it into an orderly universe.

Only on the grounds of the Scriptures can we certainly know the truth concerning this subject. It has not infrequently been reasoned that to admit the eternity of matter would be to limit God in such sense that he would not be the absolute, and that if matter were eternal it would be independent of him and be another God. But equally able thinkers do not regard such reasoning as conclusive against the possibility of both God's absoluteness and the eternity of matter.

Science has also failed to give any clear light on the question under consideration. It has no sure data determinative of the question, and probably the sphere of science is such that it should not be expected to provide such data. Sir John Herschel and Professor Clerk Maxwell endeavor to prove that matter has been created by showing that the atoms of matter bear marks of being "manufactured articles." Maxwell says, "The exact equality of each molecule to all others of the same kind gives it the essential character of a manufactured article, and precludes the idea of its being eternal and self-existent." But inasmuch as there is not

general concurrence of scientific authorities regarding this subject and especially in consideration of the fact that the present form of the molecules and atoms may be regarded as the molding of God out of pre-existent but divinely created matter, it may well be assumed that science furnishes no light either for or against the origin of matter.

Turning to the Bible, we found proof of the creation of matter out of nothing, but that proof is not of a philological nature as is sometimes supposed. Various Hebrew words in the Old Testament and Greek words in the New are used indiscriminately to express originative creation out of nothing and to form out of existing matter. In this respect they are similar to the English terms *create, make,* or *do.* The Bible proof of an originative creation of matter is to be found in the connections in which these words are used. The first biblical use of the term translated "create" is as follows: "In the beginning God created the heaven and earth. And the earth was without form, and void" (Gen 1:1, 2). From this second verse we learn that at one time the earth was formless and empty. It was a shapeless mass of matter that had not been arranged in any orderly form. But the preceding verse affirms that creation had already taken place. This took place in the "beginning," which doubtless means the beginning of time. Time began with the origin of that which is not eternal. Therefore the origin of matter must mark the beginning of time. It should be noted that the formless and void condition of the earth was not before, but at or after it was created. "Create" as used in the first verse could not refer to the orderly arrangement of matter which is said in verse two not yet to have taken place, but must refer to the creation of matter out of nothing. That verse two is a continuation of the history of verse one and not the beginning of a new history is implied in the conjunction at the beginning of the second verse translated "and." Hebrew scholars state that this word is never used to begin a new history.

It is said of God in Romans 4:17 that he "Calleth those things which be not as though they were." To "call" as here used may be understood in the sense of commanding or controlling things that are not, which would imply the actual origination of them. Or it may mean, according to Dewette, that God "calls the nonexisting into existence." A clearer statement of creation out of nothing could scarcely be made than that given in Hebrews 11:3: "Through

faith we understand that the worlds were framed by the word of God, so that things which are seen were not made of things which do appear." Here it is declared that the world we now see was created by God, but not from materials that appear or that may be seen. It is equal to saying it was created out of nothing.

Not only in these positive statements do we have evidence that matter began to be, but also in the silence of the Sacred Record concerning the eternity of matter. A still further evidence is the common Bible distinction between God's eternity and the temporariness of all other existences.

2. **Creative Work Not Necessary to God**—The theory has not been uncommonly held that the nature of God is such that creation was necessary by him. It has been reasoned that as consciousness in a human being arises only through sensation which is dependent upon the external or that which is not self, so God could come to consciousness only by originating other existences. In objection to such reasoning for the necessity of creation, it may be said that it implies a contradiction in that it makes God create for the *purpose* of gaining for himself self-consciousness. But self-consciousness is necessary to such purposing. If God became conscious *through* creating the world, he could not have been conscious *when* he did it. If he were not then conscious there would have been no such thing as design in creation. The marks of design in nature are opposed to this argument for necessitated creation. Also, even if human consciousness is developed only by sensation, it does not follow that a purely spiritual incorporeal being whether created or divine is likewise dependent upon sensation and objective existence for consciousness.

It is further reasoned that the plenitude of the divine nature is such that it must necessarily overflow in creating other existences. If this were true then there must necessarily have been an eternal overflow in creative work and created existences must be eternal and infinite. But evidence is abundant that nature is temporal. Again it is held there is a moral necessity with God to create. It is held that because God is love, and it is the nature of love to long to communicate itself and to make others happy, therefore he must necessarily create other beings. In objection it may be said that then he must have had that necessity from eternity and so his creation must be eternal and infinite in extent. But such is not found to be true.

The common faith of Christians is that God was free in creating. Freedom is implied in personality, and creation is the work of a person. In his infinite wisdom he created the universe for his glory.

3. **The Genesis Record**—The Genesis narrative of creation avoids the mistake of stating that the universe is eternal. Neither does it commit the error common to pagan cosmogonies of assigning to the world a pantheistic origin. It begins with a personal, supreme God who originates matter and then later out of that material by progressive stages develops the cosmos. The record left to us in Scripture is far superior to all pagan cosmogonies, differing from them as widely as does truth from fiction.

In speaking of creation the Hebrew verb *bara* is used. This term is used exclusively of God's work. It means to bring into existence that which at one time did not exist. This conception of creation is not an anthropomorphism since man does not have the power of *bara,* to create. That power belongs solely to God.

The supreme interest of the creation narrative is not scientific, but religious. It is in this respect in harmony with the great purpose of the Bible as a whole. Yet the dominance of the religious element should not be supposed to exclude a statement of essential facts from the narrative. Nothing could more certainly represent the greatness and infinite power of God than the simple record of the facts of creation. It is true it could not have been given otherwise than according to popular conceptions in that unscientific age, but a statement may be essentially true though not given in scientic terms. Even in a scientific age it is not thought to be incorrect to speak of the rising and setting of the sun. Neither does the historic nature of the record require that we suppose the human writer had a full comprehension of the creative process. It is enough that the Inspiring Spirit knew this. May not Moses have written that which contained a meaning far beyond what he thought, as was evidently true of those who prophesied of Christ and his salvation and then studied their own writings to learn more about the subject? (1 Peter 1:11).

4. **Creation Days and Geologic Periods**—With the development of the science of geology or since the beginning of the last century the interpreter of the biblical record of creation has had a new factor to take into consideration: the harmonizing of the Bible narrative with the findings of geology. Geology claims the strata of

the earth were built up by a process that occupied a vast period of time, which has been variously estimated at from 25,000,000 to 1,600,000,000 years. The principal question that confronts the biblical exegete is, can the Scripture record be reconciled with such a time-period and process? Those who are unsympathetic toward the science of geology or who have not given attention to its study endeavor to answer the question by denying the claims of geology. Whatever liberty one may properly claim for himself in taking such a position, it is certain that such an attitude on the part of friends of the Bible is not conducive to acceptance of its teaching by those who do accept the views of geology, which they believe are well supported by clearly ascertained facts. It is a distinct advantage to religion to show, if it can be done, that the Bible narrative is not inconsistent with the claims of science. It is improper to debar the student of science from faith in the inspired record by hedging it around with human interpretations that are not required by internal facts of the Bible. And it is never right so to interpret the Bible that it contradicts certainly known facts of nature.

Truth is always consistent with itself. Truth in the Bible never contradicts truth in nature. God is the author of both. And as the man of science errs in advancing unproved theories that are opposed to the plain statements of the Scriptures, so also does the theologian err who refuses to regard the facts of science in interpreting the Scriptures, as has been too often done. The facts of geography were rejected by those doctors of Salamanca who considered it unscriptural to hold with Columbus that the earth was not flat, but round. Also that great astronomical fact that it is the earth that moves in the heavens and the sun stands still, was rejected by Francis Turrettine when it was set forth by Newton and Galileo. The present-day exegete of the Scriptures does well to beware that he does not deny facts of geology in order to make a place for an erroneous interpretation of the Bible. It may not be incumbent upon the theologian to furnish the proof of the claims of science, but it is certainly important that he take account of those claims to the degree that he will point out their agreement with the Scriptures if such is possible.

During the last century three different theories have been more or less prevalent for reconciling the Mosaic six days of creation with the measureless periods of the geologic cosmogony. The first

theory advanced was the reconstruction theory by Dr. Thomas Chalmers early in the last century. When geologists first set forth the idea that the earth did not come into being a few thousand years ago as had been not uncommonly assumed it was this noted theologian who promptly came forward with the statement that the Bible nowhere stated the time of the earth's creation and that if the Bible genealogies proved anything it was only the time of the creation of man. Chalmers's scheme of reconciling the Bible and the geologic records assumed that vast periods of time intervened between the creative work of the first verse of Genesis 1 and what followed in the chapter. He supposed that Genesis 1:1 describes a certain creation of orderly nature with many forms of plant and animal life, and that this continued for countless ages during which the geologic formations took place. The theory further supposes these geologic periods were followed by a chaotic period when such conditions developed that all life on the face of the earth became extinct and at least there if not in the heavens darkness and chaos prevailed. Then it is supposed a reconstruction of the cosmos took place as described in Genesis 1, during six literal twenty-four hour days.

If the geologic facts could be shown to agree with such a reconstruction, this theory would satisfactorily reconcile the Bible and science at this point. It has not been commonly urged that the interior facts of Scripture require such a double creation. The advocates of the theory have rather held that the second verse of the Bible is so worded that it merely makes a place for such a former creation. But such an interpretation of the verse appears to be an unnatural one. The history seems to be continuous. No such double creation was found there by exegetes until they were confronted with the necessity of harmonizing the Mosaic narrative with geology. Such an exegesis simplifies interpretation relative to the length of the creative days, but great difficulties are found in the lack of scientific facts to support it. A break at a certain point in the geologic deposits of certain parts of the world has been noted, but no general chaotic period is to be found in the geologic record. In reference to this point the great geologist Hugh Miller, who was himself a firm believer in the Bible, says, "From the present time up to the times represented by the earliest Eocene formations of the Tertiary division, day has succeeded day, and season has followed season, and no chasm or hiatus—no age of

general chaos, darkness, and death—has occurred, to break the line of succession, or check the course of life. *All the evidence runs counter to the supposition that immediately before the appearance of man upon the earth there existed a chaotic period which separated the previous from the present creation. (Testimony of the Rocks,* p. 155).

With the progress of geologic science it became apparent that facts did not support the theory of Dr. Chalmers. Twenty-five years after the publication of his theory, Dr. Pye Smith advanced a scheme of harmonizing the Bible with geology, which is really but a modification of the theory of Chalmers. Smith held with Chalmers except on the one point of a universal chaos and an entirely new creation of life. He supposed the chaotic condition was of limited extent. Following the geological ages it is assumed that a particular locality, probably in southwestern Asia, was submerged and nature there was reduced to chaos, while other parts of the earth life continued in unbroken succession even until the present. Then the six days of creation described beginning at Genesis 1:2 was of only particular species including man and was limited to that local section.

But whatever may be said in favor of such a theory it is confronted with serious difficulties. It has no more internal scriptural support than the first theory. It requires that the word "earth" used in Genesis 1:2 and subsequent verses be given a very restricted meaning inconsistent with its usage elsewhere. By reducing the creation of Moses' narrative to a mere local reconstruction it seriously impairs the idea of God's absoluteness which this account of creation is supposed to teach. This theory deprives the creation account of its high sublimity. Such a theory does not have support in the facts of geology. Hugh Miller rejects it on these grounds and says "It fails to satisfy me."

A third method of reconciling the Mosaic record and geology is to regard the six days, not as literal twenty-four-hour days, but as symbolic days representative of geological ages. Strong reasons can be given for such an interpretation. The events of creation could not be known to man as the later patriarchal and Israelitish history, but could be known only by divine revelation. In this respect the account of creation is much of the same nature as is prophecy. It might be described as inverted prophecy. The Bible prophecies, as in the "seventy weeks" prediction of Daniel 9:24,

often use a day as a symbol of a longer period of time. May it not be then that when God revealed the events of creation to man he employed a similar method, possibly by representing the events in vision to the seer with periods or days to represent geological ages? The most certain interpretation of prophecy is always in the light of its fulfillment in history. The best proof that the seventy weeks of Daniel are weeks of years rather than of twenty-four hour days is the fact that according to history exactly that many years elapsed between the events described. It is accepted as a sound principle of biblical interpretation that these prophetic symbols must be interpreted in agreement with the facts of history. "In what light, or on what principle, shall we most correctly read the prophetic drama of creation? In the light, I reply, of scientific discovery—on the principle that the clear and certain must be accepted, when attainable, as the proper exponents of the doubtful and obscure."—Hugh Miller. If we employ here this common method of interpreting predictions of the future, we shall understand these six days in the light of that history afforded by the record of the rocks. Those best qualified to read that record tell us those periods symbolically called days were probably millions of years in duration. If they are not to be regarded as twenty-four hour days, but symbols of long periods, then there is no reason why they cannot be regarded as being whatever length geologic findings require. In the light of this principle of interpretation it would be as unreasonable to insist that these days were twenty-four hour days as to hold that the coming of Christ and other events predicted in the ninth chapter of Daniel occurred four hundred and ninety days after the going forth of the command to restore and rebuild Jerusalem in 457 B. C. As further proof that "day" in the creation record does not necessarily mean twenty-four hours, observe that the identical period described in Genesis 1 as six days is in chapter 2:4 called *one* day.

That the six days of the Mosaic narrative are symbolic of the geologic periods is the view of the majority of the most learned and devout exegetes at present and is rapidly gaining acceptance with the average Christian. This view is not altogether a modern view forced upon interpreters by science. Some of the early Christian fathers as Origen, Augustine, and Aquinas doubted whether those six days were to be taken in a literal sense. To regard the six days as symbolic days, representative of the geo-

logical periods, is by far the simplest and most reasonable method for reconciling Genesis and geology.

"Day" is frequently used in the Scriptures in other senses than of the twenty-four hour day. It is sometimes used for a year, sometimes for an indefinite period as in the expressions "the day of your calamity," "the day of salvation," or in reference to the gospel dispensation, and in Genesis 1:5 it is used of the period of light in antithesis to night. In Genesis 2:4 is the expression "in the day that the Lord God made the earth and the heavens."

5. **Agreement of Moses and Science**—The first step necessary to a reconciliation of the Mosaic record of creation with that record written in the rocks of which geologists tell us, is to harmonize the six days with the geologic time-periods. This has been done. But the agreement must be shown, not only in the length of time occupied in the creative work, but also in the order of events in the process. Here the agreement between the Bible and science is remarkable. Not only do eminent scientists fail to find any serious contradiction between Moses and geology, but they testify to finding a very remarkable corroboration of the Mosaic account in nature. Some of the very ablest scientists have shown this agreement, including such men as James D. Dana, M.A., L.L.D., professor of geology and natural history in Yale University; Alexander Winchell, eminent as a geologist, a writer on scientific subjects, and professor in the University of Michigan; Professor Arnold Guyot of Princeton, whom Dana describes as "a philosopher of enlarged comprehension of nature"; Professor C. H. Hitchcock of Amherst; and the great geologist Hugh Miller, who in his excellent work *Testimony of the Rocks* has shown at length the harmony of Genesis and geology.

Geology affirms that creation was gradual. Genesis most clearly teaches the same. Science begins with a disorganized condition of matter. Genesis affirms that same formless condition of matter in its beginning. An unproved scientifc hypothesis assumes nebula was the primordial form of matter. If that theory could be proved it would not necessarily conflict with Genesis. The nebular theory conflicts with the Bible only when it is coupled with the antitheistic idea that the formation of the cosmos from that original nebula was by resident forces alone rather than by the divine agency.

Professor Dana briefly shows the harmony of Genesis and geology by a concise statement of the steps in the process of

creation as shown by each. Assuming that matter was originally in a gaseous state, he enumerates the stages as known by science as follows: "(1) Activity begun—light an immediate result. (2) The earth made an independent sphere. (3) Outlining of the land and water, determining the earth's general configuration. (4) The idea of life in the lowest plants, and afterwards, if not contemporaneously, in the lowest or systemless animals, or Protozoans. (5) The energizing light of the sun shining on the earth—an essential preliminary to the display of the systems of life. (6) Introduction of the systems of life. (7) Introduction of mammals—the highest order of the vertebrates—the class afterwards to be dignified by including a being of moral and intellectual nature. (8) Introduction of man." "The order of events in the Scripture cosmogony corresponds essentially with that which has been given. There was first a void and formless earth; this was literally true of the 'heavens and the earth,' if they were in the condition of a gaseous fluid. The succession is as follows: (1) Light. (2) The dividing of the waters below from the waters above the earth (the word translated waters may mean fluid). (3) The dividing of the land and water on the earth. (4) Vegetation; which Moses, appreciating the philosophical characteristic of the new creation distinguishing it from previous inorganic substances, defines as that 'which had seed in itself.' (5) The sun, moon, and stars. (6) The lower animals, those that swam in the waters, and the creeping and flying species of the land. (7) Beasts of prey ('creep' here meaning prowling). (8) Man" (*Manual of Geology,* pp. 743, 745).

A full exhibition of the remarkable agreement of Genesis and geology in the details of the process of creation is neither possible because of lack of space nor appropriate to a work of this nature. Entire volumes have been written by devout and eminent scientists describing this harmony. (See *Testimony of the Rocks,* Hugh Miller; *Reconciliation of Science and Religion,* Alexander Winchell; Supplement to Chapter First in Kitto's *History of the Bible,* written by C. H. Hitchcock.) The possibility of such a reconciliation is adequately shown by brief general statements from those who are of the highest rank as scientists.

Following his comparison of the order of creation as furnished by Moses and geology, Professor Dana further says, "The record in the Bible is therefore profoundly philosophical in the scheme of

creation which it presents. It is both true and divine. It is a declaration of authorship, both of creation and the Bible, on the first page of the sacred volume" (*Manual of Geology,* p. 745). In his chapter on the Mosaic Vision of Creation, Hugh Miller says, "Now, I am greatly mistaken if we have not in the six geologic periods all the elements, without misplacement or exaggeration, of the Mosaic drama of creation." And in closing the chapter he says of the Mosaic narrative, "I know not a single scientific truth that militates against even the minutest or least prominent of its details" (*Testimony of the Rocks,* pp. 204, 210). Winchell says, "The author of Genesis has given us an account which, when rightly understood, conforms admirably to the indications of latest science" (*Reconciliation of Science and Religion,* p. 358).

With the proof that the Bible is the Word of God it is not incredible that it should harmonize with God's works in nature. The Bible, when properly interpreted, has never been found to contradict the facts of science. The difficulties of the biblical exegete are not in showing the agreement of the Bible with facts, but in harmonizing it with unproved and unprovable scientific theories. All the Bible teaches concerning creation wonderfully agrees with all the certainly known facts of science.

II. Creation and Evolution

1. **Evolution Not God's Method of Creation**—No treatment of the subject of creation can be complete at the present day that fails to give consideration to the claims of the theory of evolution. Theistic evolution supposes God's agency was only mediate and that a process of evolution was God's method in the formation of both inorganic and organic nature. E. D. Cope says, "The doctrine of evolution may be defined as the teaching which holds that creation has been and is accomplished by the agency of the energies which are intrinsic in the evolving matter, and without the interference of agencies that are external to it. . . . The science of evolution is the science of creation." This statement allows no place for divine creation.

A more exact statement concerning creation as it is viewed by true evolutionists consists in the denial of it. Professor Pfleiderer says, "There is only one choice. When we say evolution we definitely deny creation. When we say creation we definitely deny evolution." Professor James Sully writes, "The doctrine of evolution is directly antagonistic to that of creation." That creation and

evolution are, in their essential nature, exclusive of each other is evident from the statement of another eminent evolutionist, Professor LeConte, who defines evolution as follows: "Evolution is (1) progressive change, (2) according to certain laws, (3) by means of resident forces." This is the evolution theory in its true form as held by its ablest modern supporters.

In its relation to theology, however, evolution is held in at least three different forms: (1) naturalistic, (2) semi-theistic, and (3) theistic. Naturalistic evolution assumes that all nature, inorganic and organic, in all its forms has been evolved from a primitive fire-mist by resident forces and without any divine intervention whatsoever at any time. It is purely materialistic and atheistic. No power nor efficiency is admitted except what originally existed in the fire-mist. Eminent evolutionists, such as Ernest Haeckel, have held this view and regarded it as the only consistent theory of evolution. Sufficient refutation of this view was given in the discussion of theism, where it was shown to be unproved and in its nature unprovable.

Semi-theistic evolution supposes God originally created a low form of life and endowed it with the capacity for evolving higher forms continuously. Charles Darwin admitted divine creation of a few simple forms at the beginning of life, probably not more than six, and that since that time the process has been entirely naturalistic without any divine intervention. The best that can be said of such a view is that it is consistent only with deism, and is as destructive to religion and true piety as is that form of infidelity that places God far away and denies the statements of the Scriptures.

Theistic evolution supposes God not only originated the first forms of life, but that he has interposed with creative efficiency at various stages of the evolutionary process. The degree to which God is admitted varies with the individuals who hold theistic evolution. Some of its advocates regard evolution as being merely the method of the divine working. They assume that in conjunction with such mediate working God intervenes with direct miraculous operations, especially in the production of man's mind, which is regarded as an immediate creation. Some theistic evolutionists assume so large an element of direct divine creation that the evolutionary process largely loses its character. To whatever extent direct creation is admitted, evolution is excluded. Theistic evolution

has been accorded credence by many, but it has its difficulties. It is a compromise of Christian theology with antitheistic evolution. The modern evolutionary hypothesis as originally set forth was not theistic, but naturalistic. The evolution held by scientists at the present day, as defined by Le Conte, is naturalistic. In its essential nature the supposed process of evolution has no place for divine intervention. Some of its ablest advocates among eminent scientists positively deny any miraculous intervention. Haeckel and many others have said that if the Creator is admitted at any point he may as well be admitted all along the line.

2. **Evolution and the Scriptures Irreconcilable**—Professor Fairhurst has well said in his *Theistic Evolution* that "theistic evolution is conceivable; but Christian evolution is inconceivable." Theism and Christianity are not identical. All Christians are theists, but all theists are not Christians. The Jews, for the most part, are theists, but not Christians. A Christian is one who believes in the divine inspiration of the Scriptures. Evolution, even when regarded as a divine method, cannot be harmonized with the plain statements of the Bible. To admit divine creation into an evolutionary process at all, the points required by any proper interpretation of the biblical record would leave so little place for evolution that the process would not deserve the name.

It is inconsistent to regard the Bible as true and yet hold evolution. The more thoughtful of theistic evolutionists do not accept the Bible as fully inspired nor as being true in every part. They usually hold with the higher critics that the account of creation in Genesis 1 and 2 is not a true history, but is purely mythical and of human origin. They deny the Mosaic authorship of the Pentateuch and attribute it to various unknown persons whose writings have been compiled by other unknown persons and later attributed to Moses. These writings are regarded by them as belonging to the same class of myths as those of heathen nations. Such is the view held by A. S. Peake and other equally representative writers of the critical school. If the objection is made to such loose dealing with the inspired record that Jesus and the apostles attributed the Pentateuch to Moses (Mark 12:26; Luke 24:44; John 1:45; 5:46, 47) they agree, but they say that either ignorantly or intentionally Jesus misrepresented the facts concerning the authorship of the Pentateuch.

Such an attitude toward the Scriptures is the only one that is

consistent with theistic evolution. Professor Fairhurst says, "I feel sure that if cosmic theistic evolution is accepted and pushed to its logical results, the Bible as the inspired book of authority in religion will be eliminated." Higher criticism, which practically denies the divine authority of the Scriptures, is the theological aspect of evolution. Theistic evolution is the logical starting-point of the system of modern religious liberalism, the theology of which is that of the higher critics, and the practical manifestation of which is socialized Christianity. The tendency of theistic evolution is to the atheistic form, and with this denial of a personal God must logically follow a denial of all miracles and an inspired Bible. When the Bible is discredited with its divine Christ and salvation through his atonement, the logical consequence is a social gospel.

But the divine authority and full inspiration of the Scriptures have been shown in a previous division, and the historical character of the creation record in Genesis has also been shown. Turning to the Mosaic narrative, we find record of successive creations in progressive order, without one hint of evolution, but rather disproof of it. We admit that the Bible must be interpreted in correspondence with all known facts, but with the evidence that it is God's Word it may be appealed to in refutation of unproved and unprovable theories.

Almost no one, even among theistic evolutionists, believes evolution is taught in the first two chapters of Genesis. Even if evolution were a fact, we readily admit it would probably not have been clearly set forth in a book intended to teach religion in an unscientific age. However, the question is, does the Bible contradict the idea of evolution or may they be harmonized? Evolutionists have often affirmed that the fact of divine creation is declared in Genesis, but that it is not stated whether it was immediate by a divine fiat or mediate and by a process of evolution. But in the account of man's creation, especially that in Genesis 2, the method as well as the fact is stated. "And the Lord God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul" (v. 7). This text represents man, not as descended from the lower animals God had already created, but as an immediate divine creation from inanimate matter by a divine inbreathing. Nothing undignified such as a manipulation of the material is implied in God's formation of man's body. The divine fiat alone was all that was needed.

But that which is most opposed to the idea of man's evolution from the brute is in relation to the creation of Eve. Adam is represented as having been created and as being very good while no female of his species existed. His high dignity was such that among all the beasts was no suitable help-meet found for him. But if he had been created by a long evolutionary process there must necessarily have been a long line of them reaching up to him and certainly one for him. The mode of Eve's creation as described in Genesis is altogether irreconcilable with evolution. It is immediate and miraculous creation of the highest order. This account as literal history is regarded as incredible by many evolutionists, but it can be regarded as underserving of belief only on the ground that all other miracles are incredible. That the Apostle Paul accepted this account as literal history is evident from his reference to it in 1 Timothy 2:13: "For Adam was first formed, then Eve."

Another fact of Genesis irreconcilable with evolution is the fall and depravity of the race through Adam. The record of the fall as given in Genesis 3 is more fully described as affecting the race in Romans 5. Such a fall is denied by most theistic evolutionists. Representatives of them attribute man's sinful tendency, not to a moral lapse of the race, but to remaining tendencies of the brute nature from which he has not yet become entirely free. Such a view is not only opposed to the Scriptures, but excludes redemption through Christ's blood.

3. **Facts Reconcilable with Progressive Creation**—Professor George Frederick Wright of Oberlin College, who stands in the front rank of modern scientific writers, says in his introduction to *The Other Side of Evolution,* by Patterson, "The doctrine of evolution as it is now becoming current in popular literature is one tenth bad science and nine tenths bad philosophy." The unsound reasoning of many evolutionists is especially noticeable in their assumptions that certain facts that agree with their theory prove it and disprove creation. But these facts agree with the idea of progressive creation as truly as with gradual evolution. Evolutionists too often have rashly assumed that creation must necessarily have been instantaneous and complete. Such an assumption is contradictory to the Bible narrative of creation. Progressive creation implies that there were successive creative acts, and that these were from lower to higher forms of existence. Such progressive creation is clearly set forth in the Mosaic record. Evolu-

tionists have assumed that indications of progressive stages from lower to higher forms of life are proof of their theory. But if the six days of creation are understood as geologic ages, which is a very reasonable interpretation, then instead of proving evolution, marks of those progressive stages support the Bible teaching of creation.

It has been urged that a gradual evolution of the various living species from lower forms is reasonable to believe because it is parallel to the gradual development of the inorganic world by which the earth has become a suitable habitation for man, as indicated by geologic formations. In reply, consider first that the parallel is only in the length and gradual nature of the processes. It cannot be shown that the process in inorganic nature was by an inherent force without divine direction. Also it is worthy of note that the process was a cooling and, as Professor Fairhurst has stated, a dying process and therefore not parallel with the evolution of living species by resident forces. Especially is the evolutionist's argument groundless because progressive creation of species is also parallel to the gradual formation of the earth. Another argument of evolutionists is the simplicity of the early living forms in comparison with later ones. Here again progressive creation accounts for all the facts as fully as does the theory of evolution.

Again it is urged that the evolutionary hypothesis is supported by the similarities which may be traced, stage by stage, through a large part of the line or organic forms. Doubtless much similarity between species exists, but does such resemblance prove all these animals are therefore genetically connected? Mr. Huxley, who called this the morphological argument, said, "No amount of purely morphological evidence can suffice to prove things came into existence in one way rather than another" (*Study of Zoology,* p. 86). Is it not reasonable to suppose that things of a class having similar functions to perform should be constructed similarly by an intelligent creator? This very similarity is strong support for the idea of design in creation.

Also it is argued that only evolution of species can account for the existence in the more complex animals of useless parts, which are said to have been used in other species from which the animals are assumed to have evolved. The difficulties in this argument for evolutionists are not a few. They cite the callosities on the leg of the horse as being the remains of thumbs. In the first place they

fail to prove they are such. But if they are rudimentary thumbs, is it not reasonable that a divine Creator should carry out a general plan of structure in vertebrates, even though utility in the narrowest sense should not require certain organs? Structures of different classes of things made by men usually conform to a definite type even though often a part useful in some structures has no use whatever in another structure.

Another argument is the resemblance of the embryo of higher forms to the mature phases of lower forms. This point has been much stressed by evolutionists. The idea that the embryo passes through all the changes of its ancestral history is merely an assumption and is coming to be recognized in recent years as less conclusive than was once supposed. Professor Agassiz says, "Anything beyond a general parallelism is hopeless." In his *Evolution of Today,* pp. 125, 134, 137, 150, Professor Conn, a recent writer on evolution, admits, "Embryology alone is not a safe guide, and only when verified by the fossils can it be relied upon. It seldom gives a true history. . . . The parallel is largely a delusion. . . . It often gives a false history." But regarding man as standing at the top of an ascending order of successive creations, is it unreasonable that the individual embryo should at various stages of its formation bear a general resemblance to the lower species in the advancing order of creation? Is there not here a parallel between progressive creation of species and progress in the formation of an individual of the higher species?

A more popular argument is the efficiency of artificial breeding in producing varieties. But in reply it is well to remember these are only varieties of an already existing species and not new species. Mr. Darwin himself said, "There are two or three million of species on earth—sufficient field, one might think, for observation. But it must be said today that, in spite of all the efforts of trained observers, *not one change of a species into another is on record" (Life and Letters,* Vol III, p. 25). That no such evolution of a new species has been observed since Darwin wrote is stated by Professor Conn: "It is true enough that naturalists have been unable to find a single unquestioned instance of a new species. . . . It will be admitted at the outset on all sides, that no unquestioned instance has been observed of one species being derived from another. . . . It is therefore impossible at present to place the question beyond dispute" (*Evolution of Today,* p. 23). Here is a fatal weakness of

the evolution theory. The observation of one actual instance of the evolution of a new species would do much to prove the theory, but its ablest advocates admit this is lacking. Therefore the artificial breeding argument for evolution, like all the others, is inconclusive.

4. **Objections to the Evolution Theory**—Besides the reasons already given for not accepting evolution is the important one that it is not a fact of science, but only an unproved hypothesis. Huxley said, "After much consideration, and with assuredly no bias against Mr. Darwin's views, it is our clear conviction that as the evidence now stands it is not absolutely proved that a group of animals, having all the characteristics exhibited by species in nature, has ever been originated by selection, whether natural or artificial" (*Lay Sermons,* 295). That it is still an unproved theory and not science is stated by Alfred Fairhurst, A.M., D.Sc., Professor of Natural Science of the University of Kentucky. "Evolution is not a science; it is only a theory that cannot be proved to be true" (*Theistic Evolution,* p. 49). The wide acceptance of it today is not usually because evidence in support of it appeals to men's reason, but more often because it appeals to their disposition to irreligion or because they are led to suppose all scientists have the proof of it and believe it. The fact is that many leading scientists of the past and of the present have refused to accept evolution.

In his *Theistic Evolution,* pp. 69-78 (1919), Professor Fairhurst has quoted among other statements from the following of the world's greatest scientists in which they repudiate the evolution theory: Professor Fleischman, of Erlanger; Professor Zoeckler, of the University of Greifswald; Prof. Whilhelm Wundt, of Leipsic, who stands at the head of German psychologists and who in his early life supported evolution and wrote books in its favor; Dr. Etheridge, of the British Museum, one of England's most famous experts in fossilology; Professor Lionel S. Beale, physiologist, microscopist, and professor of anatomy and pathology in King's College, London, who stands with Lord Kelvin at the head of Engligh scientists, and in his field is almost without a peer in the world; Professor Virchow, of Berlin, who was styled the "foremost chemist of the globe" and who was the highest German authority in physiology. To these might be added the statements of other eminent scientists, some of whom have been quoted in the foregoing pages.

The following are a few of the strongest arguments against evolution:

1. It fails to account for the origin of matter and force. The scientist may answer that it is not within the sphere of the natural scientist to deal with original causes, but only with causes and phenomena within exisiting nature. But when evolutionists affirm spontaneous generation they dogmatize about original causes and are out of the realm of science and in that of theology or philosophy. If they so discuss the cause of life, we may rightly demand that they likewise account for the cause of their alleged cause of life-matter and force. Here evolution fails.

2. It fails to account for the origin of life, and confesses that no proof of spontaneous generation exists. If a divine Creator was required to originate life, it is not unreasonable to suppose, as Haeckel said, that all species have been so originated. This objection has been set forth under antitheistic theories.

3. It may be argued against evolution that if species are a result of evolution there must necessarily be at present a great mass of living intermediate or transitional forms as well as fossils of such intermediate links in the chain of existence. But these "missing links," not only between man and lower forms, but between all the millions of living species, which must have existed, on the assumption of slow mutations, are conspicuously absent. Such complete absence is reason for believing they never existed.

4. Another difficulty for evolution is that individuals of varieties that are the result of artificial breeding are in the fullest degree fertile with individuals of the parent stock or other varieties. This is true of chickens, and if all varieties of chickens were allowed freely to interbreed they would soon lose all distinctiveness and revert to their original type by intercrossing. How then does nature prevent such loss of distinction by intercrossing? The most reasonable view is that these varieties are not distinct species. Variations within species are certain, but the evolving of a new species as is claimed by evolution has never been observed. Species are fixed. The mating of a male and a female of closely related species may result in offspring, as in the case of the mule, which is the hybrid from the crossing of the ass and the mare, but the mating of a male and female is always non-productive. Huxley says this infertility is due to the fact that such hybrids are "physiologically imperfect and deficient in the structural parts of

the reproductive elements necessary to generation." No true hybrid species has been generated. Only variations within species exist.

5. Another difficulty of evolution is so to represent the required elements of the doctrine that they do not contradict one another. Organic nature must be regarded as very plastic to account for the great changes that have occurred. But if living organisms are so disposed to change, why has so little change ever actually occurred during the period of observation by men? Dr. H. C. Sheldon, though favoring evolution, admits the difficulty here as follows: "It suits one demand of evolution doctrine to suppose modifications of organisms to take place with exceeding slowness. When the limited achievements of artificial selection are under review, it is convenient to refer to the immense eons through which nature has wrought out and fixed the various products of her workmanship. On the other hand, when the attention is directed to the absence of intermediate forms in the geological record, it is convenient to assume crises, jumps in nature, or seasons of rapid evolution. Logically the intervention of such seasons or rapid development of permanent varieties, or species, may be conceivable. But if the stimulus of special natural conditions can effect this, the question why the stimulus of artificial conditions cannot do more in the production of permanent forms needs to be well answered" (*System of Christian Doctrine,* p. 243).

These and other insurmountable obstacles described, especially the absolute incompatibility of the evolutionary hypothesis and the statements of the Bible are deemed sufficient ground on which to repudiate every form of evolution as the method of divine creation.

III. God's Work in Providence

The providence of God may be described as being his preservation of the things he has created and his care for and direction of them to the accomplishment of the ends of their creation. The divine providence is a clearly revealed fact of Holy Scripture. In Hebrews 1:3 Christ is said to be "upholding all things by the word of his power." In the prayer in Nehemiah 9:6 it is said of the heavens, earth, and all therein, "Thou preservest them all." God is said to feed the fowls of the air and to clothe the grass of the field (Matt. 6:26-30). And of his people it is said his care is so great that he has even the very hairs of their heads all numbered (Matt. 10:30). His providence is universal in its extent.

The providential works of God may be divided into two classes: natural and supernatural, or ordinary and special. By natural providence is meant the operation of God according to the laws of nature. There he always works uniformly. All the working of God is supernatural as to causal efficiency, but there is a clear distinction between his uniform and ordinary operations and his special, miraculous acts in answer to prayer.

1. **Natural Providence**—God is not only the creator of all things, but is also preserver of those things he has created. Creation is the divine act by which all things are caused to exist, but a continuous agency of God is required for the orderly preservation of those things. Though it has been often assumed that except for the preserving power of God all created substance would fall into nonentity, yet it is questionable whether sound reasoning requires such a conclusion. But a continuous preserving efficiency of God is doubtless requisite to the continuance of substance in orderly forms. In this respect it may be said of all things, "Thou preservest them all."

There is no ground, either scriptural or rational, for assuming that this preservation is of the nature of a continuous creation, as has been held by Augustine, Aquinas, and some of the New England theologians. According to this theory, existing things of the present moment will have dropped out of existence the next moment and will have been supplanted by a new creation. So from the time of the original creation such new creations have appeared continuously, differing from the original creation only in resembling and supplanting former existences. Such seems to be the theory in its simplified form. The exact nature of God's method of preserving the universe is beyond the reach of our inspection, but it is doubtless a preservation in a real sense.

In approaching the subject of God's control over nature, the question at once confronts us, does God direct nature by separate volitions and by a power entirely external to it, or does he govern it by general laws and by an efficiency inherent in nature? Is divine providence mediate or immediate? To state the question differently, did God at the time of creation invest nature with forces by which it is operated? Did he wind up he universe so it runs of itself, or is all its power the direct working of God's power and is its very movement due to the immediate volition of God's will? That the question is difficult and should not be answered hastily is evident

from the fact that the ablest thinkers of various schools of both theological and philosophical thought have differed widely concerning it. If the question is not inscrutable, it is so obscure that dogmatism is improper. But even if we cannot fully know the answer to these questions, we may at least understand how to trust in the divine providence, which is the important thing.

A theory held by not a few, including all deists, is that God created physical nature with inherent forces such as gravitation, cohesive attraction, chemical affinity, electricity, and magnetism, which are sufficient of themselves for the operation and guidance of nature, and that God has nothing to do immediately with the question of nature at present, having done all this work at the beginning. This makes his government only mediate. To our thought this theory is inadequate in that it fails to account for facts as we know them. Interpositions of God in both sacred and secular history cannot properly be denied. But this theory requires such denial. Another practical objection to it is that it makes no place for trust in providence and is therefore inconsistent with faith and prayer. It removes God so far away that there remains no stimulation to piety.

The opposite theory denies second causes and any essential force in matter, and makes the immediate power of God the sole force in inanimate nature. This view has been held by some eminent thinkers. According to it, matter is entirely forceless. There is no inherent power to gravity in the earth that draws all bodies toward its center, but it is only the occasion for the immediate power of God to force them in that direction. The heavenly bodies are not held in their courses by inherent attraction and centrifugal force, but by the power of God directly manifested which maintains them in such relations as would inherent forces. Lightning does not kill a man, but the direct power of God. The seed is not the cause of the tree, but only the occasion for the divine operation in producing it. Cohesion is not an inherent quality of matter, but particles adhere to each other because of a direct operation of God in holding them in such relations. This theory also appears to be defective in denying what seems to be the reality of inherent physical forces. But the chief objection to it is the tendency it gives to panthesim and idealism in so closely identifying his working with nature. Also it is liable to beget irreverence because of familiarity with the working of God.

The mode of the divine providence that best agrees with what

we know of nature and God as revealed in the Scriptures and his works, partakes of the main idea in both these views. We may well think of God as having invested nature with inherent powers and having determined the mode of their action. These forces operate in harmony with natural laws. On the other hand, we should think of God as everywhere present superintending the operation of these non-intelligent forces and directly cooperating with them to accomplish his high purpose. If God does not thus cooperate with the forces of nature, then the Scripture statements that he feeds the fowls of the air and is aware of the sparrow's fall are meaningless. Such a view allows for a government of the world by general laws and at the same time furnishes ground for the trust of his children in his providence and for supernatural manifestations.

To think of God as directly operative in nature in conjunction with inherent forces is not to deny uniformity of natural law. Such uniformity rather requires divine superintendence and control of natural forces. The idea that direct divine operation in connection with nature must necessarily be capricious and disturbing to uniformity is a groundless assumption. If man can freely act upon nature by employing natural forces, certainly God can do so without causing disorder. By the use of natural forces men overcomes the power of gravity by flying in an airplane, but this does not constitute an interruption of uniformity in nature. Is the power of the Infinite so limited by his own laws that he cannot act freely on nature as do his rational creatures? If so then trust in providence is unreasonable, revelation is impossible, prayer can have no efficacy, and religion in its highest form is a superstition.

But the uniformity of the operation of nature is a fact, and can be accounted for only on the ground of the direct superintendence of God over natural forces. This uniformity is necessary and doubtless exists for the well-being of sentient creatures. Except for the uniform movements of the earth in relation to the sun, life on the earth would soon be extinct. The uniformity of gravity is essential to man's life and all his doings. If food sometimes nourished and sometimes poisoned the body, if the heart pulsated or the lungs respired only at times and not regularly, life would be impossible. Therefore general uniformity in nature is necessary to the existence of living creatures. The direct operation of God in nature must be generally uniform.

In the realm of living organisms as well as in lower nature is to

be found inherent force, but here also a direct divine superintendence is necessary to the perpetuation of life through those forces. Life is not self-sufficient. It is because of this immediate directive agency of God in maintaining life that the Scriptures declare not one sparrow shall fall on the ground without your Father's knowledge. With all due allowance for inherent forces in nature, yet it may be held that in a very real sense God clothes the grass of the field, and feeds the fowls of the air. His directing agency permeates all his works. By his potential omnipresence he is everywhere to know and to do. Such a view of God in relation to the world agrees with all we know of God from revelation and nature, and is conducive to piety of representing the benefits that come to us as the result of his immediate working. To suppose God's agency in providing for us occurred millions of years ago and that all our good things are directly the product of blind non-intelligent forces is, to say the least, not likely to stir in us any emotions of gratitude. But to think of God as now guiding all his works, brings him near us and is important to that attitude of worshipful dependence that holds so large a place in true religion.

2. **Supernatural Providence**—In the light of what has already been said, it is evident that all providence is in some sense supernatural. A distinction may be made, however, between the ordinary and uniform operation of God in connection with the laws of nature by which he feeds the fowls of the air, and his special working in protecting from harm by accident or in supplying a special need of one of his righteous children who definitely trusts him for such benefits. Special, or supernatural, providence also includes those blessings that are received in answer to prayer as well as all miracles. All benefits that do not come to us through natural processes may well be termed supernatural.

The Scriptures in every part clearly teach such a special divine care and blessing of the righteous because they are righteous. "O fear the Lord, ye saints: for there is no want to them that fear him. The young lions do lack, and suffer hunger: but they that seek the Lord shall not want any good thing" (Ps. 34:9, 10). "Trust in the Lord, and do good; so shalt thou dwell in the land, and verily thou shalt be fed" (Ps. 37:3). "He will fulfill the desire of them that fear him" (Ps. 145:19). "I have been young, and now am old; yet have I not seen the righteous forsaken, nor his seed begging bread" (Ps. 37:25). "But seek ye first the kingdom of God and his righteous-

ness; and all these things shall be added unto you" (Matt. 6:33). "But my God shall supply all your need according to his riches in glory by Christ Jesus" (Phil. 4:19). This very common teaching of Scriptures is corroborated by the feeling of dependence of the righteous and the cravings of the Christian consciousness for divine care and guidance. Also it is the common experience of the most devout Christians that God does thus care especially for them. One of the most comforting thoughts to the godly is that "all things work together for good to them that love God."

But by what method does God especially protect and help the righteous? How can he specially operate to benefit the righteous without throwing nature into disorder or interfering with the uniformity of it? The difficulties here are not so great as the antisupernaturalist assumes. God's special care for the righteous may be through the exercise of divine power independently of and superior to his ordinary works in nature—or by miracles. But supernatural providence is probably more often exercised in the realm of mind than by a miraculous changing of physical nature. By what mode God presents ideas directly to the consciousness of men is inscrutable, but that he does so cause us to know certain things and does influence our thought is evident from both the Bible and experience.

By such divine influence of men's minds they may be led to do such things as will be for their good. This is probably the most common method of providential guidance in the affairs of life. In such a case there is a supernatural providence though it may not be distinguished as such. Divine action in the realm of mind may also result in other supernatural benefits. A minister who had no income except free-will offerings needed a certain amount of money for a particular pupose. A person who could not possibly have known about his need handed him at the very time it was needed the exact amount required and remarked that he had been impressed to give it to the minister. This and numberless similar occurrences must be attributed to supernatural providence acting in the realm of mind. Christians may be supernaturally prospered in business by the same method. The thoughts of the farmer may be divinely directed so he will plant and reap at opportune times. Buyers may be likewise influenced to purchase their supplies from a Christian merchant whom God would prosper. A certain Christian intended taking a certain ship for an ocean voyage, but at the

last moment decided to wait for a later ship and by so doing was spared while the first ship and all on board were lost. These and many similar events are examples of supernatural providence. The destruction by a storm at sea of the Spanish Aramada, which was sent out to destroy Protestant England, did not necessarily require a divine intervention in physical nature, but only such an influencing of the mind of the commander of the fleet in regard to the time of its sailing as would cause it to be at the place where it was lost when that particular storm occurred. Evidently supernatural providence does operate in the realm of mind, but it is not therefore to be assumed that divine interposition never occurs in physical nature.

Prayer must also be allowed a large place in connection with supernatural providence. Deists and all who deny God's personality recognize no objective value of prayer. But the impulse to pray is deeply implanted in the race, and there is implied in it an expectation of answers to prayer. The Scriptures clearly teach that God answers prayer and that to ask for those things he needs is the privilege of the Christian. "Be careful for nothing; but in everything by prayer and supplication with thanksgiving let your requests be made known unto God" (Phil. 4:6). "What things soever ye desire, when ye pray, believe that ye receive them, and ye shall have them" (Mark 11:24). And not only does the Bible furnish us with many such promises, but it also abounds with records of the fulfillment of them in definite answers to prayer. Fire fell from heaven on Jehovah's altar in response to a simple prayer by Elijah the prophet, and later when he prayed for rain the drought of three years and six months was ended promptly by a great rain.

No grander privilege is offered to men than that of prayer. Nothing brings greater joy to the devout soul or awakens in him a deeper love for God than to experience a definite answer to his own believing petition. Such answers to prayer are the most impressive of all providential manifestations.

It is not to be assumed, however, that everything which the Christian asks of God will be granted. God's promises are conditioned by his will. He will not do what is inconsistent with his character and his plan. A Christian's prayer for the pardon of an impenitent sinner acquaintance could not be answered because it would be a violation of God's own holiness. Neither could God consistently grant a petition of one who should ask to be allowed

to remain alive on earth forever, because such would be contradictory to God's plan. Also God will not answer prayer if such would conflict with his plan for the one who prays. For this reason Jesus' prayer for the passing of his cup of suffering and Paul's for the removal of the thorn in his flesh were not granted, though each prayed three times. The salvation of men necessitated Jesus' sufferings, and Paul's moral welfare and usefulness required that he endure this thorn, but each was granted sustaining grace. But with all these limitations there still remains a large place for providential blessings through prayer.

The objection is sometimes urged that God's omniscience makes prayer needless and useless. This would indeed be true if the purpose of prayer were to inform God of our needs and desires. But God knows our needs and if their supply were the highest end, then we could assume his goodness would prompt him to grant them. But for the development of piety in men, that the reception of blessings might awaken gratitude, and that men might feel their dependence upon God, he withholds some benefits until earnest petition is made for them. The objection to divine answers to prayer on the ground of God's immutability is based on a false sense of his unchangeableness. He is immutable only in his essential character, not in the sense that he cannot act freely in harmony with his character. No objection to miracles, or special operations of God in nature, is valid in view of his free personality and direct superintendence of the operation of natural forces.

A common objection, not only to providential blessings through prayer, but to all providence is the existence of the various ills of life. Why does God not always answer the prayers of the godly? Why does he allow the righteous to suffer? Why does he not banish sickness, pain, and death? Why did he create some animals to prey upon others? And why, if he superintends natural forces, does he allow destructive earthquakes, storms, and floods? Some of these questions may be readily answered. Others may be unanswerable in the present state of our knowledge. This is especially true of suffering among lower animals. But no difficulties thus remaining can overthrow the sure evidence we have of God's providential care over his works.

The face of present probation accounts for much of the suffering of the present. It is necessary to develop moral excellence in men. Their souls are ennobled through suffering. Therefore God cannot

always consistently answer prayer for deliverance from it. But "we know that all things work together for good to them that love God." Suffering may be for the purpose of correction for the righteous, but especially for the wicked. It may serve to deter others from moral evil, and in its punitive aspect may serve to uphold God's holiness. God permits the forces inherent in nature to bring suffering and death to righteous and wicked. Suffering from such sources is usually more impressive, but is by God's permissive will as is suffering from disease. No such suffering disproves God's control in nature. It is punishment to the wicked and is for the spiritual well-being of the righteous. It is the "Chastening of the Lord" if we are righteous and is for "our profit." The Christian knows by his own past experience as well as that of others, especially such ancient godly men as Joseph, Job, Moses, and Paul, that suffering does yield rich reward, and therefore counts it all joy when he meets it.

Whatever difficulties attend belief in providence, they are insignificant in comparison with those attendant upon its denial. Atheism furnishes no advantage. A certain degree of obscurity concerning God's methods is necessary to present probation, but the devout are comforted with a blessed assurance that when the morning of that future day shall break they shall see clearly that God has done all things well.

IV. Angels

1. **Existence and Nature of Angels**—Frequently mentioned in the Scriptures are a class of created, infinite beings called angels, who are superior to human beings. The reality of such an order of beings has been generally believed. The belief is not only supported by the Scriptures, but the existence of such a class of beings is rationally probable. Such beings in another world are even conceivable on the theory of evolution. No reason can be given for assuming that men are the most exalted or the full measure of rational creation. As the earth is but a mere speck in comparison with the physical universe, so is it not reasonable to assume that the rational creatures on the earth are similarly a small proportion of all rational creatures? Man is the lowest rational being we know. Is it not probable other rational creatures of a higher order exist?

Angels are not merely figurative, without any real existence, as modern rationalism assumes. Jesus recognized their actual exist-

ence in his answer to the Sadducees, the Jewish rationalists of his time. But the repudiation of the rationalistic denial of angelic existences does not require that we admit the various scholastic subtleties that were connected with the doctrine in the Medieval Ages and which have led to a reaction in a depreciation of the truth concerning angels that is given in the Bible. Though the Bible frequently mentions angels, yet it does so only for practical purposes and in connection with the subject of men's salvation. It has no interest in angels for their own sake, as it has not in the physical universe, or the creation of organic nature. The Bible is anthropocentric; its interest is man and his redemption. Therefore we should not expect it to give information concerning many points relative to angels that claim our interest.

That angels are spirits is certain (Heb. 1:7). It is usually understood that they are pure spirits without corporeity, similar in this respect to God. But of this we cannot be absolutely sure. A council held at Nicea in 787 held that they possessed bodies of ether or light, but the later Council Lateran affirmed that they were pure spirits. Mark 12:25 has been sometimes regarded as ground for supposing they have such bodies as resurrected human bodies will be, but the text does not require such an interpretation. All the appearances of angels mentioned in the Bible may be regarded as voluntary manifestations, as are theophanies, and not indicative of their essential nature. If they have no material being, the representations of them with wings in visions and types should not be regarded as according to their real nature.

They are not eternal or infinite in any respect. They began to exist by means of divine creation (Heb. 1:7). When they were created we are not told. It is certain they not only antedate man, but also that they had already been created when the foundations of the earth were laid (Job 38:4-7). It is possible they existed before all material substance if we suppose the term "beginning" in Genesis 1:1 includes only the beginning of matter. "They neither marry, nor are given in marriage" (Matt. 22:30); consequently, they do not propagate their kind. Therefore they are not a race, but an order of beings. Though they are not eternal in that they have not always existed, yet they will always exist in the future because they are essentially immortal. "Neither can they die" (Luke 20:36). Man was created lower than the angels, because he was made subject to death (Heb. 2:7, 9). Their number is forever

fixed except God create others.

Though the powers of angels are not infinite, yet they are far greater than those of men. "They are greater in power and might" than we are. They "excel in strength." They can communicate with one another and to other intelligences. Their power extends to both matter and mind. An angel announced the birth of Christ to the shepherds. One rolled back the stone from the entrance to Jesus' tomb when he rose from the dead. The angel who delivered Peter from prison had superhuman power to cause the chains to fall off him and to open the securely fastened iron gate. Their knowledge is also far greater than is man's, though not without limit. We have no way of knowing what is the mode and full extent of their knowledge. While they are certainly not omnipresent either essentially or potentially, yet their power of rapid movement from place to place is inconceivably great, because at the time of his apprehension in Gethsemane Jesus said to Peter, "Thinkest thou that I cannot now pray to my Father, and he shall *presently give* me more than twelve legions of angels?" [italics mine]. The implication seems to be that they can move from place to place instantaneously.

Angels are also moral beings and are divided into two classes, good and evil. With the several foregoing qualities they must also possess personality in the truest sense. Personality is implied in their being spirits. Their seeking knowledge (1 Peter 1:12), feeling "joy," and performing acts, is evidence that they have all the constituent qualities of personality: intellect, sensibility, and will. The subject is alluring to the imagination and much might be inferred, but certain knowledge of the nature of higher rational creatures extends but little beyond the foregoing.

They have no power over men except it is divinely given. Therefore they are not to be feared because of any harm that they might do to us or worshiped because of any good that comes to us by their agency. In no instance do holy angels accept worship from men, but exhort to "worship God."

2. **Good Angels**—These are called "holy angels." Their being so designated is probably not due merely to their having been so created, but especially to their faithfully enduring a period of probation and to their now being confirmed in holiness. They obey God perfectly (Matt. 6:10). How many of these God has created we do not know. It is clear, however, that their number is

very great. Jesus said he could have twelve legions of angels to protect him. Counting according to the greater Roman legion this would be seventy-two thousand. But Jesus more probably intended to express the idea of a great number. In Dan. 7:10 God is represented as ministered to by millions and with one million standing before him. The writer to the Hebrews mentions "an innumerable company of angels." No reason can be given why they may not be so many that their number is literally incomprehensible to us. A certain gradation and organization exists among them. This appears from their having thrones, dominions, principalities, and powers (Col. 1:16). Michael is represented in the Scriptures as the archangel.

Angels are described as being especially devoted to the worship of God (Isa. 6:2-4). They are represented in the Scriptures as being especially employed in helping God's people. "Are they not all ministering spirits, sent forth to minister for they who shall be heirs of salvation?" (Heb. 1:14). Doubtless in relation to man this is their office. Certainly it is not to rule over him. But because of the anthropocentric character of the Scriptures we should not suppose this is their sole employment nor even their main work. What is their employment in heaven is unknown to us, but it may be supposed it is some form of loving service becoming to their holy natures.

They ministered to the patriarchs as messengers from God (Gen. 18:2; 19:15). The law at Sinai was given to Israel through their agency (Heb. 2:2). Through them messages were given to the prophets (Dan. 9:21). They also predicted and celebrated the birth of Christ (Luke 1:11; 2:9). They strengthened Jesus after the temptation in the wilderness and after the agony in Gethsemane. They announced Jesus' resurrection and comforted the disciples at the ascension. They bore the soul of the beggar, Lazarus, to paradise. They are also to attend Christ at his second coming.

Jesus said of little children: "Their angels do always behold the face of my Father which is in heaven." This has been made the ground of the theory that each child and each of God's people has a particular guardian angel. The Bible gives no support to such an idea. When the damsel Rhoda stedfastly affirmed that Peter stood at the gate of Mary's home when he was delivered from prison, the people said, "It is his angel." This has been supposed to uphold the theory of a particular guardian angel. But it was not originally

inspired and should be regarded as no more than an idea common among the Jews. While the Bible does not support the idea of a particular guardian angel for each righteous person, yet it does give the blessed assurance that "the angel of the Lord encampeth round about them that fear him, and delivereth them" (Ps. 34:7). Many other texts teach that these holy beings are about us in times of danger and trouble, and also at the hour of death.

3. **Evil Angels** Divine revelation also teaches the existence of evil angels whose intense malignity against God causes them to oppose his operations for men's welfare by tempting men to oppose themselves to his holy will. The existence of such beings is rationally possible and is usually denied only by those denying good angels also. How beings so vile came to be has been a matter of much inquiry. They must either be eternal or else were divinely created. It has usually been assumed that only God is eternal. "By him were *all things* created, that are in heaven, and that are in earth, visible and invisible" (Col. 1:16, italics mine). This text is fairly good ground for supposing evil angels are not eternal, but created of God. But it is inconceivable that the holy God would create vile beings. Therefore he must have created them holy and they became sinful in character by their own acts, as has man.

An apostasy of angels is clearly stated in the Bible. "God spared not the angels that sinned, but cast them down to hell, and delivered them into chains of darkness, to be reserved unto judgment" (2 Pet. 2:4). "The angels which kept not their first estate, but left their own habitation, he hath reserved in everlasting chains under darkness unto the judgment of the great day" (Jude 6). Angels were at one time all holy and on probation. Some sinned and lost their holy estate. What was the nature of their sin is not stated. It has been supposed from 1 Timothy 3:6, that it was pride and self-exaltation. The "condemnation of the devil" is supposed to mean the condemnation he incurred by his sin. These sinful angels are usually supposed to be identical with the devil and his angels. As sinful men are opposed to the kingdom of righteousness so are these sinful angels. Of the time when they sinned, we only know it was anterior to man's apostasy.

The evil spirits are designated "devils" in the common English Version of the New Testament, but are more correctly called "demons" in the Revised Version. One evil spirit is superior in rank and power to the others. He is called Beelzebub, the prince of

devils; Satan, the adversary; the devil or the slanderer; the evil one; the prince of darkness; Belial; and the tempter. The number of the demons is great. Jesus cast seven demons out of Mary Magdalene. The Gadarene demoniac is represented as possessed of a legion or a great multitude of them. They were numerous enough to cause the drowning of two thousand swine into whom they had entered.

The general nature and powers of demons are similar to those of holy angels. They have greater power and knowledge than men. Satan, it appears, is superior in power to the demons over whom he is ruler, but there is no reason for assuming he is all-powerful, omniscient, or omnipresent. It is certain God has greater power from the fact that Satan could tempt Job only by divine permission. Also God will not suffer us to be tempted above that we are able to bear (1 Cor. 10:13). The limitation of Satan's knowledge is evident from his failure to know that Job would endure his trial. If he had foreknowledge of the actions of free beings, he would have no occasion to tempt those who will not yield, as in Christ's temptation in the wilderness. But that even the demons have superhuman knowledge is shown by their immediate recognition of Jesus' divinity when he approached them. Though not omnipresent, yet Satan may possess the power of instantaneous movement from place to place. Also, it is possible that he could work in many places simultaneously through the demons as agents. Probably no salvation is now provided for demons, although it is possible that it was once offered to them.

Satan and demons are employed exclusively, as far as is revealed, in opposing God's moral government. Satan tempted Eve in Eden under the guise of a serpent. He also tempted Job and Jesus. He sows the tares in men's hearts to hinder the gospel and catches away the good seed of God's Word. He entices men through physical desires and otherwise. What the mode is by which he has access to men's minds to tempt them is not stated in the Bible, but it is probably by direct influence over the mind as is the usual method of the Holy Spirit. "Why does God not kill the devil?" was the question of the Indian to Eliot, and it is often asked today. Why God allows Satan to continue to endeavor to turn men from God is probably not altogether answerable. It may be answered in a measure by asking another question, Why does God not annihilate wicked men? Doubtless it is proper in his

wisdom that apostate free beings should be allowed to choose their course. Also, God is doubtless more glorified by the preservation of the righteous amidst such temptations and by their faithful endurance of temptations.

4. **Demon Possession**—The possession and control of men by a demon spirit is not a rational impossibility. As the human spirit dwells in and operates the body, so it is conceivable that a demon may do so. As the Holy Spirit of God dwells in and acts on man's body and mind, so may a demon spirit.

The fact of demon possession is clearly set forth in the Bible. Jesus and the apostles often met or had brought to them demoniacs. The demons sometimes spoke in their own persons and Jesus' replies were spoken directly to them and not to the person possessed. Examples of this are the Gadarene demoniacs (Matt. 8:28; Mark 5:1). The objections to the reality of these being actually possessed is usually based on the denial of the existence of demons. Attempts have been made to account for the phenomena of demoniac possesion on psychological grounds, on pathological grounds as being a result of nervous disorders, and on evolutionary grounds. But these theories are all entirely inadequate and unsatisfactory in the light of the facts.

Jesus strongly unheld the belief in demon possession. The objection that he was ignorant of the facts is incompatible with his divinity and is acceptable only to unbelievers. The theory that Jesus knew demon possession was not actual and merely accommodated his words to a prevalent erroneous view makes him who was the Truth a deceiver and represents him as conversing with mere diseases and basing the claim of his divinity on a mere false pretension of casting out evil spirits.

The belief in demon possession is not peculiar to Christianity. It was common among the Jews in Christ's time, and has been generally believed in all countries and all ages. In other parts of the Roman Empire than Palestine it was recognized (Acts 16:16). Dr. J. L. Nevius in his excellent work *Demon Possession and Allied Themes* has cited many instances in detail and described the general belief in it in various parts of China, in Japan, in India (especially among the demonolaters), and in other lands in the past and present.

From the Scripture accounts of demon-possessed persons and also from present-day examples we may know many facts con-

cerning demon possession. The demon spirit bears a relation to the body of the demoniac not very different from that which is normal to the human spirit. It controls the possessed person directly. Either at times or constantly the human spirit is dormant and the demon is in control. At such times it will speak in its own person through the vocal organs of the person possessed, but often in a strange voice and will manifest superhuman physical strength. Sometimes loud cries are uttered (Mark 9:26). Extreme fierceness in some cases, even attempts to murder, is another manifestation (Matt. 8:28). Other accompaniments are sounds similar to barking, hissing, croaking, choking, growling, grunting, also shaking, fainting, and awful contortions of the body and especially the face. The demon sometimes seeks to destroy the body possessed (Matt. 17:15), or afflicts it sometimes with dumbness (Matt. 9:32), blindness (Matt. 12:22), deafness (Mark 9:25), or epilepsy (Mark 9:18). Sometimes insanity results (Matt. 17:15). An unclean demon will sometimes use extremely obscene language. The subject feels bound and tormented by the demon. However, he may have special miraculous powers in fortune-telling and healing the sick (Acts 16:16). Outward manifestations are most common when the demoniac comes under religious influence, especially when earnest, believing prayer is offered. Evidence of demon possesion is frequently so clear that no divine power of discernment is needed to know it is such, and even those who are not Christians will recognize it.

Demons are exorcised, or cast out, by various methods. Heathen methods consist in beating, burning, or otherwise inflicting physical suffering on the body of the subject. Such may have been the usual method of the seven sons of Sceva, the Jew, who were professional exorcists (Acts 19:14). Such methods appear to be effective in certain cases. It is conceivable that the demon spirit when in control bears such a relation to the human body possessed that it feels that pain inflicted and is thus forced to depart. Sometimes the spirit is persuaded to leave by promises of worship by the subject. Faith in the name of Jesus is the Christian method of expelling demons and is effective today as in the days of early Christianity. Usually prayer is offered and those praying lay their hands on the person possessed. Fasting is sometimes necessary (Matt. 17:21).

PART IV
THE DOCTRINE OF MAN, OR ANTHROPOLOGY

Part IV

THE DOCTRINE OF MANKIND, OR ANTHROPOLOGY

James Earl Massey, Revision Editor

Chapter I

ORIGIN AND NATURE OF MAN

The term anthropology is derived from the Greek words ἄνθρωπος (*anthropos*), man and λόγος (*logos*), a reasoned statement, therefore it means the science about man. In its broadest sense it includes all branches of science relating to man's body and mind as well as that which has to do with his religious nature. Biblical anthropology, of which Christian theology treats, has for its principal subject man's moral and religious nature.

The Scriptures keep the religious aspect foremost in all that they say about man. They concern themselves with his origin and physical and intellectual constitution only as such facts contribute to true religion. But it is necessary to know somewhat of man's original nature properly to understand redemption through Christ. The purpose of theology, then, is to show what man was originally by creation, what he became by the fall, and what was needed for his redemption. Our view of salvation is determined by the particular anthropology we hold. If the moral fall of the race is denied, consistency requires also a denial of regeneration. If man were regarded as at present so totally depraved that he can will nothing good, then an individual's salvation would depend entirely on God's operation to save him and in no wise upon the person's free choice.

The Bible declares that mankind was by divine creation. "So God created man in his own image, in the image of God created He him" (Gen. 1:27). Man is not a result either directly or indirectly of spontaneous generation. Neither is he the product of the divine operation by a process of evolution from lower forms. Man is neither *from* the brute, as naturalistic evolutionists affirm, nor *through* the brute, as is held by theistic evolutionists. Evolution

has been sufficiently discussed as an antitheistic theory and as a theory of creation, so further consideration of it here is superfluous.

The important fact that mankind owes its origin to God is the ground for our obligation to serve God. Because humans owe everything, including existence itself, to God, they cannot justly withhold anything from him. He deserves their utmost obedience and worship. They ought to love him with all their powers. They cannot reasonably do otherwise. But it is only on the ground of his being creator that God can justly require such absolute submission and service. If he were not their creator such a demand would be a usurpation of a power and place in relation to humans that would be unjustifiable. Divine creation of humans is fundamental to religion among them. Man was created in God's image, which was lost, but in the new creation through Christ his original state is restored.

I. Unity of the Race

By the unity of the human race is meant that all mankind descended from an original pair. On the fact of the oneness of the race rests the Bible doctrine of human depravity and sin. This moral perversion of the race is a fundamental truth of Christian doctrine, and it is the ground of man's need for redemption through Christ. "As by one man's disobedience many were made sinners, so by the obedience of one shall many be made righteous" (Rom. 5:19). The first step in proving the unity of mankind is to determine the time of man's origin, for it is said the great differences between the races necessarily required a long time in which to be developed.

1. **Antiquity of the Race**—The length of time which has elapsed since the appearance of man on the earth has been a topic of special interest concerning which no little difference of opinion prevails. With the advancement of science, especially of geology, the tendency has been to claim a much higher antiquity for the race than was formerly allowed. The only commonly accepted biblical chronology made the time from Adam to Christ but 4,004 years, but the most modern claims of scientists exceed this by hundreds or even thousands of years.

The Bible does not state the time of man's origin. The Bible gives no chronology about this. Different calculations of the length of the period from Adam to Christ have been set forth by

Jewish and Christian writers, ranging from 3,483 years up to 6,984 years.

These various approaches to a Bible chronology are based upon the tables of genealogies given at different places in the Scriptures, and add together the ages of the fathers at the time the sons were born. This method might give a correct chronology if all the links of the genealogical chain were given, but these tables were not written for the purpose of determining dates of events, but to show that Christ was the Son of David, of the seed of Abraham, and the promised seed of the woman that would bruise the head of the serpent. Another problematic element is the difference in ages of the patriarchs as given in the Hebrew text and that of the Septuagint. According to the Hebrew text the period from Adam to Christ was about four thousand years, but the figures given in the Septuagint make it nearly six thousand years.

The incompleteness of the genealogical tables is a fact. These tables were given to show mainly the line of descent, not a complete list of births in a particular line; there was no necessity to give a complete listing. On this subject Dr. Hodge quoted from Green as follows: "Thus in Genesis 46:18, after recording the sons of Zilpah, her grandsons and her great-grandsons, the writer adds, 'These are the sons of Zilpa . . . and these she bare unto Jacob, even sixteen souls.' The same thing recurs in the case of Bilhah, verse 25, 'She bare these unto Jacob: all the souls were seven.' Compare these with verses 15 and 22. No one can pretend that the author of this register did not use the term understandingly of descendants beyond the first generation. In like manner, according to Matt. 1:11, Josias begat his grandson Jechonias, and verse 8, Joram begat his great-grandson Ozias. And in Genesis 10:15-18, Canaan, the grandson of Noah, is said to have begotten several whole nations, the Jebusite, the Amorite, the Girgashite, the Hivite, etc., etc. Nothing can be plainer, therefore, than that in the usage of the Bible 'to bear' and 'to begat' are used in a wide sense to indicate descent, without restricting this to the immediate offspring" (*Systematic Theology,* Vol. II, pp. 40,41). These instances suggest missing links in the biblical lists.

But a clear distinction should be made between what the facts of science require and what certain scientists claim. Those who assume that man is a product of a process of evolution unite in claiming for him an antiquity of from one hundred thousand years

to a million years or even much more. But such a high antiquity for man is not required by discoveries of archaeologic geology or other evidence, but is held as a necessary assumption of their theory of evolution. Any theory of evolution must allow such long ages for a change so great as that which makes man so different from beasts. Attempts are also made to support the view of a great age for man by appeals to the great antiquity of certain nations, and to fossil remains of man or other artifacts indicative of his presence, such as flint instruments deeply buried under drift deposits supposed to have accumulated across very long periods of time. Some also state that those characteristics of color and feature which differentiate the races and their many languages and dialects must have required a very long time for development.

These facts, however, do not require the great antiquity for man some evolutionists assume and assert. Those who hold a great age for man have often been criticized as reasoning unsoundly from the facts on which they base their arguments. Actually there are sufficient grounds for holding a comparatively brief period for human existence on the earth.

Professor Alexander Winchell says, "Man has no place till after the reign of ice. It has been imagined that the close of the reign of ice dates back perhaps a hundred thousand years. There is no evidence of this. The fact is that we ourselves came upon the earth in time to witness the retreat of the glaciers. They still linger in the valleys of the Alps and along the northern shores of Europe and Asia. The fact is we are not so far out of the dust, chaos, and barbarism of antiquity as we had supposed. The very beginnings of our race are almost in sight. Geological events which, from the force of habit in considering them, we had imagined to be located far back in the history of things, are found to have transpired at our very doors."

Professor Geo. Frederick Wright voiced the conclusion that the glacial period ended not earlier than from seven to ten thousand years ago. Professor Holmes suggested that the great ice sheet did not disappear until about ten thousand years ago. American geologists Professor Salisbury and Dr. Upham think that seven to ten thousand years is a fair estimate. Other names could be added in support.

If we add to these estimates about the close of the ice age the testimony of some geologists that no traces of man are found

before the glacial period and not until near its close, we have no facts from geology for supposing man has been on the earth more than eight thousand years to ten thousand years. Without allowing for any missing links in the genealogies even the longer chronology from the Greek (Septuagint) Version of the Old Testament requires nearly eight thousand years for the age of man. But as has been stated above, missing links occur in the listings. Admitting this allows us a biblical chronology that dates man's origin at about ten thousand years ago, which is in accord with the major historical and scientific data. The Bible chronology may well be extended, however, without any straining of facts, to agree with all discoveries which we would be required to take into account.

2. **Problem of Race Distinctions and Unity**—The characteristics which differentiate the various branches of the human race are quite marked and persistent. Some obvious differences exist between the Caucasian and Negroid peoples. Contrasts are immediately noticeable in the ruddy skin, the straight round hair, high forehead, thin lips, and prominent nose of Caucasians and the black skin, flat, woolly hair, sloping forehead, thick lips, and flat nose which usually characterize Negroid people. The question that arises in viewing these distinctions is, whether these diffences mark distinct human species with different origins, or whether they are only variations within one species. The fact is that they are all derived from an original pair of humans. The Scriptures affirm the unity of mankind.

Some persons have suggested that a distinction is conceivable between oneness of origin of the race and oneness of species. Such a distinction, however, is dependent upon the sense in which species is understood, and many different definitions of species have been formulated. The possibility of the human race being a simple species with several origins has been often discussed in recent years. The noted Louis Agassiz held this theory, which represents the extreme of supernaturalism, and many have held it on biblical grounds. It assumes that other families of human beings were created apart from Adam, that there was one or more pre-Adamite race. However, the pre-Adamic theory is not in agreement with a reasonable interpretation of all the texts that discuss human oneness, and it is contradictory to these clear texts (Acts 17:26; Rom. 5:12).

A plurality of origins for mankind has been held as a ground for

the distinctions of the various races of men, but these distinctions can be satisfactorily explained otherwise. Not only does the Bible teach that all humans descended from a single pair, science itself shows oneness of the human species and makes a place for the understanding given in the Bible that all humans had a single origin. There is no disagreement between science and revelation on this subject.

The very idea of a species implies descent from a single source. Quatrefages has explained: "Species is a collection of individuals more or less resembling each other, which may be regarded as having descended from a single primitive pair by an uninterrupted and natural succession of families" (*The Human Species,* p. 36). Being a species implies certain basic resemblances among its members.

3. **Physiological Argument**—Different varieties of a particular species may exhibit certain differences in color, size, and shape. For example, differences are common among varieties of dogs, horses, cattle, or chickens, but these noticeable differences are found on closer study to be superficial. In species the similarities between varieties are many times more numerous, far deeper, and more abiding than the marked differences. For example, among dogs the great mastiff and the little Scotch terrier exhibit marked contrast in size. Also one may be black and the other white, one may have short hair and the other long hair, and they may differ much in relative proportion of parts and general habits. Yet in the number, general shape, and structure of their bones, and in their joints, in the structure of their muscles, and in the distribution of nerves and blood vessels they are the same. They are both dogs and unhesitatingly recognize each other as such.

The various races of the human species are not nearly so different as some critics have supposed. The difference in color between the black skin of the African and the ruddy complexion of the Caucasian is not nearly so great as that between certain varieties of dogs where one is jet black and the other white as snow. Neither is the difference in the shape of the skull in the Caucasian and Negroid so great as that between the shape of the skull of the greyhound and the bulldog. The flat nose and thick lips of Negroids are greatly in contrast with those of the typical Caucasian, but the difference is much greater between the upright pointed ears of the bull-terrier and the long lopping ears of the dachshund.

These differences in varieties of lower animals are largely the result of artificial breeding and mutations; they are not indicative of distinction of species but only of varieties or developments in species. It is more reasonable to regard the different races of men as but varieties of a single species. The causes which led to these distinctions between the races is not known to us, but perhaps climatic conditions, modes of life, variations in types of ancestors, and other factors caused these differences in the course of time. Cetain tribes of North America have permanently altered the shape of the skull by bandaging the head in infancy. According to Dr. A. H. Strong, the Sikhs of India, by the acceptance of a new religion and a consequent advance in civilization, have changed the shape of their heads. Other similar examples have been cited. Even those facts from which evolutionists endeavor to prove the descent of all living species from a simple organism are sufficient to account for variations among the races of man, although they do fall short of proving what they are assumed to prove.

But the most certain evidence that all humans are of one species is the absence of hybrids. The union of the sexes between the most diverse races is as fruitful as any within a particular race, and the offspring of such mating is in no degree infertile. The evidence of this is so plentiful that the statement of the fact is superfluous. The sexual union between distinct species produces an offspring that is infertile, but this is certainly not the case with the mulatto, which is human and not an infertile hybrid.

4. **Psychological Argument**—The oneness of the human species is also shown by the sameness of psychological nature among the various races.

The various races of men have one psychic identity of soul as to kind. All have the same kind of instincts, inner feelings, reason, power of speech, sense of moral responsibility, and the disposition to worship a higher power. Some contrasts may exist, it is true, between uncivilized persons and those who are highly civilized, but these differences are accidental rather than essential. Examples of extreme ignorance and degradation may be cited among all races, and instances are numerous of high intellectual attainments, excellent moral character, and unwavering Christian piety in all races. This is because one essential psychic nature appertains to all the races of mankind.

5. **Philological Argument**—Comparative philology, or the study of languages also shows the relation of different peoples to one

another. The existence of the same meaning in different languages is evidence that they relate to a common original. "It is impossible that races, entirely distinct, should have the same language." Max Miller has said, "The evidence of language is irrefragable, and it is the only evidence worth listening to, with regard to antehistorical periods. . . . There is not an English jury nowadays, which, after examining the hoary documents of language, would reject the claim of a common descent and a legitimate relationship between Hindu, Greek, and Teuton" (Quoted by Hodge, *Systematic Theology,* Vol II, p. 90).

Philology points to the unity of the human race by showing that the various languages among races are from a common original, which implies unity of species.

6. **Biblical Argument**—The Scriptures teach that all men sprang from a single pair. The Genesis narratives of creation clearly represent Adam as the first man. In referring to him Paul said, "the first man Adam" (1 Cor. 15:45), and the woman Eve was so named by Adam "because she was the mother of all living," which could not have been true if a previously created race existed. The Genesis account represents all mankind as having descended from Adam, and Noah and his family, who were Adam's descendants, are mentioned as the only human beings saved from the deluge.

In his address on Mar's Hill to the Athenians Paul said, "And [God] hath made of one blood all nations of men for to dwell on all the face of the earth" (Acts 17:26). Even if some were to object that the best Greek text disallows αἵματος (*haimatos*), translated "blood" in the Common Version, and that the Revised Version is more correct, Paul's statement is strengthened rather than weakened, since the Revised rendering definitely declares that all nations of men are descended from "one," implying one person, father, parentage, or source. No statement could more clearly affirm the fact of singleness of origin of the race. This is in harmony with Rom 5:12-19 which teaches that sin and death are the portion of all humans because of Adam's sin.

II. Constituent Elements in Man's Nature

The Bible does not attempt to give a systematic anthropology or psychology. What it says about the essential elements of man's nature is mainly in relation to its high religious purpose. The purpose of the Bible is to teach religion, not science. Its references to nature are always subordinate and incidental to this primary

purpose. Yet, as God's inspired Word, it will not contradict what we know scientifically about the constitution of nature. Although the Bible does not tell us many things about man, what it does tell us is true.

1. **Dual Constitution of Man**—The Bible tells us that man is a compound being. Philosophy and common sense agree. Materialism denies the reality of a distinct spiritual aspect in man and idealism denies the reality of the material body, but the Bible and common human thought clearly recognize both.

Humans intuitively know substance as a reality. They know the reality of the matter composing their bodies by its properties: extension, weight, tangibility, and divisibility. But they also know another class of phenomena—thought, feeling, volition—which cannot be referred to material substance as its cause. These effects must be referred to a cause which is a spirit. As we know matter by its properties, so we know mind or spirit by its phenomena. And because phenomena must have a ground in real existence, we therefore know that the substance called spirit is a distinct entity. But as we do not know exhaustively what spirit is, so we do not know what matter is. We only know the phenomena of the first and the properties of the second. But we know they are distinct and different in their natures. The mind is not spiritualized matter, neither is the body materialized mind.

Man, then, is composed of a body and spirit; each is a distinct entity but combines to produce one nature of being. The connection of the spirit and the body is a mystery, but we know they interact and are interdependent. The body is dependent on the spirit for its life. Without the spirit the body becomes subject to the disorganizing forces of chemical laws and decays. The mind is also dependent on the bodily senses for its connection with the external world. The mind operates the body, and yet disorders of the body may result in a disordered state of mind. Emotions of the mind, joy or fear, cause the heart to beat faster, yet a blow on the head may result in unconsciousness. This intimate relation of spirit and body is inexplicable, but it is true, and yet not inconsistent with the idea of the spirit and body being distinct entities. This idea of two entities in one nature is known as realistic dualism.

The Scripture agrees with reason in recognizing this two-fold nature in man. This distinction is recognized in the account of the creation of man. He was formed from the dust of the ground, but

became a living soul when God breathed into his nostrils the breath of life. Biblical proof of man's duality is found in those texts which indicate a distinction between spirit and body. "The Lord . . . formeth the spirit of man within him" (Zech. 12:1). "For what man knoweth the things of a man, save the spirit of man which is in him?" (1 Cor. 2:11). The idea of relation that is expressed here excludes the idea of identity. The spirit is not the body, but *in* it. It is the knowing, volitional part of man. "Shall I give my first-born for my transgression, the fruit of my body for the sin of my soul?" (Mic. 6:7). Here the soul is represented as so different from the body that the sin of the soul cannot be adequately atoned for by a sacrifice of the fruit of the body. "Then shall the dust return to the earth as it was: and the spirit shall return unto God who gave it" (Eccles. 12:7). "I, Daniel, was grieved in my spirit in the midst of my body" (Dan. 7:15). "And fear not them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul: but rather fear him which is able to destroy both soul and body in hell" (Matt. 10:28). A duality in man's constitution is constantly recognized in the Bible.

The two distinct entities of spirit and body are clearly implied in those texts which represent the body as being the house in which the spirit dwells. "For we know that if our earthly house of this tabernacle were dissolved, we have a building of God, an house not made with hands, eternal in the heavens. . . . Therefore we are always confident, knowing that, whilst we are at home in the body, we are absent from the Lord. . . . We are confident, I say, and willing rather to be absent from the body, and to be present with the Lord" (2 Cor. 5:1, 6, 8). Again he said, "I am in a strait betwixt two, having a desire to depart, and to be with Christ; which is far better: nevertheless to abide in the flesh is more needful for you" (Phil. 1:23, 24). The Apostle Peter uses similar language. "Yea, I think it meet, as long as I am in this tabernacle, to stir you up by putting you in remembrance; knowing that shortly I must put off this my tabernacle, even as our Lord Jesus Christ hath showed me" (2 Pet. 1:13, 14). In 2 Corinthians 12:2 the Apostle Paul wrote about having had an experience during which he did not know whether he was "in the body" or "out of the body."

Nothing can be more certain than that these texts refer to the soul, as being so truly distinct from the body that it may have conscious existence apart from the body. Surely conscious exist-

ence is better than unconsciousness, yet Paul says it is "better" to depart from the body to be with Christ. After death the soul of the righteous person lives with Christ. Jesus said to the converted thief, "Today shalt thou be with me in paradise." This could not have been true except of the spirit of either of them.

2. **The Theory of Trichotomy**—In contradistinction to this two-fold view of human nature is the theory that there are three distinct elements in human nature: body, soul, and spirit. This view is not essentially contradictory to any Christian doctrine, and it is doubtful whether the Bible affords any positive disproof of the theory, but the chief objection to it is that the large majority of careful interpreters find no biblical support for it. Reason clearly recognizes a difference between the material and spiritual natures, but finds no ground for further distinction as to different factors in man's nature.

The theory has been held in a variety of forms. It assumes three elements in man's constitution—σῶμα (*soma,* body), ψυχή (*psuche,* soul), and πνεῦμα (*pneuma,* spirit). The simplest and most common form of the theory is that the body is the material part, the soul the principle of animal life, and the spirit the rational or immortal part of our natures. With this view that which has to do with sense perceptions, understanding, and feeling belongs to the soul, and reason, will and immortality to the spirit. It holds that at death the soul and body cease to be and only the spirit survives. Soul is attributed to the brute creation, but not spirit. Due to possessing this higher principle of spirit, man is differentiated from the lower animals. This form of the theory of trichotomy has the advantage of definiteness and intelligibility, even though it does lack support both rational and biblical.

Trichotomy was held by the Platonic philosophy and that view of man strongly influenced early Christian thought. This view found a considerable degree of acceptance in the early church, especially in the school of Alexandria. Tertullian strongly opposed this view and Augustine did not support it, which resulted in its disfavor by the majority of Christians even until the present time. The principal reason for opposing it, however, was the use some made of it in supporting certain heresies.

The Gnostics, who held that the spirit was not capable of sin because it is part of the divine essence, made the theory of trichotomy contribute to that heresy. The Apollinarians held an

erroneous Christology which required trichotomy for its support. Their teachings suggested that Christ had a human body and soul joined with the divine logos instead of the spirit or rational part of human nature. Semi-Pelagianism also used the trichotomous view to build its theory that native depravity had not affected the spirit, but only the soul. In opposing these errors the more orthodox found it convenient to refute them by disproving trichotomy. But the mere fact that it has been employed in support of heretical doctrines is not proof that it is itself in error. Orthodox Christians have not infrequently held it, supposing it was a necessary implication of Scripture.

The texts viewed as teaching trichotomy may be very naturally understood in a dichotomous sense, but some of them can be shown not to teach trichotomy. The text most commonly associated with trichotomy is 1 Thessalonians 5:23, "And the very God of peace sanctify you wholly; and I pray God your whole spirit and soul and body be preserved blameless unto the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ," a verse intended to express the idea of sanctification and preservation of the whole being. The terms "spirit," "soul," and "body" are employed to express entireness. Another example of representing the whole self is found in Luke 10:17: "Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy strength, and with all thy mind." Here four terms are employed to express entireness. But if they were regarded as numbering the different elements of man's constitution, as trichotomists suppose from Paul's statement, then Jesus here teaches tetrachotomy. Another text relied upon to support trichotomy is Hebrews 4:12: "For the word of God is quick, and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit, and of the joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart." The intent of the verse is not to enumerate the elements of the human constitution, but to show the penetrating power of God's Word. The "joints and marrow" are merely different forms of the same substance, while "soul and spirit" are different aspects or relations of one and the same substance. Other texts assumed to support trichotomy furnish no better proof of the theory than do the foregoing ones.

In common English usage, soul and spirit are without distinction of meaning, and after naming the corresponding words in

Hebrew, Greek, and Latin, Dr. Hodge says, "these words all designate one and the same thing. They are constantly interchanged" (*Systematic Theology*, Vol. II, p. 48). That they are used interchangeably can be verified by comparing the texts where they occur. Contrary to the theory under consideration, πνεῦμα (*pneuma*), as well as ψυχή (*psuche*), is used of the brute creation (Eccles. 3:21, LXX). Also ψυχή (*psuche*) is ascribed to God, who certainly does not have the nature of the animal. The disembodied spirits of the dead are called ψυχή (*psuche*), or souls (Rev. 6:29). It is the soul that sins (Lev. 4:2), and God commands to love the Lord "with all thy soul" (Luke 10:27). It is the highest part in man and to it are referred the highest exercises of religion. It is the soul that is lost through sin. "What shall it profit a man, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul?" (Mark 8:35). The soul, then, is not the mere animal life of the body, but that which may be lost after the body is dead.

The one element of truth in trichotomy is its recognition of different aspects of man's inner being. Although the terms "soul" and "spirit" do not represent distinct substances of human nature, they have value (like "heart" and "mind") in representing the higher spiritual nature in its different powers and faculties of man's psychic nature.

3. **How Man is Superior to the Brute**—It is evident that man is immeasurable superior to the brute. All must admit this. The superiority is such that he cannot have been evolved from the brute animal. Doubtless because of our inability to communicate fully with animals it is impossible to draw an exact line between them except that man is immeasurably superior because created in God's image. The popular theory that man has reason and the anmals have instinct is not a satisfactory distinction, for animals have a certain measure of reason and man is not entirely without instinct.

A degree of intelligence exists in animals as well as in man, but man's mind has capacities immeasurably higher than has that of the animals. Animals have certain general conceptions, a memory, and some capacity for reasoning, though very little, if any, power of abstract thought. But humans are capable of reasoning, and they have capacities for abstract thought that are almost without limitation. Man's higher intellectual qualities are shown by higher activities. Animals can and do communicate with each other, but

man employs elaborate language, systems of sound and writing by which he may exactly transmit his thought to another. Man alone makes fires, clothes himself, makes tools and machinery to accomplish his purposes, writes, draws pictures, writes histories, and improves his race.

Feeling also exists in anmals as in man. A horse or a dog may show great love and loyalty to its master. These have a certain measure of free-will, but the range of man's freedom is far greater. Their freedom is within the limits of their natures, but man can choose contrary to his nature. Humans have power to choose a supreme end and determine personal character.

We have no evidence that animals feel any religious or moral obligations. But man has conscience which enables him to recognize acts as right or wrong, impels him to the right, and reproves him if he does wrong. Man is above the animals in having a religious nature. Humans pray, and in this high capacity for intellectual development, in his freedom of will, in his moral nature and capacity for religion man is truly created in the image of God.

III. The Origin of Souls

Three theories have been held respecting the origin of souls. They are: first, preexistence; second, creationism—that the soul of each person is immediately created of God; and third, traducianism—that souls are brought into being by the parents according to the natural laws of propagation.

1. **Theory of Preexistence**—This theory assumes that the human soul has an existence prior to its connection with a physical body in this world. The theory was given prominence in the early church by Origen, who borrowed it from Plato. It has been restated in recent times by Kant, but neither in ancient nor modern times has it ever been accepted by any large number of Christian believers. The theory supposes the souls of all men were created at the same time as that of Adam.

Origen connected this theory of preexistence with the idea of transmigration of souls. He assumed that all souls have passed through many former existences, or epochs, and are to pass through many more. In a previous existence souls have sinned and they are thus condemned to inhabit physical bodies in this world. He suggested that the varying degrees of natural sinfulness at birth rests upon the supposition that some committed greater sins in a

previous existence than did others, thus accounting for the varying degrees of native depravity. Dr. H. C. Sheldon has rightly objected "if souls had such a decisive moral development in a previous state as the theory implies, it is reasonable to assume that they had also an appreciable intellectual development. Why then is no sign of that development to be found in the embodied subject? Why is the infant so utterly destitute of every trace of intellectual maturity, and obliged to gain every item of knowledge by the hard road of tuition and trial?"

The theory of preexistence lacks scriptural support. It is an unscriptural assumption. The Pauline teaching is that the sinfulness of the human race is a consequence of the sin of Adam (Rom. 5:12). The preexistence theory affirms pure individualism; race sinfulness is excluded.

2. **Theory of Creationism**—This theory affirms that God creates out of nothing each individual soul when its body is formed, either at conception or at birth. Its advocates claim both scriptural and rational support for this view.

They cite certain statements of Scripture that affirm God is the creator and father of the human spirit. "The spirit shall return unto God who gave it" (Eccles. 12:7). God is said to form "the spirit of man within him" (Zech. 12:1). These and other texts similarly attributing man's soul to God may support creationism, but they do not necessarily do so, for it is conceivable that he gives the spirit mediately through natural processes as he is said to give us our daily bread. Also, he may be said to "form" the spirit according to natural laws as it is said he forms the body of the infant in the womb of the mother. A stronger text for creationism is Hebrews 12:9, where God is called "the Father of our spirits" in antithesis to "fathers of our flesh." But this is not conclusive proof, because "fathers" is used with such latitude in the Bible that it may mean merely that he was the original author of the human spirit much as Abraham was the father of the Israelitish people. The antithesis may be regarded as between the general relation of man's spirit to the Divine Spirit and the relation of us to our parents.

It is also urged that the distinct individuality of children can be accounted for only on the theory of creationism. But marked personality may be fully accounted for on the ground of a law of variation. Other objections are made to creationism. If creationism

be true, then human parents beget only the lower part of their child and the higher element, the real person, is not from them. Also, if creationism is true, it is difficult to show that God is not the creator of sinful or depraved souls. It may be reasoned that God creates the soul pure at conception and it becomes depraved during the embryonic period as a result of its close connection with the mother. Such a view is objectionable to many, however, in that it represents depravity as being transmitted only by the mother. A still further objection to creationism is that it makes God a party to the begetting of illegitimate children.

3. **Theory of Traducianism**—This theory holds that souls are propagated rather than created, or that, as the body is transmitted by the parents, so is the soul, though not necessarily in the same manner. Adam's soul was by immediate divine creation, but since then God's working is only mediate in the origination of souls.

The Scriptures are appealed to in support of the theory. At the close of the six days of creation God is said to have rested from his creative work; therefore, it is reasoned, he does not now create souls. God has "made of one [blood omitted, R. V.] all nations of men" (Acts 17:26). Aaron was "in the loins of his father [Abraham], when Melchisedec met him (Heb. 7:10). These texts evidently refer to more than the bodies of men. An objection often made against traducianism is that it lends support to the materialistic view of the soul. But in reply it may be asked that, if the soul or immaterial part of animals can be propagated, why cannot that of men, and in the same manner? An argument in support of such transmission is the fact that not only physical but mental and moral characteristics are known by observation to be transmitted from parent to offspring constantly. Traducianism is especially harmonious with the Biblical doctrine of native depravity, and in this particular has distinct advantages over creationism.

Doubtless most Christians who have any opinion on the subject, hold either creationism or traducianism. But among the most careful thinkers, even of the same schools of theological thought, some hold one view and some the other. The view held of the mode of the transmission of depravity has a great influence in determining the theory one accepts about the origin of souls. Those holding the realistic theory find traducianism most harmonious with it. Those who hold the federal headship theory of depravity incline to creationism. Others are divided. The traducian

view seems to have most in its favor. But we must refrain from dogmatism. Those who hold creationism will not be harmed by it even if it is erroneous, if it can be held without affirming that God sanctions every act of procreation and that he creates sinful souls, and if it is held without a denial of native depravity. Likewise it is important to those holding traducianism that they guard against any materialistic view of the soul, the realistic theory of depravity, and the depravity and guilt of the human nature of Christ. Such a guarded theory of traducianism would probably not be harmful even though it were untrue.

IV. The Question of Immortality

1. **Man's Body Created Mortal**—The popular notion that man's body was originally inherently immortal is not supported by Scripture or reason. As created he was naturally mortal. His physical constitution was like that of the animals, made of dust, and was therefore subject to change and dissolution, by which it would return to dust again.

That man's body was created essentially mortal is evident from the Scriptures. In its present condition it is a "mortal body" (Rom. 6:12; 8:11). That it was originally mortal is certain, because it was made of temporal matter, dust (Gen. 2:7). It was given natural food to sustain it, which would have been superfluous if it was immortal (Gen. 1:29). Adam was given work to do to provide that food for himself (Gen. 2:15). Marriage was instituted and the propagation of the race was enjoined (Gen. 1:28), which is not true of the angels, who are immortal (Luke 20:35, 36). Also, the tree of life was provided, by eating the fruit of which his life was continued and death counteracted (Gen. 3:22).

But the fact that man was originally mortal is in the description that he was "made" "a little lower than the angels" (Ps. 8:4, 5 with Heb. 2:6, 7). In what sense? In his limitations due to having a physical body, while the angels are not so equipped. Man was created lower than the angels in the sense that they are wholly immortal while in his original constitution he was subject to death.

Before the fall death was possible, but by the fall it became actual. Originally pain, injury, disease, and death were possible but God provided the fruit of the tree of life to counteract them. It was only when sin led to expulsion from Eden and exclusion from the tree of life that these ceased to be contingencies and became realities.

2. **The Soul Is Immortal**—Endless existence is the unconditional destiny of the soul. Immortality is not determined by moral character. Created in the image of the eternal God, the soul resembles him in its immortal quality. The fact of its immortality is evidence of its exalted dignity and therefore is of great significance in properly estimating the value of its interests in this life and in its future life. Except the soul lives forever, life is vain and without purpose. But as Longfellow has said:

"Life is real, life is earnest
And the grave is not its goal;
Dust thou art, to dust returnest,
Was not spoken of the soul."

The Bible declares that the soul is immortal. "For we know that if our earthly house of this tabernacle were dissolved, we have a building of God, an house not made with hands, eternal in the heavens" (2 Cor. 5:11). "We are confident, I say, and willing rather to be absent from the body, and to be present with the Lord" (5:8). These verses teach that the soul continues to exist after the body dies, and they teach that the future condition of the soul will be conscious existence. In Matthew 10:28 it is said, "Fear not them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul." Immortality of the soul is implied by many other texts, especially those which represent future blessedness or punishment as "everlasting." Besides the proofs from Scripture, the immortality of the soul may well be reasoned from the soul's capacity for unlimited development, and also from an inalienable desire for unending existence.

CHAPTER II

ORIGINAL MORAL NATURE AND STATE OF MAN

I. Primitive Man of a Lofty Grade

The Bible is the sole source of authority concerning the original status and powers of man. Concerning these, two extremes have been advocated. On the one hand he has been regarded as possessing absolute perfection, and on the other hand it has been held, by theistic evolutionists especially, that man began at so low a point biologically that many millenniums were required for his development to his present stage. The Scripture evidently represents primitive man as having been created in a state of maturity, not in one of infancy.

1. **Constituted Relatively Perfect**—When man, the final product of God's creative effort, has been made, "God saw everything that he had made, and, behold, it was very good" (Gen. 1:31). The sense in which all things are here said to have been good is that they were adapted to the purpose for which they were created. They were good in the sense that an automobile that will carry a reasonable load at a fair speed is said to be good. A watch is said to be good if it correctly measures time. Its case may not be made of the finest gold, nor beautifully engraved, but if it keeps time it is a good watch because it is made to keep time. Man was good in the sense that he was so constituted physically, mentally, and morally as properly to fulfill the design of his creation.

The sense in which man's physical being was originally "good" is doubtless not to be understood as that of absolute perfection. It is enough to suppose it was good for the use that was to be made of it. It had the ability to execute what the mind might conceive. It was good in that it was free from disease and in good health. It possessed strength sufficient for all duties devolving upon it, and it was equal to any reasonable demand that would be made upon it. We have no reason for believing it was the body of a giant, that it never became weary, that it possessed angelic beauty, that it was not susceptible to hunger, pain, or wounds. As previously stated, it was subject to death and decay, although a preventive of death was provided in the tree of life.

Intellectually, primitive man must have been of a high grade.

The naming of the animals by Adam before the woman was made implies a large degree of mentality especially when it is remembered that living things were named in keeping with their characteristics. Genesis 2:19 states that God "formed every beast of the field, and every fowl of the air; and brought them unto Adam." Probably he named only the more common animals which inhabited the garden of Eden.

It is evident from what is revealed in the Scriptures that his intelligence was of a high order, but we have no proof that Adam's perceptive faculties were such that he perfectly perceived all that came before him, that his memory was absolutely retentive, that his judgments were always correct, or that in his reasoning he always passed accurately from premise to conclusion. In other words, he was not infinite in his intellectual powers. Absolute perfection does not belong to the finite. We need not believe that primitive man was at least equal intellectually to the most brilliant and balanced minds living today, but certainly he was originally so constituted intellectually that he was morally responsible.

As to his moral nature, the statement that man was originally good must mean that he was not naturally inclined to evil, that his conscience distinguished the right, sought it, and would have felt reproved for wrongdoing. His disposition was to love God and relate to others unselfishly. His will was efficient to choose what he should do.

2. **Not a Barbarian**—Much has been said by those who assume that man is a product of evolution, of successive stone, bronze, and iron ages. These are a necessary assumption to the theory of evolution, but as often held are without ground in facts. Doubtless particular tribes or nations have passed through such stages corresponding to their progress from savagery to civilization, but there is no proof that a stone age prevailed among all nations at the same time. Many centuries ago the inhabitants of certain parts of Europe seem to have used implements and weapons of stone only. But in the time of men still living certain tribes of American Indians were yet in their stone age. People in some parts of the world still use flint instruments. The facts of history indicate that the stone, bronze, and iron ages have all subsisted contemporaneously. It is conceivable that primitive man enjoyed a simple civilization and that certain tribes degenerated and were later recovered.

The Bible clearly represents Adam as being far above a state of barbarism. He was created with high intelligence and morals. The statements of Scripture are also corroborated by traditons of all nations of a past golden age. Also the most ancient monuments and written records of man known today indicate a high civilization. The pyramids of Egypt antedate history, yet who can believe such colossal works requiring so much ingenuity, so much well-organized labor, and such vast wealth could be the work of barbarians? Equally early were the ancient Accadians, who, as has been learned in recent years from the Chaldean and Assyrian inscriptions, were a highly civilized people. History shows the most ancient peoples were civilized. This well agrees with the teaching of Scripture that man was originally civilized, but has lost that civilization in a measure.

Another argument against primal barbarism is the lack of evidence that any savage people have ever lifted up themselves without civilizing influences being exerted from without. Egypt obtained its civilization from the East, where, according to the Bible, the human race had its origin. Greece derived its civilization from Egypt and Phoenicia, Rome from Greece and Phoenicia, other parts of Europe from Italy, America from Europe, and now the Far East and Africa are being influenced by Europe and America.

Progress in the arts, science, and invention is not to be confused with that simple civilization that was the condition of primitive man. Certainly great advancement has been made in many ways in modern times. Primitive man was civilized in that he was in a high state intellectually, morally, and religiously. Socrates, Plato, or Aristotle never saw an airplane and were ignorant of the wonders of electricity, but how few of those who are acquainted with such things nearly approach to the great intelligence and reasoning ability of these men? It is in the sense in which these men were in an advanced state that we may properly affirm primitive man was not a barbarian.

But the question may be asked, "How did man deteriorate into barbarism?" Evidently in the course of many generations under the debasing influence of a sinful nature and evil practices barbarism may well have been the result. The Bible states that the cause of the degradation of men was their substitution of idolatry for the knowledge and worship of the true God.

3. **In the Divine Image**—No truth relative to man's original moral nature is more important than that announced when his creation was determined by God. "And God said, Let us make man in our image, after our likeness. . . . So God created man in his own image" (Gen. 1:26, 27).

An attempt has been made to distinguish between the image and the likeness of God. Augustine understood "image" as meaning man's intellectual nature, and likeness as his moral nature. The Scholastics explained "image of God" as including the natural attributes of man and likeness as his moral similarity to God. Still others have equated the image of God to what man was by creation and likeness as his acquired characteristics, or moral qualities.

Man is in the divine image, not merely in one particular aspect, but in a complex of characteristics of his nature. Certainly he is not in the divine image as to his physical being, for God is a purely spiritual being without corporeity. God is a spirit, and man's soul is a spirit. In this broad sense man is in God's image. But in various particulars the human spirit has qualities similar to the divine Spirit. Spirit in both God and man means personality, with the characteristics that constitute one a person: intellect, sensibility, and will. It is of these qualities that the essential image of God consists.

The Bible suggests that the important aspect of the divine image in man is his moral nature. This moral image is represented in the Bible as having been lost through sin. This loss was not by deprivation of any essential faculty or portion of human nature, but by derangement or weakening of the faculties in respect to moral conduct. In the work of regeneration the divine image is described as recreated or restored. "Put on the new man, which after God is created in righteousness and true holiness" (Eph. 4:24). "And have put on the new man, which is renewed in knowledge after the image of him that created him" (Col. 3:10).

II. Conscience

The reality of a conscience in man is generally admitted. The term "conscience" is used by some in a broad sense to include functions of both the intellect and sensibilities, while others use it in a restricted sense as pertaining only to the sensibilities. Conscience is not a separate faculty of the soul, as are intellect, sensibility, or will. It is rather a particular mode in which these

separate faculties act. The operation of conscience includes both the intellectual element and the emotional element acting in the realm of morals.

Men are naturally endowed with the ability to recognize a moral quality in behavior, to judge about the rightness or wrongness of a particular action, and they are conscious of a sense of responsibility to do what is conceived to be right and a sense of prohibition against doing what is wrong. In relation to some course of action, conscience (1) determines whether the course is right or wrong in relation to a known standard of right, (2) feels a sense of "ought" or "ought not" about the course of action, and (3) feels approval or remorse according as the right course is followed or not. Conscience, then, may be said to have three distinct functions: (1) discriminating, (2) impulsive, (3) retributive.

1. **The Discriminating Function**—This is the intellectual phase of conscience. It is the exercise of judgment in matters of moral conduct. In this respect conscience is not to be thought of as a sort of moral instinct which serves as an inerrant guide concerning abstract right and wrong. It does not act apart from rational thought. Men are not born infallible mathematicians, nor are they born infallible moralists. But as they are born with a capacity for recognizing the relation of numbers, so they are born with a moral constitution intrinsically suited to recognize moral distinctions. It is not the conscience that determines what is right and wrong abstractly, but when the standard of abstract right is furnished it, it has the ability to determine whether a particular act conforms to that standard.

The discriminating function of conscience should not be confounded with the moral institution, or with that sense of justice and right that is in every person and is essential to the moral nature. Neither should we confound it with accepted law or the individual's standard of right. Every person possesses an individual standard which he accepts as right. This standard is not determined by his own choice, but is what he sincerely believes is right. It is usually the result of intuitive ideas, the influences of education and society, reasoning, and divine revelation. Though this standard is not conscience, yet it is the ground upon which conscience determines the rightness or wrongness of an act. It is to the extent that this personal standard agrees with absolute abstract right that the conscience can prove to be a dependable guide about

what is right. But one's personal standard is not always in full agreement with that which is truly right. Personal standards are determined to a very great extent by influences from without, especially the teaching to which one listens. If one believes the ceremonial law of Moses is binding upon Christians and that he should therefore observe the seventh day, Saturday, as a day of rest from all physical labor, when he is confronted with the question of whether or not he should perform a certain act involving labor on that day his conscience will promptly discriminate against its performance, even though it is not wrong in itself.

2. **Impulsive**—A second function of conscience is to urge a sense of duty or obligation to do what is conceived to be right or to refrain from what is believed to be wrong. In this aspect the reality of conscience is clearer than in its discriminating capacity, because this sense of obligation is more distinctly cognizable and therefore more compelling. As the discriminating function of conscience was shown to be the intellectual faculty operating in the field of morals, so the impulsive function is the emotional faculty acting in the same field. It is not itself a separate faculty. In this respect conscience is a sense of obligation to do the right and a voice of urgent restraint from wrong. It is not merely a feeling of desire for the pleasurable and of aversion for the painful as has sometimes been affirmed. This is evidenced in that often men freely choose the path of hardship, suffering, and even death because they sense that it is the path of duty.

But what is this sense of obligation? The question is more easily asked than answered and yet every one knows what it is. It is not capable of logical definition, and can be truly known only by experience. The feeling of obligation impels one to duty, but does not compel. It does not interfere with freedom. It may be resisted or assisted by other impulses, affections, and appetites. It is because of this that conscience is weakened through depravity. How came we to possess this sense of "ought?" It is native, it is inborn. The sense of obligation arises as one becomes aware of moral responsibility. It is as much a part of the human constitution as reason or memory, and it is positive proof that man has a moral nature. The reason men feel they "ought" is because they are so constituted that they "ought." They sense obligation because they are under obligation.

The sense of duty has its ground in two facts: man's nature and his relationship to God. It belongs to personality to feel a sense of obligation. All the elements of personality are indicative of obligation. Personality includes reason, sensibility, and will. Reason implies ability to judge between alternatives and that ability implies obligation to judge as correctly as possible. Sensibility implies the capacity to feel according to that which is judged to be normal, and feeling gives impulse to action. Freedom to choose between a worthy and an unworthy course of action is a necessary consequence of personality. A second ground of obligation is the perfect moral nature of God. Because we are made in his image as personal beings, God can demand nothing less in us than conformity to the same standard of righteousness.

In its impulsive power conscience holds a position of authority. As soon as the intellectual function of conscience has determined what is right according to one's accepted standard, conscience begins impelling us to do the right. It takes the place of authority, from which it will not be moved and stedfastly demands that the right be followed. If one has, through wrong influence, been led to accept a false standard of right, and in some particular matter conscience has judged something to be wrong which is not so in its nature, conscience will as stedfastly require compliance with its authority. Conscience is not an infallible guide to what is intrinsically right, but one is always obligated to obey conscience, and failure to do so is to sin. To fail to comply with conscience is to violate one's sense of duty. The violation of conscience must result in disapproval by oneself as well as by God because of the function he gave it to perform.

3. **Retributive Aspect**—After conscience has discriminated between the rightness or wrongness of an act, has impelled one to do the right or warned one against doing wrong, there remains a third function of the conscience—giving one a sense of approval or remorse according to the course chosen.

A remorse for sin or a sense of approval for doing right is not to be confounded with fear of punishment and hope of reward. Although these are normal accompaniments of remorse or approval of conscience, yet these are felt by those who do not believe in future retribution. When Judas fully awakened to the vileness of his deed in betraying his master for money his remorse was so great that he ended his life, and brought upon himself retribution

for sin in the other world. His act can be accounted for on the ground of extreme remorse of conscience. This is a common feeling, not only in those who commit great crimes, but even in those who disregard the voice of conscience in lesser matters.

Also, it was not a mere hope of future blessedness that afforded comfort to the apostle Paul when at the close of his life he remembered that he had fought a good fight and kept the faith. The approval of his conscience afforded him additional pleasure. It not only enabled him to feel God was pleased with him, but thereby he was enabled to respect himelf as he could not have done otherwise.

It is reasonable to assume that primitive man was possessed of truer moral intuitions and a fuller divine revelation and, as a consequence, of a better standard of abstract right, so that the decisions of his conscience were more nearly correct than is true with men today. Also we may suppose his conscience was "tender" in that it functioned efficiently in impelling to duty, as is not true of one today whose conscience is "seared." Yet there is no more reason for supposing Adam had infinite knowledge of ethical principles than that he was infinite in other respects. Also it would evidently be contrary to the facts and too much to say that his sense of duty was so strong that he was always impelled to the right.

In all three of its functions conscience becomes more efficient by being heeded and it fails to function to the extent that it is neglected. Constant obedience to its dictates causes conscience to discriminate more effectively and the sense of obligation to do the right is healthy in proportion to one's understanding of what is believed to be a moral duty.

III. Free Agency

1. **The Question of Freedom Vital to Theology**—The question of free will is of the utmost importance to a correct understanding of the subjects of sin and grace. The view taken of the nature of the human will is logically determinative in both theology and religion. The fact of freedom of choice is that which gives character to sin and virtue. If men's wills are determined, sin is not reprehensible and goodness deserves no reward. Under such a law of necessity moral character is impossible.

The history of doctrine shows the extent to which the question of freedom has been treated in Christian thought. Consistent with

its theory of man's freedom, Calvinism has held a monergistic view of salvation, whereas Arminianism has consistently affirmed that salvation is synergistic, or is the result of man's choice as well as of God's operation. Because of this difference of view the controversy between Calvinists and Arminians concerning freedom has continued.

2. **Leading Theories of the Will** The various theories concerning the will may be grouped into three main classes: necessity, certainty, and alternativity. Necessity, or the denial of freedom is held by those who deny a personal supreme being. Atheists, dualists, materialists, and pantheists refer all events either to fate or chance. According to this doctrine of fatalism all events are determined by a blind necessity called fate, a compelling law of sequence to which all intelligent beings are subject and against which it is useless to struggle, and therefore the only proper attitude is submission to it. Chance differs from fate but little. The chance view assumes that things are as they are because they stood as good a chance to be so as any other way.

The Calvinistic theory of the will was denominated "Certainty" by Charles Hodge, one of its ablest advocates. Some Calvinistic theologians of the past regarded it as being necessitarian, but those of the present affirm it as in harmony with the truest and highest freedom. In spite of all the efforts by its supporters to prove the contrary, it is pure necessitarianism. Yet it is fundamentally different from other theories of necessity in that those theories substitute non-intelligent chance or fate for man's free choice while this view asserts the will of God as the all determining cause instead of the will of man.

The common doctrine of many Calvinists is that motive determines choice, and that choice is always according to the strongest motive. To state the theory more in detail, it assumes that we do something because we will to do it, but that we can will it only in harmony with our strongest motive, a motive determined by character and external influences, and that all of these are ultimately determined by God so that all events will happen as he has predestined. Supporters of this theory explain that it is compatible with real human freedom because accoring to it man chooses freely. But what is the nature of such freedom? It is freedom only in one direction. It is freedom to act, but not freedom to refrain from so acting or to do something else. It is the freedom water has

to flow in one direction between the banks of a river, or the hands of the clock to move round the dial when unobstructed, which amounts to nothing more than mechanical freedom as far as objective results are concerned. It admits of no power of choice between aternatives. It holds that only one course is possible and that the will is so determined it must choose that course.

It is a false assumption to suggest that motive, or inducement, is absolutely determinative of choice, and that choice is always according to the strongest motive. Motive may furnish a ground for or influence a choice, but there is no proof that it determines choice. If it could be shown that motive does absolutely determine one's course, then choice would lack its character of freedom, and thus necessitarianism would certainly follow. As to the second assumption, how shall we know what is one's strongest motive? If it be answered, the motive that accords with the choice, then the theory is supported only by reasoning in a circle. Such argument proves nothing.

The third theory of the will, alternativity, states what we believe describes true freedom. The generic idea of freedom is freedom from restraint. This theory holds not only that man is unrestrained to plan in one direction, but that his will is without restraint in every direction. It defines will as the power to choose between alternatives. It really *chooses* one of several possible courses. It is a power either to act or not to act.

3. **Proofs of Free Will**—The first reason for believing man has power of alternative choice is the fact that it is a spontaneous impression of all men. They know it intuitively, and this intuition will naturally be accepted unless the mind is constrained to believe its opposite by a false philosophy. This conviction is so deep-seated that men of every degree of intelligence know they are free.

A second proof of freedom is the facts of conscience. The consciousness of moral obligation implies freedom. One must have power to do or not to do an act if he is responsible for it. If he has power to do a deed of evil, but no power to refrain, he does not deserve penalty for doing it; or if he lacks power to refrain from a good deed, but has power only to do it, he deserves no reward for it. Such necessitated acts have no moral quality. But man has a settled conviction that he "ought" and "ought not" because he is free to choose. To say that a person should be punished for doing what he has no power to refrain from doing is contrary to the

highest concept of justice, and he instinctively feels that any ruler who so deals with his subjects is a cruel tyrant. Freedom is a necessary condition of moral agency.

If human actions are determined, man is not an agent, but only an instrument. But it is constantly assumed that one is a free agent. If one commits a murder one is punished. But if one's will is determined it is both unreasonable to be sentenced to suffer death or given a long term of imprisonment. The common sense of mankind would unite in regarding such procedure as unjust, and it would be as stedfastly unjust to attribute to men freedom and personal responsibility for their acts.

A third argument in support of a real freedom of the will is the ability to deliberate. Very often when one is confronted with the necessity to choose a course of action, a positive decision is intentionally postponed for more mature consideration of the matter before the final choice is made. If the will has no power of alternative choice, if the event has been fixed by an efficient eternal decree of God and the will of man so determined that the choice will be according to that decree, then personal deliberation is a waste of time, man's deep-seated disposition to think before he acts is a lie stamped on his nature, and it is a mark of wisdom to decide every question and act at once without useless deliberation. But we know such is not the case, and all unite in respecting those who sufficiently deliberate in their decisions to choose wisely.

4. **Objections to Free Will Answered**—The principle of causality is often cited by necessitarians in objecting to free will as we have defined it. They sometimes state their argument as follows: Every event must have a cause. Volition is an event. Therefore, it has a cause. But when it is assumed that this cause is of such a nature that it may not have been also the cause of another event we disagree. In this the objector begs the question. The cause of the event of volition is free will, which may have put forth a different volition than it did. It is not such a cause as is the knife in the hand of a murderer, but is rather like the power of choice to commit the crime. The objector fails to distinguish between an agent and an intermediate or instrumental cause. If on this principle causality every volition must have a cause, and, as the necessitarian contends, that cause can be the cause of only one event, then freedom in God when he created the universe is excluded. If his volition to create had a cause that could act only

in the one direction, then there is no freedom and all things are the result of necessitated evolution. We affirm that will has the power of alternativity which man shares with God, a power to create out of nothing as far as subjective determinations are concerned. The will is first cause and needs no determining, but is itself the determiner.

The will does not determine *itself,* but is the determiner. An example may make this more easily understood. A man chooses to ask God for salvation. The objector against free will says his will is so determined that he chooses, and that if not determined then it must determine itself, but this is an act and is therefore the result of a preceding volition to determine itself and the process must be repeated indefinitely. But the objector errs in assuming that if the will is not determined it must determine itself. The human will neither determines itself nor is it determined, but is itself the *determiner.*

A third objection to free will, as we have defined it, is an argument from divine prescience. It is reasoned that if God foreknows all human volitions, then those volitions are certain, and it is assumed that if certain they must be necessary. We affirm that God does foreknow all volitions and that they are certain. None can dispute this. All future events will be in one way and not in two. At one time all events that have since taken place in the universe or that will take place were future and certain. If their certainty implies their necessity, as the determinist holds, then not only the volitions of men, but also those of God, were determined, because his future volitions were as certain as were ours. But one should not identify certainty with necessity because this view leads inevitably to universal fatalism. This, like other arguments for determinism, leads to complete necessitarianism and proves that the one is practically identical with the other.

It is unsound to object against free will from foreknowledge. The error is not in affirming that God foreknows, but in assuming that certainty is the same as necessity. To say an event that *will be* is not to say it *must be.* An event is necessary only when no power to the contrary exists. A contrary power may exist, yet it may be certain that an event will be even though it may not or need not be. The power to do the contrary, or to choose freely excludes necessity, but not certainty. Neither does the foreknowledge of an event cause it to be. The knowledge is according to the event, not

the event determined by the knowledge. Knowledge is not a power of causation; therefore foreknowledge does not make events happen.

Another objection determinists boldly make is that the divine government over the world is according to a predetermined plan, that it is derogatory to God to suppose he governs the world without a plan, and that he could not govern according to a plan unless he has absolute control over all wills by determining how they will be exercised. We also believe God had a purpose in creating the world and that he governs it in accordance with a plan that will accomplish that purpose. The point at which we take issue with the necessitarian is in the assumption that freedom of the subjects in God's government is incompatible with his governing according to a plan. It is wrong to assume that God does not govern unless he controls all wills. We distinguish between the rule over things and the government of free beings. An efficient ruler in a civil government does not determine the wills of his subjects. Yet he may have a definite purpose and plan in his governing. He rules in the sense that he has power to hold his subjects accountable to his laws, and is sovereign as long as he is able thus to enforce obedience to his requirements. We deny that determination of men's wills is more honoring to God than is his government of free beings as we have described. He who is able to establish and maintain a government over men with free wills is surely accounted greater than one who merely operates a machine. And the determinist's theory amounts to reducing the subjects of God's government to the condition of machinery. To think of God as being able to work out his plan by the government of free moral beings is to honor him immeasurably more than do those who deny him such power in support of what they are pleased to call divine sovereignty.

5. **Real Freedom**—The freedom thus far described is sometimes called formal freedom, to distinguish it from real freedom. Formal freedom is concerned with the nature of the will and its freedom. Man has a faculty to choose between alternatives, a power to do the contrary. His will is not determined to follow one course, but it may choose any of several possible courses. A sense of freedom is the spontaneous impression of men, the testimony of conscience and a common possession of mankind.

But this formal freedom is not identical with the real or perfect

freedom Adam had. That complete freedom is only possible through God's grace. In describing real freedom we must anticipate the fact of depravity and restoration through Christ, which are yet to be considered. There is a sense in which men are not naturally free. When Jesus spoke of freedom through the truth the opposing Jews objected that they were Abraham's seed and therefore were never in bondage. But Jesus insisted that there was a freedom through the Son which was freedom "indeed" (John 8:32-36), real freedom. There is a bondage of the soul because of a depravity of nature through sin. This results in an inclination (not a determination) to evil. But through grace this bondage is broken so that the heart is no longer enslaved by sin. Persons so changed are free indeed.

IV. Original Righteousness

1. **Nature of Original Righteousness**—The question of original righteousness, or primitive holiness, as it is sometimes called, is best understood in the light of its history. Four leading views of it have been held. One's view of original righteousness is determined by one's theory of depravity, and this must in turn determine one's teaching about the nature of salvation. Because of this the subject of original righteousness is not one of mere speculative interest, but has a vital bearing on the great subject of man's salvation.

In the Roman Catholic view original righteousness consisted not in a quality of Adam's essential nature, but in a supernatural endowment *added* after he was created, which was intended to enable him to overcome temptations resulting from certain imperfections in his nature as originally constituted. But there is no proof that man originally possessed such imperfections in his nature. By this view the fall is regarded as only a loss of that added quality and his essential nature was unchanged. This theory supposes man's nature was neither holy before the fall nor depraved after the fall. Their idea of salvation is in harmony with this idea about what man was both before and after the fall. Such a superadded quality cannot properly be called holiness. Pelagius, in his debate with Augustine, unfortunately went to the extreme of denying, not only Augustine's view of native depravity, but depravity of the nature in any sense; he also denied original righteousness in Adam. The Augustinian anthropology holds, not only that human nature is depraved, but that depravity includes demerit and is punishable. Augustine also assumed this original holiness in

Adam had ethical value—that it was deserving of reward. He regarded depravity as absolute determination to evil and original holiness to have been a similar determination of Adam to righteousness. On this basis rests his doctrine of imputation and that salvation is through divine election alone. In objection to this theory we affirm that as one cannot be justly punished or have demerit because of that for which he is not responsible, so Adam could not have deserved reward for a nature which was his by divine creation.

Whatever the nature of primitive holiness in Adam it could not have merited him a reward. Reward can exist only as the result of free choice of that which is right. In the nature of the case, at the moment of creation Adam possessed no ethical quality of holiness. But this does not mean he was characterless, as the Pelagians affirmed. Holiness may exist in various aspects. In a godly life such as that of the patriarch Joseph, or of Paul, there is a quality of holiness exhibited in righteous actions, actions resulting from an inner life of high motives and aspirations. These inner activities are a second aspect of holiness, and because they are the outgrowth of choice they have true ethical value. But beyond this inner life lies a third form of holiness—the nature with its spontaneous tendencies.

Since ethical quality is excluded as being the nature of primitive holiness in Adam it must have consisted in a tendency of his nature to that which is good. This tendency to righteousness is to be clearly distinguished from a determination of his will to righteousness, which has been erroneously held by Calvinists. The reality of the distinction in moral tendencies of the natures of men is as certain as is the difference between the tendencies of the lion and the lamb. Evidently a moral quality or tendency in the nature is possible. If an existing tendency to evil can be displaced by a bent to righteousness through the operation of divine grace, certainly in man's original creation God was able to implant in his nature a tendency to righteousness. If such tendencies may exist as a result of moral conduct, there is no reason why they may not have existed as a result of creation.

But if no such tendencies really exist, then holiness involves only the quality of acts and not the character, and we must believe that there is no difference between the most devout saint and the most abandoned villain except in their deeds. But Jesus taught that the

fruit is according to the tree. "The tree is known by his fruit." The reason for the quality of the fruit is the nature of the tree, a quality which it has in itself even if it bore no fruit. Man's deeds are according to his nature. This leaves no room for the denial of original moral character as is affirmed by Pelagianism, but neither does it favor Augustinianism if it is regarded as a tendency and not a determination of the nature to righteousness. If no moral character is possible, there can be no regeneration of the inner life. Original righteousness must have consisted in a tendency of Adam's nature to holiness.

2. **Proofs of Original Righteousness**—The Scriptures teach that as good fruit is the product only of a good tree, so men's good deeds are the result of a right character (Luke 6:43-45). Man is said to have been originally created in God's image, and this has already been shown to include moral likeness to God. Therefore man was made originally with a moral nature like God's holy nature, which suggests an original holiness in him. Again it is said that when man was created he, together with other things, was "very good" (Gen. 1:31). We have before shown that this statement included man's moral nature. This statement implies that man had an original righteousness in the sense of a disposition to do good. Still another insight is found in the statement that "God hath made man upright" (Eccles. 7:29). In what sense was man *made* upright? Uprightness can be affirmed of man only in one of three senses—in physical posture, in uprightness of conduct, or in uprightness of moral character. The context refers not to man's physical structure, but to his character. That it does not refer to his conduct is certain because the uprightness implied is one in which "God hath made man," which was before man had performed either good or evil. The only sense left in which man could be properly said to have been created upright is in moral nature. To be upright in original moral nature is to be righteous in moral nature. This was the original righteousness.

Chapter III

FALL AND DEPRAVITY OF THE RACE

As a product of divine creation, man was constituted in God's image a moral being with conscience, freedom, and a natural bent to righteousness. The next question that confronts theology for explication is, What is man's natural moral condition at present and what circumstances and events have brought him into that condition? The two phases of the question are best considered in reverse order.

I. Original Probation

Probation for a moral being is a period of testing as to the performance of duty. It involves obligation to what is expected with a promise of reward for obedience or a penalty for disobedience. By original probation is meant the state of trial under which our first parents were placed when created.

1. **Probation Requisite for Moral Excellence**—In light of the consequences of that original probation the question may be asked, Why did God place Adam under probation? God was able to confer happiness on his creatures without any probation whatever having been endured, but it is equally certain that the highest happiness comes only to free beings and it results from the right use of their freedom. This happiness has implicit in it the nature of a possible reward. But reward implies deserts, which rests upon choice, and choice rests upon the possibility of an alternative. Together these constitute probation. An important element of reward is the consciousness of the recipient that he merits it. Likewise the sting of a penalty is largely in the guilt that accompanies it. But one may feel this only by having first endured trial. Therefore "blessed is the man that endureth temptation." The general laws of life are such that blessedness is consequent on the endurance of trial.

Probation is also necessary for the development of moral character. God might have created beings with a different constitution or with such strength of moral character that they would never be conscious of temptation, but to the extent that the capacity to be tested is eliminated, to that extent man's responsibility and moral reward are taken away. As God has created man his character can become confirmed in holiness by a process of testing. Just as the

physical and intellectual powers may be strengthened by stress and exercise, so also the powers of the moral nature become strong by exercise in choosing the right and rejecting the wrong while under temptation. It is reasonable to assume that God intended Adam and Eve to arrive at a state of moral excellence. The Bible intimates that angels were at one time on probation, that some fell, but that those who passed the test consequently became so confirmed in moral character that they are referred to as his "holy angels."

2. **Positive Probationary Law Given**—The feeling of ought belonged to man's original nature. He was under moral law. He owed obedience to the Creator, to whom all were indebted for every benefit. But in addition to this, God gave laws for the purpose of man's guidance and choices. The sacred record gives the wording of one of those laws. "Of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, thou shalt not eat of it: for in the day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die" (Gen. 2:17). Whether other commands were given in the first test, we are not told. This command may have been recorded because it was the occasion for the fall. The commandment was a positive law and to violate it was sin because God had enjoined it.

God had a right as sovereign ruler to enjoin such a law. The devout person will believe that a good and wise Creator certainly had a good reason for giving laws.

3. **No Injustice in Adam's Probation**—No objection can be urged against God's requirements on the ground that it was impossible for primitive man to comply with them. As a free agent man was free to obey the testing law. Besides, he was so constituted that he could obey. The requirement was clear, so it was possible to comprehend it. It was not a command to do something, but to refrain from doing what he had no need to do. God desired and urged obedience. There was no necessity for disobedience. The fruit of all the other trees of the garden was provided for food. These are described as "pleasant to the eyes and good for food." Full satisfaction was possible to primitive man without violating God's injunction not to eat of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil. The probation of our first parents was neither unreasonable, unnecessary, nor unjust.

II. Origin and Nature of Sin

1. **Nature of the First Temptation**—The Genesis account of

man's temptation and fall tells us briefly that the newly created man and woman were placed in a beautiful garden where there were many trees. Among them were the tree of life and the tree of the knowledge of good and evil. Of the fruit of the latter tree they were expressly told not to eat, lest they die. Through the suggestion of the serpent the woman ate of this tree and gave its fruit to her husband, who ate also; as a consequence they both displeased God and he expelled them from Eden. They also became subject to death.

Three main clases may be distinguished among interpreters of the biblical account of the fall: those who regard it as history, those who view it as allegory, and those who explain it as myth. That it is neither a myth nor allegory, but history, is evident for various reasons.

It is an integral part of a continuous history. The Book of Genesis professes to be history. If Adam is a symbolic man why should not Abraham and other patriarchs be so regarded? But that Abraham is a historical character is evident, and it is reasonable to regard Adam as also historical since he is described at the beginning of the same continuous narrative. Also the account of the fall is an essential part of Bible history as a whole. As the foundation and starting-point of all the history recorded in the Scriptures, it is referred to, not only in the Old, but also in the New Testament (Rom. 5:12-19, 1 Tim. 2:13, 14). The Apostle Paul described the fall in Genesis as the ground for man's sinfulness and the universal need of salvation through Christ.

We may reasonably regard Eden as a literal garden just as Canaan, mentioned in the same book, is a literal land. In the midst of the garden grew two trees, the tree of life and the tree of the knowledge of good and evil. The fruit of the one must have had some inherent virtue or sacramental character conferred upon it, in order to keep man's body preserved in life and strength indefinitely. It is not unreasonable to suppose that God created this fruit with intrinsic qualities to rejuvenate man's physical body. With evidence that the garden was literal, this fruit must be regarded as literal because Adam and Eve were expelled from Eden after they sinned lest they should eat of it and live forever.

For similar reasons the tree of the knowledge of good and evil should be understood as a literal tree. We cannot be certain, however, that knowledge of good and evil consequent upon eating

it was fully due to the nature of the fruit. It seems more probable that the restriction concerning its fruit was arbitrarily made by God for man's testing. The woman saw that the tree was "good for food and pleasant to the eyes." In this view the eating of its fruit imparted the knowledge of good and evil in that by disobeying God our foreparents came to an experimental knowledge of moral failure: they experienced the difference between good and evil.

In harmony with this we should understand the statement that a serpent spoke to Eve as referring to a literal serpent. The question as to what kind of animal is referred to or what was its original form is not pertinent to our purpose. But while this serpent was an *instrument* in the temptation, Satan himself was evidently the *agent* of it. Not only is the serpent without the power of speech, as is often objected, but the intelligence displayed by the tempter in connection with God's injunction far exceeded what is known about any irrational animal. The Bible nowhere directly states that the serpent was an instrument of Satan, but this is often assumed in the New Testament (Rev. 12:9; 20:2; Rom. 16:20, John 8:44).

The first stage of the temptation was to persuade Eve to doubt God's goodness, the second was to influence her not to believe the truthfulness of God's warning of death for eating, the third was to awaken in her an ambition to be like God, which was prompted by sinful pride. In spite of alleged difficulties in the narrative about that primitive temptation, it is not unreasonable to understand it in light of the foregoing argument.

2. **Man's Fall and Its Effects**—The fact of man's fall is clearly revealed in the Bible, and the consequences of it are evident in human nature. The fall was by a deliberate, intentional violation of the divine commandment. Though the act of eating the forbidden fruit may have been insignificant in itself, yet its consequences were of universal importance.

The penalty threatened for violating the probationary injunction was death. That death doubtless included much more than something physical. The penalty for that transgression was severe, because of the enormity of the crime. Adam and Eve questioned God's goodness in withholding from them certain powers, though he had given them every good they possessed. They were guilty of believing Satan rather than God. They proudly sought to steal what God had reserved to himself as sovereign. The death that was visited upon man was threefold: physical death entered into the world by his exclusion from the tree of life. There was spiritual

death, a separation from God, and that life in which his spirit rules. Physical death did not appear at once, spiritual death at once became actual, although it did not become an irrecoverable state. The third sense of death is eternal separation from God, which becomes actual only if God's offered grace is finally rejected.

Not only did man become subject to physical death, but his body became subject to disease and pain, and his physical powers became weakened, leaving him scarcely able sometimes to perform essential duties of life. The mind has also been affected adversely by the fall: dullness of the perceptive faculty, a lack of balance in judgment, incapacity to remember facts of practical importance which should be remembered, or enfeebled powers of reasoning. Surely such weakness did not characterize primitive man when God pronounced him very good. The curse upon man after his fall also included certain changes in external nature such as the thorns and thistles the ground brought forth, but to what extent the animal and vegetable orders and inorganic nature were changed is not revealed. Evidently such knowledge is not necessary to our salvation.

3. **Nature of Sin**—Any valid system of theology must deal with the question, What is sin? The present consideration of sin is from the Biblical viewpoint. Sin in its primary sense is a lack of conformity to law. It is the opposite of holiness, which we discussed as a divine attribute, as being conformity to law. The term "sin" is used in two senses: of conduct, and (2) of character. In relation to conduct, sin is sometimes expressed in the New Testament by the Greek term ἀνομια (*anomia*) which means contrary to law or without law. Sin in this sense has to do with thoughts, motives and choices. In this sense it is often called actual transgression to distinguish it from sinfulness of character, which has to do with what one is rather than with what one *does*. Another Greek term ἁμαρτία (*hamartia*) is ordinarily used in the New Testament to describe this unholiness of character. Examples of the use of this Greek word are as follows: "When the commandment came, sin revived, and I died" (Rom. 7:9). "Now then it is no more I that do it, but sin that dwelleth in me" (v. 17). Here sin, ἁμαρτία (*hamartia*) is evidently used to designate a depravity of the self. In one place, 1 John 3:4, ἁμαρτία (*hamartia,* sin) is used as a synonym of (*anomia*), a transgression of the law.

Sin in conduct may be by commission (doing what should not be done) or by omission (failing to do what should be done). Two

standards may be distinguished for judging what is sinful: (1) sin in the abstract or absolute sense, and (2) sin in the concrete or imputed sense. In the first, acts are judged in relation to principles of right quite apart from the actor's knowledge or motives in performing them. For example, according to this view, to speak falsely is regarded as sin even though the speaker is ignorant of the fact that he speaks falsely and intends to speak only the truth.

According to the second view, commonly used in the New Testament to describe wrong conduct, only those acts are sinful which are prompted by wrong motives. In this view sin is imputed as guilt to one only in connection with one's knowledge or intentions. If for lack of knowledge one does with a good motive that which is in itself a violation of principles of right, it is not imputed to him as sin, because of his good motive in doing it. Actual sin is a violation of a known obligation to God.

Sin is imputed to its perpetrator only when he resists a known moral obligation, and voluntarily chooses that which he knows to be wrong. One may sin in thought. "Whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her hath committed adultery with her already in his heart" (Matt. 5:28). Sin is in the will to do what is understood as wrong. Temptation is not sin. When Eve considered the words of the serpent she incurred no guilt until of her own free will she decided to do what God had forbidden. God was responsible for the primitive probation. Satan tempted Eve. But neither the fact of probation nor the temptation determined the woman's conduct. She determined that herself, and was wholly responsible for her sin.

4. **Sin not a Divine Method**—Among the many attempts to explain the divine permission for the origin of moral evil, one of the most common is the theory that God permitted sin as a part of his plan that he might in turn provide redemption and by such a manifestation of divine goodness, love, and holiness bring blessings to mankind they could not otherwise enjoy. Such a divine ordering of sin is supposed to be productive of faith and love in men not otherwise attainable, by making known the perfect goodness and holiness of God. Some also assume that by the experience of sin men are enabled to develop a degree of gentleness, meekness, longsuffering, and patience that could be possessed in no other way. This theory is open to serious objections.

First, it represents the Bible denunciations against sin as being

deceitful. It represents God as hypocritical, as being on both sides of an ethical question at the same time. It makes him to decree that a man commit sin and then forbid that he do it under threat of endless punishment. The theory holds that sin was necessary so that God's justice and love might be exhibited in dealing with sinners in opposite ways. Yet it fails to show either God's love or justice but instead exhibits only an arbitrary divine will. To say that God ordained sin that good might result is equal to saying he caused it. But if God is the cause of sin he cannot be regarded as holy. Any theory which results in a denial of God's holiness must be rejected as unbiblical. It is unreasonable to say that sin is necessary in order to show what is good. If it be true that God must choose sin to accomplish good he is limited in his methods and cannot be regarded as absolute. To assert that God ordains evil that good may result is contradictory both to the Bible and man's highest moral sense.

Concerning the theory that an experience in sin is necessary for man's moral training, one can believe that since sin exists God can make it to contribute to the ethical training of those who will to serve him, but this is not the same as saying that sin is necessary to such training. If experience in sin is essential to the development of high moral character, how shall we account for the perfect character of Christ? It is not experience in sin, but the ceaseless struggle against temptation that develops moral character. Opportunity for resisting temptation was furnished by God by placing man on probation.

The scriptural view, and one which harmonizes with the ethical sense of mankind, is that God is absolutely opposed to sin, and all his relations to it are only by way of prevention, remedy, or punishment. God created man a moral being with full freedom to choose the right and to abstain from the wrong; God gave him a clean start but placed him under a probationary law by which he was tested. God was not responsible for man's sin, but only for making sin possible as a necessary consequence of man's capacities as a moral being. God permitted sin in this sense, but man was entirely free in his failure and wholly responsible for it.

III. Nature of Original Sin

1. **Sense of the Term**—Among the terms used to designate the effects upon human nature from the sin of our first parents are: original sin, Adamic sin, native depravity, inherited, inbred, or

indwelling sin, the carnal nature, and the flesh. Though these terms have all been used in religious and doctrinal statements, they are not all synonymous. Original, Adamic, inherited, inbred, or indwelling sin include whatever effects, or evil tendency are conceived as relating to one from birth. Native depravity also expresses this. The carnal or fleshly nature is usually understood in a figurative sense as the physical base by which sin operated in man.

Original sin has been used the most to represent natural sinfulness. Its use in this way may be traced back to Tertullian (c. 160/70-c. 215/20). Augustine later gave this description special prominence, and those who hold the Augustinian anthropology have used it to mean not only moral depravity but also the ill effects of the depravity which resulted from Adam's first sin. In our present use of the term we exclude the idea of Adam's guilt and make it apply only to native depravity. What then is the nature of original sin as used in this sense?

2. **A Derangement of the Moral Nature**—Depravity is real but the nature of it is not easily grasped by thought. The reality of depravity is known by its actions and effects although its exact nature is seldom accurately and fully defined.

Depravity cannot properly be thought of as a physical entity. It is rather a state or condition of the moral nature. It is a derangement of the moral nature. This derangement affected those three faculties which constitute man a moral being—the conscience, the affections, and the will.

(1) *The conscience is seared.* Depravity does not consist of a loss of the moral faculty of conscience. But although depraved humans are clearly conscious of the voice of conscience, it is also a fact of human experience that in most people conscience does not function effectually. It is evidently in a weakened state. In some persons it is much less efficient than in others. Some who make no profession of Christianity, and who recognize depravity in themselves in other respects, have a very tender conscience that keeps them from doing many sins that others freely indulge in without compunction. Other persons have so often disregarded conscience that it is seared. Some persons commit the most atrocious crimes apparently without any feeling of remorse. This variability of the efficiency of conscience is partly acquired, but the lack of efficient functioning of conscience in any degree is an element in a real depravity of the self.

In all of its functions—discrimination, impulsiveness, and retribution—conscience is spiritually deficient. It can weakly discriminate between the right and the wrong, and principally because there has been some weakening of the sense of right.

(2) *The affections are perverted.* The most noticeable and most definite manifestation of depravity is in the affections to which the Scriptures refer as a sinful heart. "The heart is deceitful above all things and desperately wicked." Man was made to love God, but he bestows that love on the creature instead, and especially on *himself.* Depravity causes one to love himself *more than* his neighbor, rather than *as* his neighbor. Surely this inordinate selfishness did not characterize man in the time of his original holiness, but must be referred to present depravity.

As a result of this element of selfishness, many human emotions which are right in themselves are so misdirected that they give occasion to be pleasing to their fellow men, which is evidently desirable and good. But inordinate self-love will cause one to desire to be not only pleasing to others, but more pleasing to them than to God. Then too, there is a natural pride or self-respect, that is legitimate, but when it is based upon selfishness it is sinful. Another example is the disposition to acquire things, which through selfishness degenerates into a desire to acquire things for their own sake and becomes covetousness.

The emotion of anger is right and desirable when it is a feeling of indignation resulting from a sense of outraged justice. This sense of justice is an essential of human nature and is necessary to any moral being. When gross injustice is done against either oneself or another, the feelings of disapproval should result. This result is good and necessary to personal goodness, but when the spirit of vindictiveness results and stirs one to seek for revenge it is not possible one will love others as he loves himself.

(3) *The will is enslaved.* A third aspect of human depravity is the enslavement of the will. This does not mean that the human power of choice has been lost through sin or that the will ceases to have alternatives. Some theologians locate depravity exclusively in the will while others deny a depraved condition of the will. The former regard the will as inclined to evil. But all impulse and inclination are in the sensibilities. The will has been affected by depravity only mediately through the sensibilities. It is because the sensuous nature is depraved that the will fails to function as it should in moral volitions.

3. **A Loss of the Holy Spirit**—Depravity is not a subtraction from any natural power of man's nature. The intellectual, emotional, and volitional faculties remain as they were constitutionally created. Logic requires that depravity be defined in relation to the nature of original holiness. Original righteousness was described, not only as a natural tendency to righteousness, but also as including the presence and power of the Holy Spirit. Depravity then is not only a natural tendency to sin, but also a deprivation of the power and communion of the Spirit of God. Because of this loss of the Holy Spirit through the fall, depravity has been described as "depravation through deprivation." Still another aspect of the nature of depravity is found in the fact that just as man was originally under the influence of the Holy Spirit, so now the spirit of Satan is furnished an opportunity to influence him. Unregenerate man is, in a measure, under the control of the devil.

4. **A Bent to Sin a Result of Depravity**—Because of this depravity, the loss of the presence of God, and the persistent influence of the Evil One, man has a tendency to commit sin.

IV. Extent of Native Depravity

1. **The Question of Total Depravity**—This question has been the center of much theological controversy in the past. Because of this controversy and the varying senses in which total depravity has been affirmed by some, the term itself has come to be ambiguous. In respect to the effects of sin upon the moral nature, described, depravity *is not* total. The moral nature is weakened but it is not entirely destroyed. Conscience is weakened, but it still performs its functions in a measure. The affections are alienated from God and centered upon self, yet unregenerate men are not wholly selfish. The will is enslaved, but it is not altogether powerless in making moral choices. Even though unregenerate man is depraved by being deprived of the divine Spirit, yet he is not wholly deprived of divine influences, because the Spirit imparts truth and convicts him of sin and of his need of God.

Total depravity is usually taught to mean that man is altogether powerless to choose the right, that man is totally unable to choose to serve God and therefore that obtaining salvation is wholly dependent upon the choice and will of God. We reject this view as being contradictory to the common teaching of the Scriptures that salvation is offered to whosoever will accept it, and that therefore men have power to accept or reject it. This is in agreement with

the idea of free will as we have discussed it. Yet it is true that men can come to Christ for salvation only as drawn by the Father. As God draws men to Christ they must accept if they are to be saved. In the sense that men can choose salvation only by the help of God, they might be said to be limited or restricted. But if by total depravity is meant that man lacks the power of alternative choice, then we deny that man is totally depraved.

Unregenerate men may also be described as totally depraved in the sense that they do not have power to refrain from all sinning. This truth is set forth with vividness and force in the seventh chapter of Romans. As a result of misdirected affections and the consequent dominance of the lower nature, the unassisted will cannot effectually resist evil. A person can only will to let God save him, but he cannot save himself. No process of culture or of growth into regeneration is possible. The words of Jesus are true concerning all men, "Ye must be born again."

2. **Degrees of Depravity**—Two aspects of depravity may be distinguished—inherited and acquired. All men are depraved in some degree from birth. But this natural depravity may be increased in degree indefinitely by indulgence in sin. This is evident both from the nature of depravity and also from observation and experience. Therefore degrees may be distinguished, not only in acquired depravity, but also in inherited disarray of the moral faculties.

V. Proofs of Native Depravity

The reality of human depravity is so evident that citation of proofs is almost superfluous. The sinfulness of human nature has been distinctly recognized by mankind generally. Its reality is evident, not only from the Bible, but also from the facts of life and experience. From all sources the proofs are very many.

1. **Expressly Taught in the Bible**—In both the Old and New Testaments direct Scripture proofs of depravity are found. Not merely the conduct of men, but also their hearts are described as evil. "The heart is deceitful above all things, and desperately wicked: who can know it?" (Jer. 17:9). "The heart of the sons of men is fully set in them to do evil" (Eccles. 8:11). "Every imagination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually" (Gen. 6:5). "The imagination of man's heart is evil from his youth" (Gen. 8:21). Here man's heart, or affections, which gives motive for action, is represented as being sinful. These affirmations of sinful-

ness in the hearts of men cannot be reasonably understood of a depravity acquired by individual conduct because the general sinfulness of heart described here is explained as native to them.

A very direct affirmation of native depravity is given by David in his penitential psalm. "Behold, I was shapen in iniquity; and in sin did my mother conceive me" (Ps. 51:5). In the verses preceding and following this statement David in deepest contrition acknowledges the vileness of his sins and implores pardon. He then goes a step further and describes himself as having been sinful in his very nature from his earliest existence. Again the Psalmist says, "The wicked are estranged from the womb: they go astray as soon as they be born, speaking lies" (Ps. 58:3). Evidently no actual sin can be committed by people as soon as they are born but only after they come to the stage of moral understanding. This estrangement from the womb, then, can refer only to a native tendency to evil. This interpretation is surely the most logical one, because no other is consistent with all the facts in the case.

Referring once to their faulty human conduct, Paul told the Christians at Ephesus that once they were by nature the children of wrath, even as others" (Eph. 2:3). "By nature" means by birth. When Paul said of himself and Peter that they were "Jews by nature" (Gal. 2:15) he meant they were Jews by birth, not by proselytism. So the Ephesian saints were by birth the children of wrath, or sinful by nature, depraved from birth. The same truth is set forth in Romans 7:9: "I was alive without the law once: but when the commandment came, sin revived, and I died." The only time Paul was without the law was during infancy before he understood its commandments. But when he came to know the commandments as God's law to him, he at once sinned and suffered sin's consequences, spiritual death. But when the commandment came, "sin revived," which implies that sin was in him. Indwelling sin is best explained as native depravity.

2. **Clearly Implied in the Scriptures**—Depravity is more frequently assumed, implied, and referred to incidentally than it is directly affirmed. Jesus clearly recognized the reality of human depravity when he said, "Out of the heart of men proceed evil thoughts, adulteries, fornications, murders, thefts, covetousness, wickedness, deceit, lasciviousness, an evil eye, blasphemy, pride, foolishness: all these things come from within, and defile the man" (Mark 7:21-23). If man were naturally innocent, then these evil

things must originate from *without,* but Jesus said they come from *within.* Similarly Jesus taught that a man, like a tree, is known by his fruits. "A good tree bringeth not forth corrupt fruit; neither doth a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit. For every tree is known by his own fruit. For of thorns men do not gather figs, nor of a bramble bush gather they grapes. A good man out of the good treasure of his heart bringeth forth that which is good; and an evil man out of the evil treasure of his heart bringeth forth that which is evil: for of the abundance of the heart his mouth speaketh" (Luke 6:43-45).

As evil fruit is the result of an evil tree, so sin is a result of sinfulness in one's nature.

In conformity with the foregoing are all those texts of the New Testament which state that all men are sinners. "We have before proved both Jews and Gentiles, that they are all under sin; as it is written, There is none righteous, no, not one" (Rom. 3:9, 10). "For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God" (Rom. 3:23). His reasoning is not that individuals may not be saved from sinning, but that all are naturally sinful and need the delivering grace of God. This same truth of universal human sinfulness is found in other places in the Scriptures (Job 14:4; 15:15. 1 John 1:7, 9).

3. *Ground for the Need of Regeneration*—No innate righteousness is possible to men on their own. This is a truth declared again and again by the apostle in the epistles to the Romans and Galatians and elsewhere. "By the deeds of the law there shall no flesh be justified in his sight" (Rom 3:20). "A man is not justified by the works of the law" (Gal. 2:16). "For if there had been a law given which could have given life, verily righteousness should have been by the law" (Gal. 3:21). The reason the law could not give life was because righteousness by the law was not possible. The seventh chapter of Romans describes the experience of the unregenerate person who endeavors to find justification by self effort. But in his failure he exclaims, "The good that I would I do not: but the evil which I would not, that I do" (v. 19). The cause of his failure is described in the next verse as being "sin that dwelleth in me." The remedy for it is found in Christ, as set forth in Rom. 8:2. "The law of the spirit of life in Christ Jesus hath made me free from the law of sin and death."

"Except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of

god" (John 3:3). This new birth or regeneration is elsewhere called receiving a new heart, or becoming a new creature. This is a divine work in one's inner nature; it affects his character, and this is clearly distinguished from pardon of committed sins, which has to do with effecting right relations with God. But why must one be born again? Evidently because one's sinful nature needs to be renovated by the power of a new birth. The fact of depravity is fundamental to Christian doctrine. If there were no depravity there would be no need for regeneration. Every text which teaches the new birth also implies the truth of native depravity.

4. *Universality of Sinning*—Though native depravity is clearly set forth in the Bible, the reality of it is certain independently of revelation. Human experience testifies to universal sinning. From the time wicked Cain slew his brother until present history there has been one long record of crime: cruelty, oppression, bloodshed, war, hatred, licentiousness, deceit, falsehood, and covetousness.

The fact of universal sinning is best explained as the result of universal sinfulness. The tree is like its fruits. An evil bent of the nature is the only adequate reason for the prevalence of sin. And though the constant effort of parents and educators is to train to virtue and away from vice, yet their efforts are often comparatively fruitless. And if sinning is to be referred to imitation, education, and example, how did sin begin to be more prevalent than virtue?

5. *Sinning in Spite of Restraints*—A very strong tendency to commit sin is manifested in the way humans sin constantly against so many restraints. God has threatened and frequently inflicted terrible punishment for sin. His laws are all directed against sin to cause men to refrain from it. The preaching of the gospel is calculated to check it. The goodness of God should persuade men to virtue. Conscience thunders against sin, yet men continue to sin. They sin in spite of the enactment of civil laws against those sins they commit. Men's own interests, self-respect, the good-will of friends, reputation, and the observed evil effects of sin on health, wealth, character, and domestic happiness are all restraints to sinning. Yet men sin. The only adequate explanation of a practice so unreasonable is that it is the nature of men to sin.

6. *A Natural Tendency to Sin*—Observation shows that from earliest childhood a disposition to commit sin exists. Even infants display selfishness, hatred, deceit, falsehood, pride, envy, resentment, and cruelty. Moral training seeks to curb these tendencies,

but in spite of all that parents and teachers do, attempts at reformation are attended with great difficulty and meager fruits. Later, good resolutions are made and broken. The only reasonable explanation of these facts is that men are naturally disposed to evil.

Men are conscious of a tendency to sin. Some are disposed to one sin, some to another, but all recognize in a measure a tendency to commit sin and to forget God. They know, not only that they *do* wrong, but that they *are* wrong. Revelation, experience and consciousness all unite in testifying to a native disarray in man's moral nature.

CHAPTER IV

MODE OF TRANSMISSION OF ORIGINAL SIN

The Scriptures teach that the depravity and sinfulness of the human race is a consequence of the first sin of Adam. Christians generally have united in holding this view. But what is that relation to Adam which has resulted in entailing these awful consequences upon his descendants? What is the philosophy of the transmission of depravity from Adam to the race? Various theories of the mode of the transmission of depravity have been propounded. But to understand the theories of the mode of the transmission of depravity the different theories of the nature of depravity must first be understood.

I. Theories of Original Sin

Three main theories concerning the nature and extent of depravity have been given prominence: (1) the Pelagian, (2) the Augustinian, and (3) the Arminian, as they have been called after those who first formulated them. Semi-Pelagianism might also be named as a fourth theory, but this is somewhat similar to Arminianism.

1. *Pelagian Theory*—Pelagius was a British monk who went to Rome about the beginning of the fifth century, where he won great esteem. He advanced the extreme theory that there is no native depravity; that the sin of Adam resulted in the fall of himself alone; that the new-born child is characterless, as he also affirmed Adam was when created; that each individual has a natural power of unhampered free choice; and that sin consists in acts, not in a tendency of the nature, except as the one who sins might form the habit of sinning. In short, he denied that Adam's sin had any effect on his posterity, morally, mentally, or physically, except that Adam set an evil example by sinning. He even taught that physical death was not a penalty for sin, but that mortality of the body was natural and death inevitable.

By excluding native depravity this view has no room for a theory of the mode of the transmission of depravity.

2. *Augustinian Theory*—The opposite extreme of the Pelagain anthropology is the Augustinian. When Pelagius began to advocate his theory in North Africa he met in Augustine the most effectual opposer of his views. Unlike Pelagius, Augustine had struggled

long and vainly against evil passions which victimized him. He had known by experience that only the grace of God was sufficient to save him from the profligate life to which he felt impelled in his sinfulness. His personal experience, and especially the conflict with Pelagianism, led him, finally, to adopt a system as extreme and erroneous as the one he opposed.

The distinguishing features in the Augustinian system are: (1) Adam represented the race, and the whole human family had their only probation in him. (2) He was created with original righteousness, but for probationary purposes he was given a power that he used contrary to God's will and consequently lost something from himself and the lives of his descendants. (3) As a result of his sin he became guilty and depraved, and because he represented the race all men became also depraved, guilty, and punishable for his sin because they corporately sinned in him. (4) That depravity is total, and it is said that man has no power to effect what is good or choose to be saved. (5) Salvation is by the sole choice and working of God, and that efficacious, irresistible grace which leads him to will to repent and obey God. (6) That by his sovereign grace God has saved those whom he has elected to save and all others are reprobated to eternal death.

3. **Arminian Theory**—The Arminian system of theology is so named from Arminius, a Dutch theologian of the sixteenth century. By Arminianism is not meant particularly the teachings of Arminius, but rather that system of theological thought which was represented in a general way by the principles of Arminius. In its main features it was the prevalent belief prior to Augustine in the early church.

Arminianism teaches that the fall of the race was through man's free choice alone, that as primitive holiness consisted in a tendency to righteousness, so through the fall men have a natural tendency to sin, but that they are in no sense guilty of or punishable for Adam's sin. It is opposed to Augustinianism at the five notable points: (1) conditional election, (2) universal redemption, (3) moral freedom, (4) resistibility of grace, and (5) possibility of apostasy. Arminianism holds that the power to do good was lost through the fall, but that through divine grace it is restored so man can choose to serve God or not.

II. Unscriptural Theories of the Transmission of Original Sin

Of the many theories of the mode of the transmisison of

depravity the three principal ones are (1) the realistic, or Adam's natural headship, (2) the representative, or Adam's federal headship, and (3) the parentage, or genetic law theory.

Three other theories which have claimed not a few adherents are: (1) the theory which holds that guilt is imputed as a consequence of the possession of inherited depravity rather than that imputation of guilt for the first sin is the ground for depravity as a penal infliction; (2) that present depravity is due to sinning of the individual in a previous existence; and (3) that God knew what each individual would have done had he been in Adam's stead in the primitive temptation and therefore imputes guilt to each individual and imparts a corresponding degree of depravity.

The first three theories named especially deserve consideration because they have been held so widely. The realistic and representative mode theories should be classed together in that they make depravity a penal retribution.

1. **Realistic Theory**—This is the theory of Adam's natural headship. All men are said to have been in Adam when he sinned; therefore he was the race; when he sinned the race sinned, and both his depravity and guilt attach to the race as well as they did to himself. This view has had special support in this country by W. G. T. Shedd and A. H. Strong. This was also the view of Augustine.

The theory assumes the existence of a generic human nature that existed wholly in Adam when he sinned. Therefore when he sinned the generic human nature sinned, and as Adam was condemned for his sin, so the generic human nature shared in his condemnation and became depraved and guilty. As a consequence, when human nature was individualized, every person received the depravity and guilt of Adam's sin and deserves to be punished because of that guilt attached to his nature. This theory rests on the principle of realism, which assumes that genera are essential existences as distinguised from the individuals representing them. Viewing man's generic nature as an objective reality, it assumes that this nature, which included both body and spirit, has been divided in some sense, which its advocates cannot explain, into all the multiplied millions of human beings that have existed.

The first objection we make to this theory is that generic human nature has no actual existence apart from individuals. It is merely an abstract mental conception. A generic animal nature has no

reality except in abstract thought. Adam's body cannot be shown to have contained the substance of all human bodies. That such a form of matter existed in Adam is only an assumption.

Again we object that there can be no responsible sinning apart from personal consciousness. Generic human nature, as such, could not sin. Only persons sin, and guilt attaches only to persons, who possess intellect, sensibility, and will, which constitute them persons. Adam's guilt was personal. Therefore, until we had individual existence and personal consciousness, we could commit no sin and incur no guilt. One knows in his own consciousness that he had no responsibility for the first sin of Adam. His common sense revolts from the idea that he deserves to be punished for that sin of Adam, and he instinctively feels such would be unjust.

A still stronger objection is that if we are responsible for the first sin of Adam, we must be likewise responsible for all the other sins he committed before the begetting of his children, through whom we are descended. If we had a real existence in Adam as the generic human nature in that we incurred guilt by that first sin, then no reason can be given why we should not have been equally responsible and guilty for all other sins Adam committed before the individuation of that generic nature.

In addition to the higher realism which assumes that all are guilty of the first sin because partakers of a generic human nature, there is a lower form of realism. According to this theory all men were all in Adam in individualized seminal form. This theory holds that seminal existence in Adam included the bodies of all men, but some suppose the soul is immediately created and not transmitted by the parents. This theory attempts to show, as does the preceding theory, that all men were so identified with Adam that they are guilty and depraved because of responsibility in his sinning.

The theory is open to objection on most of the points stated in criticism of the higher realism. It fails to show that we had a responsible part in the primitive sin. But this theory is open to another objection. It implies that all men were guilty in their seminal state before the seminal entities were developed into personal existences. But only a *person* can sin and become guilty.

2. **Representative Theory**—This is known also as the federal theory and the theory of condemnation by covenant. It was

originally set forth by Cocceius in the seventeenth century.

According to this theory Adam was the representative of the entire human race. Through this federal headship, or legal oneness of the race with Adam, his obedience in the original probation would have resulted in the bestowing of eternal life on all the race, but because of his disobedience God imputes the consequent guilt and depravity, not only to him, but equally to all his descendants.

All men are guilty of Adam's first sin and deserve punishment, says the realistic theory, because Adam *was* the whole race at the time it was committed. According to the federal theory, all are likewise guilty and punishable because Adam *represented* the entire race. This imputation of punishment to us is not, then, because we have sinned, but is only because of a legal oneness with Adam.

To the representative theory we object, first, that it is without support in the Bible. It would be necessary for the support of this theory to show that Adam was constituted by God the representative of the race in this relation.

Attempts are made to establish the principle of representativism by reference to the relations between a nation and its ambassador to a foreign nation, an agent and his principal, the ward and the guardian, the child and the parent, and especially by an appeal to the various Scripture statements which represent the evil consequences of sin as passing on from fathers to their children even to the third and fourth generation. Doubtless there is representation in all these instances, and those represented suffer from the wrong course sometimes taken by their representative. Yet who would say the evil consequences which come upon a child because of his father's drunkenness is a punishment upon the child because he was guilty of the sin his father committed? In none of these examples of representation does the action of the representative involve those represented in either guilt or penalty except as to natural consequences. Therefore these instances have no value in support of this theory, because they are not analogous to the relation it claims exists between Adam and his posterity.

Much dependence is placed upon a particular interpretation of Romans 5:12, a verse which has been a theological battleground for centuries. It has been given a variety of interpretations, even by representatives of the same school. Doubtless a text whose meaning is so much in dispute cannot of itself properly be made the

foundation for a doctrine so fundamental as representativism assumes to be.

We also object to the assumption that the race had its probation in Adam. There is no support for such an idea in either the Scriptures or reason. It is unreasonable that the moral condition and deserts of countless other moral beings should be determined by the choice of one man. It accounts guilty and would punish those who are held to have committed no sin. According to this theory, God creates sinful souls by making each one with a depraved nature, which is a punishment for imputed guilt, and is itself sinful and deserving of punishment. Such a theory severely reflects on both the justice and holiness of God.

III. Law of Genetic Transmission

We now come to the consideration of what we conceive to be the true theory of the transmission of original sin. The true mode must be compatible with the true theory of the nature of original sin. The nature of original sin has already been defined to be a disarray of the moral nature by which men experience a tendency to sin. The realistic and representative theories of the transmission of original sin are attempts to explain its transmission in harmony with the Augustinian theory of the nature of original sin.

1. **The Genetic Law**—In the entire realm of organic nature there is a fundamental law that all living things propagate after their kind. This law was ordained with the original of the first organic forms. "And God said, Let the earth bring forth grass, the herb yielding seed, and the fruit-tree yielding fruit after his kind, whose seed is in itself, upon the earth: and it was so" (Gen. 1:11). This law is essential to the orderly preservation of nature. Without it distinct species could not exist. Variations within species are not uncommon, and these variations are sometimes great, yet underlying all these is a general similarity between parent and offspring.

This law of genesis is so uniform in its operation that it governs the propagation of living orders generally, including man. Not only does the genetic law apply to the propagation of the body after its kind, but intellectual and spiritual qualities are similarly transmitted. Regardless of the question of the origin of the soul, it is certain it is after its kind.

2. **Men Are After Their Kind Morally**—That moral depravity is the nature of the race and that children are born with a depraved nature has been shown. This is implied in the Scriptures. "Behold,

I was shapen in iniquity; and in sin did my mother conceive me" (Ps. 51:5). This statement implies that depravity is native, but also that it is through natural generation. In the question "who can bring a clean thing out of an unclean?" (Job 14:4), the idea is that a dirty vessel makes its contents dirty. So man is defiled morally because of the moral corruption of his parents.

If Adam had continued in holiness, his offspring would have been holy, except for the possible failure of individuals on their own. The transmission of that holiness would have been by the genetic law, and not by any judicial imputation of holiness to his children. But when Adam sinned and his nature became corrupted, a depraved nature was transmitted according to the genetic law. Depravity is not inflicted on men as a punishment on the ground of retributive justice. If this were so, then it must follow that except for that penal infliction depraved parents would beget holy children, which would be in violation of the universal genetic law. If it be understood that native depravity is transmitted by the genetic law, then seeing any penal character in depravity is excluded. Depravity is transmitted by a law governing the constitution of man; it is not a penal infliction upon individuals for sin.

Some might raise the question, Why are children not begotten after the nature of the race as it was originally constituted, rather than after the depraved condition? Transmission of the depraved nature is entirely in harmony with a fundamental law generally recognized by physical science. Biologists have shown that those general characteristics which arise naturally, including mutations and variations caused by climate, environment, and so forth are transmissible. Varieties continually being developed within species are the result of this law. But characteristics which are the result of mutilation or which have been artificially produced are not transmissible. For example, a variety of cattle whose nature is to have no horns will propagate after their kind, but the dehorning of cattle of horned varieties does not cause their offspring to be born without horns. By his sinning, Adam became sinful in nature and he thus determined the sinfulness of the human race. The parentage theory of the transmission of depravity is thoroughly in harmony with true science.

This principle of the transmission of acquired characteristics also answers another question frequently asked, Why do the children of sanctified parents have depraved natures? The answer

is found in the truth that the sanctification of the self is by grace and not by natural change. The removal of depravity, like removing the horns of cattle, is not a natural change, and the children of sanctified parents have the depraved nature according to their kind. This non-transmission of holiness received through grace agrees perfectly with the laws of nature as modern science has found them to be.

PART V
SALVATION THROUGH CHRIST, OR SOTERIOLOGY

Part V

SALVATION THROUGH CHRIST OR SOTERIOLOGY

Gene Miller, Revision Editor

That division of theology which sets forth the remedy for sin and the application of that remedy in individual experience is commonly called soteriology. This term is derived from two Greek words σωτήρ (*soter*), "savior," and λόγος (*logos*), "discourse," and means the message or study of salvation. Under soteriology we deal with the great problems of atonement for sin and salvation from sin.

Chapter I

THE PERSON OF CHRIST

I. The Doctrine and Its Statement

1. **A Vital Doctrine**—As logical order requires that atonement be considered before salvation, so a study of the atonement must be preceded by inquiry concerning the nature or person of the Atoner. This question of the person of Christ, or Christology, is not one of mere speculative interest, but is vitally important to Christianity. The character of Christians is a consequence of a miraculous divine operation called salvation. But salvation has its basis in atonement, and the value of that atonement is dependent upon the dignity and nature of the Atoner. Therefore what Christ is determines what Christianity is. Herein Christianity is unlike all the great ethnic religions. The character of Mohammedanism or Buddhism is determined wholly by the teachings of their founders regardless of the elements constituting their persons. But Christianity is not so. In both the past and present the religious experience of professed Christians has been generally in harmony with their views relative to the divine-human nature of Christ. In the same measure that Unitarians and modern religious liberalists have denied the deity of Christ, they have denied an objective

aspect to the atonement and supernatural conversion. The great Christological controversies of past centuries were a result of men's recognition of the importance of the issues involved.

2. **Elements of the Doctrine**—The doctrine of the person of Christ, like most other essential truths of Christianity, is not set forth in the Scriptures in scientific and exact form. Such a formulation of the doctrine so far as we have any record did not take place until centuries after the New Testament was written, when the heretical teachings made a definite statement of it necessary. Yet the Christians of the early centuries most surely held the true doctrine of the person of Christ. They held it as they found its various factors in the Scriptures.

The consistuent elements in the person of Christ as he is described in the Scriptures are three: (1) He was truly human. So he was known to his apostles and disciples prior to his crucifixion. He had a physical human body, essentially the same as have other men. He was born into the world as a human being, his body grew to maturity, suffered pain and weariness, and later died as other bodies die. He possessed not only a human body, but also a human spirit—a complete human nature. He is said to have "increased in wisdom," which can properly be affirmed only on the ground that he possessed a finite human spirit. (2) Also in addition to a complete human nature, he possessed a complete divine nature. He was truly God. The divine nature in its pre-existent form before the incarnation was a person. (3) Yet Christ was one person, not two, though he possessed a complete human and a complete divine nature. This is the doctrine of the person of Christ as revealed in the Scriptures, and as has been commonly held by Christians. Like the doctrine of the Trinity, it is profound, it may be fully comprehensible, and may contain much of mystery, but it does not therefore follow that it is not true. Christians believe this doctrine because its various elements are clearly taught in the Bible. Belief of the doctrine is the unavoidable consequence of believing the Scriptures. The Bible proofs of it are yet to be shown.

3. **Creedal Statements**—The truths relative to Christ's person were at first held in a very practical manner with no attempt at a harmony of the various elements by a formulation of the doctrine. But thoughtful minds could not long be satisfied without reconciling the separate facts they held concerning Christ. The questions

must inevitably arise, "Is Christ God or man? If both God and man, is he two persons or one? If he has two natures in one person how are they related to each other?" Attempts to answer these questions resulted in various theories, some of which were very objectionable because of giving place to either the human or divine element at the expense of the other. At least six heretical theories of the person of Christ gained prominence before the church came to general agreement on the statement of the doctrine. For a century and half, or beginning prior to the Council of Nicea and continuing until the Council of Chalcedon, 451 A. D., the church was torn by controversies concerning the person of Christ.

The Nicene statement of faith was concerned principally with the defense of the doctrine of the Trinity. The symbol formulated by the Council of Chalcedon has to do directly with the Christological doctrine. It is the result of the best thought of many good and wise men who in defense of the faith had thought profoundly, and honestly endeavored to represent all the relevant facts of Scripture in proper relation. Even though humanly formulated creeds do not necessarily have divine sanction, yet probably no clearer statement of the doctrine of the person of Christ has been constructed.

It is given in Schaff's *Creeds of Christendom* as follows: "We, then, following the holy Fathers, all with one consent, teach men to confess one and the same Son, our Lord Jesus Christ, the same perfect in Godhead and also perfect in manhood; truly God and truly man, of a reasonable (rational) soul and body; consubstantial (coessential) with the Father according to the Godhead, and consubstantial with us according to manhood; in all things like unto us, without sin; begotten before all ages of the Father according to the Godhead, and in these latter days, for us and for our salvation, born of the Virgin Mary, the mother of God, according to the manhood; one and the same Christ, Son, Lord, only begotten, to be acknowledged in two natures, *inconfusedly, unchangeable, indivisibly, inseparably;* the distinction of natures being by no means taken away by the union, but rather the property of each nature being preserved, and concurring in one person and one subsistence, not parted or divided into two persons, but one and the same Son, and only begotten, God the Word, the Lord Jesus Christ; as the prophets from the beginning (have declared) concerning him, and the Lord Jesus Christ himself has taught us, and

the Creed of the holy Fathers has handed down to us." This statement clearly sets forth the different elements of the doctrine and shows their harmony, but no attempt is made to eliminate all mystery from the doctrine.

II. Two Natures in Christ

1. **Complete Human Nature in Christ**—That Jesus is truly man is shown by his calling himself man and being called man. He is the "man of sorrows." He is "the man Christ Jesus." He most frequently designated himself the "Son of man." This title is given him eighty times in the New Testament.

He had a material body of flesh and blood. "Forasmuch then as the children are partakers of flesh and blood, he also himself likewise took part of the same" (Heb. 2:14). Jesus himself said, "A spirit hath not flesh and bones, as ye see me have" (Luke 24:39). He was born of the Virgin Mary, and his body grew to maturity as do other human bodies. He was the descendant of Eve, of the seed of Abraham, and the Son of David. He was subject to hunger, thirst, weariness, pleasure, pain and death. He not only merely "appeared" or "seemed" to have a physical body, as was held by the Docetists, certain of the ancient Gnostics who denied the reality of his human body, but he actually had a body.

But Jesus was not human merely in the sense that he had a human body. He also possessed a natural human soul. This is not expressly stated in the Scriptures, but it is often clearly implied and therefore is no less certain. He is said to have "increased in wisdom," which is possible only on the ground that he had a human spirit, for the divine spirit is omniscient. He was also tempted by Satan to ambition and otherwise. God could not be thus tempted, and such temptation had nothing to do with physical desires. He declared himself ignorant of the time of the judgment-day, which can be satisfactorily interpreted only on the ground of his possessing a finite mind. His soul was "exceeding sorrowful" (Matt. 26:38), he "rejoiced in spirit" (Luke 10:21), "feared," "groaned," and "wept," all of which activities pertain to the human soul rather than to God. Possessing both a human body and soul, Jesus was truly man complete, yet without sin.

2. **Complete Divine Nature in Christ**—Jesus is also truly God. This point was proved at length in support of the Trinity. He is called God. Various divine titles are given him. Divine works are attributed to him. All things are said to have been created through

him. He claimed authority to forgive sins. He was accorded worship, which he accepted. He has ever been God supreme to Christians. He claimed to be one with the Father and equally worthy of honor. Therefore he is deity in the highest and truest sense. He was truly God as well as truly man.

3. **Incarnation of God in Christ**—The truth of the divine incarnation is further proof of a divine and human nature in Christ. The very idea of divine incarnation is that God has come into the flesh. But flesh in this connection is not to be limited to the material body merely, but includes human nature in its entirety. Such a sense of the term is not uncommon in the Scriptures. In addition to the many proofs of two natures already cited, a number of texts very definitely set forth the truth of the incarnation.

No text is more worthy of citation in proof of the incarnation than is John 1:1-3, 14. "In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. The same was in the beginning with God. All things were made by him; and without him was not anything made that was made. . . . And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us (and we beheld his glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father), full of grace and truth." That the Word is a person is clear from his being God, Creator, and from the use of the personal pronoun concerning him. That he is truly God in the highest sense is evident from the ascription to him of the attribute of eternity, and all the work of creation. It is said of this divine being that he became flesh, incarnate, by the assumption of human nature; not by the changing of his divine nature into human nature, but by the addition of the one to the other.

Also John opens his first epistle with a statement of the great truth of the divine incarnation. "That which was from the beginning, which we have heard, which we have seen with our eyes, which we have looked upon, and our hands have handled, of the Word of Life; (for the life was manifested, and we have seen it, and bear witness, and show unto you that eternal life, which was with the Father, and was manifested unto us)" (1 John 1:1, 2). This text is almost equal as proof of the incarnation to that quoted from the fourth Gospel. The Word is described as eternal, therefore as being God, and yet as being *with* the Father, and as being life in his essential nature. He is said to have been manifest in such a sense that he could be known to men by their senses; therefore

he was manifested in a material body, yet retaining his divinity so those to whom he was manifested recognized him as that "eternal life."

A fuller statement on the subject is Philippians 2:6-9, where of Jesus it is said, "Who, being in the form of a servant, and was made in the likeness of men: and being found in fashion as a man, he humbled himself, and became obedient unto death, even the death of the cross. Wherefore God also hath highly exalted him, and given him a name which is above every name." Before Jesus was made in the "likeness" of men he was in the form of God. The form of a thing is determined by its nature. He was in the form of God because he was God. Also he was equal with God, implying that in some sense he was related to God. Here Paul sets forth the same truth as does John, that Jesus *was* God and yet *with* God, which implies that there are two who are God. Further it is said this Divine Being was made in the "likeness" of men, and had the "fashion" of a man. As was said of "form" in verse 6, so "likeness" and "fashion" imply that he was man. They are determined by the nature. Then this text teaches that the Divine Being took upon him human nature.

"God was manifest in the flesh, justified in the Spirit, seen of angels, preached unto the Gentiles, believed on in the world, received up into glory" (1 Tim. 3:16). Regardless of any question as to the correct reading of the first word in the text, whether it be "God" or "he", it is certain from the following words that Christ is the one meant. That he was the divine Son of God is clear from many other texts. This text then is a clear declaration that God "was manifest in the flesh," or became incarnate. Other texts in support of divine incarnation are Romans. 1:2-5; 9:5 and Hebrews 2:14. "Forasmuch then as the children are partakers of flesh and blood, he also himself likewise took part of the same."

The foregoing texts teach a divine incarnation—not merely an incarnation of the divine nature, divine attributes, or divine principle, but an incarnation of the personal Son. Not only the Son, but the Father and the Holy Spirit possess the divine nature; yet only the Son is said to have come in the flesh. Only a person could create all things and do and be all that is affirmed of him who is said to have taken human nature. Therefore the personality of Christ, though unique, was not an entirely new one, but that which had ever existed modified by the assumption of human nature.

4. **Mode of the Incarnation**—According to clear statements of the Scriptures and the common faith of the church the incarnation was effected through conception by the Holy Spirit and the virgin birth. The reality of the virgin birth has been questioned by not a few in recent years. Such questions are raised, not only by avowed infidels, but also by professed Christians who are committed to the modern higher criticism. The objection to the virgin birth stands alone. In almost every instance those who reject it are also unsound concerning the deity of Christ, often denying the divinity of Christ altogether.

The attack is usually made at the point of the virgin birth because it is supposed the evidence for this miracle is more easily disposed of than that for more public miracles such as Jesus' healings or the resurrection. The virgin birth is represented as a legend belonging to an ignorant, uncritical people and as being unworthy of belief in this enlightened age. It is attacked by the same methods the older foes of Christianity have employed against it—insinuation, and by likening it to the coarse Greek and Roman myths of heroes who, it is claimed, were descended from the Gods.

The objection is sometimes made that the virgin birth was not necessary to the incarnation of God. In reply we answer that it cannot be shown that it was not necessary. Possibly divine omniscience knew of another method whereby the incarnation could have been effected. But the objection is irrelevant. Even if the virgin birth was not necessary to the divine incarnation, what method of the entrance of the Divine into the flesh could be more conducive to men's comprehension and belief of it? From this viewpoint the virgin birth is a reasonable method. But the ground for belief in it is the statements of the Scriptures.

The leading statements concerning the virgin birth are found in Matthew 1:18-25 and in Luke 1, 2. Here it is represented, not by brief and obscure allusions, but by detailed descriptions of it, so no question remains as to the sense of the statements of the writers. Matthew affirms of Mary, who was espoused to Joseph, that "before they came together, she was found with child of the Holy Ghost" (v. 18). He quotes the angel as saying, "That which is conceived in her is of the Holy Ghost" (v. 20). Then he gives a quotation from Isaiah 7:14, "A virgin shall be with child, and shall bring forth a son, and they shall call his name Emmanuel, which being interpreted is, God with us" (v. 23). "The Holy Ghost shall

come upon thee, and the power of the Highest shall overshadow thee: therefore also that holy thing which shall be born of thee shall be called the Son of God" (Luke 1:35).

Here the doctrine under consideration has sure ground. Those who accept the Scriptures as the inspired Word of God need no more certain evidence. Only persons who question the credibility of the biblical narrative disbelieve these statements. This is not the proper place to discuss the divine authority and inspiration of the Scriptures. The biological argument is without force to all except those who deny all miracles.

III. Union of Two Natures in One Person

1. **Personal Oneness of Christ**—By citation of several plain texts of Scripture it has been already shown that both divine and human attributes belong to Christ. But attributes must inhere in a substance or a nature. There can be no extension apart from material substance, nor thought apart from an immaterial being which thinks. The attributes of matter are always connected with material substance, and those of mind with a spiritual nature. Therefore divine and human attributes in Christ must have their basis in a real existence of both a divine and a human nature in Christ. And by these two natures is meant divine and human substances, not mere manifestations of divine and human operations. Christ had two natures in the sense that he possessed two sets of attributes or qualities—the human and the divine.

But two natures do not necessarily require two persons. Christ was one person combining two distinct natures in personal oneness by a unique and mysterious bond. Such is clearly stated in the ancient church symbols and has ever been the common belief of Christians. Oneness of personality of Christ is implied in Scriptures. In all his sayings there is not a single hint that he was two persons, but he ever spoke of himself as a single person. Between persons of the Trinity the different divine personalities are indicated by the use of such pronouns as "I," "thou," and "he," but between the divine and human natures of Christ no such thing is recorded. In all his conduct and as he was known to those most intimately associated with him he appears as one person. Further scriptural evidence of personal oneness will appear later in showing that the powers and attributes belonging to both natures are ascribed to the one Christ.

Like the doctrine of the Trinity, the idea of the personal oneness

of the two natures is a great mystery. It is probably even more difficult for thought than is the idea of three persons in one sustance. But as that profound truth is believed because of a sure ground in divine revelation, so it is reasonable to believe the truth of Christ's personal oneness. It is natural and not improper to seek an explanation of the problem of Christology to show how he can be truly God and truly man and yet but one person. It may be a question to what extent such an explanation is possible to theological science because of the limitations of human knowledge. But it is comforting to know full comprehension of the subject is not essential to one's enjoying the benefits of Christ's atoning work. Devout contemplation need not wait to appreciate the fact of the divine incarnation until speculative thought has solved all mystery in relation to the subject. To do so would be as unreasonable as to refuse to eat food until full understanding is attained of the mode by which the body assimilates its food.

Even if the mystery of Christ's nature is inscrutable, it is at least important to show that it involves no impossibility or self-contradiction. Because the person of Christ is unique, nothing in human experience is analogous to the union of the two natures in him. Dr. Charles Hodge has illustrated it by the union of the physical and spiritual natures of man in a single personality. But the illustration is not parallel in that the physical nature alone possesses no personality as do both the human and divine natures which became one person in Christ. Yet the illustration has much value in showing that the union of man's soul and body in one person, which is a certain fact of consciousness, is also an insoluble mystery. We are conscious of possessing a material body having the various common properties of matter, and also spirit which is entirely different in substance from matter, with none of its properties, but with qualities of an entirely different kind. We are aware through consciousness that we are one person, that the body and spirit are united, but the nature of that union is incomprehensible to us. In view of a fact of consciousness so familiar yet so mysterious, it is not unreasonable to believe on the authority of divine revelation that very God and very man might be constituted one person in Christ.

2. **Christ Is God-Man**—In some sense according to the Scriptures Christ is two, in another sense he is one. As to nature he is two, as to personality one. He possesses a complete divine nature

and a complete human nature; as to nature he is God and man, but as to person he is but one: God-man. He is theanthropic in personality, but not in nature. This is clearly set forth in the Scriptures and is so held by Christians in general. Both divine and human attributes appear in the life of Christ, and as already stated these two sets of attributes have their basis in two distinct natures. The personal oneness of Christ involves no mingling of these two natures. They ever remain distinct. Copper and zinc combined constitute a third metal, brass. But the divine and human natures in Christ do not constitute a divine human, or theanthropic nature. Neither is there a transference of divine attributes to the human, nor of human attributes to the divine. Attributes are characteristics of the nature, and to transfer divine attributes to human nature would be to make it divine. Attributes are not transferable. Spiritual matter would be self-contradictory. There is a communion of divine and human attributes in the person of Christ, but no communication of attributes of one nature to the other.

Christ is one, or theanthropic, only in personality, but in this sense he is really one. The divine nature does not dwell in Christ as the Spirit of God dwells in his people. Such a union would constitute no person oneness. The personal oneness of the divine and human natures is as real as that of the physical and spiritual natures in men. Personality belonged to the divine nature of Christ prior to the incarnation, but his human nature had no existence and certainly no distinct personality of its own at any time. Yet when the *logos* became incarnate, the personality of the second person of the Trinity must have been modified by its union with human nature. Christ possessed both divine and human facts of consciousness, yet he was one person. This union of the divine and human natures in one person in Christ was necessary to the atonement. Without it his suffering and death must have been that of a mere man. But with a theanthropic personality suffering for man's sin, a dignity is given to the offering for sin that is equal to every demand.

3. **Effect of Personal Union of Two Natures**—As a consequence of a human and a divine nature united in one person the Scriptures affirm attributes and refer acts of the divine nature to Christ as human, of the human nature to Christ as divine, and of either the divine or human natures to the theanthropic person of Christ. So of man it may be truly said that he is both mortal and immor-

tal, material and spiritual, of the dust of the earth and a child of God.

When Jesus said, "Before Abraham was I am," he affirmed of his person, including human nature, what was true only of his divine nature. A similar declaration is, "No man hath ascended up to heaven, but he that came down from heaven, even the Son of man which is in heaven." His coming down from heaven is true only of his divinity, yet it is affirmed of him as "man." On the other hand, many facts are predicated of his person as divine which are true only of his human nature. "The Church of God which he purchased with his own blood." Here the blood by which the church is purchased is designated the blood of God. Yet Jesus' body belonged to his human nature. They "crucified the Lord of glory." It was the body of Jesus that was nailed to the cross, yet it is here affirmed the Lord of glory, the divine being, was crucified. Such facts are possible only on the ground of Christ's theanthropic personality. A failure to recognize in him a single theanthropic personality results in the Bible appearing to be filled with inexplainable paradoxes.

IV. Criticism of Christological Errors

A review and criticism of the different ancient and modern heretical doctrines concerning the person of Christ is helpful to a clear understanding of the true doctrine. The true doctrine has been stated. What is now to be said will show in a measure what is not the true doctrine. Only the outstanding ancient errors are described together with what are considered the most important modern errors.

1. **The Ebionites**—Ebionism has been described as "Judaism within the pale of the Christian church." The Ebionites regarded Christ as the promised Messiah, but because the idea of Christ's divinity appeared to them incompatible with the truth of the oneness of God so strongly affirmed in the Old Testament, they denied his divinity and held that he was a mere man. Some of them allowed his virgin birth, while others denied it. They held plain humanitarianism of Christ. Because it denied that Christ was truly God incarnate it was wrong.

2. **The Gnostics**—Gnosticism was pagan philosophy introduced into the church. Its error was the opposite of Ebionism in that it

denied that Christ had a physical body. It held that matter was not created by God, but had another origin and is essentially evil. Therefore, Gnostics reasoned, the holy Christ could not possess a body of this intrinsically evil matter. Many of them regarded his appearing to have a body as an illusion, and were consequently called Docetists, which means to appear, to seem to be. Others explained away his humanity in other ways. The apostle John in both his Gospel and first epistle opposes this heresy, which was already finding a place among Christians, by his many declarations of Christ's incarnation. "And every spirit that confesseth not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is not of God: and this is that spirit of antichrist" (1 John 4:3). Gnosticism was also objectionable in its denial to Christ of real divinity. He was regarded as an emanation from God and therefore inferior to God.

3. **The Arians.**—The doctrinal error of Arius was especially in respect to the person of Christ. By mistaking the temporary subordination of the Son to the Father for a permanent inequality he took the unscriptural position that Christ is not very God consubstantial with the Father, but that there was a time when he did not exist and therefore lacked the divine attribute of eternity. He was regarded as having been created, yet the highest and first of all created beings. Arianism held that he was *like* God, as opposed to the biblical teaching that he *is* God. Because of this it was rejected by the church.

4. **The Apollinarians**—As Arianism denied the integrity of the divine nature in Christ, and as Gnosticism rejected the reality of his human, Apollinarianism denied the integrity of his human nature by declaring he had no rational human mind, but only the divine spirit. It was an attempt to avoid the difficulties of two complete natures being united in one person. It was based on the trichotomic theory that man's constitution has three elements-the physical body, the rational mind or spirit, and an intermediate element, the animal soul, which was supposed to be the seat of the sensuous nature. Apollinarianism held that Christ had a human body and animal soul, but no human spirit, and that the divine logos supplied the place of the human mind. It allowed the Christ only the lower part of human nature, so he was not truly man. We object to Apollinarianism, first because trichotomy, its necessary basis, is an unprovable theory, as was shown in preceding pages. But the disproof of Apollinarianism is in its failure to account for

the many facts in Jesus' life that are explainable only on the ground that he had a human spirit; for example, he was tempted in all points as we are.

5. **The Nestorians**—While Apollinarianism sacrificed the integrity of the human nature of Christ to make sure of his oneness, Nestorianism on the other hand sacrificed his oneness in the interests of the integrity of the two natures. It held that the logos inhabited or dwelt in the human nature somewhat as is the indwelling of the Holy Spirit. It claimed to hold personal oneness of Christ, but its various explanations of the relationship of the divine and human amounted to a rejection of that oneness. Nestorians would not attribute to the one person of Christ, which they professed to allow, the attributes of each nature. They rejected the Scripture statement concerning the blood of God (Acts 20:28). Such a position really amounted to a denial of one person in Christ.

6. **The Eutychians**—This error is the opposite of the Nestorian, and was supported by the opposers of the latter. The Eutychians virtually denied that Christ possessed two natures, but admitted that before the incarnation there were two natures, but held that these two natures were mingled so a third nature was formed, whether the divine became humanized or the human deified. But they commonly illustrated the method of unification as the human nature being like a drop of vinegar cast into the ocean; as it is lost in the ocean, so was the human nature of Christ lost in his divine nature. Therefore the theory admitted but one nature in Christ, or was monophysitic. It was in this respect practically identical with Docetism, and as surely fails to account for the many human facts in the person and life of Christ as described in the Bible.

7. **The Lutheran Theory**—The Lutheran Christology holds all that is set forth on the subject on the ancient church symbols, but in addition it holds that the human nature of Christ became possessed of divine attributes as a result of its being united with the divine nature of one person. Certainly the Bible teaches that whatever may be affirmed of either nature may be affirmed of the *person* of Christ, but the Lutheran theory claims that whatever attributes may be affirmed of one nature may also be affirmed of the other *nature*. It especially holds that the human nature has the divine attributes, particularly omnipresence. Though this theory has been held in a variety of forms among them, and as to its exact statement has been a matter of great internal controversy,

yet it has been tenaciously held from the time of Luther to the present.

This theory of the omnipresence of the body of Christ is important to the Lutheran doctrine of consubstantiation, the doctrine that the real body and blood of Christ are present in the elements of the Lord's Supper. The ascription of omnipresence to the body of Christ was demanded for consistency by their strong emphasis of the consubstantiation theory. In spite of the fact that Lutherans deny that their Christology was determined by their theory of the eucharist, others have generally believed it was so determined.

In objection to the Lutheran theory of the person of Christ it may be said, first, that the fact that Lutheranism was from its beginning committed to consubstantiation is reason for doubt that its Christology was not made to conform to that theory of the eucharist. A second objection is that it is inconsistent. Though it affirms a communication of attributes between the divine and human natures and holds that the human received the divine attribute of omnipresence, yet it denies that the divine nature was affected by or received anything from the human nature. In this it is onesided. A third objection is the absence of any scriptural support for the theory. What is true of either nature is regarded by the Scriptures as true of his person, but no text can fairly be interpreted to teach that what is true of one nature is true to the other nature. A fourth objection is that the Bible teaches that Christ was truly human, and the Lutheran idea that the divine attributes in Christ's nature were hidden is a mere assumption in favor of the theory. A last objection to the Lutheran Christology is that it is impossible to separate attributes from the substance in which they inhere. Attributes are not transferable. Besides if the human becomes omnipresent, then the finite becomes infinite, which is a contradiction in terms.

8. **The Socinian Theory**—The Socinian Christology as at first held was purely humanitarian and therefore practically identical with the ancient Ebionism. It held Christ was a mere man as to his essential nature. Yet he was regarded as having a miraculous conception, as being sinless, as having been especially endowed by the Holy Spirit, and as having been temporarily taken up to heaven prior to the beginning of his ministry. Much, if not all, of the supernatural originally affirmed of Christ by Socinians is denied by those who are at present known as Socinians. A mere statement

of this theory is sufficient disproof of it in view of what has been said in previous pages, and even for the casual reader of the Scriptures.

9. **The Kenotic Theory** In its general aspects this theory is the opposite of the Lutheran. It is so called from the Greek *kenosis*, a form of which is found in Philippians 2:7. There Christ is said to have emptied himself (see ASV) in becoming incarnate. This Christology assumes the *Logos* emptied himself of his divine attributes or limited them to the measure of the human. In doing so he ceased to be omniscient, omnipotent, and omnipresent. The theory has been held in varying forms by leading advocates. It endangers the doctrine of a human and divine nature united in one person. Further objections are that though it professes to have its basis in Scripture, it fails to substantiate that claim by any proper interpretations. The text most relied upon, Philippians 2:7, does not state that Christ emptied himself of divine attributes. The context implies that he emptied himself of the divine glory and exalted station he held before the incarnation. But another difficulty for the theory is to show how he could empty himself of divine attributes without ceasing to be divine. It has been previously shown that attributes always inhere in a substance or a nature and cannot exist apart from it. Therefore to give up divine attributes in favor of human characteristics is impossible without a transmutation of the divine *Logos* into humanity. But this leads to another difficulty, for God is immutable. Also if Christ ceased to be divine the divine Trinity ceased to exist. Again, if Christ possessed no truly divine nature his atonement could not be regarded as of infinite efficacy. For these and other reasons the kenotic theory is unworthy of acceptance.

CHAPTER II

RECONCILIATION THROUGH CHRIST

1. Preliminary Questions

1. **Offices of Christ**—As the Savior of men, Christ is described in the Scriptures as king, prophet, and priest. So he is represented in Old Testament predictions of his Messianic character and work. Among the people of Israel the kingly, prophetical, and priestly were distinct offices usually held by different individuals. In Christ they are all three combined. Yet they represent distinct aspects of his redemptive work and are real offices.

Our Lord was truly king even during his earthly life, but especially is he now king. He sits on David's throne in the sense that he rules over God's people. In this aspect he saves men by his beneficent rule, by his greatnesss, power, majesty, and supremacy. He is the deliverer and protector of his people. He is prophet, not merely in the sense of predictor of future events, but in the broader sense of the term as revealer of the will of God to man. He is prophet in the same sense that he is the divine *Logos*. He spoke as one having authority. The word of the Lord came to the Old Testament prophets, but Jesus was himself the "Word." He performs the important function of revealing to men the character of God and the way of salvation. But this aspect of Christ's redemptive work must not be emphasized to the exclusion of the priestly, as has been done by Socinians. Whatever may be our need of instruction, we need more than instruction.

In his priestly office Christ appears as atoner. In this character he makes satisfaction for sin by propitiating God through sacrificial suffering. He becomes a mediator between God and man, an intercessor or an advocate. Christ is the true priest. Melchisedek and Aaron were but types of him. He alone has provided an effectual covering for sin.

2. **Sense of Reconciliation**—In theological usage reconciliation may be defined as a bringing of God and man into union, and is synonymous with atonement. The word rendered "atonement" in Romans 5:11 by the common version is in the American Revised Version rendered "reconciliation." Of the two words, "atonement" is more commonly used in theology. The English word "atonement" is derived from the phrase "at one" and therefore signifies

harmony of relationship. But while its etymological sense is not out of harmony with its theological meaning, yet we must look elsewhere for an adequate definition of it. Broadly, atonement means "any satisfaction, amends, reparation, or expiation made for wrong or injury; something suffered, done, or given by way of propitiation or equivalent." Definitions of the atonement of Christ vary according to the particular "theory" of the atonement that is held. A complete definition of the atonement would amount to a full statement of the doctrine. But for our present purpose it may be defined as the expiation of sin and the propitiation of God by the vicarious sufferings of Christ, on the ground of which God can pardon sin in full consistency with his personal holiness and the dignity of his just law.

3. **The Fact of Atonement and the Doctrine**—It is not the doctrine of the death of Christ that saves men, but the death itself. The atonement was made long before men attempted to formulate the doctrines concerning it. Very many devout Christians who have never attempted a formulation of the doctrine have trusted in the great truth of Christ's atonement to the saving of their souls. Therefore a clear distinction exists between the fact of atonement and all theories of its nature. Christians generally believe Christ made reconciliation for sin, because the Bible definitely affirms it. The Bible also provides the elements from which a construction of the doctrine has been attempted. But no theory thus constructed has ever gained general acceptance. The important thing then is the *fact* that reconciliation has been made, and the thing of next importance is that men exercise a saving faith in that fact.

The doctrine of the atonement is important. Like other fundamental doctrines of Christianity, it is important for the determining of other doctrines as they also are determinative of it. The constitution of the mind is such that it requires consistency and cannot rest in holding as truth ideas that are contradictory or mutually exclusive. However incomplete may be one's theory of the atonement, it is important that one does not hold a theory that is fundamentally wrong. To do so will usually lead to unsoundness in one's doctrine of salvation, as is shown by history. The Socinian theory of the atonement is determined by its theory of sin and of the person of Christ. Likewise its theory of salvation is such as is required by its doctrine of atonement. No other theory of salvation is logically permissible to the other doctrines of the system. Also the Calvinistic system with its particular theory of sin and

depravity holds a limited atonement and affirms that Christ suffered the exact amount that all the elect should suffer for their sins, which insures their salvation. Consequently, their theory of salvation by election must logically follow. As one doctrine logically determines another in any system, so in the true system each doctrine must be interpreted or constructed in harmony with all of the others, and all must be in harmony with the Scriptures.

II. Theories of Salvation Without a Reconciliation

Before setting forth the Christian doctrine of reconciliation it is well that we first take some notice of those theories which either deny the necessity of atonement for effecting salvation or deny the possibility of pardon on any ground. To show the falsity of these theories is to show that atonement is necessary to salvation.

1. **Impossibility of Pardon**—This theory denies salvation in any real sense. It affirms that forgiveness of sin is impossible in a perfect government. The executive of a human government may properly remit the penalty because of the fact that human legislators may make unjust laws, judges may misapply the laws, juries may misunderstand the evidence, witnesses may intentionally or ignorantly misrepresent the facts, or the violation of the law may have been due to excusable ignorance. But it is reasoned that in the divine government the laws are absolutely just, rightly applied, and penalty is according to absolute justice; therefore it can not under any circumstances be remitted. The theory further declares that when penalty has been suffered, then will follow endless blessedness. It is the theory of universalism.

But the Bible teaches that God will pardon the sinner and save him from penalty. The future blessedness it offers is through salvation from penalty by the atonement. Those who teach blessedness after penalty regard sin lightly and its penalty as trifling. They assume that much of the suffering for sin is in this life and that even for greater sins it continues but for a comparatively short time in the next life. Such a view is opposed to the convictions of those whose moral judgments are most worthy of consideration, and also to the plain teachings of Scripture that the penalty for sin is everlasting. In Matthew 25:46 it is said, "And there shall go away into everlasting punishment: but the righteous into life eternal." In the original of this text the same word that measures the duration of the punishment of the wicked describes also the duration of the happiness of the righteous. With this view blessedness after penalty

is excluded. But the Scriptures teach and men intuitively feel that there is mercy and pardon in God.

2. **Forgiveness by Divine Prerogative**—This theory reasons that God is an absolute sovereign, therefore can pardon sin if he wills, and that because he is kindly disposed he will if he can. Therefore it is assumed that there is no bar to pardon and consequently that God freely pardons all sin on these grounds. This theory is the opposite of the one previously reviewed. But the assumption of such universal pardon is opposed to the facts of history, to experience, and to the plain statements of the Bible. The casual observer knows that sin is punished now in this life in his own experience and in that of others. The history of mankind is replete with examples of penalty inflicted, which is sure evidence that sin is not pardoned freely. If God could pardon by prerogative and were disposed to do so, as is affirmed, then why these innumerable examples of infliction of penalty? The Bible record abounds with examples of punishment for sin and warnings against it. The theory under review makes these meaningless.

The ability to pardon sin is not a question of sovereignty. It is not irreverent to say God cannot do some things. God cannot lie. He is limited by his perfections. He cannot change his essential nature. He cannot do evil, because he is perfectly good. He cannot pardon the impenitent sinner except by atonement without gross violation of his holiness. That attribute of holiness in him which excludes all evil from him can no more approve evil in other moral creators. Likewise such sovereign forgiveness without atonement would be subversive of the divine government. God has given just laws and has threatened penalty for their violation. A law without penalty for its violation is useless. But if a penalty be not inflicted on the offender or if other measures be not taken to preserve the dignity of the law the government ceases to exist and the ruler is despised by his subjects. If it be said that some offenders might be thus pardoned while others are punished to preserve respect for government, we object that no such practise is possible in the impartial government of a good God. If pardon is so granted it must be universal. But such a course would mean that government would virtually cease to exist, and that for all practical ends obedience and sin would have no distinction.

3. **Pardon or Repentance**—Repentance is especially urged as a sufficient ground for pardon; therefore, atonement is not needed.

It is reasoned that when one commits an offense against his fellow men and then comes to the offended in repentance, confessing his sin and humbly asking pardon, they forgive him because of the evidence of sincere repentance. Surely, it is said, God, whose love is much greater, will forgive those who sincerely repent of their sins against him. Doubtless repentance is an important ground for forgiveness, and is clearly taught as such in the Scriptures. But the question is, is it the only necessary condition for pardon? Between man and man it, with proper adjustments as to injury done, is ordinarily the only condition necessary. But the relation between the sinner and God is not parallel to that between man and man. God is moral ruler. It is not merely an adjustment of personal feelings with God in relation to the sinner, but his personal holiness and good law must be vindicated. The purpose of the infliction of penalty is to accomplish this. In addition to repentance, the ends of penalty must be achieved.

Also, divine pardon of sin is not possible on the ground of repentance alone, because naturally man cannot truly repent of sin. This is due to the depravity of his nature which constitutes him naturally selfish and rebellious toward God. Only as godly sorrow is wrought in the heart of the sinner by the gracious working of the Spirit, which working is itself granted only through the atonement, can he truly repent. This gracious operation in effecting godly sorrow is not independent of the will of the sinner, but is by God's mercy through Christ. Any repentance that involves no sincere sorrow because a good and kind Creator has been unjustly treated and grieved, but has its basis only in selfish advantage and fear of punishment, is itself sinful and no proper ground for pardon. Every sinner will sooner or later repent of his sinning in this sense when he comes to suffer penalty. If pardon were proper on such grounds, then all would repent, all penalty would be remitted, and the holiness of God and of his good law would be despised.

III. Biblical Statements Concerning the Atonement

In the formulation of any Christian doctrine exegesis should always precede doctrinal construction. For the devout believer in the Bible as divine revelation there is no appeal from its statements. Doctrine must accord with its statements; therefore they must first be known. It is especially important to examine the biblical teaching concerning the atonement before attempting a ration-

ale of it, because of the many conflicting theories, all claiming the support of Scripture, and the disposition on the part of not a few persons to doubt the possibility of our understanding its nature. But in the Bible we can be assured of certain knowledge on the subject. If all points of inquiry are not made clear there, we are sure that what is stated is true.

Here our task consists in careful exegesis. It is important, however, that we do not single out particular texts, but exhibit the teachings of the Bible as a whole, that no important texts be left out of view which would modify or invalidate a conclusion drawn from other texts. For brevity we choose to classify the texts cited according to subject rather than to examine them in their order in the canon or as they appear in the different authors or books of the Bible.

1. **Christ Died for the Salvation of Men**—That the sufferings, humiliation, and death of Christ are vitally connected with the pardon of men's sins is a truth so frequently stated in the Scriptures that its mention seems almost superfluous. This was the burden of the message of Jesus and the apostolic ministry. It is the central thought of the sacred writings. This must be evident even to the superficial reader. No exhaustive citation of texts on this subject is possible in the limits of this work, but a few will serve as examples for our purpose. "The Son of Man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give his life a ransom for many" (Matt. 20:28). "And as Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, even so must the Son of man be lifted up: That whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have eternal life" (John 3:14, 15). "But God commendeth his love toward us, in that, while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us" (Rom. 5:8). "But we see Jesus, who was made a little lower than the angels for the suffering of death, crowned with glory and honor; that he by the grace of God should taste death for every man" (Heb. 2:9). "For if the blood of bulls and of goats, and the ashes of an heifer sprinkling the unclean, sanctifieth to the purifying of the flesh: How much more shall the blood of Christ, who through the eternal Spirit offered himself without spot to God, purge your conscience from dead works to serve the living God?" (Heb. 9:13, 14). "So Christ was once offered to bear the sins of many" (v. 28). "Unto him that loved us, and washed us from our sins in his own blood" (Rev. 1:5).

In view of the vast multitude of clear declarations of the Scriptures such as the foregoing, all who pretend to believe them necessarily admit there is a connection between Christ's death and our salvation. But some limit that connection to such a degree as to misrepresent the true teaching of divine revelation. The Arians, the Socinians, and the religious liberals are among those who hold unsatisfactory theories of how the death of Christ saves. Socinianism gives much prominence to the point that Christ is a teacher, and that as such he saves his people by instructing them concerning the will of God so they may escape a life of sin and its consequence, and be caused to live a life of holiness. But it is affirmed that he must be divinely shown to be a teacher from God and that his resurrection from the dead was chosen as the means of authentication. Therefore, it is reasoned, his death was an indispensable antecedent to his resurrection and in this sense he saves men through his death.

It is also said his death is a means of our salvation in that by dying as a martyr in defense of his teaching he gave the strongest testimony possible to the veracity and his belief in that teaching. Furthermore, Socinians say Jesus by his death gave a wonderful example of loyalty to truth. But they affirm the principal value of Jesus' death was in its manifestation of his love for men which constrains them to love God in return, to forsake sin, and to live righteously.

Doubtless Christ is a divinely sent teacher of whom the voice of God from heaven said, "Hear ye him," and his death and resurrection do prove him to be such. Moreover, all else that Socinians affirm as to the value of his death as a witness, as an example of loyalty, and as constraining men to love God is true and scriptural; but this is not the whole truth, nor are any of these the chief sense in which the death of Christ saves us. Some of the Scriptures cited state that we are saved by his blood. "He hath loved us and washed us from our sins in his own blood" (Rev. 1:5). These texts state that in some more special sense than those described, we are saved by the blood of Christ. A criminal under sentence of death needs more than teaching as to what is required by the law. Such might have been sufficient before he became a criminal. He needs more than evidence that the instruction given him is credible. He needs more than an example of faithfulness or a manifestation of loving interest. He is guilty and needs pardon. His only salvation

is a remission of his penalty, and that can properly be remitted only when the righteousness of the law can be otherwise supported. Unless he is first pardoned, all instruction is useless. The death of Christ is that ground on which God may properly order nonexecution of penalty on the sinner.

2. **Christ Died in Our Stead**—The Scriptures represent Christ as having died as a substitute for us. His death was vicarious. Had he not died we must have died. "The Son of man came . . . to give his life a ransom for many" (Matt. 20:28). "While we were yet sinners, Christ died for us" (Rom. 5:8). "Who gave himself a ransom for all" (1 Tim. 2:6). Jesus was made a little lower than the angels "that he . . . should taste death for every man" (Heb. 2:9). "For Christ also hath once suffered for sins, the just for the unjust" (1 Pet. 3:18).

It is sometimes said that these texts do not necessarily teach that the death of Christ was vicarious, but may mean merely that he died in our behalf and not in our stead, much as a soldier dies for the benefit of his countrymen but not in the place of them. Such is the theory of Socinians, as has been already shown. They deny that Christ died as our substitute, as do also Arians. Arianism claims Christ's death has value for our salvation principally in making him influential with God as intercessor for us. It holds that because of Christ's sacrifice in becoming incarnate, foregoing divine glory, and suffering and dying because of his love for men, God was well pleased with him and consequently grants his petitions for pardon of man's sins as he would not otherwise do. Whatever element of truth this theory may contain, it evidently is defective in omitting a very important element.

In opposition to the idea of Christ's death being vicarious it is said the word "for" in the texts before quoted, including the Greek prepositions from which it is translated, ἀντί (*anti*) in the first text and ὑπέρ (*huper*) in the others, mean only "on behalf of," "on account of," or "for the benefit of" us. That these terms are in some instances so used is readily admitted, as in the statement "Christ died for our sins." Evidently he did not die instead of our sins. But while this is true it is also true that "for" and the equivalent Greek terms mentioned may also mean "instead of." And with proof that in some of the foregoing texts these terms must be so understood we have good ground for always so understanding them when used of the death of Christ in relation to us. For proof

that the Greek prepositions ἀντί (*anti*) and ὑπέρ (*huper*) sometimes express that idea of "instead," the highest lexicographical authorities might be given, but more direct proof is possible. That the words "Christ died for *us*" mean in our stead is evident from the context, which says, "For scarcely *for* a righteous man will one die: yet peradventure for a good man some would even dare to die." But who could believe one would sacrifice his life for any mere benefit to a good man? Doubtless one would die for a good man only for the purpose of redeeming the good man's life, which otherwise must be lost.

When Caiaphas said, "It is expedient for us, that one man should die [ὑπέρ huper] *for* the people, and that the whole nation *perish* not" (John 11:50), he certainly meant that either Christ or the nation must *perish* and that Christ should die in its stead. Inspiration tells us that this was a prophecy that Christ should die *for*, instead of, the Jewish people. The word ἀντί (*anti*) translated "for" in Matthew 20:28 is used in the sense of substitution. "If he ask a fish, will he [ἀντί *anti*] for a fish," instead of a fish, "give him a serpent?" (Luke 11:11). Christ died for our sins, "the just for the unjust," in the sense that if he had not died for our sins we must have died. "The wages of sin is death." Man had sinned and was under sentence of death. But Christ died in his place so that in some sense it may propely be said his death was a substitute for that of man.

But it is objected by some that whether the death of Christ be regarded as a substituted penalty or a substitute for a penalty it is unjust and not admissible that the innocent should suffer vicariously for the guilty. Doubtless this is true if that suffering by the substitute were compulsory. Such would certainly be unjust. But if he voluntarily suffers for the guilty and the guilty is pardoned only on repentance and after giving evidence that the crime will not again be committed, then no valid evidence can be made against such vicarious suffering. If Christ be pleased to suffer for men as a means of supporting the divine holiness and law while God pardons the sinner after the interests of these have been properly protected, no reason is evident why he may not so suffer.

3. **Christ Died to Propitiate God**—To propitiate is to appease or to turn away the wrath of an offended person. It implies two parties at variance: one the offender and the other the offended. A propitiation is that which makes the aggrieved party favorable to

the offender. It is a reconciliation, an atonement, or an expiation. These words are synonymous in meaning. In the present consideration man is the offender, God is the offended one, and the blood of Christ is the propitiation. All texts that teach the death of Christ is for expiation, atonement, or reconciliation, teach that it is propitiatory.

This truth is declared by many texts. "Whom God hath set forth to be a propitiation through faith in his blood" (Rom. 3:25). "He is the propitiation for our sins" (1 John 2:2). "God . . . sent his Son to be the propitiation for our sins" (1 John 4:10). "We also rejoice in God through our Lord Jesus Christ, through whom we have now received the reconciliation" (Rom. 5:11, ASV). "All things are of God, who hath reconciled us to himself by Jesus Christ" (2 Cor. 5:18). The Greek words which are translated "propitiation" and synonymous terms are used, not only by the Septuagint and the New Testament, but by classical Greek writers to express the action of a person who turns aside the wrath of a deity. God is the one propitiated, not men.

But all those who deny an objective in the atonement, including all Socinians, make the reconciliation to refer wholly to man. They affirm that inasmuch as God is always in the right, it is not conceivable that anything that might be done can change him. Therefore, it is said, man must be the one who is reconciled to God by his being influenced to love and obey God. Such a view is assumed to have support in the words of Paul already quoted, "God was in Christ, reconciling the world unto himself" (2 Cor. 5:19). It is held that Jesus' only work in the world was that of persuading men to piety, and in no sense to propitiate God. But the context is a refutation of this Socinian theory, for there it is clearly implied that Christ's work of reconciliation was accomplished, and so also is the committing of the word of reconciliation to the apostles accomplished. After all this the Apostle exhorts men to be reconciled to God. In other words, they are exhorted to avail themselves of that reconciliation that Christ has effected with God. According to the Bible, this they are to do by faith in Christ, whom God hath made to be sin [a sin-offering] for us, who knew no sin; that we might be the righteousness of God in him" (v. 21). Without such a sin-offering God must impute the sins of men unto them. By it he might properly forgive their sins, because by it the bar to pardon was removed.

That the expression "be ye reconciled to God" implies in Bible usage the idea of making satisfaction to the offended party or accepting a satisfaction so made, is evident from other texts. Of David it is said, "Wherewith should he reconcile himself unto his master? should it not be with the heads of these men?" (1 Sam. 29:4). Here Saul was displeased with David and therefore was the one to be propitiated or reconciled to David. But David is said to reconcile himself to Saul. "If thou bring thy gift to the altar, and there rememberest that thy brother, hath aught against thee; leave there thy gift before the altar, and go thy way; first be reconciled to thy brother, and then come and offer thy gift" (Matt. 5:23, 24). Here the offerer is the offender and his brother is the offended one and needs to be reconciled. But the offender is exhorted to be reconciled to the offended. In both of these texts, and especially in the latter, we have an exhortation exactly parallel with that in 2 Corinthians 5:19. Therefore Paul's statement must be understood as meaning what that of Jesus certainly means. It must means that God is the one propitiated and we are to avail ourselves of his favor.

Another Socinian objection to the doctrine that the death of Christ is to propitiate God is that God is not an implacable and vengeful being who will be disposed to show mercy only when displeasure is satisfied by the death and sufferings of his own Son. The objector in describing the orthodox view as representing God as passionately revengeful greatly misrepresents that view. Those who teach that Christ reconciles men to God do not so think of God, but regard him as a God of love. Because of his love he gave his Son to die for men's salvation. We agree with Socinians that God is love, but we also believe and the Scriptures teach that he has other attributes—holiness and justice—and divine holiness must be regarded. God is moral ruler and it is important that his law be protected if the sinner is to be pardoned. The "wrath of God" abides on the sinner in the sense that God is displeased with his sinning and as moral ruler has the responsibility of inflicting the penalty of his law upon violators of it. In order to bring about the non-execution of the just penalty of the law on the sinner, proper satisfaction must be made in vindication of the divine law and holiness. This is the sense in which the death of Christ propitiates God.

4. **Christ Died to Redeem Man**—The death of Christ is often

represented in the Scriptures as a redemption, and men are said to be redeemed through his death. Other words of similar import are used to express the same idea, such as "ransomed," "purchased," and "bought." "Feed the church of God, which he hath purchased with his own blood" (Acts 20:28). "Being justified freely by his grace through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus" (Rom. 3:24). "Ye are not your own. For ye are bought with a price" (1 Cor. 6:19, 20). "In whom we have redemption through his blood" (Eph. 1:7). "Ye are not redeemed with corruptible things, as silver and gold, . . . but with the precious blood of Christ" (1 Pet. 1:18, 19). "Christ Jesus . . . gave himself a ransom for all" (1 Tim. 2:5, 6).

Those who deny a Godward aspect of the atonement affirm that redemption implies only deliverance. They regard only the effect, and reject the cause of it. The very words in the foregoing passages, "redeem," "ransom," "purchase," and "bought," which well express the idea of the Greek text, imply more than mere deliverance. They imply a deliverance as from slavery, exile, or penalty by means of buying back to a former condition by the payment of a price. That price which is paid is represented in the Greek as a λύτρον (*lutron*), a ransom, or redemption. The Scriptures represent salvation through Christ as more than a restoration to a former condition. It is restoration by a buying back, a redemption, and the price paid is the precious blood of Christ.

Opposers especially object that because the Scripture teaches that salvation is by grace and is given freely of God, therefore it cannot also be a result of purchase by the payment of a price. This argument would have weight if a commercial transaction were the subject under consideration. In such a case the payment of a debt satisfies all claims and there remains no room for the exercise of grace. But the sinner is guilty and is under sentence of death. To omit the infliction of that penalty on the sinner without atonement would violate the divine holiness and result in the downfall of God's government. Christ graciously dies in the sinner's stead, so that in some sense the law and character of God are vindicated while he freely pardons the sinner. Yet the death of Christ was not a substitute for man's suffering of penalty in such a sense that it becomes a matter of justice with God to remit the penalty for sin of all those for whom he died, as Calvinism has held. The paying of the ransom of the sinner is not of such a nature that the exercise of free grace in the individual's pardon is excluded. The Bible

explicitly teaches that the death of Christ is redemptive and yet that sin is actually pardoned when the individual believes on Christ.

The expressions redemption, purchase, and ransom, like propitiation, reconciliation, and atonement, when used of the death of Christ are to be understood as having a figurative sense. They are commercial and judicial terms, and have only a limited application to the great spiritual truths of the atonement. Like all figures, parables, and symbols, it is possible to press them too far in various details to the misrepresentation of the truth they are intended to teach. The different commercial terms such as "redeem" and "purchase" have been pressed too far by Calvinists in connection with the idea of a limited atonement. They have interpreted these terms to mean that Christ suffered the exact amount that all the elect deserved to suffer for their sins, and that because he has thus purchased their salvation it would be a matter of injustice on the part of God if he did not certainly save all those for whom Christ died.

5. **Christ Died to Declare God's Righteousness**—This is most positively stated in the Scriptures. "Being justified freely by his grace through the redemption which is in Christ Jesus: whom God hath set forth to be a propitiation through faith in his blood, to *declare his righteousness* for the remission of sins that are past, through the forbearance of God; to *declare,* I say, at this time his righteousness: that he might be just, and the justifier of him which believeth in Jesus" (Rom. 3:24-26). This plain statement by inspiration as to the purpose of Christ's death certainly leaves no room for rejection of a Godward element in the atonement. The suffering of Christ proclaims that God is righteous or holy and in doing so meets the demands of justice in such a sense that God is shown just while he justifies the ungodly.

But how does the death of Jesus declare the divine righteousness? Answers to this question differ among those who accept the objective element of the atonement as set forth in the foregoing quotation from Paul. One class affirms that while we are certain the death of Christ does declare the righteousness of God because it is so stated by Revelation, we cannot know how it declares it because this is not revealed. Doubtless the variety of opinions set forth on this point is reason for modesty in making assertions. Yet it is legitimate to inquire what is meant by the passage under consideration. Even if complete knowledge is not attainable here it is

reasonable to believe a degree of understanding is possible. Differences in the interpretation of this statement of the Scriptures are usually the result of some claiming to find more in it than others believe it teaches.

The theory that the death of Christ has no necessary connection with the forgiveness of sins, but is a purely arbitrary arrangement by which God is pleased to represent himself as being righteous, is objectionable. "It behooved Christ to suffer." In other words, it was necessary that he should sufer. It was not necessary as opposed to contingency, or he was not compelled to suffer, but it was necessary for something else—the pardon of sinners. "There is none other name under heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved" (Acts 4:12). "No man cometh unto the Father, but by me" (John 14:6). In its essential nature the death of Christ declares God's righteousness.

How, then, is the death of Christ in our stead a propitiation, a redemption, and a declaration of the divine holiness? These questions are in a great measure identical. A partial answer has been given more than once in the foregoing pages. The death of Christ removes the bar to pardon and makes possible the non-execution of penalty on the sinner. It does not eliminate the need of pardon. It does not bring it to pass that the sinner has not committed his past sins. It does not change the fact that he was responsible for his sinful acts. It does not change the fact of his guilt and desert of punishment. It does not change the fact that he may be justly punished or that the penalty may be justly inflicted upon him.

The death of Christ does make possible to God an order of non-execution of penalty on the sinner without any sacrifice of his personal holiness and without any lowering of the dignity of his holy law. It accomplishes the same result in these respects as would the infliction of the penalty on the sinner who is pardoned. It is declarative in that it is exponential of the important truth that God is a holy being and a righteous ruler. It satisfies the divine justice, both essential and administrative, in that it declares them by attaining their ends, which are the glory of God and the well-being of men.

But what would be the consequences if God should order non-execution of penalty on the sinner without the death of Christ or a proper atonement? Evidently the natural and inevitable result on the part of the subjects of God's government (to the extent they

became aware of the failure to execute penalty) would be to cease to respect that government. The moral Ruler himself would be despised, his law would cease to be obeyed, the threats of penalty would become meaningless, and government would give place to anarchy. But this is not the only bar to pardon. If the penalty on the sinner were remitted without atonement, God would cease to appear as a holy being. The moral law is holy because its giver is holy. God's law is determined by his own inner character. Then atonement is an indication, not only of God's righteous law, but also of his personal holiness. Since Christ has at infinite cost made an atonement by suffering in man's stead as a declaration of the righteousness of God, if men repents, thus giving assurance of future good conduct, and trusts in the mercy of God through the atonement Christ has made, there is no obstacle to the order by God of nonexecution of penalty upon him. No evil will result, but great good will follow in the well-being of the person pardoned and in the glory of God. While God freely justifies the ungodly, the death of Christ testifies that sin cannot be pardoned unless the ends of penalty are met.

IV. Reconciliation in the Old Testament Sacrifices

Devout readers of the Scriptures have commonly believed the Bible teaches that certain institutions and acts of the Old Testament are typical of spiritual truths of the gospel. If proof can be given that these are types—not mere "expressions of natural religion," as is affirmed by skeptics, but divinely given types—then we may discover to a degree the nature of the anti-typical truth by a study of the type. With evidence that the atonement for sin by the animal sacrifices of true religion in pre-Christian times was typical of the atonement of Christ, we may legitimately interpret his atonement in the light of those typical offerings. The general ideas of the typical must apply to the true atonement.

1. **Animal Sacrifices Typify Christ**—A type is an action or institution divinely prepared and appointed to represent a religious truth and to foreshow, by resemblance, those facts in the work of Christ on which the truth symbolized rests. A type is based on the fact of resemblance, but differs from a mere simile in that this analogy is not a result of chance, but is so because divinely preordained to typify. Because of the predictive element in them, types may be

called prophetic similitudes or acted prophecies as distinguished from those which are spoken. As surely as spoken prophecies furnish ground for doctrinal formulation so do these acted prophecies.

The New Testament writers clearly and repeatedly represent the Mosaic institutions as being typical. "Let no man therefore judge you in meat, or in drink or in respect of an holy day, or of the new moon, or of the sabbath-days: *Which are a shadow of things to come; but the body is of Christ"* (Col. 2:16, 17). The Levitical priests are said to "serve unto the *example* and *shadow* of heavenly things" (Heb. 8:5). The Mosaic tabernacle was "a *figure"* (Heb. 9:9), "*patterns* of things in the heavens," and "*figures* of the true" (Heb. 9:23, 24). These and other texts not only show that the different institutions and rites of the law were types, shadows—faint sketches, or adumbrations—but also that Christ and his redemptive work are the antitype or subtance by which the shadows were cast.

The offerings themselves are specifically described as being types of Christ, the true offering for sin. "For the law having a shadow of good things to come, and not the very image of the things, can never with those sacrifices which they offered year by year continually make the comers thereunto perfect" (Heb. 10:1). Here the implication is clear that the reason those animal sacrifices were not efficacious in the permanent removal of guilt was because they were but shadows of a true offering of sin. In the fifth, tenth, fourteenth, and nineteenth verses of this chapter the offering of the body of Christ and his blood are shown to be the true offering foreshadowed by those ancient animal sacrifices. Christ was "the Lamb of God, which taketh away the sin of the world" (John 1:29). Peter said we are redeemed "with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot" (1 Pet. 1:19). With this positive proof that the Old Testament sacrifices were divinely given types of the death of Christ, we may properly interpret the latter in the light of the former, while the New Testament teaching about the atonement serves as a guide to the interpreting of the Old Testament animal sacrifices.

2. **Old Testament Sacrifices were Expiatory**—It is not affirmed that the animals which were sacrificed on God's altars suffered as much as the guilty offerer should have suffered, but in some sense they were for the expiation of sin. In Leviticus 17:11 the eating of blood is forbidden and the reason given why it must not be eaten.

"For the life of the flesh is in the blood: and I have given it to you upon the altar to make an atonement for your souls: for it is the blood that maketh an atonement for the soul [by reason of the life—ASV]." The last clause of this verse implies that the blood makes atonement because of the life which is in it, this being a restatement of the first clause of the verse, which says "the life of the flesh is in the blood." Modern science has discovered what was stated by Moses, that the blood is the physical seat of life. The life of the animal resides in the blood. Therefore when it was sprinkled upon God's altars for expiation, it was the offering of a life to God instead of the life of the sinner which had been forfeited by sin, which is in full agreement with the New Testament representation that the death of Christ is propitiatory and substitutional. For this reason blood is represented as being necessary to expiation of sin.

That those animal sacrifices were vicarious is clear. One essential to every animal sacrifice under the Levitical system was that before he killed the sacrifice the offerer must lay or lean his hand upon it. By the solemn act he identified himself with it in such a sense that it might become his substitute and die in his stead. The vicarious nature of animal offerings is nowhere more clearly portrayed than in the offering of the first Passover. The destroying angel is represented as passing through the land at midnight to destroy the first-born in every home. But on the condition that in each Israelitish home a lamb would be sacrificed and its blood sprinkled upon the posts and lintels of the doors the angel would pass over those homes and the firstborn would be spared. This is plainly an instance of vicarious suffering. The lamb dies that the first-born might not die. An inspired New Testament writer has so explained the sacrifice of Christ. "Christ our passover is sacrificed for us" (1 Cor. 5:7). Further comment is unnecessary to prove that the sacrifice of the Passover is typical of the death of Christ and that the vicarious element in the former is confirmatory of the New Testament teaching that the death of Christ is in our stead.

The solemn rites connected with the sin-offering on the great Day of Atonement very definitely prove the death of Christ is for the removal of sin. The very name of this important sacred season when Israelites were to afflict their souls shows that atonement was the leading idea in its observance. Two goats were brought as a sin-offering for the whole congregation. One of them was killed and its blood sprinkled before the Lord in expiation of the sins of

the people. On the other goat, the scapegoat, the high priest laid both his hands and confessed over it all the sins of the people of Israel, after which it was sent away to an uninhabited region. By this double symbol sin is represented as being both expiated by the death of a substitute and also borne away. In the tenth chapter of Hebrews this annual national atonement is said to typify the atonement of Christ. Therefore as the first goat dies for the expiation of the sins; and as the second goat is represented as having the sins of the people laid upon it, so in some sense our sins are laid upon Christ, who bears them away.

Again, the unclean are represented as being made clean by virtue of sin-offerings. Those who had incurred ceremonial defilement were barred from the house of God on pain of death. Not until as sin-sacrifice was offered for them were they regarded as clean (Lev. 15:31). Likewise those morally defiled can come into the Divine presence and escape death, the penalty for sin, only through the death of Christ, by which alone they can be made clean.

V. Elements in the Biblical Doctrine of Reconciliation

The foregoing consideration of the teaching of the Scriptures concerning the atonement of Christ leads to the conclusion that the atonement is connected with the salvation of men and that it is necessary to their being saved. Even at the risk of some repetition, as a summary of what has been said and to give more definite form to the doctrine, it is now important to direct attention to the several elements of the doctrine as found in the Scriptures. These elements may be divided into (1) the subjective or manward aspects, and (2) the objective or Godward aspects.

1. **Subjective Elements**—Some theories of the atonement affirm that no bar to pardon exists as far as God is concerned and that the only reason why the death of Christ is necessary to man's salvation is in order to persuade him to forsake evil and accept God's pardon. Consequently these theories deny any Godward element in the atonement of Christ. Such theories are doubtless inadequate in the light of the Scriptures. Yet they do contain certain elements of truth that must be included in any true view of the reconciliation accomplished by Christ. We very willingly allow all of these subjective elements.

Foremost of these is the truth that the death of Christ is a marvelous manifestation of divine love which is calculated to produce repentance and love for God in return. This exhibition of the love

of God in Christ is often pointed to by the Biblical writers as an important purpose of his death. Doubtless also it is the great value as an example to all the followers of Christ of moral heroism in the cause of right. Many have counted themselves happy to fill up the measure of the sufferings of Christ and unflinchingly to face persecution and death because of the inspiration of that example. Again, the death of Christ is of great value in man's salvation as an antecedent to his resurrection from the dead, which is often represented as an evidence that he was all he claimed to be. This is the "sign of the prophet Jonah" which Jesus said would be given, and it is the evidence of the Messiahship to which Paul appealed in his remarkable sermon on Mars' Hill. A fourth reason for the death of Christ for man's salvation is its proclamation of his sincerity as a teacher or his full belief of his own teaching. It is not conceivable that he would voluntarily die for what he knew to be false; therefore he believed what he taught. In addition to these manward elements of the atonement which have characterized the Socinian doctrine may be added the Bushnellian idea that an important value of Christ's work lies in its authentic manifestation of God, through the most effective means of manifestation—vicarious suffering. Doubtless that is adapted to draw out the sinner's love for God and bring to him most vividly the great truth that God is good and ought to have his allegiance and that he should be good also as is God. These are indeed Scriptural truths and properly elements of the true doctrine of the atonement, but they do not include all the elements, nor even the most important elements of the doctrine.

2. **Objective Elements**—Different objective elements in the atonement have been shown by the foregoing review of the Scripture statements on the subject. While we should allow all these, we do well to guard the doctrine from erroneous ideas that have been held as objective elements.

Christ's death is in our stead or substitutional, so we need not die as a penalty for sin. His death is propitiatory, or a reconciliation, to propitiate God. This does not imply that the love of the Son is set over against the justice of the Father. The Father himself "so loved the world" that he gave his Son for their salvation. Both Father and Son possess equally all the divine attributes, including both justice and love. Christ's death is propitiatory in that it removes the bar to pardon. His death is redemptive, or is a

ransom or price paid to buy back to a former condition. This does not mean that it is a price paid to Satan, but is a satisfaction to the justice of God. Here the commercial idea is not to be pressed so far as to imply that Christ suffered the exact amount which all the elect should have suffered throughout eternity. His humiliation and death are an infinite price because of the infinite dignity of the offering. His death is also declarative in the sense that it proclaims the righteousness of God and the holiness of his law. In so doing the death of Christ witnesses to God's displeasure of sin and makes pardon possible. In the light of the Scriptures these must be regarded as Godward elements of the atonement.

The atonement, then, is for man's salvation, is necessary to his salvation, and is universal in its extent in that it makes possible the salvation of all men.

CHAPTER III

APPLICATION OF REDEMPTION

With the proof of the truth of atonement through Christ for man's redemption, the questions next to claim our attention are: What benefits are ours through the death of Christ? Are these benefits available to all men or for a selected number? Are they bestowed unconditionally upon those for whom they are intended or is their application to the individual dependent upon his voluntarily appropriating them by meeting requisite conditions? If salvation is conditional, what are those conditions? All of these are important questions.

I. Unconditional Benefits of the Atonement

Salvation from the penalty of sin is commonly thought of as the chief purpose of the atonement, which is doubtless true, but several other benefits also are derived from it. Some of these are conditional on man's part and some are in their very nature unconditional.

1. **Individual Existence**—The threatened penalty for sin of the first pair was death. This included spiritual death. The apostle Paul states that "sin revived, and I died" (Rom. 7:9). Death as a consequence of sin is frequently represented in the Sacred Writings as a present state. But the penalty for that first sin also included physical death. This is certain from the necessity of barring Adam and Eve from the tree of life when they had sinned, lest they eat of it and live forever. But if the full penalty for sin in respect to physical death had been immediately executed when the first sin was committed, the race would have been cut off at its beginning, and none of the descendants of the first pair would ever have existed. It is inconceivable, considering what human nature is, that the race could have been propagated from Adam and Eve after their spirits became disembodied.

The only ground for delay in the execution of physical death is the atonement of Christ. Only because the seed of the woman was to bruise the head of the serpent and make salvation possible, God could consistently spare Adam to repentance, and permit the propagation of a race that could likewise be saved. Divine goodness is reconcilable with the permission of the existence of the race only on the ground that a way would be made for their redemp-

tion from that morally helpless condition consequent on Adam's sin. The question may be asked at this point, Would it not have been more consistent with divine goodness had the existence of the race been cut off with the first sin than that millions of moral beings should have been exposed to the possibility of endless punishment? No special problem relative to the goodness of God exists at this point. If the redemption provided by Christ does not vindicate God in the continuance of a race of moral beings after Adam's sin, then there is no vindication of God's original creation of such beings. The question raised here is identical with the general problem of theodicy already considered. Great goodness is manifested by God in giving existence to free beings. Existence and freedom may be wrongly used and so become great evils, as so many other blessings, but in themselves they are benefits of inestimable value.

Every blessing that comes to man—every physical pleasure, the joy that comes through knowledge, the happiness of love and hope, and of the domestic relations, the capacity for thought, by which skeptics endeavor to deny the work of Christ—is due to existence itself, and existence is an unconditional benefit of the atonement.

2. **Possibility of Universal Salvation**—The death of Christ did not make the salvation of all men actual, but it so declared the righteousness of God that God might consistently offer salvation on the ground of that atonement without any reflection on his holiness as a divine person or as moral ruler. Salvation is made *possible* through the atonement. Because the possibility of the salvation of men is secured regardless of the choice of themselves, therefore it is an unconditional benefit of the atonement. Also, the possibility of salvation is procured by the death of Christ for *all* men. In this sense especially he is the "Savior of all men." Christ by the grace of God tasted death "for every man" (Heb. 2:9). But the universality of the reconciliation of Christ is deferred for fuller discussion in its appropriate place.

3. **Salvation for Those Dying in Infancy**—There was a time when the unscriptural assumption was prevalent that infants who died without baptism were lost. Evangelical Christians of the present are almost unanimous in repudiating that theory. Though the Bible does not explicitly state that infants who die go to heaven, the implication is clear. In the light of the revealed love and justice

of God, it is inconceivable that God should allow them to be lost. Also Jesus said, "Suffer little children, and forbid them not, to come unto me: for of such is the kingdom of heaven" (Matt. 19:14).

Infants have no guilt and are not punishable. They are not morally responsible and therefore do not deserve penalty for their own acts. Neither does any guilt attach to them because of Adam's sin, in which they had no part, nor does their inherited depravity merit penalty. The salvation of infants through Christ's atonement, then, cannot refer to their being saved from punishment. Yet they are depraved naturally, and in its very nature that perversion of moral nature constitutes an obstacle to full blessedness in this world or in heaven. Moreover, because only the pure in heart can see God, and morally depraved beings are unfit to associate with holy angels and redeemed saints in heaven, it follows that those dying in infancy must be sanctified from that depravity of their natures unconditionally through the atonement of Christ.

Aside from native depravity the infant in no way differs from newly created beings. He has no moral desert. He deserves no punishment nor merits reward. In this he differs from those who have passed a period of probation. Therefore the title of infants to heaven and their blessedness there must be unconditional through the merits of Christ and his atonement. But here the difficulty is met that led to the complaints of certain of the servants in the parable of the Vineyard: Is it just that those who have borne the burden and stress of probationary testing should be rewarded no more than those saved without effort? Probably at least a partial solution of the difficulty is found in the distinction between salvation and reward, All are saved by grace, but in addition, it may be assumed, is reward which is in proportion to one's faithfulness. "Our light affliction, which is but for a moment, worketh for us a far more exceeding, and eternal weight of glory" (2 Cor. 4:17). The unconditional salvation of infants through the atonement of Christ consists, then, in the sanctification of their natures from native depravity, and the procuring for them a title to heaven and blessedness therein.

4. **Power Requisite for Probation**—As a result of natural depravity, unregenerate men are unable of themselves continually to do good or to choose good for its own sake. Jesus said, "No man can come to me, except the Father which hath sent me draw him"

(John 6:44). Only by the revelation of the Spirit of God can spiritual truth be truly known (Matt. 16:17). Christ "was the true Light, which lighteth *every* man that cometh into the world" (John 1:9). "The grace of God which bringeth salvation hath appeared to all men" (Titus 2:11). These texts leave no place for the theory of Semi-Pelagianism that man has natural power to forsake sin and turn to God without divine aid. In the light of the fact that the divine drawing is necessary to the repentance of a sinner, it follows that the conditions for a fair probation require that there be afforded to all men unconditionally gracious help in order to repentance. Such gracious influence is procured and freely given to all unconditionally through the atonement of Christ. This gracious help is the chief requisite to a fair probation for depraved man.

In objection to the idea that man in this life is under conditions suitable to probation, it is sometimes pointed out that probationary privileges are unequally distributed. Some persons are more depraved naturally, have less opportunity for knowledge of the will of God, and enjoy less of religious influence than do others. Evidently this is all true. But it is also true that "unto whomsoever much is given, of him shall be much required"; and he to whom less is given, of him God will require less. The inequality in opportunity will be equalized in corresponding retribution. Obligation is equal to, but never in excess of one's ability. Therefore if one may be lost it is certain that he may be saved. If he has power to sin he necessarily has power, either naturally or by grace, to refrain from sinning. This follows from the nature of sin.

That all men have capacity and opportunity for a fair probation in the present life is questioned especially in the case of the heathen. Though Scriptures do not state specifically that the heathen have conditions suitable to a fair probation, yet it is properly inferred from what the Bible says that they have such conditions. In the light of a principle already stated, if the heathen have no knowledge of right nor sense of moral duty they have no responsibility and will be saved on the same ground as are infants or idiots.

But it is evident that all men may have some knowledge of God through his works in nature. Such evidence is continually before them. "Because that which may be known of God is manifest in them; for God hath showed it unto them. For the invisible things of him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being

understood by the things that are made, even his eternal power and Godhead; so that they are without excuse" (Rom. 1:19, 20). By intuition and rational processes all may know God is, and, to the extent he is known by men, they are obligated to worship and do what they believe would please him. The apostle Paul wrote of the heathen of his day that though they did not have the written revelation of God's will, yet they "do by nature the things contained in the law; these, having not the law, are a law unto themselves: which show the work of the law written in their hearts, their conscience also bearing witnesss, and their thoughts in the meanwhile accusing or else excusing one another" (Rom. 2:14, 15). All men are obligated to conform to the requirements of their conscience, and only by so doing can they be saved.

That divine help is given to all men that they might obtain salvation is properly inferred from the Scriptures and reason. That retribution is to be according to light and ability is clearly taught in the Bible. Therefore the conditions for a fair probation are afforded to all men in this life. If this is not so, then another probation period must be yet future, which idea is contrary to the Scriptures.

II. Conditional Benefits of the Atonement

The benefits of the atonement hitherto considered are immediate in that they are conferred on the individual without the requirement of any action on his part in order for their reception. Attention is now directed to what may be properly designated as conditional benefits. These may be enjoyed only by one's voluntarily appropriating them by the meeting of divinely specified requirements. The nature of this class of benefits is deferred for later discussion. Our present purpose is to show the truth of their conditionality.

1. **Salvation from Sin Conditional**—Salvation from sin in its broad aspect as here used includes, not only pardon, but also regeneration, entire sanctification, the baptism of the Holy Spirit, and power to live a holy life. All of these are obtainable only by one's voluntarily meeting proper conditions. But proof of the conditionality of the initial work of salvation is especially important, for when this is established the conditionality of the other aspects of salvation mentioned are generally admitted, and particularly is this proof important because it is on this point that Calvinism had denied conditionality. Grounds for the conditionality of salvation

are: (1) the power of alternative choice, which has previously been shown to be an essential faculty of human nature; (2) the divine drawing of the sinner to Christ, which adequately supplies the natural lack of inclination to righteousness because of depravity; (3) divinely specified requirements clearly set forth in revelation as necessary to salvation.

The Scriptures very definitely represent forgiveness of sin as conditional. The principal Scripture texts in support of this are those which connect the meeting of certain conditions with salvation from the penalty of sin. Repentance and faith are most commonly set forth as the necessary conditions for pardon. "He that *believeth and is baptized* shall be saved; but he that believeth not shall be damned" (Mark 16:16). Nothing is clearer in this Great Commission than that the personal appropriation of the salvation proclaimed by the apostles was altogether optional with the hearer. In their subsequent preaching the apostles preached salvation as available only to those who met proper conditions. "Then Peter said unto them, *Repent, and be baptized* every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins, and ye shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost" (Acts 2:38). Here repentance is made conditional to salvation.

In answer to the Philippian Jailer's inquiry, "What must I do to be saved?" Paul said, "*Believe* on the Lord Jesus Christ, and thou shalt be saved" (Acts 16:31). In harmony with the words of Jesus in the Great Commission, the Apostle to the Gentiles here teaches faith as the condition for pardon. No truth is given greater prominence in the Pauline writings than the important truth that salvation is conditional on men's voluntary faith in Christ. This is the sense of the extended argument of the first nine chapters of the Roman epistle. Examples of many specific statements in that argument are: "I am not ashamed of the gospel of Christ: for it is the power of God unto salvation *to every one that believeth*" (Rom. 1:16). "But to him that worketh not, *but believeth* on him that justifieth the ungodly, his faith is counted for righteousness" (Rom. 4:5). Of equal value with the foregoing texts in proof of the conditionality of salvation is the great word of our Lord, "For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that *whosoever believeth* in him should not perish, but have everlasting life" (John 3:16).

Another class of texts which confirm and add strength to those

already given as proof that personal application of salvation is dependent upon the meeting of the requisite conditions by the sinner, are those which declare that those persons who do not meet such conditions will not be saved. "He that believeth not shall be damned" (Mark 16:16). "He that believeth on him is not condemned: but he that believeth not the Son shall not see life; but the wrath of God abideth on him" (v. 36).

Reason also gives support to the truth of the conditionality of salvation. We have already shown that man is free in secular affairs. In morals he has power to choose to do righteously by the grace of God, or to choose to commit sin. If he were pardoned of past sins without repentance he would at once again become guilty and his pardon would avail nothing. Therefore on the ground of his moral freedom, repentance is a necessary condition of pardon. Also in view of the fact that the atonement makes pardon possible by the vindication of God's holiness, it is a necessary condition for salvation that the sinner believe in that atonement if it is to serve its intended purpose of declaring the righteousness of God while he justifies the guilty.

Though justification and regeneration are distinct in nature, yet they are effected simultaneously, and the same act of faith is the condition for both. Entire sanctification and the Holy Spirit baptism, which also occur simultaneously, are through prayer (Luke 11:13) and faith (Acts 26:18). The exercise of the keeping power of God is "through faith" (1 Pet. 1:5).

2. **Special Providence Through Prayer**—In addition to salvation from sin are various other gracious benefits that may be obtained through prayer and faith. There is a true voluntariness in prayer, even though faith is inspired directly by the Holy Spirit. These gracious benefits through prayer cannot properly be classed with other special providences which God bestows on his children unconditionally such as special protection from unforeseen danger.

Not the least of these special providences through prayer is divine physical healing. This, like salvation, is a conditional benefit of the atonement. That it is through the atonement is stated in the Scriptures. "Himself took our infirmities and our sicknesses" (Matt. 8:17). This is quoted from the great atonement chapter of the Old Testament, Isaiah 53, and evidently means that through his atoning death he made possible our physical healing. All other benefits received in answer to prayer are through the atonement,

by which alone God may consistently bless those deserving of penalty. These other benefits include material blessings such as food, clothing, or shelter, as well as divine guidance, and comfort when obtained through special prayer.

3. **Future Blessedness**—Future blessedness of men is represented throughout the Bible as conditioned upon their voluntary choice and action. The first step essential to future blessedness in heaven is pardon for sin and divine help to refrain from sinning thereafter, both of which are conditional. The second thing essential to blessedness in the future life is voluntary obedience to God's Word throughout life after conversion.

The great burden of Jesus' teaching concerning his second coming in Matthew 24 was that men "be ready" for it by righteous conduct. In the parables of the Ten Virgins and of the Talents the same general truth is emphasized. Also the description of the last judgment, in Matthew 25, represents the blessedness of the righteous as the consequence of their past benevolent conduct. It is not to be supposed that Jesus taught salvation from guilt is obtainable by works, but when one has been justified by grace he must live righteously to retain that justification and to gain blessedness in heaven.

III. Universality of the Opportunity for Salvation

No point concerning the application of salvation has been the subject of more controversy than that of the extent of the opportunity for salvation. This question necessarily includes another: the extent of the atonement. Did Christ die for all men or for only an elect company? If he died for all, is the opportunity of salvation therefore alike to all? These questions are not identical. A certain modified form of Calvinism holds that Christ died for all men in that his sacrifice was infinite and sufficient for all, but that the opportunity to be actually saved is granted only to the elect.

The question concerning who may be saved through Christ naturally leads to the Calvinistic controversy on the one hand and to the contention of Universalism on the other. Pure Calvinism affirms that the sufferings of Christ were sufficient only for the elect, and therefore that only the elect can possibly be saved. Opportunity of salvation is not afforded to the non-elect. A fuller review of the Calvinistic system is reserved for the following division of this chapter. The common theory of universalism begins with the commercial theory of the atonement usually held by Cal-

vinists. Universalists assume, as do Calvinists, that all those for whom Christ died will be certainly and unconditionally saved. But instead of holding that Christ died only for the elect, they declare he died for all men; therefore, all men will be saved. The proofs given in the preceding division of this chapter of the conditionality of salvation, if connected with the proofs of the universality of the atonement, constitute complete disproof of this universalist theory.

Our present purpose is not to show that all men will be saved, but that all men have the opportunity to be saved if they choose. Only from the Scriptures can we know what is the extent of the atonement, and for whom salvation is actually offered.

1. **Christ Died for All Men**—Not one text in all the Bible states directly that Christ did not die for all men or that he died only for an elect company. No advocate of a limited atonement pretends that there exists any such direct proof of his theory. But many texts specifically affirm, or clearly imply, that he did die for all men. Of Jesus it is said "that he by the grace of God should taste death for every man" (Heb. 2:9). No language could more definitely declare that Christ died for all men than does this text. "Every man" means *every* man. It cannot be properly interpreted to mean anything else. The idea of a limited atonement, or that Christ did not die for all, is entirely excluded.

It is further said of Christ, "Who gave himself a ransom for all" (1 Tim. 2:6). And again, "He died for all" (2 Cor. 5:15). These are equally conclusive with the words of the writer to the Hebrews in support of a universal atonement. We readily allow that "all" and other universal terms may sometimes be used in a limited sense in the Bible as they are in common speech, but certainly the word "all" is not so used in this latter text. The proof of the fullest universal sense of the term in the passage under consideration is in the immediate context. "We thus judge, that if one died for all, then were all dead." Here the universality of spiritual death is argued from the means employed for raising men to spiritual life. Therefore the evident fact that spiritual death is universal, which even Calvinists admit, is proof that the death of Christ is for all men or equally universal as an atonement.

Also it is said of Christ, "He is the propitiation for our sins: and not for ours only, but also for the sins of the whole world" (1 John 2:2). This and other texts which represent Christ as dying for the entire world constitute another class of passages in support of the universality of the atonement.

2. **Salvation Is for All Men**—A certain modified form of Calvinism avoids the difficulties of a limited-atonement theory by affirming that Christ died for all men, but it denies that salvation is offered to any except the elect. In opposition to such a theory the Scriptures teach salvation is for all men. "For therefore we both labor and suffer reproach, because we trust in the living God, who *is the Savior of all men,* specially of those that believe." Unless God be the Savior of all men in a sense similar to that in which he especially saves those who believe, the analogy the Apostle here draws is without foundation in fact. If it were true that some were certainly reprobated unconditionally to everlasting punishment, no temporal benefit could properly be called salvation in any sense. The sense of the text evidently is that the salvation of all men is possible and salvation becomes actual to those who believe. In this respect God is specially the Savior of believers.

An example of another class of texts which show that the salvation of all is made possible is John 3:16, 17. "For God so loved *the world,* that he gave his only begotten Son, that *whosoever* believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life. . . . That the world through him might be saved." The term "whosoever" in this passage, like other universal terms already considered, must properly be understood of all men. It is coextensive with "the world," and the "whole world" (1 John 2:2). The term "world" cannot be properly paraphrased the "world of the elect." The elect are never called the world by the Scriptures, but are presented as having been called out of it. Jesus said, "Ye are not of the world, but I have chosen you out of the world, therefore the world hateth you" (John 15:19)). If the "world" in this text meant the elect it would declare whosoever of that elect world for whom Christ died would believe in him should not perish, implying that those of the elect who do not believe will perish, which would be self-contradictory.

It may be argued in favor of the universality of the opportunity of salvation that the redemption provided by Christ is coextensive with the effects of Adam's sin. "But not as the offense, so also is the free gift. For if through the offense of one many be dead, much more the grace of God, and the gift by grace, which is by one man, Jesus Christ, hath abounded unto many. . . . Therefore as by the offense of one judgment came upon all men to condemnation; even so by the righteousness of one the free gift came upon

all men unto justification of life" (Rom. 5:15, 18). That Christ has provided salvation for all those lost through Adam's sin is shown by the same language being applied to both: "judgment came upon *all men.*" Even Calvinists admit the "all men" of the first statement includes all the descendants of Adam. Then the salvation provided by Christ is affirmed in the second clause to be for the entire human race.

3. **The Gospel Is to Be Preached to All**—"And he said unto them, Go ye into all the world, and preach the gospel to every creature. He that believeth and is baptized shall be saved; but he that believeth not shall be damned" (Mark 16:15, 16). These solemn words clearly teach that the gospel is for all. Belief of it produces salvation, but disbelief leads to punishment. It is therefore implied that it is the duty of all men to believe. But why should the gospel be preached to all men if many of them are predestined to eternal punishment? They could not possibly do other than reject it and so increase their damnation. If it makes possible to them no mercy, it is not glad tidings, but a message of doom.

If it is the divinely enjoined duty of all men to believe on Christ, then such belief is possible. If it is not possible, God is unjust in requiring it and insincere in offering it. If it is the duty of one to exercise saving faith in Christ for salvation, that faith must be preceded by the belief that Christ has actually provided salvation for him. But if the atonement is limited to the elect, then all others are required to believe a falsehood. Moreover, not one of the elect can logically exercise saving faith or trust in the mercy of God through Christ unless he first has assurance *before he is converted* that he is of the elect and therefore that there is salvation in Christ for him.

Only on the ground that Christ died for all men, that pardon is possible to all, and that all may actually believe and be saved can the justice of God and the sincerity of the Lord Jesus be vindicated in the giving of the Great Commission.

4. **God Wills the Salvation of All**—"For I have no pleasure in the death of him that dieth, saith the Lord God: wherefore turn yourselves, and live ye" (Ezek. 18:32). "As I live, saith the Lord God, I have no pleasure in the death of the wicked; but that the wicked turn from his way and live" (Ezek. 33:11). "For this is good and acceptable in the sight of God our Savior; who will have all

men to be saved, and to come unto the knowledge of the truth" (1 Tim. 2:3, 4). "The Lord is not slack concerning his promise, as some men count slackness; but is long-suffering to us-ward, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance" (2 Pet. 3:9). These and many other texts of similar meaning which might be cited, so clearly represent God as unwilling that men should be lost and desirous that they be saved that little comment is needed.

The last text quoted plainly states that God is "not willing that any should perish." Therefore those who perish do so contrary to God's will, and not as a result of it as the Calvinistic doctrine of reprobation of the non-elect to punishment implies. God's attitude towards those who perish is not merely one of passive willingness. He "will have all men to be saved." This implies that those who perish do so in spite of all God can do. It implies that he would not fail to provide atonement for them and give whatever assisting grace is necessary to their acceptance of salvation. God has done and is doing his part to save all men. If they are not saved it is not his fault. This is evident from a casual reading of the Scriptures.

The failure of men to be saved is represented in the Bible as being due to their own fault in not accepting God's offered mercy. "How often would I have gathered thy children together, even as a hen gathereth her chickens under her wings, and ye would not!" (Matt. 23:37). "And ye will not come to me, that ye might have life" (John 5:40). These and all other texts which teach that men are lost because of their own refusal to accept salvation are proof that the atonement and the gracious help to be saved are provided for all. The destruction of sinners is described as being self-secured, which implies that their salvation was possible. If no atonement was made for reprobates and if no gracious help to accept salvation was provided, then men could not properly be represented as responsible for their own destruction. The only reasonable sense of those texts which declare men are lost through their own fault is that all now have the opportunity to be saved, and that God has provided salvation for them and endowed them either by nature or by grace with power freely to accept it or reject it.

The universality of the opportunity for the salvation of all men is evident from the statements of the Scriptures already cited. Christ died for all men, not only for the elect. Salvation is pro-

vided for all, and all may actually be saved who choose to meet the conditions on which it is offered. All have power to meet those conditions. Jesus commanded that the gospel be preached to every creature and promised that salvation would be the portion of all who would believe it. God desires that all men be saved and has therefore done all he can do save them. If any are not saved it is their own fault.

IV. Predestination

No scriptural soteriology is complete that omits a consideration of the question of predestination. Some of the questions already discussed in the chapter logically lead to the question of predestination. Heretofore it has been noticed incidentally. Now more particular consideration of it is in order.

1. **The Calvinistic Theory**—Calvinistic predestinarianism has held a large place in Protestant theology in the past, and has been a matter of extended controversy. The polemic discussion of it has greatly decreased in recent years, partly because of modifications in the views of Calvinists, and partly because of the fruitlessness of past controversy. Yet the Calvinistic system remains substantially unchanged and represents the belief of multitudes of professors of Christianity.

A clear distinction should be made between the Scripture doctrine of predestination and that theory of predestination held by Calvinists. The latter is the first of the notable five points that differentiate Calvinism from Arminianism. The Remonstrants, a number of leading Arminians, formulated and set forth in the year 1610 the five points in which they differed with Calvinism. These are: (1) Conditionality of salvation; (2) Universality of the atonement; (3) Moral freedom; (4) Resistibility of grace; and (5) Possibility of final apostasy. The counter tenets of the Calvinistic system are: (1) Predestination; (2) Limited atonement; (3) Moral necessity; (4) Irresistibility of saving grace; and (5) The absolute final perseverance of believers.

Each of these two groups of doctrines is self-consistent. To hold any one of the five points logically requires the holding of all the others in that group. If the doctrine of particular predestination were true in the sense that only a part of the race were ordained to salvation, then it would be unreasonable, as true Calvinism holds, that atonement should be made for that portion which God had decided not to save. Moral freedom would be excluded in favor of

moral inability, as there could be no power to choose what does not exist. The irresistibility of saving grace would follow, for none can resist the purposes of the sovereign will of God. And if God had unconditionally predestined one to be saved in heaven, he will necessarily cause him, not only to be converted, but to continue faithful to the end.

Of these five points we have already had occasion to discuss the questions of the conditionality of salvation, the extent of the atonement, and free will. Now we are to give special consideration to the theories of predestination and final perseverance.

No higher authority on the Calvinistic theory of predestination can be cited than the Westminster Confession of Faith. It has been revised at different times, especially by the Presbyterian Church in this country in the year 1903, but it is still substantially unchanged on the point of predestination. It reads, "By the decree of God for the manifestation of his glory, some men and angels are predestinated unto everlasting life, and others foreordained to everlasting death. These men and angels, thus predestinated and foreordained, are particularly and unchangeably designed; and their number is so certain and definite that it cannot be either increased or diminished. Those of mankind that are predestinated unto life, God, before the foundation of the world was laid, according to his eternal and immutable purpose, and the secret counsel and good pleasure of his will, hath chosen in Christ unto everlasting glory, out of his mere free grace and love, without any foresight of faith or good works, or perseverance in either of them or any other thing in the creature, as conditions and causes moving him thereto, and all to the praise of his glorious grace. As God hath appointed the elect unto glory, so hath he, by the eternal and most free purpose of his will, foreordained all the means thereunto. Wherefore, they who are elected being fallen in Adam, are redeemed by Christ; are effectually called unto faith in Christ by his Spirit working in due season; are justified, adopted, sanctified, and kept by faith in his power through faith unto salvation. Neither are any other redeemed by Christ, effectually called, justified, adopted, sanctified, and saved, but the elected only. The rest of mankind God was pleased, according to the unsearchable counsel of his own good will, whereby he extendeth or withholdeth mercy as he pleaseth, for the glory of his sovereign power over his creatures, to pass by, and to ordain to dishonor and wrath for their sin, to the praise of his glorious justice."

Predestination as here described has its basis in the Calvinistic doctrine of divine decrees. According to this latter doctrine all events are the result of decrees of God from eternity. Decrees concerning the destiny of men and angels are called predestination. The doctrine of decrees is stated in the Westminster creed as follows: "God from all eternity did by the most wise and holy counsel of his own will freely and unchangeably ordain whatsoever comes to pass." Disproof of the doctrine of particular predestination will furnish sufficient refutation of the objectionable aspects of the doctrine of the divine decrees.

Predestination is used of the divine predetermination of the destinies of men, both good and evil. Those ordained to salvation are said to be the elect. Those ordained to be lost are said to be reprobates.

2. **Election**—In the Calvinistic sense of the term, election means that choice by God of particular persons to enjoy everlasting blessedness, which choice is made by him "without any foresight of faith or good works, or perseverance in either of them or any other thing in the creature, as conditions or causes moving him thereto." Election in the Calvinistic view is wholly by God's sovereign will, and in no sense is it determined by the will or character of those elected. The question which here confronts us for answer is, Is Calvinian election identical with the election described in the Scriptures? Or what is the nature of the latter?

The Scriptures mention three kinds of election. The first is the election of individuals to perform some particular service. Isaac and Jacob were chosen of God instead of Ishmael and Esau to be the progenitors of Christ. Cyrus was chosen to build the temple, and the twelve apostles were elected by Jesus to fill that high office in his church. But no such election insured them against missing everlasting blessedness. "Judas by transgression fell," and Paul recognized the possibility of his becoming a "castaway." Election in this sense has no more to do with one's being unconditionally chosen to final salvation than does one's being divinely called to the gospel ministry today. Neither can it be shown that such election was irrespective of one's character and qualifications for the performance of such work.

The second kind of election referred to in the Bible is that of nations or groups of persons to exalted religious privileges. A notable example is the nation of Israel, which was elected to be the

bearer of true religion and recipient of revelation prior to the advent of Christ. But the election of this nation, as a nation, did not result in an unconditional election to final salvation of the individuals composing it. If this sort of election included the final blessedness of each individual, the rebellious persons like Korah, Dathan, and Abiram, idolaters such as Ahab and Athaliah, and the betrayer and the crucifiers of our Lord will certainly all be saved.

Christians especially are called the "elect." As a class they are elected of God to salvation and future blessedness. As the Jews were once God's chosen people, so now he has elected that all those who believe shall be his people. This is the great truth taught in the ninth chapter of Romans (vv. 24, 30). Whoever chooses to become a believer may join that class and thus become one of the elect. Election of believers, as a class, to salvation through Christ does not imply that particular individuals are unconditionally and infallibly predestined to it nor that those who have become members have their salvation secured against the possibility of apostasy. Neither does the conditional election here described exclude, or imply the necessary reprobation of, those who fail of election through unbelief.

A third kind of election is that of individuals to divine sonship and future blessedness on the ground of divine foresight of their disposition freely to choose salvation. In the true and Biblical view of personal election men are not unconditionally chosen in order to faith, obedience, and holiness, but *because* of divine foresight of faith and obedience. This conditional predestination is the only kind that is compatible with the definite Scripture teaching of the conditionality of salvation, which has already been discussed. Also it cannot be shown that any text of Scripture teaches other than a conditional election of individuals. Jesus said, "I have chosen [elected] you out of the world" (John 15:19). But such choosing out was by his changing their hearts, which, according to other texts, is conditional upon their forsaking the world. Paul said, "God hath from the beginning chosen you to salvation through sanctification of the Spirit and belief of the truth" (2 Thess. 2:13). The belief of the truth is not the result of the choosing, but the choosing is through foresight of the belief. Peter also writes to his brethren in Christ that they are "elect according to the foreknowledge of God the Father, through sanctification of the Spirit, unto

obedience and sprinkling of the blood of Jesus Christ" (1 Pet. 1:2). In this text election is said to be according to the divine foreknowledge, but that election consists in having the work of salvation effected in their hearts. None are ever said to be of the elect who are not saved.

A text which is especially depended upon by Calvinists for the support of their doctrine of election reads as follows: "For whom he did foreknow, he also did predestinate to be conformed to the image of his Son, that he might be the first-born among many brethren. Moreover whom he did predestinate, them he also called: and whom he called, them he also justified: and whom he justified, them he also glorified" (Rom. 8:29, 30). In interpreting this 29th verse it is to be read forward, and not backward as the Calvinistic interpretation would require. No unconditional predestination is the ground of God's foreknowledge of particular persons to be saved. The predestination mentioned in this text is because of the divine foreknowledge. "Foreknow" from προέγνω (*proegno*) means simple knowing beforehand. It is to be clearly distinguished from "predestinate," as is done in the text. To "foreknow" as here used is to know beforehand that the particular persons referred to will freely accept the salvation of Christ when it is offered to them. With this sense of "foreknow" what follows is clear. God foresaw that some would freely choose to love and serve him. Therefore he predetermined and made provisions accordingly that they should be "conformed to the image of his Son" through regeneration by the Spirit. But it was not enough that he should foreknow that some persons would choose to love and obey him, nor yet that he should predetermine to save them. "Them he *also called*" through the preaching of the gospel. These heeded the call of the gospel and consequently were "justified" or pardoned. Lastly, those thus justified are "glorified" with God's presence now and the blessedness of heaven hereafter. No support whatever is given to Calvinistic election by this text. It is only when one's mind is previously filled with the Calvinistic view that he can suppose that theory is supported by this text.

Another text much relied upon by predestinarians reads: "According as he hath chosen us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love: having predestinated us unto the adoption of children by Jesus Christ unto himself, according to the good pleasure of his

will" (Eph. 1:4, 5). For different reasons this text fails to support Calvinistic election. First there is no proof that the divine election and predestination to adoption is unconditional on the part of those elected. It cannot be shown that the divine election of these before the foundation of the world was not on the ground of divine foresight of faith and love on their part. Such must be the nature of any personal election to salvation in the light of the common Scripture teaching of the conditionality of salvation. Again it cannot be shown that this passage teaches personal election. The context shows clearly that it affirms, not a personal, but a collective election to the privileges of the gospel. In other words, who are meant by "us"? The antecedent in verse 1 is saints or Christians, whether Jews or Gentiles. This group, believers, are the ones whom God had intended from the earliest period to make his people, and not the Jews, who later had been temporarily regarded as God's elect.

In the ninth chapter of Romans Paul sets forth the same great truth, which evidently was very dear to him who was the Apostle to the Gentiles. The fact that those to whom Paul wrote consisted of both Jews and Gentiles, and that some Jews were disposed to question the right of the Gentiles to the divine favor, gave special occasion for the statement of this truth. The Apostle teaches that the admission of the Gentiles to the salvation of Christ was not a disregard by God of his promises to Abraham, nor a contradiction of his former action in especially favoring the Jews, but that from before the time of Abraham, even "before the formation of the world," he had chosen to make those his children who would believe. See Rom. 9:24. The election of the believing Gentiles as well as Jews is frequently mentioned in the Ephesian epistle, especially in chapter 1. After speaking of this election of Christians in general he mentions in verse 12 those who "first trusted in Christ," the believing Jews, after which he says, "In whom ye also trusted, after that ye heard the word of truth." The gathering "together in one of all things in Christ" (v. 10) certainly refers to the admission of the Gentiles.

Not only does predestinarianism lack support in these texts on which it most depends, but much positive teaching of the Scripture absolutely excludes it. Proof has already been given of the conditionality of salvation, the universality of the atonement, and the power of alternative choice. These leave no room for uncondi-

tional predestination. But they do remarkably affiliate with the sense of predestination here supported.

With the disproof of the unconditional election of a part of mankind to final blessedness, no place remains for the unconditional reprobation of the remaining portion to future punishment. Election and reprobation fall together. Therefore no separate consideration of the latter is necessary.

3. **Absolute Final Perseverance**—One of the ablest advocates of this doctrine, A. H. Strong, states it as follows: "In view of the original purpose and continuous operation of God, all who are united to Christ by faith will infallibly continue in a state of grace and will finally attain to everlasting life." This doctrine that all who are once converted will certainly be finally saved in heaven is a logically necessary part of the predestinarianism system. If God has decreed whatsoever comes to pass, including the election of a definite number to salvation and final blessedness; if Christ died only for these elect and in such a way that their salvation must inevitably follow; if the saving grace of God is irresistible by the elect—then it logically follows that when they have been saved they will certainly persevere in holiness. But with the proof that Christ died for all, that salvation is possible to all, that all have the power freely to accept it or reject it, it logically follows that perseverance in holiness, like entrance to it, is optional with the individual.

The following are some of the texts of Scripture which Dr. Strong assumes support the doctrine, but which in truth are altogether inconclusive. "My sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me: and I give unto them eternal life; and they shall never perish, neither shall any man pluck them out of my hand. My Father, which gave them me, is greater than all; and no man is able to pluck them out of my Father's hand" (John 10:27-29). Doubtless this is true from the divine side in that God is able and willing to keep all his people from sinning. But it does not state that he will certainly keep them regardless of their choice to be faithful. Another text cited reads, "For the gifts and calling of God are without repentance" (Rom. 11:29). Doubtless this is true from the divine side in that God is able and willing to keep all his people from sinning. But it does not state that he will certainly keep them regardless of their choice to be faithful. Another text cited reads, "For the gifts and calling of God are without repent-

ance" (Rom. 11:29). This verse affirms only God's faithfulness to fulfill his promises and is best understood in connection with Romans 9:6. Except on the assumption of an absolute sovereignty of grace, it furnishes no proof of absolute final perseverance. Its use here is a begging of the question. Another text often used reads "I know whom I have believed, and am persuaded that he is able to keep that which I have committed unto him against that day" (2 Tim. 1:12). This text merely declares the divine ability to keep, but does not state that this keeping by God is certain or independent of Paul's choice to be kept. Other texts cited are Philippians 1:6; 2 Thessalonians 3:3; 1 Peter 1:5; and Revelation 3:10. The foregoing texts are regarded by the ablest advocates of the doctrine as its best scriptural support, but they are all alike inconclusive.

In opposition to the doctrine it may first be said that it is inconsistent with human freedom. It logically tends to produce carelessness in maintaining holiness of life. The Scriptures teach that "every branch *in me* [Christ] that beareth not fruit he *taken away*" (John 15:2). Jesus said of those whom his Father had given him that "none of them is lost, but the son of perdition" (John 17:12). Though the apostle Paul was certainly saved and frequently so testified, yet he recognized the need of constant watchfulness "lest that by any means, when I have preached to others, I myself should be a castaway" (1 Cor. 9:27). If apostasy is not possible to Christians, then all those many texts that warn against it are misleading. "Looking diligently lest any man fail of the grace of God" (Heb. 12:15). "Wherefore the rather, brethren, give diligence to make your calling and election sure: for if ye do these things, ye shall never fall" (2 Pet. 1:10). If these texts mean anything it must be that Christians may apostatize.

V. Human Conditions for Salvation

The chief condition on the part of God in the salvation of men is the providing of the atonement through Christ. A secondary objective condition is the divine drawing of the sinner to repentance, which has before been described as an unconditional benefit of the atonement. But, as has been already shown, there are human conditions to be met. The human condition on which pardon is granted must be such that adequate security will be given that the pardoned sinner will cease his sinning; otherwise he will at once become guilty again. Also if pardon were granted without

such a pledge of future good conduct, the declaration of the righteousness of God in the atonement would have litle value. The divine holiness and law would still be despised by sinners.

The leading human condition, then, must consist in a recognition of the atonement of Christ as a declaration of the righteousness of God. Faith in that atonement as a ground for pardon is in its nature calculated to secure the future good conduct of him who is pardoned. That faith implies conviction of sin, else it would not be exercised. It implies repentance, which is the only attitude in which he can consistently commit himself to the mercy of God for pardon. It must also imply the purpose to obey God, which is an accompaniment of repentance.

1. **Faith in Christ**—Faith is the primary condition for pardon, and is inclusive of all secondary conditions. Of the very many texts which represent faith in Christ as necessary to pardon, the citation of a few will be sufficient. "He that believeth on the Son hath everlasting life: and he that believeth not the Son shall not see life" (John 3:36). "Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ, and thou shalt be saved" (Acts 16:31). "Therefore being justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ" (Rom. 5:1). "For by grace are ye saved through faith" (Eph. 2:8). Christian experience also corroborates the universal testimony of the Scriptures that faith is the condition, and the only condition, on which salvation from sin is possible. Men labor in vain to purchase peace with God by their own works. No amount of benevolent deeds or doing penance, no degree of penitence or earnestness in praying, will of itself give relief from the burden of sin. Only when the sinner, recognizing his guilt and helplessness, casts himself on the mercy of God through Christ, is pardon granted and peace realized.

In its very nature saving faith is not mere intellectual assent, as is belief of a historical fact. Neither is it an emotional exercise. It is of such a nature that it may be exercised voluntarily. It is a matter of the will. All men everywhere are commanded to believe. But intellectual assent to a truth is not directly a matter of choice. One can believe a thing is true only as he has adequate evidence that it is true. When he comes into possession of that evidence he believes involuntarily, and has no power directly to refrain from believing. Therefore saving faith is not to be identified with a belief that the Bible is the word of God, nor yet that the particular statements therein given are true. One may believe all these things and yet not

be saved. Many unconverted persons do have such belief.

Saving faith is of the nature of self-committal or trust. It is a voluntary reliance or trust in the merits of Christ for forgiveness. It is a confiding in the mercy of God through Christ. The penitent sinner casts himself on the mercy of God which is offered through Christ. He not only believes Christ has suffered in his stead for his sins, but he rests in Christ for the salvation he so much needs. This is justification by faith. It is God's way, and God bids men thus simply to trust. It is a safe way and surely effects peace with God, as many have proved by experience.

But intellectual faith is a basis for saving faith in Christ. Only as one believes that God exists, that the Bible is God's Word, that Christ is his Son and has atoned for sin, and that God offers pardon through him, can saving faith in Christ be exercised. No one can be saved who refuses to trust in Christ if he has evidence that Christ is God's remedy for sin.

2. **Repentance**—The Scriptures give a place to repentance as a condition of salvation which is scarcely inferior to that of faith. Jesus came preaching, "Repent ye, and believe the gospel" (Mark 1:15). In his Pentecostal sermon Peter said to the guilty Jews, "Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins" (Acts 2:38). Again he said, "Repent ye therefore, and be converted, that your sins may be blotted out" (Acts 3:19). "God . . . commandeth all men everywhere to repent" (Acts 17:30).

Repentance expresses a two-fold idea: a feeling of sincere sorrow and hatred for sin because of its sinfulness, and a definite turning away from sin because of that inward feeling. The original word in the Scriptures signifies a change of mind. The first aspect of repentance, the inward feeling of grief, is identical with godly sorrow which "worketh repentance to salvation not to be repented of" (2 Cor. 7:10). Godly sorrow is the emotional aspect of repentance, and produces the change in purpose and conduct.

A conviction of sin is implied in repentance. This is the work of the Spirit of God and is included in spiritual awakening. It is not repentance, though it may lead to repentance. Many persons feel special conviction on account of their sins, but never repent. One may have a desire for salvation as a consequence of this spiritual awakening, but if as with the rich young ruler that desire is exceeded by other desires and no forsaking of sin and worldliness

takes place, that awakening is fruitless.

True repentance includes the confession of sin and a disposition to make whatever restitution may be required to make satisfaction for wrongs done. Confession implies, first, admission to oneself that he is guilty. It is to be made to God, against whom sin has been committed. "If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just to forgive us our sins" (John 1:9). Godly sorrow will cause one to pray as did the publican, "God, be merciful to me, a sinner" (Luke 18:13). Like the prodigal son he will pray, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and in thy sight" (Luke 15:21). Regret for sin included in true repentance will lead one to ask the forgiveness of those who have been wronged. Such asking forgiveness of one's fellow men is taught in the Sermon on the Mount (Matt. 5:23, 24). The Scriptures also enjoin restitution. "If the wicked restore the pledge, give again that he had robbed, walk in the statutes of life, without committing iniquity; he shall surely live, he shall not die" (Ezek. 33:15). When Zacchaeus met Jesus he promised to restore fourfold to all from whom he may have taken anything wrongfully. Such is the natural result of godly sorrow for sin. In confession and restitution only that which is possible is required in order to salvation. It is not necessary in order to pardon that one first have actually made right his wrongs against his fellow man, but certainly a genuine willingness to do so must precede pardon. Even confession to God in words is not necessary to salvation, though doubtless the attitude of heart implied in confession is essential. Many have been saved without any articulate prayer. Ordinarily such prayer is helpful to one seeking pardon, but certainly it is not requisite to forgiveness.

Similar to the foregoing conditions is that of forgiveness of one's fellow men for their wrongs against him. Because hatred and the desire for revenge are in themselves sinful they are incompatible with an attitude of repentance. Jesus said, "For if ye forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly Father will also forgive you: but if ye forgive not men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgive your trespasses" (Matt. 6:14, 15). Forgiveness does not imply that one approves the sinful deeds of another, nor that one respects him in the same degree as if he had not done the evil; but it does mean that one shall hold no malice, but instead love his enemies.

3. **Obedience**—In some sense obedience to God is represented

in the Scriptures as a necessary condition for salvation. "Ye see then how that by works a man is justified, and not by faith only" (Jas. 2:24). The inspired writer here does not reject faith as being necessary to salvation, but he does include works as being equally necessary with faith. From a superficial comparison of this with the epistles of Paul it has sometimes been supposed that the writings of James and Paul were contradictory to each other. Paul said, "Therefore we conclude that a man is justified by faith without the deeds of the law" (Rom. 3:28). A more careful comparison of these two passages shows there is no real contradiction. The context in both epistles throws much light on the meaning of the particular verses quoted. Paul is here opposing those Judaizing teachers who denied the possibility of free pardon for sin through faith and added the requirement of keeping the rites of the law of Moses. James seeks to correct the error of antinomian believers, who assumed that if they merely accepted and believed theoretically in Christ as the Messiah they would be saved regardless of how much sin they might afterward commit. Therefore they were discussing faith in different senses. Paul wrote of saving faith, self-committal or trust in the mercy of God. James had in mind mere intellectual assent. This is clear from verse 19, "The devils also believe, and tremble." It is also evident that they used the term "justification" in different senses. Paul is teaching concerning the present judicial act of God by which men are now pardoned of the penalty for sin. James has special reference to that escape from penalty in the day of judgment.

Doubtless this is the true sense in which obedience is a condition of salvation. After one is pardoned through divine grace he must obey God to the extent of the light he has, else he cannot remain justified. Saving faith is inclusive of repentance and repentance includes a purpose to obey God. Therefore repentance and obedience are but secondary conditions of salvation and are implied in faith, which is *the condition* for salvation.

CHAPTER IV

NATURE OF SALVATION

Having shown the ground on which salvation is possible and the conditions on which it may be appropriated by the individual, next in order we take up an analysis of the work of salvation. What is comprehended in the work of salvation of the individual sinner? Evidently the initial work of salvation must overcome sin as to its penalty and ruling power. In its objective aspect it must effect remission of penalty and peace with God. In its subjective phase it must give power over the ruling power of sin. It must restore one to the condition of sonship in relation to God. And it must restore one to the knowledge of salvation to him who is thus saved.

I. Justification

1. **Sense of the Term**—The primary meaning of the term rendered "justification" in our New Testament is the acquittal of an accused person by judicial decision. In its New Testament usage the term has a twofold signification. In its original usage it meant acquittal as when one who has been charged with a crime is declared by his judge to be innocent of the crime in the sense that he has not committed it. Scriptural examples of such a sense of the term are not uncommon. "If there be a controversy between men, and they come unto judgment, that the judges may judge them; then they shall justify the righteous, and condemn the wicked" (Deut. 25:1). "Wisdom is justified of ["by," A.S.V.] her children" (Matt. 11:19). "Ye are they which justify yourselves before men" (Luke 16:15). "The doers of the law shall be justified" (Rom. 2:13). The "justification" of these texts is a justification on the ground of works, or a pronouncement of uprightness on the basis of character. But it must be evident to every believer in the Bible that such a legal justification of a human being before God can be only hypothetical, never actual. Because all are declared to be sinners, none can be truly pronounced just. In this sense only those can be properly pronounced just who are actually just. Inasmuch as all are sinners, "by the deeds of the law there shall no flesh be justified."

A second and more common use of the term in the New Testament is in the sense of pardon. In this sense the term "justification" retains only a part of is original meaning. It does not signify

in this sense that one is innocent of a crime of which he is accused. The person concerned is guilty of the crime with which he is charged; he is confessedly a sinner. His sin has been deliberate and altogether inexcusable. He is justly under sentence of penalty for his evil doings. No justification of such a person is possible in the first described sense of the term. But in some sense God justifies the sinner. The guilty one is either made righteous, or treated as if he were righteous, or both.

Doubtless as to his receiving a new heart in the work of regeneration the sinner is made righteous. But a clear distinction must be made between justification and regeneration. It is true they are effected simultaneously, and the first would be useless without the second. But discriminating thought cannot regard them as identical in meaning and nature. The first is objective, the second subjective. The first has to do with our past committed sins, the second with our disposition to sin in the future. We allow that the term "justification" is sometimes used in the Scriptures to include the idea of the new birth. This is true especially in the Epistle to the Romans. But this is only when the writer has in mind the whole work of initial salvation and puts a part for the whole, as is not uncommon in uncritical usage in the same connection by Christians today. The Scriptures frequently mention justification and regeneration separately and sometimes clearly distinguish them as shall be shown in treating of regeneration.

If justification were regarded as a declaration that one is actually righteous in the sense of subjective holiness through regeneration, then it would have nothing to do with the sinner's guilt and actually committed sins of the past. The desert of penalty must still remain to be dealt with. In the evangelical sense justification is a pardon for past sins. It includes the idea of forgiveness and remission of penalty.

2. **Forgiveness and Remission Included**—The terms "justification" and "pardon" often include both the ideas of forgiveness and remission. They are to be so understood in their evangelical meaning. When a man sins against God, two things occur on the part of God. First God is aggrieved or made to feel displeasure because of the sinner's unfaithfulness, and second as moral ruler God is under the obligation of inflicting just penalty upon him. This displeasure of God with the sinner and the turning away of it is often represented in the Bible. "Though thou wast angry with me, thine anger is turned away" (Isa. 12:1).

But the leading aspect of justification as taught in the Bible is the remission of penalty for sin. To remit sin is to release from the penalty for it. It is an authoritative order of nonexecution of the penalty on the sinner. It is as if the ruler treats the criminal as if he had done no wrong, by releasing him from the obligation to punishment. When a sin is committed it can never be that it was not committed. The sinner deserves punishment for his sin, and it can never be that he does not deserve punishment. The fact of his desert cannot be changed. Therefore to remit sin can mean only that through the suffering of Christ the punishment due the sinner is withheld. Then remission of sins is the authoritative order of non-execution of penalty. Justification in the sense of remission of penalty is a change of legal standing and not of one's interior moral state. That change of heart is called regeneration, and is entirely different in its nature from justification. When a civil ruler pardons a criminal, no change is made in his inner character, but only in his amenability to penalty. So is the pardon of a sinner through faith in Christ.

3. **The Basis for Justification**—The atonement of Christ is the only ground on which God can properly remit the penalty due sinners. This has been fully discussed in a preceding chapter on that subject. But different theories have been widely held as to the immediate ground for justification of the sinner.

Those who deny an objective element in the atonement, including Socinians, Unitarians, and Universalists, necessarily hold an unbiblical ground of pardon of sin. Some of them deny the actuality of pardon, affirming that under a perfect government the penalty of pardon for violation of law must be inflicted on the violator. These assume the penalty to be trifling and that after it is endured blessedness follows for all men. Others teach that repentance is a sufficient ground for remission of penalty, that when a sinner becomes convinced of the advantage of virtue and turns to it God no longer regards him as deserving of penalty. Socinus taught justification on the ground of faith, but regarded faith, not as a condition of forgiveness, but as a meritorious work which in itself constituted righteousness. Such justification would evidently be by works. All these theories are so manifestly unscriptural that a mere statement of them is sufficient refutation.

The Calvinistic theory of the basis for justification represents an opposite error from those already described. It affirms that the

active obedience of Christ is so imputed to believers that they are as legally righteous as if they had been perfectly obedient to the law of God. In its extreme form it is antinomian. It rests on and is a part of the Calvinistic doctrine of imputation. It admits of no real forgiveness of the individual. When Christ's obedience has been counted or imputed to the sinner as if he had done that obedience, then he is properly regarded as just because he is just. This is the theory in its advanced form. Those whom God declares to be righteous must first be made righteous in fact. In this theory justification is forensic in the strictest sense.

Imputation of righteousness to us in the sense that Christ obeyed the law of God in our stead and we therefore merit the reward of that obedience is not supported by the Scriptures, but is only an assumption of a certain class of theologians. Let us examine some of the texts chiefly relied upon for the substantiation of this theory. "He shall be called, the Lord our righteousness" (Jer. 23:6). It is said he shall be called our righteousness because he is our righteousness. Doubtless this is true. But in what sense is he our righteousness? He can be such only in the sense that he is the procurer of our righteousness or justification. "For as by one man's disobedience many were made sinners, so by the obedience of one shall many be made righteous" (Rom. 5:19). Here again the words of the text furnish no conslusive proof of Calvinistic imputation. The question is, how does the obedience of Christ make many righteous? In our consideration of moral theories of native depravity, it has already been shown that the first part of this text cannot mean many were made sinners by the imputation to them of the guilt of Adam's sin. Through the passive obedience of Christ in suffering the death of the cross we are made righteous. This is taught in many other texts (John 10:17, 18; Phil 2:8; Heb. 10:10). Our justification is through the blood of Christ. No reason exists for supposing the text under consideration teaches anything more than that we are justified as a result of Christ's obedience in dying to atone for our sins. Other texts assumed to support the theory under review are equally void of support of it as those here cited.

One of several valid arguments against the theory that the active obedience of Christ is imputed to us is given here as an example. If by imputation we are righteous because of the active and passive obedience of Christ, two results must follow: (1) That in our

justification there is no place for pardon, because it is not possible that both perfect obedience and pardon can be the portion of the same person at one time. (2) That we possess both an active and a passive obedience as a means of our justification, which is twice as much as justice requires. It is absurd to suppose it is required of us both to obey the law of God and also to suffer the penalty for its violation.

The true scriptural basis for justification is the atonement of Christ. The death of Christ is a declaration of the righteousness of God and of his law in such a sense that when he freely remits the penalty for sin on the condition of faith there is no reflection on his perfect holiness. Justification is pardon and in its primary sense is an order of non-execution of penalty, and also it includes forgiveness. According to the Bible, justification is a real forgiveness of sin.

II. Regeneration

1. **The Doctrine of Regeneration**—Our treatment of the subject of the initial work of salvation has hitherto been concerned only with justification, which was shown to mean pardon and to include the ideas of peace with God and remission of penalty. But the sinner needs more than this. Pardon of past sins can avail nothing for him unless he is given power to refrain from sinning in the future, or to keep justified. This can take place only by a work of grace in the pardoned sinner which will give him power over the power of sin that has ruled him.

Though regeneration is coincident in time with justification, yet it is in its nature distinct from it. Justification has to do with one's relation to God and his law, regeneration is concerned with the inner character of the one justified. Guilt is the ground for the need of justification, but depravity of the nature is the ground for the need of regeneration. While it is true, as formerly stated, that by using a part for the whole, justification is sometimes made in the Scriptures to include regeneration, yet the latter is frequently mentioned specifically and apart from justification. The Scriptures definitely distinguish between the two. The New Testament represents the Mosaic institutions as types of Christian truth. From Hebrews 10:19-22 and other texts it is clear that the sprinkling of the blood and the washing of the sanctuary service are types of the way of salvation, or of the process by which the sinner comes to God. The blood on the brazen altar typifies justification or remis-

sion of sin. The washing of the laver typifies regeneration. "He saved us, by the washing ["laver," marg. ASV] of regeneration" (Titus 3:5). In this ancient type the distinction between justification and regeneration is made very evident by the use of separate types which very appropriately represent these spiritual truths.

The Scriptures furnish ample ground for believing in the actuality of such an element in the work of salvation as just described. Because we are dependent upon the Scriptures for our knowledge of the nature of the doctrine, a citation of some of the leading statements of revelation bearing upon the subject is in order. It is not important that these texts contain the term "regeneration" or its equivalent, but only that they set forth the idea commonly expressed by that term. "Not by works of righteousness which we have done, but according to his mery he saved us, by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Ghost" (Titus 3:5). Regeneration is frequently represented as being a new birth. "Except a man be born again" (John 3:3, 5, 7). "Being born again, not of corruptible seed, but of incorruptible, by the word of God, which liveth and abideth forever" (1 Pet. 1:23).

Regeneration is also represented as receiving a new heart. "Then will I sprinkle clean water upon you, and ye shall be clean. . . . A new heart also I will give you, and a new spirit will I put within you: and I will take away the stony heart out of your flesh, and I will give you an heart of flesh" (Ezek. 36:25, 26). In the next verse God says, "I will . . . *cause* you to walk in my statutes, and ye shall keep my judgments, and do them." The idea is also represented as one's becoming new. "If any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new" (2 Cor. 5:17). Also it is represented as a resurrection. "You hath he quickened, who were dead in trespasses and sins" (Eph. 2:1). It may also be called conversion. "Repent ye therefore, and be converted" (Acts 3:19). This term itself means merely to turn from one course to another. It may be used in the sense of one's voluntarily turning from sin in repentance, but it may also properly be used to describe that change from a worldly or sinful state to a disposition to holiness which is effected by the Spirit of God. In this sense conversion is identical with regeneration.

Though justification and regeneration are not identical in nature, yet they occur simultaneously. Their distinction in nature does not require any chronological separation. There are these two distinct

aspects to the work of initial salvation just as in the second work of grace, which shall be described later, the work of entire sanctification and the baptism by the Holy Spirit are distinct in their nature though coincident in time. For logical thought regeneration follows justification, but in experience it is important that they synchronize because the new birth is necessary to one's keeping justified after he is pardoned. The Scriptures represent them as occurring at the same time and they do so occur in normal Christian experience. They are both obtained by the same act of faith. Probably no proof is possible of their ever occurring at different times if they ever do so take place.

2. **The Ground of the Need of Regeneration**—The necessity for the new birth has its basis in the fact of moral depravity. Depravity has been shown in our anthropology to be a perversion or derangement of the moral nature. This derangement consists in a weakening of conscience, a perversion of the affections, and in some sense a weakening of the will in moral volitions. Though the extent of depravity varies according as one lives a moral or a vicious life, yet in itself it is native to all in a greater or less degree. In full harmony with a well-known law of life all men inherit a deranged moral nature from their first parents because of their original transgression. The fact of universal native depravity is not only a proof of Scripture, but is attested to by universality of sin because depravity gives a bent to sin.

This tendency to sin is the principal cause of all the sinning of men at the present time. It is so strong that men in their natural condition do not have power to refrain from sinning. In this sense they may be said to be totally depraved. Their experience is vividly described in the seventh chapter of Romans. "To will is present with me; but how to perform that which is good I find not" (v. 18). The apostle makes a strong argument for justification by faith rather than by works by showing that this indwelling sinful nature excludes the possibility of a natural righteousness. This truth adequately explains that set forth in the third chapter that "all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God" (v. 23). In their unregenerate condition it may properly be said of all men, both Jews and Gentiles, "There is none righteous, no, not one" (v. 10). Because of this natural tendency to commit sin which dominates men morally, the justified person must also be regenerated if he is to continue in a justified condition. This necessity of regeneration

is in exact harmony with the memorable words of Jesus to Nicodemus, "Ye must be born again." The new birth is necessary in order to be obedient to God, and also it is that by which one enters into the kingdom of God. It is an important aspect of salvation from sin and is necessary to the attainment of future blessedness.

There is no ground in either Scripture, or reason for the theory that children may be so trained from infancy that they shall grow up in such a state that they need no regeneration. Because they inherit depravity, which is called an evil heart, they need a new heart as truly as do those who have voluntarily committed sin and are guilty. No more reason can be given for the assumption that children can outgrow native depravity than that older persons can so overcome depravity that they will need only pardon for salvation.

But does every human being at some time commit sin? Doubtless all men both before and after regeneration violate the abstract law of righteousness because of the limitations of ignorance. But such shortcomings, mistakes, and unavoidable failures effect no guilt and need no pardon in the evangelical sense. A few texts are sometimes cited as proof that all men without exception have sinned or do sin. "All have sinned, and come short of the glory of God" (Rom. 3:23). This and certain other texts teach that without regeneration holiness is impossible. The apostle here teaches that none, either Jew or Gentile, has lived righteously in his natural condition. It has no reference to infants, of whom Jesus said, "Of such is the kingdom of heaven." This text has no bearing on the point under discussion. Another text reads, "If we say that we have not sinned, we make him a liar, and his word is not in us" (1 John 1:10). The vital question here is, does the word "we" refer to each person individually or to mankind as a whole? The latter must be its sense, as shown by its use in verse 8: "If *we* say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves." But "we" here cannot be true of Christians, for in the preceding verse the inspired writer states that "the blood of Jesus Christ his Son cleanseth us from all sin." In this whole passage, then, "we" must mean mankind. The writer is opposing the Gnostic heresy which referred all sin to the body and held that the soul had no sin and did not sin. The text affirms that mankind is actually sinful and has sinned, but that Christ provides a remedy for both.

3. **Nature and Effects of Regeneration**—What then is the exact nature of regeneration? We have already stated it effects salvation from the reigning power of sin. It gives one power to triumph over the strong natural tendency to evil resulting from depravity of the moral nature. But this is only the effect of regeneration and is not an answer to the question as to what is the real nature of the work of the new birth. The statements of Scripture relative to regeneration are concerned almost entirely with the effects of it rather than with any psychological or inner moral change that may be effected. And the effects are after all the really important aspect of regeneration.

These effects are by the Bible represented as being caused by an inner change: that change, however, is described in various figures that have much value for practical thought in representing the greatness of the change effected, but they need interpretation if they are to furnish any help in understanding the exact nature of regeneration. If it be asked in what sense our spirits must be born again, it must be admitted that it is certainly not in the sense that they have a beginning of existence or consciousness then. Neither is there a removal or adding of faculties. Evidently a change takes place that is in some respects analogous to physical birth, but it is certainly not analogous to every aspect of natural birth. Likewise under the figure of one's becoming a new creature or being resurrected, the analogy applies only in certain aspects and might easily be carried too far in an attempt at interpreting them to show the real nature of the change thus described.

The scriptures describing regeneration do not describe it as being an entire sanctification from inbred sin. In regeneration one is saved from the *reigning power* of the depraved nature. Justification is salvation from the guilt of sin, regeneration is salvation from the reigning power of sin, and entire sanctification is salvation from the indwelling of sin. Each of these aspects of salvation is distinct in nature. Regeneration is a giving of power to conquer depravity, to deliver from its ruling power. It is the incoming into one's life of the Holy Spirit's working by which one is enabled effectually to motivate obedience to God. The unregenerated seeker after righteousness of the seventh chapter of Romans is made by the apostle to say, "To will is present with me; but how to perform that which is good I find not." Regeneration overcomes this effect of depravity by empowering one to perform the good.

To regenerate, then, is first and chiefly to strengthen the will in moral volitions. Assisted by the power of God, the regenerate man is able to triumph over the sinful tendency of the depraved nature and to do what is right. But regeneration is also a change of heart or of the affections. The new birth causes one to love what he once did not love and to cease to love sinful things he once loved. These holy emotions, like the strengthening of the will, are effected by the incoming power of the Spirit of God. Doubtless this operation of the divine Spirit extends to the conscience and the whole moral naure in strengthening it in order to achieve obedience. This regenerating work of the Spirit is well described by the Apostle Paul as follows: "For the law [power, as is the sense of "law" in Rom. 7:23] of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus hath made me free from the law [power] of sin and death" (Rom. 8:2).

Though regeneration is always great in its effects and supernatural in character, yet in consciousness all are not equally aware of the same degree of change. The change effected is more radical in some persons than in others. He who has lived a vicious life and in addition to great natural depravity has acquired strong tendencies to evil because of much indulgence in sinful conduct will, when born again, likely experience a consciousness of radical change in affections, inclinations, and desires. Another person of pious parents who has himself lived a morally upright life may be conscious of much less of inner change when born again. This is at least one reason why very wicked persons often have more definite conversions than do those less depraved. But persons of the latter class may be as truly saved as are those who experience a more radical change.

4. **Possibility of Present Regeneration**—Not a few professed Christians hold the error of baptismal regeneration. This theory is especially prevalent in the older communions—the Roman, Lutheran, and Anglican. Those who hold this conception of regeneration usually deny the possibility in this life of regeneration in the Biblical sense. Who can suppose that mere water could effect a change in one's moral nature? Baptism is a sign of an interior cleansing, but not its cause. The Scriptures closely connect regeneration with baptism, as they do also remission of sin, but neither is represented in the Bible as a present experience. "As many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name: which were

born . . . of God" (John 1:12, 13). "Being born again . . . by the Word of God" (1 Pet. 1:23). "Every one that doeth righteousness *is* born of him" (1 John 2:29). "Whosoever is born of God doth not commit sin . . . because he is born of God" (1 John 3:9). "Every one that loveth is born of God" (1 John 4:7). "Whosoever believeth that Jesus is the Christ is born of God" (1 John 5:1). "Whosoever is born of God sinneth not" (1 John 5:18). These texts clearly show that regeneration is a present experience, that it is obtained by faith, and that it is productive of holiness of life. These texts alone are sufficient refutation of the theory of baptismal regeneration in that they describe the results of regeneration in the biblical sense as being far greater than the consequences of baptismal regeneration are known to be.

But another class of modern religious teachers denies the actuality of present regeneration on an entirely different ground. They affirm the Greek word γεννάω, (*gennao*) translated "born" in our common English version is more properly rendered "begotten." Then they assume the texts quoted in the preceding paragraph teach that Christians are only begotten of God, that they are in an embryonic state and will be born at the resurrection of the body. But the theory is without scriptural support and betrays on the part of its supporters a very superficial acquaintance with the use of the Greek term under consideration. We freely admit that the word in its various forms is used of the procreative act of the father, but it is also inclusive of the giving birth to the child by the mother. Dr. William Strong says in his exhaustive concordance that it means to "bear, beget, be born, bring forth, conceive, be delivered of."

Citations of a few texts will show it is properly understood to mean birth. "And Jacob begat Joseph the husband of Mary, of whom was *born* Jesus, who is called Christ" (Matt. 1:16). If the form of the Greek word γεννάω (*gennao*) here translated "born" is referred to Joseph, then the virgin birth must be denied, but this is clearly affirmed in the verses immediately following. If it is referred to Mary, which is evidently the meaning of the text, then it here means birth as our common translation renders it. "Now when Jesus was *born* in Bethlehem of Judea" (Matt. 2:1). Here the word must refer to the bringing forth of Jesus by Mary, for it is clear he was conceived of the Holy Ghost in Nazareth not in Bethlehem (Luke 1:26). "Among them that are *born* of women there hath not

risen a greater than John the Baptist" (Matt. 11:11). "As soon as she is delivered of the child, she remembereth no more the anguish, for joy that a man is *born* into the world" (John 16:21). In neither of these texts can the Greek term mean other than the actual bringing forth of the child by the mother. When by this term Christians are said to be born of God and consequently to be children of God it may properly be understood to mean that the new birth is now actual. That the original word means they are now only in an embryonic state is, to say the least, an unscholarly assumption.

III. Sonship

1. **Children of God**—As a result of, and at the time of, justification and regeneration men become children of God. This relationship is often referred to in the Scriptures as being a blessed condition of the saved. "As many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God" (Rom. 8:14:). "For ye are all the children of God by faith in Christ Jesus" (Gal. 3:26). "Because ye are sons [of God], God hath sent forth the Spirit of his Son into your hearts, crying, Abba, Father" (Gal. 4:6). "Now therefore ye are no more strangers and foreigners, but fellow citizens with the saints, and of the household of God" (Eph. 2:19). "Behold, what manner of love the Father hath bestowed upon us, that we should be called the sons of God . . . Now are we the sons of God" (1 John 3:1, 2). All men are children of God by creation, but the sonship here described is that relationship resulting from faith in Christ.

2. **Sonship by Adoption**—Under the Roman law adoption was by formal purchase with money in the presence of witnesses of the child by the one who adopted him. The child thus adopted entered into the family of his new father as heir equal with any other natural sons the father might have. The apostle probably had in mind this custom when he wrote: "Ye have not received the spirit of bondage again to fear; but ye have received the spirit of adoption, whereby ye cry, Abba, Father" (Rom. 8:15). "That we might receive the adoption of sons" (Gal. 4:5). Under this relationship men are represented as having been alien from God. Because of sin and rebellion they are separated from God and out of filial relation with him, deserving of wrath rather than favor. When by the grace of God through Christ they are forgiven and their penalty is remitted, when they again become heirs to the inheritance

of God's blessings, when God can consistently show his love for them in gracious benefits, then they may well be represented as having been adopted as the children of God. In this aspect sonship has its principal ground in justification.

3. **Sonship by Birth**—A larger basis of sonship is found in the fact of regeneration. Those who are born of God are members of his family and his children. "As many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name: which were born . . . of God" (John 1:12, 13). Here sonship is evidently the result of being born of God. Believers are children of God in the sense that they are of like nature with him by having his Spirit. The reason why those born of God do not commit sin, says the apostle John, is because "his seed remaineth in him: and he cannot sin, because he is born of God" (1 John 3:9). As children of earthly parents are of like nature as their parents, so the regenerate person has a holy nature like God his father.

IV. Consciousness or Assurance of Salvation

1. **Fact of Assurance**—No knowledge is of such vast importance to the individual as that he is personally accepted by God, that his sins have been pardoned, that God looks upon him with pleasure, that he is born of the Spirit, that he is a child of God, and that he is on the way to eternal blessedness. It is reasonable to suppose those who are thus saved are conscious of their salvation. The infinite cost of salvation is ground for the expectation that God will give definite assurance of acceptance to those whom he saves. He so loved men that he spared not his own Son; that he sent his Holy Spirit to convict, convert, sanctify, and guide them; that he inspired holy men to write the sacred Scriptures for the revelation of the way of salvation; that he calls, qualifies and sends ministers to preach salvation to sinners, and that he instituted his church as a means for the propagation of the Gospel. Surely after doing all this he has not failed to make possible to the individual Christian the knowledge of that most important fact—that he is a child of God.

If assurance of one's individual acceptance by God is not possible, then the most devout are of all men most miserable. If one is fully awakened to the awfulness of his sin against God, if he is truly sorry for his sin and deeply penitent, if he sincerely hungers after the peace and love of God, if he earnestly seeks to make sure

of blessedness beyond this life, it would be a sad condition indeed if he must ever struggle throughout life in uncertainty as to whether he is a child of God or a child of the devil, whether he is saved or lost.

But thank God, assurance of acceptance with God is possible. It is not only an inference from reason, but also a clear truth of the Scriptures that we may know we are saved. "We know that we have passed from death unto life (1 John 3:14). "We know that we are of God" (1 John 5:19). "We are of God" (1 John 4:6). "We know that if our earthly house of this tabernacle were dissolved, we have a building of God, a house not made with hands, eternal in the heavens" (2 Cor. 5:1). Such certainty of personal salvation is frequently represented in the Bible.

2. **Nature of Assurance**—More general agreement exists among Christians as to the possibility of assurance than concerning its exact nature. Actual experience of it by the individual is more important to him than is his belief concerning its source, mode, or nature. Yet a proper comprehension of the nature of it is important to protect one against doubt and confusion.

Those who hold the doctrine of unconditional election of individuals to eternal blessedness hold also a theory of assurance in harmony with that doctrine. With them assurance consists in some individuals being so highly favored of God as to be assured that they are eternally elected to certain future blessedness. Such a view of assurance is without scriptural support as truly as is the system with which it is connected. The assurance for which we contend is a consciousness of present acceptance with God, which will result in future blessedness if one is loyal to the truth. This assurance may be with some a strong, unwavering conviction of their adoption. With others it is less definite, but yet a comfortable persuasion, though it may be accompanied at times with temporary doubts. Assurance may grow stronger with the lapse of time as one has longer experience in the Christian life with the accompanying evidences that God is with him.

The sources of assurance are two: the witness of the Spirit of God and the witness of one's own spirit. "The Spirit itself beareth witness with our spirit, that we are the children of God" (Rom. 8:16). No text in the Bible is clearer than is this one concerning the sources of assurance of sonship. According to it there are two distinct witnesses to our salvation. This does not mean there are two

subjective assurances. Many witnesses may all testify to a single truth. The witness of the Holy Spirit is sometimes denied as being distinct from the witness of one's own spirit. The original word, συμμαρτυρέω *summartureo,* in this text rendered "beareth witness with," is properly translated. It means a joint testifying. The word "with" implies a relation of two or more. Here the Spirit of God witnesses "with" our spirits to the fact of our salvation. It cannot properly be understood that he witnesses *to* our spirits. The reading of the common English version of this text has the overwhelming support of critical authorities.

Those who deny there are two witnesses to our salvation usually deny a distinct witness of the personal Spirit of God, regarding the statements of Scripture so interpreted as meaning merely the divinely given disposition to godliness. But in the nature of things there is no reason for denying a distinct witness of the Spirit. Throughout the Scriptures the Holy Spirit is represented as witnessing to other truths. Why might he not also testify directly to the believer that he is accepted of God? But if the text under consideration does not teach there are two witnesses, then it does not teach the witness of one's own spirit. It must then read, "The Spirit itself beareth witness *to* our spirit." Such a rendering makes the Holy Spirit the only source of assurance and our spirit the recipient of its testimony. Yet even such an improper rendering of this text would not exclude the truth of a witness by our own spirit as taught in other texts.

3. **Witness of God's Spirit**—The fact of the witness of the Spirit is clear both in the Scriptures and in the experience of many Christians. It is a direct testimony to our adoption by God. As it is distinct from the witness of our own spirits, as has been shown, it is therefore a direct witness. If, as some have assumed, his only witness were through the work of regeneration which he accomplishes, then it would be identical with the witness of one's own spirit, and we would have but the one witness to our sonship. But we have already shown that the Bible teaches two distinct witnesses.

The mode of the Spirit's witnessing is by a direct operation within the mind of the Christian by which he possesses a conviction that he is accepted by God. Normally there is no manifestation apart from that conviction which he effects. There is no audible voice, nor even an inner voice. His witness is not so much a communication *to* the mind, as an effect *in* the mind. He is not

limited to natural modes of communication of thought. He has no need of employing human language, audible sounds, and our physical auditory organs, the ears. He causes the knowledge which he desires us to possess to arise in our consciousness immediately. Knowledge thus obtained is more certain than if it reached us through the natural channels of communication, unless communications of the latter class be accompanied by certain evidence that they are from God.

The exact mode of the Spirit's witness is inscrutable to us. But the mystery of the manner of his testimony has no weight against the reality of it. We believe many things that are mysterious. Thought itself is an insoluble mystery for us, yet we know we think. Not only is the witness of the Spirit mysterious in its mode, but also the Spirit's work of regeneration is mysterious. Yet as we are cognizant of the fact of regeneration in us, so are we also of the witness of the Spirit.

This witness may be illustrated in a measure by the testimony or communication by the divine Spirit concerning other facts. As he testifies to believers that they are children of God, so in a similar manner he testifies to the unconverted that they are sinners. This is commonly called conviction. Jesus said the Spirit would "convince the world of sin." Conviction of sin may result from other than the direct operation of the Holy Spirit, as from the preaching of the Word of God or from one's own reasoning. Imminent danger may be the occasion for such conviction. But apart from all this it is evident that when no such circumstances are present to awaken the sinner, the Holy Spirit sometimes directly effects deep conviction of sin and awakening to its awfulness. Many persons have distinctly cognized this testimony of the Spirit to their sinfulness who have not known it so distinctly in witness to their salvation. He also witnesses in a similar manner to other truths in experience. Not infrequently persons who have prayed for physical healing of disease have suddenly found themselves in possession of a settled conviction that they would be cured, even before any physical change was felt and when they were not engaged in prayer or exercising active faith. Special direction by the Spirit of God may be by this same general method of his working in our minds to effect that knowledge he wills we have.

In the experience of some, the witness of the Spirit may be recognized as being directly from him. Others have a settled con-

viction that they are children of God, the fruits of the Spirit appear in their lives, and those who know them best have full confidence in their being truly converted, but these persons have no knowledge that they have ever had the witness of the Spirit. In other words, many devout believers receive the witness of the Spirit and the assurance it gives, without being aware that it is from him. Probably this is true of the experience of most believers. But inasmuch as the assurance is the important thing rather than the mode by which it is received, the absence of clear cognition of the cause of it is not improper.

4. **Witness of Our Spirit**—The second ground of assurance mentioned by the apostle Paul is the testimony of our own Spirit. "The Spirit itself beareth witness *with our spirit,* that we are the children of God" (Rom. 8:16). This witness is not represented as being inferior to the witness of the Spirit of God as a ground of assurance. In this witness of our own spirit we compare the facts of our religious experience with the facts of the Bible. The agreement of our experience with the Scripture representations of what constitutes Christian experience furnishes evidence that we are Christians. The witness of our own spirits really includes a logical process. It is so even though ordinarily we may not be conscious of such a process. Usually the one seeking salvation expects certain fruits of conversion, and when they are experienced his mind leaps to the conclusion that he is a child of God, without any consciousness of a process of reasoning.

Specific aspects of Christian experience illustrate this ground of assurance. When the penitent sinner has in living faith committed himself to the mercy of God, he may suddenly become aware of a new and warm love for God such as he never felt before. When he remembers that "every one that loveth is born of God, and knoweth God" (1 John 4:7), he has ground for assurance that God has given him a new heart. Or he may come to realize a freedom from guilt and from the burden of his sins and have instead a new sense of peace and joy. When he compares this experience with the statement, "Therefore being justified by faith, we have peace with God" (Rom. 5:1), he again has ground for believing he is a Christian. The apostle John writes, "We know that we have passed from death unto life, because we love the brethren" (1 John 3:14). The love of Christians for one another is a prominent characteristic of them. If one finds when he believes on Christ that his heart is

especially attracted to other Christians so that he loves them as he has not loved them before, he knows, as did the inspired writer, that he has passed from death unto life.

If he finds himself possessed of an inclination to please God because of unselfish love for him, if he discovers he has new desires and appetites, if he finds the various fruits of the Spirit in his life, he may properly reason that he is a new creature.

5. **Assurance in Relation to Doubt**—The witnessing to sonship either by the divine Spirit or by one's own spirit is not limited to that initial testimony given at the time of conversion. These assurances continue to be received from time to time by the saved person. In the classical text on assurance, "The Spirit itself beareth witness with our spirit, that we are the children of God," it is represented as a present experience of those already saved, and there is no hint that testimony ceases with the witness received at conversion. But this special witness is not continuous or constant. It is experienced at irregular intervals. At times other than these periods of special assurance the Christian is liable to be attacked with doubts. These doubts are usually the result of one's holding the false assumption that one must always be conscious of ecstatic emotions or other experiences which he has had at a previous time and which then were ground for assurance.

In the absence of special assurance from the Holy Spirit and when doubts assail, the witness of one's own spirit may yet form a sure ground of assurance. Even if one is not at the particular time conscious of any special emotions of love, joy, or peace he may yet properly rest his confidence on the experiences of the past. But in addition to these as ground for assurance are the promises of God given in the Bible. There salvation is offered on the condition of repentance and faith. When one knows he has sincerely repented of sin and in faith thrown himself on the mercy of God, the promises of God are themselves valid ground for assurance. And the conditions for salvation are such that one may know, if properly instructed, that he has met them. What can form better ground for assurance of salvation than the immutable Word of God?

Nowhere in the Bible are men told to seek for the particular witness of the Spirit. No instance is given of seekers for salvation tarrying for a witness. Jesus and the apostles exhorted men and women to believe. It is not for the seeker to concern himself

particularly about the witness of the Spirit. That is God's business, and he will attend to it in his own time and manner. It is the sinner's duty to repent and believe and in doing this he will at least have the evidence of the Word of God that he is forgiven. This is sufficient to stand upon. God will give any other witness he may please. The witness does not save, therefore is not requisite to one's salvation. The witness of the Spirit is an added blessing. Repentance and faith are not of themselves the ground for assurance of salvation, but are conditions for it. But when those conditions have been met the divine promise becomes a ground of assurance. This is another example of the witness of our own spirits.

Assurance varies greatly in degree in different individuals and in the same person at different times. This variability is due to several causes. Personal temperament is a determining factor. Some are naturally mild and others are timid, doubting, and pessimistic. Also the degree of one's assurance is determined greatly by the depth of his own spiritual life. If he is thoroughly devoted to the will of God he is more likely to have strong assurance than if he is wavering and lacking in consecration. Again, the witness of the Spirit may correspond in intensity with that of our own spirit, and if one has not been greatly depraved by sin before conversion he will necessarily be conscious of a less radical change in certain respects in regeneration than will one more depraved. Such persons are not therefore less assured of salvation than he who has been more sinful, because of other determining factors which enter in.

V. Holiness of Life

By holiness of life is meant a life free from sinning. It is also called a holy life and a sinless life. All of these designations are correct. Thus far in this chapter we have been concerned with the initial work of salvation. It is this supernatural work of salvation and especially regeneration that makes holiness of life possible. This subject might have been discussed under the heading of regeneration except for the need of emphasis and elaboration due to the prevalence of erroneous views. Few aspects of Christian truth have been more misunderstood and misreprsented than has this.

1. **The Sense of the Scriptures**—That Christians should and do live lives free from sin is a clear truth of the Scriptures. This truth is declared by the different New Testament writers, and is

represented by them in a variety of forms. They disallow sinning in any degree. If one is a Christian he commits no sin; if he sins he is not a Christian. The Bible not only exhorts men to holiness of life, but positively condemns those who do commit sin. No attempt is made here to give an exhaustive array of texts in support of a sinless life by Christians, but the prevalence of the denial of the possibility and necessity of a life of holiness by them is sufficient warrant for the citation of several representative texts on the subject.

It was shown in our anthropology that all men commit sin because of natural depravity. But it is said of Christ, "Thou shalt call his name *Jesus:* for he shall save his people from their sins" (Matt. 1:21). This necessarily implies that he would save them from their sinning if his salvation is a complete redemption. Regeneration has already been shown to give reigning power over sin. It is generally admitted that a Christian should not commit any particular sin.

The Bible command is to sin not. When Jesus had healed the impotent man at the Pool of Bethesda he said, "Sin no more, lest a worse thing come unto thee" (John 5:14). To the woman taken in adultery he said, "Go, and sin no more" (John 8:11). If it had been impossible for them to refrain from sinning such commands would have been unreasonable. Especially cruel and unjust would have been the threat of a worse affliction than the thirty-eight years of impotency if it were impossible for the impotent man to refrain from sinning.

The apostle Paul was as positive as Jesus in unqualifiedly disallowing sin. "Awake to righteousness, and sin not" (1 Cor. 15:34). Peter also taught likewise. "Christ also suffered for us, leaving us an example, that ye should follow his steps: who did no sin" (1 Pet. 2:21, 22). That Christ did no sin is commonly admitted by Christians. If we follow in his steps we shall likewise do *no* sin. We *should* follow in his steps. He gave us an example of holy living for our imitation. The words of this text constitute a positive requirement of holy living by us. The apostle John taught likewise. "These things write I unto you, that ye sin not" (1 John 2:1). Surely this eminent apostle was not trying to accomplish the impossible in his writing. "He that saith he abideth in him ought himself also so to walk, even as he walked" (v. 6). Ought implies obligation. But we are not obligated to do the impossible. Therefore,

it is possible to live a holy life as did Christ.

The Scriptures teach that those who are regenerated do not commit sin. "Whosoever committeth sin is the servant of sin." "If the Son therefore shall make you free, ye shall be free indeed" (John 8:34, 36). Here Jesus taught that through his power men might be freed from the necessity of committing sin, and that those who do commit sin are servants of sin rather than servants of God. Similar in meaning to these words of Jesus is the teaching of Paul in the sixth chapter of Romans. In the fifth chapter the benefits of justification by faith are described. The sixth verse of the sixth chapter states that "our old man," the "body of sin," or sinful nature is destroyed "that henceforth we should not serve sin." Because of the power over depravity he says, "Let not sin therefore reign in your mortal body, that ye should obey it in the lusts thereof" (v. 12). "For sin shall not have dominion over you" (v. 14). "Ye *were* the servants of sin. . . . Being then made free" (vs. 17, 18). "But now being made free from sin, and become servants of God, ye have your fruit unto holiness, and the end everlasting life" (v. 22).

The apostle John even more definitely affirms Christians do not sin. "Whosoever abideth in him sinneth not" (1 John 3:6). "Whosoever is born of God doth not commit sin; for his seed remaineth in him: and he cannot sin, because he is born of God" (v. 9). "We know that whosoever is born of God sinneth not" (1 John 5:18). These statements are clear. Through the change of heart, called the new birth, men are enabled to refrain from sinning, and those who are born again do refrain from it. It is their disposition to live holy because they have that union with God here represented.

Not only do the Scriptures teach that the regenerated do not sin, but they definitely declare that all who sin are not children of God. "He that saith, I know him, and keepeth not his commandments, is a liar, and the truth is not in him" (1 John 2:4). "whosoever sinneth hath not seen him, neither known him" (1 John 3:6). "He that committeth sin is of the devil; for the devil sinneth from the beginning. For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that he might destroy the works of the devil" (v. 8). The sense of these texts is unmistakable. Those who commit sin are not Christians. "In this the children of God are manifest, and the children of the devil; whosoever doeth not righteousness is not of God" (v. 10). Here the inspired writer represents holiness of life as the distin-

guishing mark between Christians and the children of the devil. "The grace of God that bringeth salvation hath appeared to all men, teaching us that denying ungodliness and worldly lusts, we should live soberly, righteously, and godly, in this present world" (Titus 2:11).

2. **Definitive Sense of Sin**—A lack of clear definition of terms has often led to controversy and misunderstanding in doctrinal statements. Evidently this is the reason for much of the difference of views regarding the possibility of a sinless life. Some truly devout persons, because of past teaching, contend that all men sin, and yet there is reason to believe that they themselves keep their own consciences pure. Doubtless their attitude in this is due to a failure on their part clearly to distinguish between sin in the absolute sense and sin in the imputed sense.

By sin in the absolute sense we mean the violation of God's law. For "sin is the transgression of the law." It is in this sense a violation of God's written commandments or of some moral principle, and the right or wrong of an action depends upon its relation to the will of God rather than upon the intention of him who performs it. God's law disallows the making of false statements, yet through lack of knowledge of the facts any one but Omniscience may make a statement that may afterward be found to be false. It is always wrong to take that which belongs to another, yet all are liable unknowingly to keep money belonging to another through error in changing money or by failure to remember to pay a debt. Again, because of our human limitations we may fail to feed the starving, to encourage the distressed, to give money for the spreading of the gospel, or to point a lost soul to Christ. If we only knew, we would do better in many of these things. Every man fails in some of these or similar things every day. If sin is to be defined to mean only the violation of the absolute standard of moral right, then without doubt all sin every day. Because of thus regarding these mistakes and failings resulting from human limitations as sin, many true Christians have assumed that they sin more or less every day, while their hearts and motives are pure.

But according to the New Testament this is not the full definition of sin. The Old Testament describes a sin of ignorance, but the New Testament teaches that when there is no law, there is no transgression (Rom. 4:15). In other words, only as one knows he is

doing sin against God, does God impute it to him as sin. Reason also agrees with this. It would be unjust to punish one for that which he did unknowingly or for which he is not responsible. Moral principles allow that one is punishable only to the extent he is responsible. His guilt or innocence depends upon his intentions. If he does an act right in itself, whatever may be his motive the natural good results of that act will accrue to him, but his motive will determine the judicial results. Also, if one does an act wrong in itself, natural evil results follow, whatever was his motive, but the judicial resuilts are determined in the light of his motive. If he was constrained in any way to do the wrong act so it was not by his own choice, or if he did not and could not know it was wrong, then he has not sinned and deserves o punishment. One commits a sin only as he acts intelligently and intentionally.

Then a violation of the law through ignorance is not sin in the true or New Testament sense. Moreover, it is improper and confusing to teach that we sin more or less every day because of those unintentional violations of God's law. Neither need one pray for forgiveness of these acts for which he is not responsible. As the term is used in the New Testament, sin is an *intentional* violation of twhat one understands to be the will of God. It is absurd to suppose a just God imputes guilt to one for that over which he has no power and therefore for which he is not responsible. This view is in perfect accord with the many injunctions of the Scriptures against sinning.

3. **Causes Leading to a Denial of Holy Living**—Not a few professed Christians deny the possibility of one's being saved from sinning in this life. Neither do these consist wholly of the careless and hypocritical who would thus excuse their own sinful indulgence, but some apparently devout, earnest Christians seem sincerely to believe, in spite of all the Bible states to the contrary, that all must sin. The prevalence of this theory that all must sin is a result of various causes. Not the least of these is the wrong definition of sin previously discussed.

The theory that Christians commit sin is ot a modern one. It has passed down through the centuries from generation to generation and from creed to creed for hundreds of years. It can be traced in church history at least as far back as the early part of the third century. In his church history Williston Walker has referred to worldliness in the church as "a tendency much increased by its

rapid growth from heathen converts between 202 and 250. As common Christian practise became less strenuous, however, asceticism grew as the ideal of the more serious. Too much must not be expected of common Christians." As Christianity grew, it became popular, and this popularity resulted in many heathen becoming nominally Christian without the vital power of real Christianity to lift them above sin. Therefore they brought down their doctrinal standard on theis point to accord with their experience. They decoded that the ordinary Christian shoudl not be expected to refrain from sinning. This view has persisted in the minds of professed Christians and in their creed until the present time.

Doubtless the doctrine of baptismal regeneration has contributed much to the idea that Christians must commit sin. Men's trust in baptism as a means of regeneration has resulted in their failure to obtain true regeneration of heart by the Holy Spirit. Without the new heart they find themselves powerless to live free from sin. As the prophet has said, "A new heart also will I give you . . . and *cause* you to walk in my statutes, and ye shall keep my judgments, and do them" (Ezek. 36:26, 27). A lack of ability to live a sinless life by many who assume they are Christians, but who are not truly such, has been fuitful of the error that Christians are necessarily subject to commiting sin.

But a cause, more important than those already mentioned for the prevalence of the theory that Christians commit sin, was the erroneous teaching given prominence by Augustine and Calvin that man through Adam's son is totally depraved and incapable of choosing in moral actions. Another cause is the antinomian theory of a certain class of Calvinists, that Christ obeyed the law of God in our stead and therefore the merit of his obedience is imputed to us, so obedience on our part is unnecessary. Such unscriptural teaching was given a large place in Romish theology subsequent to the ourth century, but Augustine had influenced Protestant theology in some respects even more than that of Rome. On the points mentioned, Calvinistic theology has determined the creeds of most of the older Protestant denominations. Just to the extent that one holds it, he usually holds that Christians cannot refrain from sinning. The Calvinistic doctrine has been sufficiently considered in preceding pages.

Still another cause for the denial of the posibility of a holy life by Christians is the misinterpretation of certain texts of Scripture,

which are next to be considered.

4. **Objections Considered**—Objections to the teaching that Christians do not commit sin for the most part have their basis either in the assumption of the truthfulness of certain Calvinistic tenets or in a misinterpretation of certain texts that are supposed to teach that all men sin. The Calvinistic theories involved have been shown to be unscriptural. The Bible is evidently not self-contradictory; therefore the many plain texts already cited which clearly teach that Christians do not sin must not be disregarded by interpreting other text to the contrary. If these othe texts are properly interpreted they will agree with the general tenor of Scripture.

A class of texts often appealed to by objectors to the teaching of sinless life are those statements which affirm that all men in their unregenerate state commit sin. "There is none righteous, no, not one" (Rom. 3:10). Here the apostle describes men as they are without Christ in their unconverted state. That it is not a description of the experience of Christians is certain from the fact that in verses 11-18 the same persons are charged with the darkest sins. Also it is said of them, "There is none that seeketh after God. . . . The way of peace have they not known: there is no fear of God before their eyes." We know Christians do seek God, have peace with him, and fear him. In chapter 1 of this epistle the apostle shows the Gentiles are naturally sinful by nature. In the second chapter the Jews are like-wise sinful by nature. In the third chapter he says, "We have before proved both Jews and Gentiles, that they are all under sin" (v. 9). Then he quotes the words "There is none righteous, no, not one." He reiterates the same truth in verse 23, "For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God." The great truth here affirmed is that all men in their unsaved condition are naturally given to sinning, whether they be Jews or Gentiles. This is clear from the context. Another text, "There is noe good but one, that is, God" (Matt. 19:17), is likewise an affirmation that man is good only as God makes him good. It is said of Barnabas that he was a "good man" (Acts 11:24).

Another class of tests cited by objectors are those which declare none lived without sinning in the period preceding the coming of Christ. Examples are as follows: "There is no man that sinneth not" (1 Kings 8:46). "There is not a just man upon earth, that doeth good, and sinneth not" (Eccl. 7:20). These texts were true of

men in Solomon's day when they were given. But they were written a thousand years before it was said of Jesus by the angel, "He shall save his people from their sins" (Matt. 1:21). Long after the death of Solomon the prophet Ezekiel, looking forward to the coming of Christ, spoke the word of the Lord as follows: "Then will I sprinkle clean water upon you. . . . A new heart also will I give you . . . and cause you to walk in my statutes, and ye shall keep my judgments, and do them" (Ezek. 36:25-27). When Christ came he began to teach the new birth and men began to experience it. Consequently they were able to live sinless lives, as is so often declared in the first epistle of John. But especially could none live sinless under the Mosaic law because of the sin of ignorance, of which the New Testament knows nothing.

A few other texts are sometimes quoted in support of the theory that Christians cannot live without sinning. Romans 7:14-25, "The evil which I would not, that I do" (v. 19), is pointed to as the experience of the apostle Paul and therefore it is reasoned that we cannot hope to live a better life than the one there described. That this was Paul's experience when seeking righteousness by the works of the law before his conversion is evident from the context. In preceding chapters he seeks to show justification is only by faith. Here he shows it cannot be by one's own works, because of indwelling sin. But in the sixth chapter he tells us that those justified by faith are no longer the servants of sin, but are made free from it. In the eighth chapter also, especially in verse 2, he tells of deliverance from the bondage of sinning. "The law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus hath made me free from the law of sin and death." It was the law of sin that caused Paul to do what he would not do before he was regenerated. When the Spirit of life came into his heart he was freed from the power of sin so he no longer was compelled to sin. That he did not sin after conversion is certain from his own words. "Ye are witnesses, and God also, how *holily* and justly and unblameably we behaved ourselves among you that believe" (1 Thess. 2:10).

Another text of the objector is a part of the prayer which Jesus gave to his disciples as a model for their praying. It reads, "Forgive us our sins" (Luke 11:4). If one has sinned it is proper that he should ask forgiveness. Before the kingdom of God was set up it was important that believers should pray, "Thy kingdom come." But as when Christ's kingdom had been established further

prayer for its coming in this sense was superfluous, so when one's sins have been pardoned he no longer needs to pray, "Forgive us our sins." Jesus said, "After this manner therefore pray ye" (Matt. 6:9). This prayer was given as an example of the acceptable and edifying kind of prayer. It is excellent as a model of prayer, but is not intended for exact repetition by all Christians. Therefore it does not give any support to the theory that all Christians commit sin every day.

Our contention is not that believers cannot sin if they choose to do so. Certainly if they do not steadfastly resist temptation they may commit sin, but it is equally true that "he that is born of God sinneth not."

CHAPTER V

ENTIRE SANCTIFICATION

Justification and regeneration have been represented in the preceding chapter as constituting the initial work of salvation. We now come to consider another aspect of salvation which is distinctly set forth and promised by the Scriptures as a complete sanctification.

I. Sense of Sanctification

1. **Other Designating Terms**—The term most commonly employed to designate this second cleansing is sanctification. This usage has support in the Scriptures. Other designating terms often used for the same idea are holiness, Christian perfection, Christian purity, perfect love, and the higher Christian life. None of these terms adequately express the idea they are used to represent. Probably the phrase "entire sanctification" is the most exact designation of the doctrine and has biblical grounds for its usage in the words of the apostle Paul, "The very God of peace sanctify you wholly" (1 Thess. 5:23). But inasmuch as no term has the specific meaning of this doctrine in the Scriptures the particular designation to be used is optional with the individual.

2. **No One Specific Scriptural Sense**—Though the particular truth under consideration is of more importance than any designating term by which it is expressed, yet confusion as to the sense of the term "sanctification" has often led to erroneous views concerning the doctrine. Our English word "sanctify" is from the Greek verb ἁγιάζω *(hagiazo).* The adjective form of the word, ἅγιος *(hagios),* is properly translated "sanctified, holy, pure, chaste, hallowed, or consecrated." Sanctification, then, means primarily to cleanse, and also includes the idea of consecration. Therefore all cleansing leading to holiness, whether that cleansing be of the heart or of the life, spiritual or physical, of committed sins or of depravity of the nature, actual or ceremonial, is properly described as sanctification. It is doubtful whether the term has any specific or technical usage in the Bible as it has come to have in the minds of not a few people. Being a general term meaning to make clean or holy, it is used of various aspects of cleansing in the Bible.

The term "sanctification" is capable of being used in at least eight different senses with respect to experience or practice, and is

used in most of these senses in the Bible. It may be used in several senses of the purification of the heart: (1) Of sanctification of the heart generally distinguishing as to the particular aspect of cleansing: Acts 20:32; 26:18; Romans 15:16; 1 Corinthians 1:2; 6:11; Hebrews 2:11; 13:12; Jude 1. (2) Of justification as a sanctification or cleansing from committed sins: Revelation 1:5; 1 John 1:7, 9; Hebrews 9:14; 1:3. (3) Of regeneration, or the removal of or cleansing from the stony heart and sanctification: John 17:17; Ephesians 5:26; 1 Thessalonians 5:23. In all the foregoing senses sanctification is effected by God. Sanctification may be also used in four other senses, in all of which it is applied to works performed by man: (1) Of sanctification of the outward life: 1 Thessalonians 4:7; 2 Timothy 2:19-21; 1 Peter 1:14-16. (2) Of reverence, or sanctification by ascribing holiness to a person or thing: Numbers 20:12; 1 Peter 3:15. (3) Of consecration, or sanctification by setting apart: Deuteronomy 5:12; John 17:19; 10:36. (4) Of ceremonial and physical sanctification: Exodus 19:23; 1 Corinthians 7:14; 1 Timothy 4:5.

3. **Its Sense as Here Used**—As it is used in this chapter, sanctification is a purification of men's hearts from depravity subsequent to regeneration. It is not assumed that this is the only biblical meaning of the term, but it is enough that Jesus and Paul should have so used it (John 17:17; 1 Thess. 5:23). This is the most common designation of the doctrine of a definite cleansing after regeneration by its most learned and eminent advocates, such as John Wesley, John Fletcher, Adam Clarke, George Fox, Richard Watson, D. S. Warner, John Miley, Minor Raymond, Bishop Foster, and A. B. Simpson.

II. Need of a Second Cleansing

1. **Depravity a Ground for Twofold Cleansing** The fact of two forms of sin makes room for the possibility of two distinct cleansings from sin. In describing the nature of man resulting from the sin of Adam, it has been previously shown that he has a perverted moral nature. As a result of that derangement men also sin individually and are guilty. They have a double need. They need pardon of their own sins and restoration of their natures from the depraved condition. They need justification from guilt and sanctification of their natures. They need to be brought into right relations with God and have right character effected in themselves. It does not necessarily follow that these two forms of

sin in men must be overcome at two different times, but it is certain that their distinct nature and existence does positively show the possibility of two separate cleansings. If, as the Socinian affirms, men were not depraved, then we should rightly reason there is no possibility of a definite cleansing subsequent to pardon. The first cleansing is not an imperfect work that must be finished in a subsequent effort, but both cleansings, justification and sanctification, are complete cleansings of that aspect of sin which they affect.

2. **Depravity in the Regenerated**—The doctrine of sanctification as a second cleansing rests upon the idea that depravity remains either in whole or in part in those who have been truly regenerated. If it could be shown that regeneration accomplishes a complete restoration of the moral nature from its depraved condition in such a sense that no sinful tendency remains, then there could be no place for a second cleansing. But it is not here assumed that the proof of remaining depravity in believers is necessarily proof that that depravity may be removed in this life by a second operation of divine grace. Many who affirm the incompleteness of the cleansing from depravity in regeneration emphatically deny the possibility of one's being fully delivered from its power before the hour of death.

But, on the other hand, we need not suppose that the impossibility of entire sanctification is proved by the incompleteness or lact of it in regeneration. He who made man holy at the first is well able to effect cleansing from any moral depravity he has acquired. God wills to save men from all sin. Christ "gave himself for us, that he might redeem us from all iniquity," that we might be "pure even as he is pure." Therefore with the proof that the regenerate person has depravity remaining in him, there is reason to believe he may have it cleansed away. If it is not so, Christ has failed to accomplish the complete redemption from sin which he intended to accomplish.

That depravity is not entirely cleansed away in regeneration has been the belief of most Christians. It has been said by Dr. Miley that "the opposing doctrine of entire sanctification in regeneration was new with Zinzendorf and wholly unknown before him." The doctrine of remaining depravity in the regenerate may properly be regarded as generally accepted. The prevalence of the belief is well shown by its statement in many of the church creeds. The Anglican

creed reads, "And this infection of nature doth remain, yea in them that are regenerated." Also the Westminster creed states, "This corruption of nature during this life, doth remain in them that are regenerated." Doubtless the statements of these creeds and the common view of Christians on this subject are to be attributed in some measure to the prevalence of the idea of baptismal regeneration, and of a degenerate form of regeneration. But when we remember that multitudes of the most devout Christians, truly regenerated and in nowise committed to those creeds which affirm depravity in believers, and altogether independent of traditional theology, have still stedfastly believed on the ground of Scripture and of their own inner experience that cleansing from depravity is not complete in regeneration, it is unwise hastily to decide the doctrine is untrue.

Thousands of these same devout believers have testified that subsequent to their regeneration they were definitely cleansed from that remaining depravity by a second work of grace. The testimony of such persons has much value as corroboration of the Scripture teaching on this subject. But whatever value Christian experience may have it cannot properly be regarded as a ground for doctrine when standing alone. This is chiefly due to its misinterpretation and variability in different individuals. It is known that some persons when regenerated are conscious of but little of the movings of depravity in themselves. But this may be explained as due to the variability of the degree of depravity in the regenerate. If through the virtuous living of one's ancestors or even through his own self-restraint one is not greatly deranged in his moral nature he will probably not notice so radical a change in his conversion, nor will he experience the same degree of manifestations of the remaining depravity after regeneration as will one more depraved. Yet the testimony of the many genuinely regenerated persons who have been conscious of remaining depravity after conversion is still valuable as corroboration of the Bible teaching on the subject.

What proof then do the Scriptures afford of remaining depravity in Christians? The doctrine is not directly stated in the Bible, but is rather a general assumption which is to be found in many places. The lack of a direct scriptural statement of the doctrine, however, is no argument against its validity. Some doctrines, such as the new birth or justification by faith, are definitely and formally

stated in the Bible. Others equally important and fundamental to religion are constantly assumed, but nowhere formally stated. The truths of theism, of the divine Trinity, and of moral depravity are examples of those not formally stated. The Bible does not ordinarily set forth truth formally, but rather incidentally. Formal statements of truth were made by the inspired writers only as the immediate occasion required.

The fact of depravity in believers is implied in all those declarations of Scripture which teach a cleansing of the heart subsequent to regeneration. In John 15:1-6 under the figure of the purging of branches of a vine, Jesus describes a cleansing or purging of those who have been converted. A purging of believers implies something in them from which to be purged, and inasmuch as believers are already cleansed from committed sins and regenerated as a consequence of their believing, the purging here described must be a second cleansing. The Father is represented as the husbandman, Christ the vine, and men (v. 6), or his disciples (v. 5), branches of the vine. They are said to be "in" Christ (v. 2); and "if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature" (2 Cor. 5:17), or has been regenerated. This is certain. They are not, as some have wrongly supposed, merely justified and not regenerated. This is evident, not only from the last-mentioned text, but also because to be in Christ is to be in his church or kingdom, which is possible only through the new birth, for "except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God" (John 3:3). The person described in the text under consideration is also one who bears fruits, which according to Galatians 5:19-24 is possible only to the regenerated. Sinners bear the fruits of the flesh, but these branches joined to Christ do not bear sinful fruit.

"Purge" as used in this text means to cleanse. The original word, καθαίρω (*kathairo*), means, acording to the very best Greek authorities, "to cleanse," and when used metaphorically, "to cleanse from sin." The idea that it is a cleansing of the outward life instead of the heart is erroneous for the reason that the Scriptures constantly enjoin upon men this cleansing of the life; it is not done by God. It has been shown already that the cleansing done by God is a purification of the heart, but that men are exhorted to cleanse their conduct themselves (1 Pet. 1:14-16). It is a mistake to suppose this is a mere outward cleansing because it is represented by the purging of a vine. It is only an example of the inadequacy

of natural figures perfectly to illustrate spiritual truths. Had there been an inner cleansing of a vine, Jesus would doubtless have used that instead of "purge" to represent this cleansing to be accomplished in believers that their fruitfulness might be increased. That this inner cleansing is referred to is also evident from other parts of Jesus' discourse and prayer recorded in John 14-17, of which this vine figure is a part. It agrees with the prayer for their sanctification (John 17:17) that they might be kept from the evil of the world. It also agrees with the promise of the baptism of the Holy Ghost, the sanctifier. Discussion of other texts which imply sin in the regenerated by teaching a cleansing of believers is deferred until later. A need of a second cleansing is to be found, then, in the fact of depravity in the regenerated, which is frequently implied in the Scriptures, and is corroborated by the testimony of many intelligent and devout Christians of the consciousness of remaining depravity after regeneration.

3. **Distinction Between Regeneration and Sanctification**—The foregoing argument for depravity in the regenerated naturally gives rise to the question, If regeneration is not a removal of the depravity of the nature what is accomplished in it? How is it to be distinguished from entire sanctification? Regeneration has been defined in a measure already in making a distinction between it and justification. Justification was then shown to be an effecting of right relations between the sinner and God. Regeneration was shown to be the incoming of the power of the Spirit of God giving power over the reigning power of depravity. It is entirely different from justification in its nature, though they are simultaneous. Though both regeneration and entire sanctification have to do with the practical overcoming of depravity, yet they also are different in their nature. "Justification is salvation from the guilt of sin, regeneration is salvation from the reigning power of sin, and sanctification is salvation from the indwelling of sin."

The difficulty of showing the difference between regeneration and sanctification is the difficulty of accurately and fully defining either. This latter difficulty is due to the impossibility of describing exactly the nature of depravity. Like other spiritual truths it cannot be described in terms of the physical. All expressions concerning depravity, such as remnants or roots, and washing or eradication, are but figurative expressions and should not be allowed to obscure thought as to the literal facts involved in

regeneration and sanctification. For practical purposes the distinction between regeneration and sanctification may be described as follows: Regeneration is a suppression of depravity by the power of the Spirit of God coming into one's life, but entire sanctification is the eradication or removal of that depravity from the nature. The work of regeneration is well expressed by Paul in these words, "For the law [power, as is the sense of "law in Rom. 7:23] of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus hath made me free from the Law [power] of sin and death" (Rom. 8:2). Because of its effects in the life, being regenerated may be properly described as it is in the Bible, as becoming "a new creature," or receiving "a new heart."

That regeneration should be what is here described is reasonable. It would be useless for God to forgive a sinner if he did not thus bring depravity into subjection to the Spirit of God. Because depravity exists in the regenerate, even though it no longer dominates the life, there is a need for a subsequent cleansing from it. Also it is not unreasonable that depravity should not be entirely removed at the time of the pardon of sin. Because human nature generally is depraved and the one who sins was depraved in infancy before he ever sinned, it is not unreasonable that when he repents he should be pardoned and enabled by the indwelling Spirit of God afterwards to keep from sin, rather than that he should be at once restored to Adamic purity. Because there are two steps down in the fall it is not unreasonable that there should be two steps in salvation.

III. Proofs of a Second Cleansing

What then are the proofs of a second cleansing of the hearts of those who have already been regenerated? Such proofs of a second cleansing are ground both for remaining depravity in believers and for the actuality of a definite and entire cleansing from depravity before the hour of death. Unfortunately for the doctrine of sanctification, some of its supporters, in trying to support it with a multitude of texts, have used many that have no application to the subject. This has resulted in causing some persons, who found that these texts do not apply, to fall into the error of rejecting the doctrine along with the erroneous proofs of it in spite of sound proofs.

1. **Sanctification for the Converted**—In the prayer of Christ for his disciples at the close of the last supper, he prayed to the

Father, "Sanctify them through thy truth: thy word is truth" (John 17:17). The sanctification here described for the disciples was a cleansing of the heart and not of the life. This is evident from the fact that it was to be done by God and not by themselves. As previously shown, men are exhorted to cleanse their own lives; but the cleansing which God does is always represented as being the purification of the heart. Also this sanctification was in order that they might be kept from evil (v. 15). It was a cause and the holy living was the effect. The mere fact that this sanctification is to be accomplished by the Word is no argument against its being a heart cleansing. We are also regenerated by the word of God (1 Pet. 1:23). As it is said, Being born again . . . by the word of God," so it is said, "Sanctify them through thy truth."

The cleansing for which Jesus prayed could not have been that of initial salvation. He did not pray for sinners, "the world," but for his disciples. They were already justified. This is evident from various statements found in this same chapter as well as in other texts. They were God's and were obedient to his word (John 17:6); were not of the world (vs. 9, 14, 16); were kept from sin (vs. 11, 12, 15); their names were written in heaven, doubtless, as were those of the Seventy (Luke 10:20), and they had been sent out to preach the gospel. It is certain that they were also regenerated and that this was not the sanctification for which Jesus prayed. The facts already mentioned concerning them are fruits especially of regeneration. It is the new birth that makes men "not of the world," and keeps from sin (Ezek 36:26, 27). And these were not of the world and were "kept," were obedient or kept the word of God (John 17:6). Surely these men were born again who were sent to preach the kingdom of God, which one "cannot see" except he be born again.

Regeneration is essential to entrance into the kingdom of God (John 3:3). Jesus said before this time, that since the days of John "the kingdom of God is preached, and every man presseth into it" (Luke 16:16). Therefore men were being born of God prior to the time of Jesus' prayer. There can be no doubt that the apostles were among those who had been regenerated. That they were is certain from the Scriptures. It is said, "Them that believe on his name . . . were born . . . of God" (John 1:11-13). The disciples had believed, as is shown by the Great Confession (Matt. 16:16). Therefore they were born of God. Still another proof that they were regenerated

is the fact that they were in Christ the true vine (John 15:2-4). Therefore they were regenerated, for "if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature" (2 Cor. 5:17). This prayer of Jesus for the sanctification of his disciples is proof that there is a cleansing of the heart for the regenerated, for he said, "Neither pray I for these alone, but for them also which shall believe on me through their word" (John 17:20).

2. **Sanctification for the Church**—In full accord with Jesus' prayer that those who are already converted should be sanctified are the words of Paul that sanctification is for the church, which is composed of only those who are regenerated. "Christ also loved the church, and gave himself for it; that he might sanctify and cleanse it [the church] with the washing of water by the word" (Eph. 5:25, 26). Here is described a sanctification, not of sinners, but of the church. That this sanctification is not a consecration, but a cleansing of the heart, and not a purification of life is clear from the fact already shown that the sanctification of men which God effects is always a cleansing of the heart. Men are exhorted to cleanse their own lives, or to be holy.

3. **An Entire Sanctification**—The church at Thessalonica was established by the apostle Paul during his second missionary journey, but very soon he was compelled by persecution to go elsewhere. Not long after his departure he wrote his first epistle to them from Corinth, in the closing part of which he said, "The very God of peace sanctify you wholly [entirely]; and I pray God your whole spirit and soul and body be preserved blameless unto the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ" (1 Thess. 5:23). The sanctification here taught is to be done by God; therefore it is a cleansing of the heart rather than of the conduct. Those for whom Paul desired it were not sinners, but a church "in God the Father and in the Lord Jesus Christ (1 Thess. 1:1). They were "brethren" (v. 4); and, judged from the frequent commendations in the epistle, evidently a very spiritual church. Yet they were not wholly sanctified. The implication is that they were pure in some degree or in some sense. Their need for entire sanctification is that they may be kept "blameless," which is identical with the disciples being kept from the evil of the world, in order to which sanctification was important, according to the prayer of Christ.

4. **Coincident with the Holy Spirit Baptism**—Denial of a definite work of salvation subsequent to conversion implies a rejection, not

only of a second cleansing, but also of the baptism of the Holy Spirit after regeneration. When Jesus promised him to the disciples he said of him, "Whom the world cannot receive" (John 14:17). It has been previously shown that the apostles were converted before Pentecost, at which time they were all baptized by the Holy Spirit. When Philip preached at Samaria many believed and were baptized. Later when Peter and John at Jerusalem heard that Samaria had received the word of God, they went there and laid their hands upon them and the Samaritans received the Holy Ghost (Acts 8:5-17). Paul found certain "disciples" at Ephesus who had "believed" (Acts 19:1, 2). Even though he recognized them as believers and disciples, yet he laid his hands upon them and they received the Holy Ghost (v. 6). The apostle Paul himself was converted on the road to Damascus and was there called to preach (Acts 26:18); he prayed (Acts 9:11); he was a "chosen vessel" (v. 15); and soon after was called "Brother Saul" by Ananias (v. 17). It was after all this that he was baptized with the Holy Spirit. In all these instances the baptism of the Holy Spirit was subsequent to conversion.

Peter was called in question for preaching to Cornelius, who was a Gentile. In his defense he said, "God, which knoweth the hearts bare them witness, giving them the Holy Ghost, even as he did unto us; and put no difference between us and them, *purifying their hearts* by faith" (Acts 15:8, 9). The purification of heart to which Peter here refers evidently took place when he visited Cornelius. He states that God gave them the Spirit and purified their hearts. Doubtless that cleansing was that which we here designate sanctification and was subsequent to conversion. But the experience of Cornelius was normal in this respect, for Peter says God did to them "even as he did unto us," the apostles, at Pentecost. Therefore the apostles received a cleansing of heart at Pentecost in harmony with Jesus' prayer for their sanctification in John 17:17.

5. **Two Cleansings in Old Testament Type**—The Mosaic institutions were types or prophetic similitudes of the great basic truths of Christianity. They did not merely happen to be parallel to, or to illustrate, Christian truth, but were originally given of God for that purpose. It is said of them, "Which are a shadow of things to come; but the body is of Christ" (Col. 2:17); "Which was a figure for the time then present" (Heb. 9:9); "The example and shadow of heavenly things" (Heb. 8:5); "The figures of the true" (Heb. 9:24);

"A shadow of good things to come" (Heb. 10:1). The true work of man's salvation through Christ was altogether worthy to be foreshown by the symbolic salvation of the Mosaic system.

The tabernacle was typical. As the dwelling-place of God it was typical of the church of Christ, the house of God (Heb. 8:2; 1 Tim. 3:15; Heb. 9:9). But as a means of divine service and a system of sacrifice it was also typical of the work of salvation, or the way by which the sinner comes to God. This is clearly brought out by Hebrews 10:19-22. That those sacrifices were typical of the blood of Christ and those ceremonial cleansings of our cleansing is certain and generally admitted by believers in the Bible.

The Tabernacle contained two rooms: the holy place and the holiest place. There were two veils, one at the entrance of each of these rooms. Two altars were placed, one before each of these veils. There were two sprinklings of blood, one on each of these altars. What could better symbolize two distinct cleansings and two degrees in holiness than this twofold presentation of blood before God to give admittance into greater holiness? The first altar typified justification. The washing at the laver typified regeneration, (Titus 3:5), and the blood placed on the golden altar as a sin-offering for those who had already been admitted to the first room because of their symbolic holiness was typical of entire sanctification or a cleansing subsequent to conversion. Then there is here represented two degrees of holiness in the church, which makes possible the sanctification of "the church" as described in Ephesians 6:26.

That the second room is typical of sanctification is clear from Hebrews 10:19-22: "Having therefore, brethren, boldness to enter into the holiest by the blood of Jesus, by a new and living way, which he hath consecrated for us, through the veil, that is to say, his flesh; and having an high priest over the house of God; let us draw near with a true heart in full assurance of faith, having our hearts sprinkled from an evil conscience, and our bodies washed with pure water." Here the exhortation is to "brethren," those already justified and regenerated, to go "into the holiest" from the holy place where they then were. They were to enter it "by the blood of Jesus." "Having had" (ASV) their hearts sprinkled from an evil conscience (justified at the brazen altar), and their bodies washed with pure water (regenerated at the laver), which admitted to the first room, they were urged to go on into the holiest *by the*

blood of Jesus. If it be objected on the ground of Hebrews 9:24 that the holiest place was a type of heaven, we reply, then we have here an exhortation to the converted to enter heaven. Such an exhortation would be improper, for at best we can only be ready for heaven, which these already were; actually entering is never voluntary on our part. We can enter only when God wills. We could not enter voluntarily if we chose; therefore if heaven were meant in this particular text the text would be superfluous and absurd. But this text evidently exhorts brethren to enter that which may be entered at once voluntarily, which is true of entire sanctification, but is not true of heaven. Hebrews 9:24 is concerned with the act of Christ's mediation, which was typified by the mediatory service of Aaron that took place in the holiest of the tabernacle. It is a service that is here represented, rather than a place. As the typical mediation was in God's presence, so is the true mediation in God's presence, regardless of where God is.

IV. Nature of Entire Sanctification

1. **A Real Experience**—Any attempt accurately and fully to define sanctification must result in failure. No spiritual or mental operation can be so defined. It does not therefore follow necessarily that it is unreal because not capable of full and logical definition in the present state of human knowledge. It would be as unreasonable to reject its reality of regeneration on the same ground which is equally indefinable in full. But the Scriptures and experience testify to the reality of both of them. Many other facts which are mysteries and unexplainable to human wisdom as to their nature are commonly believed. Mysteries surround us on every hand in physical nature. Also the mind itself as to its nature as well as to its phenomena is involved in mystery. We know we think, but we do not know how we think. It is, therefore, unreasonable to reject sanctification because of the mystery connected with it. Full knowledge of the nature of sanctification is not necessary to the benefits of the experience, as it is not necessary that one understand his digestive processes to be benefited by the food he eats, or to be informed concerning the mechanism of a telephone and the nature of electricity in order to have the advantage of communications by that means.

But some truths can be known by experience which can be known in no other way. A man born blind can have no true comprehension of color, even though one might try earnestly to explain it to him. He has nothing in his experience with which to

compare it. So also a practical idea of the nature of entire sanctification is possible only to him who has the experience. Also one can know the nature of conversion only by being converted. Yet as many who have been truly converted cannot explain regeneration, so many who have been sanctified are unable to define sanctification. As the most satisfactory definition of regeneration is a description of its effects, so the description of the effects of sanctification are of special importance.

2. **Effects of Sanctification**—A distinction was previously made between depravity and the effect of it, which is a tendency to sin. Now we should distinguish between sanctification and the effects of it. Sanctification may be described as being a cleansing from the depravity of the nature; or to state it more literally, it is a restoration of the nature from its deranged condition. If depravity is largely a perversion of the affections, then sanctification must be principally a restoration of them. The effects of sanctification are the absence of the effects of depravity. That the second cleansing taught in the Scriptures is a restoration from depravity is evident from the fact that this is according to man's need. In the very nature of the case it is impossible that a cleansing of the heart subsequent to justification could be a cleansing from those sins which are already forgiven.

Sanctification does not effect an eradication of any essential qualities of human nature as originally constituted, but only of the evil dispositions resulting from its perversion. When God created man he endowed him with a certain natural pride, commonly known as self-respect, which is very desirable in that it causes one to seek to be agreeable and pleasing to his fellow men. This natural pride is perverted through moral depravity to such an extent that men in their sinful condition desire, not only to be well thought of by their fellows, but to be esteemed more highly than any one else. They come to have an unduly exalted estimation of themselves. This perversion of a natural and proper disposition is the result of selfishness and is sinful. Sanctification results simply in the restoration to the natural condition where one is free from sinful pride, yet is possessed of a proper self-respect.

A sense of justice is also natural to man as created. Justice is an attitude of God and is essential to a moral being. This sense of justice causes one to feel a natural anger, indignation, or displeasure at an act of injustice. Every good person feels it when he sees

oppression of the helpless. Jesus felt it and God often felt it with Israel. Depravity results in a derangement of this natural anger so that it becomes vindictive, selfish; it becomes hatred. This leads one to sinful acts. Sanctification does not remove from one that sense of justice nor what is included in it, but does restore it from the depraved condition. Other natural qualities such as acquisitiveness, humor, and the desire for pleasure are deranged through sin, but restored in sanctification.

It is not always possible to distinguish clearly between emotions and manifestations of depravity and of essential human nature. The effects of sanctification are not uniform in all men, partly for the reason that the degree of the depravity is not the same in all. The personal experience of sanctification of no particular person can be cited as an example of what the effects of sanctification will be in all others. Sanctification does not destroy the essential qualities of human nature, does not remove all human imperfections, does not make one infallible, nor save one from the possibility of committing sin. Sanctification is identical with Adamic perfection as to heart purity, but in various other aspects Adamic perfection is not attained until glorification at the resurrection. This must be true in regard to the physical and mental natures. It is consistent with human probation under present conditions that we should not in all respects be brought to the condition of man in his original estate in this life.

3. **A Definite Work**—A question of special importance in determining what is the nature of sanctification is whether it is a definite, instantaneous work of grace or whether it is a gradual growth in holiness, of the nature of growth in grace. What has been said about it in preceding chapters assumes it is a definite, instantaneous purification. The proof that it is a second cleansing is proof also that it is a definite cleansing. However, it seems important that more formal proof should be given on this point.

The very nature of the work of sanctification, as we have set it forth, is opposed to the idea of gradual cleansing. Evidently there is a growth in grace after conversion that may be called a sanctification of the life, but this is not to be confused with the instantaneous heart cleansing called sanctification. If depravity of the moral nature may be described as being like that in the nature of a lion which causes it to differ from the lamb, then the distinction between a growth into holiness and a definite cleansing

of the heart from depravity might well be represented by the difference between taming the ferocious nature of the lion and miraculously converting a lion nature into that of a docile lamb.

Sanctification is accomplished by the blood of Christ as is regeneration. Few would affirm regeneration is a gradual process. The "purging" of John 15:1-6 is a definite work. Its purpose is that those already in Christ and who are bearing the fruit should bear more fruit. According to this statement, holiness of life is the result, not the cause, of holiness of heart. The typical sanctification, the application of the blood on the golden altar, was a definite work, as was the passing from the holy place to the most holy place of the tabernacle. Also the Scriptures represent some as being already sanctified. Very few, if any, of those who hold sanctification is attained by a process of growth ever believe themselves to have attained the experience. Herein the fruits of their theory differ from the Bible teaching of sanctification.

We do not say that God might not if he so desired and because of special conditions sanctify one by a gradual process, or that he might not wholly sanctify one at the time of justification, but it is clear that such is not the normal method; nor is such taught in the Scriptures, and it is better that we teach what is taught in the Bible than what is not taught there.

V. Attainment of Sanctification

1. **Attainable in This Life**—For the attainment of sanctification it is of importance that one know it is possible during this life. This point is denied by the creeds of some denominations. The point to be proved here is not the need of a second work, not the possibility of entire sanctification, but that sanctification is attainable before the hour of death. That it is attainable during this life is evident from several Scripture statements already cited. Jesus prayed for his disciples that they might be sanctified in order that they might be kept from evil. Therefore he recognized it as attainable in life. Likewise the apostle Paul prayed for the entire sanctification of the Thessalonians that they might be preserved. Some were sanctified to whom epistles were addressed. Of these the inspired writer said, "He hath perfected forever them that are sanctified" (Heb. 10:14).

Sanctification is not only attainable in this life, but its attainment by every believer is important. Jesus prayed for the sanctification of his disciples at the solemn hour when he was ready to go

out from the last supper to Gethsemane, betrayal, and death. It was worthy of a chief place in the last prayer for his disciples. The apostles also give it an important place. Paul at once inquired, when he went to Ephesus and found twelve disciples, if they had not received the Holy Ghost. [The basic significance of "sanctification" (holiness) in the Bible is being separated, or set apart, rather than "cleansing."]

2. **Conditions for Sanctification**—The conditions for sanctification are not formally stated in the Scriptures, but they may be known from incidental statements. They are briefly as follows: The apostles received it by prayer (Acts 2), whereas the Samaritans and the Ephesians by the prayers and laying on of the hands of the others (Acts 8:15, 17; 19:6). A dedication of ourselves is necessary, in the very nature of the case, however, to this cleansing and infilling of the Spirit, as in the ceremonial sanctification described in the Old Testament. Consecration is important for sanctification, but this is not to be confused with the forsaking of all that Jesus set forth as a requisite to discipleship. It is rather a dedication to be a temple for the Holy Spirit's indwelling.

Too often sanctification is represented as an experience very difficult of attainment, which may be reached only after long praying and seeking, and which many may never be able to attain. The Bible rather represents it as for even the weakest of Christians. As Peter said in his Pentecostal sermon in telling the penitent Jews of the possibility of their receiving the Holy Ghost, "For the promise is unto you, and to your children, and to all that are afar off, even as many as the Lord our God shall call" (Acts 2:39). The conditions are simple prayer and faith. "If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children: how much more shall your Heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit to them that ask him?" (Luke 10:13). [In the church, the focus regarding sanctification (holiness) has shifted largely from "cleansing" and "purification from inborn sin (natural depravity, the sinful nature)" to the concept that in salvation men are cleansed from and forgiven for all sin through the blood of Christ. The experience of the Holy Spirit (being filled with the Holy Spirit) as a second work of grace is viewed principally in terms of its teaching, guiding, and empowering aspects.]

3. **Assurance of Sanctification**—The evidence of one's being sanctified should not be expected to be experienced by the physical

senses. A spiritual work in the moral nature must be known otherwise. To reject the truth of sanctification because it is not attested by the physical senses would be as unreasonable as to reject justification or regeneration for a similar reason. A spiritual operation is properly known spiritually. Assurance of sanctification is like assurance of the initial work of salvation, by the witness of the Holy Spirit and of our own spirit. The Bible does not affirm this of sanctification, but it does teach that these are the witnesses to other spiritual experiences, including the witness to the sin of the unsaved and to the adoption of the converted. The Spirit also similarly made known his will that Paul and Barnabas should go forth from Antioch as missionaries. In the nature of things God's Spirit and our spirit are the witnesses to sanctification. That these are the sources of assurance of sanctification is a fact of experience.

The degree of clearness of the witness of the Spirit of God to sanctification in one's consciousness varies as in the assurance of adoption. Likewise as in the assurance of adoption the witness of our own spirit varies with different persons and for a similar reason. Because some are not conscious of a definite assurance or have doubts about their having received the experience is no more valid ground for the rejection of the reality of sanctification than similar doubts about conversion would be for the denial of the reality of that experience. The second cleansing is as definite as is conversion and one may be equally assured of his possessing the experience. [In many instances where the terms "sanctification" or "sanctified" are understood by the author to refer to a *specific act or experience* (usually, the infilling of the Holy Spirit), many modern interpretors understand these terms to refer to a *state*—being holy (set apart) or being made holy.]

CHAPTER VI

BAPTISM WITH THE HOLY SPIRIT

The personality of the Holy Spirit has been sufficiently discussed under theology proper. Now we are to inquire concerning the baptism with the Holy Spirit and what it comprehends. Because it is an aspect of salvation, the consideration of this subject is appropriate under soteriology.

I. Nature of the Baptism with the Holy Spirit

1. **Expressions Representative of It**—One formula for representing that special incoming to believers of the Spirit of God and of his mighty working in and through them is "baptized with the Holy Ghost." It was first used by John the Baptist concerning the work of the coming of Christ. "I indeed baptize you with water unto repentance: but he that cometh after me is mightier than I, . . . he shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost, and with fire" (Matt. 3:11). The words "and with fire" are not to be understood to teach another baptism than that with the Holy Spirit. This "with" before fire is not found in the Greek text, which is indicated by its being printed in italics. The words "and fire" indicate a more thorough cleansing than that effected by John's baptism. This coming of the Holy Spirit is called a baptism because of the greatness of his working and power. Old Testament prophets received him as a spirit of prophecy temporarily, but had only a limited degree of his working. In the Christian dispensation believers have his presence and manifestations in a much greater measure, so they may be truly said to be overwhelmed or baptized with him. The significance of this expression is also shown by the words of Jesus, "For John truly baptized with water; but ye shall be baptized with the Holy Ghost not many days hence" (Acts 1:5).

The foregoing words of John and Jesus evidently refer to the Pentecostal outpouring of the Holy Spirit. It is said of the disciples on that occasion, "And they were all filled with the Holy Ghost" (Acts 2:4). To be *filled* with the Holy Spirit is to be *baptized* with him. In the account of Peter's preaching to Cornelius it is said, "While Peter yet spake these words, the *Holy Ghost fell* on all them which heard the word. And they of the circumcision which believed were astonished, as many as came with Peter, because that on the Gentiles also was *poured out the gift of the*

Holy Ghost (Acts 10:44, 45). That the expressions "Holy Ghost fell," "the gift of the Holy Ghost," and "filled with the Holy Ghost" are identical with "baptized with the Holy Ghost is shown by the words of Peter later when he identified that received by Cornelius with that received by the apostles at Pentecost, and both of these experiences with the baptism of the Holy Ghost which Jesus promised. "And as I began to speak, the *Holy Ghost fell* on them, *as on us at the beginning.* Then remembered I the word of the Lord, how that he said, John indeed baptized with water; but ye shall be *baptized with the Holy Ghost.* Forasmuch then as God gave them *the like gift* as he did unto us, who believed on the Lord Jesus Christ; what was I, that I could withstand God?" (Acts 11:15-17).

In addition to the foregoing four expressions others are used of the baptism with the Holy Spirit, such as: "the promise of my Father" and "endued with power from on high" (Luke 24:49); "receive the Holy Ghost" (Acts 2:38; 19:2-6); "the Holy Ghost came on them" (Acts 19:2-6).

2. **A Definite Experience**—The baptism of the Holy Spirit is a definite experience in the sense that it is a supernatural operation which God effects at a definite time. It is not a gradual growth or natural development in piety or spiritual power. It is as definite as is the experience of conversion, and one may be equally certain that he has received it. This is clear from the New Testament examples and statements concerning it. Jesus told the apostles to tarry at Jerusalem and not to undertake the work of evangelization to which he had commissioned them until they were endued with power by the baptism with the Holy Spirit. Jesus evidently regarded this baptism as an experience so definite that they would know certainly when they received it. Paul also wrote and spoke of it as an experience which men knew they had or had not. The apostles received the experience definitely on the day of Pentecost. The Samaritan believers received it when Peter and John laid their hands upon them. Cornelius received it while Peter preached to him. The twelve disciples at Ephesus received it at the time Paul's hands were laid upon them.

3. **Distinct from Regeneration**—The Holy Spirit baptism is, like entire sanctification, distinct from and subsequent to the work of regeneration. And as justification and regeneration are distinct in nature yet simultaneous as to occurence, so entire sanctification

and the baptism with the Holy Ghost are distinct in their nature but take place at the same time. That the baptism with the Spirit is subsequent to and not at the time of conversion is evident from even a casual reading of the Scriptures. The citation of a few texts and examples is sufficient evidence of this truth.

It is certain that the apostles were baptized with the Holy Ghost on the day of Pentecost. While the account in the second chapter of Acts states that they were "filled with the Holy Ghost," but does not state in so many words that they were then baptized with the Spirit, yet in Acts 11:15, 16 the latter expression is used of the Pentecostal outpouring. That the apostles were baptized with the Spirit on the day of Pentecost is commonly allowed even by those who deny this experience is distinct from conversion. The vital question, then, is were the apostles regenerated before Pentecost? They had believed on Christ (John 17:8; Matt. 16:16), and therefore had been born again (John 1:12, 13). Their names were written in heaven, as were those of the Seventy (Luke 10:20). They had been sent out to preach the gospel (Matt. 10:7). They were not of the world (John 14:17; 15:19). They kept God's word (John 17:6). They were clean through the word (John 15:3), which is effected by "being born again . . . by the word of God" (1 Pet. 1:23). There is no room for any doubt as to their having been truly regenerated when the foregoing words were spoken, which was before Jesus' crucifixion. But after his resurrection Jesus told them to wait at Jerusalem for the promise of the Father, saying, "*Ye shall* be baptized with the Holy Ghost *not many days hence"* (Acts 1:5). They were converted, but their baptism with the Spirit was yet in the future. In perfect agreement with the foregoing statement are the words of Jesus telling them of the Comforter, "Whom *the world cannot receive,* because it seeth him not, neither knoweth him; but ye know him" (John 14:17).

Neither was the experience of the apostles abnormal, for the disciples of Samaria also received the Holy Spirit subsequently to their conversion. When they "believed Philip preaching the things concerning the kingdom of God, and the name of Jesus Christ, they were baptized, both men and women" (Acts 8:12). It is incredible that this Spirit-commissioned evangelist, who was as definitely led and used of God as were any of the apostles, made the blunder of baptizing a large company of sinners. No such thing is intimated by the Sacred Record. Evidently they were regenerated

as a result of their faith in Philip's preaching. In consequence of that, Philip baptized them. When the apostles at Jerusalem heard of the converts at Samaria they sent Peter and John to them. When Peter and John had reached Samaria and laid their hands upon them, the new disciples received the Holy Ghost. They were converted under the ministry of Philip, but they received the baptism with the Holy Spirit under the ministry of Peter and John a considerable time later.

The twelve disciples whom Paul found upon his arrival at Ephesus had not yet received the Holy Ghost. Yet they had "believed" (Acts 19:2), and were "disciples" (v. 1). Through the laying on of Paul's hands the Holy Spirit came on them (v. 6). As shown in the preceding chapter, the Apostle Paul and Cornelius and his household received the Holy Spirit after conversion.

Yet in some sense the Spirit of God is with every regenerate person before he is "baptized" with the Spirit. When he promised the Comforter Jesus said, "He dwelleth with you, and shall be in you" (John 14:17). Also the Apostle Paul said, "But ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his" (Rom. 8:9). But these texts are not contradictory to those already cited. In the first text here quoted Jesus seems to make a distinction between the relation of the Spirit before and after conversion by the prepositions "with" and "in". Paul, however, makes no such distinctions. Every Christian has the Holy Spirit in him, but this is not saying every believer has the *baptism* with the Spirit. One may have the Spirit as a regenerating power and yet not have that great measure of his working that is implied in the baptism with the Spirit. The Spirit of God is omnipresent in his power to work. He is with the sinner to convict of sin, with the justified person to keep him, and with those baptized with him as a mighty working force for the advancement of the kingdom of Christ, as a sanctifier, and as a comforter. The two texts here under consideration can be harmonized with the clear Bible teaching and examples of the baptism of the Holy Spirit subsequent to regeneration only by regarding the distinction between one's having the Holy Spirit and his having the *baptism* of the Holy Spirit. Evidently God's Word does not flatly contradict itself. Therefore the distinction here made is correct.

4. **Results of the Baptism with the Spirit**—To receive the Holy

Spirit is to receive his power and working. The baptism with the Holy Spirit is an enduement of special power and a special manifestation of divine power in and through the person baptized as a consequence of the establishment of a new relation to the Holy Ghost. The operation at the time of the Holy Spirit baptism has a double aspect. It is both subjective and objective, or it is a working *in* us and also a working *through* us. To exclude either of these two phases of his operation from our thinking of the Holy Spirit baptism is to hold a one-sided view.

The work effected in us by the baptism of the Spirit or the subjective results are especially entire cleansing from depravity, comfort, guidance, and teaching. Ecstatic emotions are often thought of as a result of the baptism with the Spirit and certainly sometimes such feelings do accompany it, as seems to have been the case at the Pentecostal outpouring, but there are no scriptural grounds for the assumption that they are the primary purpose of the baptism with the Spirit nor that they are the evidence of one's having received the experience. Ecstasies may be experienced also at conversion or at other times.

That the baptism with the Spirit results in an entire sanctification was shown in the preceding chapter. The cleansing aspect of the experience is forcefully represented by the symbol *fire*. "He shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost and with fire" (Matt. 3:11). Fire in this place implies the idea of refining, cleansing, and consuming. As impurities are separated from metals by a process of fire, so in the baptism with the Holy Spirit a perfect cleansing is effected. When the holy Son of God received the Holy Spirit it was in the form of a peaceful dove. But when the apostles, who were defiled with depraved natures, were baptized with the Holy Spirit he appeared as "cloven tongues like as of fire" (Acts 2:3). No outward manifestation could better represent the idea of a cleansing at the time of the Holy Spirit baptism than does this fiery symbol of his presence.

The objective results of the baptism of the Spirit, or his work through us, consists principally in his enduing us with gifts and power for service in the kingdom of God. Jesus commanded his apostles to preach the gospel to the world, but first to tarry in Jerusalem until endued with power from on high through the coming of the Holy Spirit. Through the power of the Spirit received at Pentecost, Peter was able on that day to preach his

notable sermon which resulted in the salvation of three thousand. The preaching of Stephen and of Paul was effective for the same reason. Some of the greatest soulwinners since the apostolic period attribute their success to their baptism with the Holy Spirit.

II. Gifts of the Spirit

1. **Nature of Charismata**—The gifts of the Spirit, or spiritual gifts, as they are designated in 1 Corinthians 12:1, are technically called *charismata.* These gifts are supernatural abilities bestowed upon Christians by the Spirit of God to equip them for the service of the church and the upbuilding of the kingdom of God. Various lists of these gifts are given in the Pauline epistles. The longest list is found in 1 Corinthians 12:4-11, 28-30. Nine are there named as follows: wisdom, knowledge, faith, healing, miracles, prophecy, discerning of spirits, speaking in tongues, and interpretation of tongues. In Romans 12:6-8 seven are named: prophecy, ministering, teaching, exhortation, giving, ruling, and showing mercy. In Ephesians 4:7-12 is a third list of gifted persons, as follows: apostles, prophets, evangelists, pastors, and teachers. In these three lists eighteen different gifts are named. Evidently none of these lists is exhaustive, and there is good reason to believe that all taken together do not include all the gifts of the Spirit, either possible or actual.

It is clear from the Pauline texts cited that the spiritual gifts form the basis for the offices in the church. For example, one is an apostle, prophet, evangelist, pastor, teacher, or exhorter, not by virtue of a human appointment, but because the Holy Spirit has conferred upon him the gift which corresponds to one of these particular offices. Only as he has the gift can he have the office. But this is true only of those gifts which correspond to offices. Some gifts are not applicable to the exercise of an office. Examples of the latter class are the gifts of wisdom, faith, healing, miracles, tongues, or interpretation of tongues. Because the number of the gifts of the Spirit must correspond to the needs of the church, and the number of those needs is variable, it follows that neither the lists of the gifts in the Scriptures nor any we might here give should be regarded as exhaustive. Whatever supernatural ability the Holy Spirit may give to any person to fulfill a needed function in the church may properly be called a *charisma.*

As is true of many other spiritual realities, the naure of spiritual gifts is not capable of full logical definition in the present state of

human knowledge. Certainly they are not to be regarded as mere natural abilities Such a view is excluded by the designation "gifts of the Spirit." They are supernatural, but evidently they usually have an intimate relation to natural human abilities. But what is their relation to natural powers? Probably not always, but usually, spiritual gifts are bestowed in conformity with one's natural capabilities. They are given, as were the talents in the parable of Jesus, "to every man according to his several ability," both as to kind and number. Ordinarily God works *with* human instruments rather than independently of them. In the exercise of spiritual gifts, natural abilities are not excluded, but included, exalted, and augmented. Such a view is in harmony with what we know of God's method of cooperation with the human powers in other respects. In the writing of the Scriptures there was such an interworking of the human and divine that neither excluded nor restricted the operation of the other. Other examples of this interworking of the human and divine may be seen in the preaching of a sermon under the power of the Holy Spirit, or in the government of the church.

Not all supernatural works through men are to be attributed to the possession of spiritual gifts on the part of those persons instrumental on their performance. All believers have a measure of faith, but all do not have the gift of faith. Because of that faith common to all Christians, any one may have an occasional miraculous answer to his prayers if God be pleased to have it so. But this does not mean such a person has the gift of healing or of miracles. Likewise the Spirit of God may come upon any preacher or other Christian on a special occasion and enable him to prophesy. Such manifestations are special and occur only occasionally with an individual. The work of those who have a special spiritual gift will be characterized by corresponding manifestations.

2. **Not Given Alike to All**—Nothing concerning the gifts of the Spirit is more clearly stated in the Scriptures than that all Christians do not possess the same gifts. More than once the Apostle Paul discourses at length in his Epistles concerning this fact. "For as we have many members in one body, and all members have not the same office: so we, being many, are one body in Christ, and every one members one of another. Having then gifts differing according to the grace that is given to us, whether prophecy, let us prophesy according to the proportion of

faith; or ministry, let us wait on our ministering: or he that teacheth, on teaching" (Rom. 12:4-7). The same general argument is given in the twelfth chapter of 1 Corinthians at greater length. There it is said one gift is given to one person and another gift to another, and that this distribution is made by the Spirit of God as he pleases. The church is represented as being like the human body with its many members, each having its own particular function to perform. So Christians are represented as members of the body of Christ, the church, and as a result of their being given different spiritual gifts as performing different functions therein. One member cannot fill the place of another, because of their having different gifts.

Because all do not have the same gifts, it is certain all do not possess all the gifts. To appeal to the Apostle's illustration again, the human body, it would be as unreasonable to affirm that all members of the church have all the gifts as to say that all members of one's physical body have the ability to see, hear, taste, or smell, or that the foot is able to perform the functions of the hand. Paul closes the reasoning in 1 Corinthians 12 by asking, "Are all apostles? are all prophets? are all teachers? are all workers of miracles? have all the gifts of healing? do all speak with tongues? do all interpret?" (vv. 29, 30). It is clearly implied that the answer to all of these questions is no. The error of assuming that all Christians have any particular gift or all of them is harmful. If it does not lead them to unwarranted presumption, it will often result in disappointment and doubts about their Christian experience and especially about their having been baptized of the Holy Spirit.

While it is true that all do not have the same gifts, nor all the gifts, it is also true that every member of the body of Christ possesses at least one gift. "But to *each one* is given the manifestation of the Spirit to profit withal" (1 Cor. 12:7, RV). The Holy Spirit divides "to every man severally *as he* will." We do not have the responsibility of deciding what gift or gifts we should have. He who sets the members in the body as it pleases him is properly the one to determine what gifts a particular person should possess. One person may possess several different gifts, as did the apostle Paul.

3. **When Spiritual Gifts May Be Received.**—May the gifts of the Spirit be received only at the time of the baptism by the Holy

Spirit, or may they also be received subsequently? If one receives a gift when baptized with the Spirit, may he later receive other gifts? We know that gift of tongues was given to the apostles, to Cornelius, and to the Ephesians when they received the Holy Spirit. The Ephesians also received prophecy at the same time. Because of these examples some have assumed spiritual gifts are given at no other time. But a careful study of Paul's teaching to the Corinthians shows spiritual gifts may be received subsequently. In 1 Corinthians 12:13 it is stated that all of them had received the Holy Spirit. "And have been *all* made to drink into one Spirit." Yet in the last verse of the chapter they are exhorted, "Covet earnestly the best gifts," and in 14:1, "Desire spiritual gifts." But if those gifts were given only at the time of their baptism by the Spirit, which time was past with them, then these exhortations were meaningless. Doubtless gifts may be bestowed upon us at any time subsequent to the coming of the Holy Spirit. In the nature of things there is no reason why, as the Spirit of God directs us into new kinds of Christian service, he should not impart to us gifts appropriate to that work. It is especially reasonable to expect that one will be given suitable spiritual gifts at the time he is called into the work of the ministry.

III. The Gift of Tongues

Speaking in tongues, or *glossolalia* as it is theologically designated, is properly a subject for discussion under the heading of the baptism of the Holy Spirit. In three important instances the Holy Spirit baptism was accompanied by speaking in tongues. Except for these instances it might well be treated merely as one among the several other gifts of the Spirit.

1. **Nature of New Testament Glossolalia**—In Mark 16:17 is recorded the prediction of Jesus that one of the signs to follow believers would be the speaking in new tongues. The occurrence of the manifestation is mentioned in Acts 10:44-46 and Acts 19:6. It is described at length in Acts 2:1-13 and in 1 Corinthians 12-14. In no other text is so much given concerning the nature of speaking in tongues as in 1 Corinthians 14. An important difference between the Pentecostal manifestation and that described in the fourteenth of 1 Corinthians is that at Pentecost languages were spoken which were the vernacular of many present, while that at Corinth is represented as being unintelligible to anyone present (1 Cor. 14:2), not even to the speaker (v. 14). Definitions of the gift of tongues

have conflicted as they have been based upon either of these descriptions to the exclusion of the other. The speaking of tongues both at Jerusalem and at Corinth are to be regarded as a fulfilment of Jesus' prediction that believers should speak with new tongues. Therefore, any true definition of New Testament *glossolalia* must make a place for all the facts of both of these records.

Because of the many incorrect views concerning speaking in tongues a first step in showing the nature of it is to show what it is not. The "other tongues" at Pentecost certainly do not refer to their physical tongues, as held by Thayer, because in Acts 2:6, 8 they are represented as languages. They were not mere strange, archaic, or poetic words, as held by Baur and others, for the term "tongue" has no such use in other places in the Bible. Neither can these tongues properly be regarded as merely new interpretations of the Old Testament prophecies, for the Bible represents them as languages, not interpretations. They were not a miracle of hearing as was held by Gregory Nazianzus, Bede, Erasmus, and others of the present. In other words, though the disciples did not speak their usual language, yet the Holy Ghost caused their auditors to hear in their own languages which were foreign to the speaker. Such a miracle is claimed for certain of the Roman Catholic saints and is certainly possible, but such is not described in the text under consideration, for the miracle is said to be in the speaking, not in the hearing. They spoke with "other" tongues (v. 4), and their hearers heard them in their "own" tongues (v. 6), the languages which they spoke.

The New Testament speaking in tongues was an endowment by the Spirit of God with supernatural ability to speak a real language which the speaker had never learned and which was accordingly unknown to him. Unless those happened to be present who were acquainted with the language being spoken the words of the speaker were unintelligible to those present, which was usually the case at Corinth (1 Cor. 14:2, 5, 9). Even the speaker himself did not understand what he said. His "understanding is unfruitful" (v. 14). The gift of tongues is nowhere represented as the gift of the knowledge of a language, but as the gift of the ability to speak a language as the Spirit gives utterance (Acts 2:4). This speaking is by the operation of the Spirit of God, who directs the speaker's vocal organs. The speaker, unless he have the gift of interpretation, not only is unaware of what his words mean, but if others should

speak in the same language in which he speaks he would not understand them unless he were given the ability supernaturally. The mere absence of those who understand, either naturally or supernaturally, the language being spoken is no evidence that it is unintelligible jargon or not a real language.

Speaking in tongues is edifying in the public assembly if those present know the language spoken, as at the Pentecostal manifestation. If such, nor any one with the gift of interpretation, are not present to make known what is spoken, then the speaker should "keep silence in the church" and "speak to himself, and to God" (1 Cor. 14:28). Yet "he that speaketh in an unknown tongue edifieth himself" (v. 4), even though his understanding is not exercised. An emotional edification is possible in such a case, and would naturally result from the experience of ecstasy in which the speaking of tongues took place at Pentecost and evidently at Corinth.

2. **Purpose of Speaking in Tongues**—The gift of tongues is not, as many have supposed, primarily for the purpose of preaching the gospel by missionaries to people speaking a foreign language. It is true that certain of the church fathers held this view, and it is alleged that Bernard, Anthony, Francis Xavier, and other Roman Catholic saints of the Dark Ages were understood in other tongues than those in which they spoke, or were able to speak, but it may well be questioned whether any such idea can be gathered from the statements of the Scriptures. Doubtless God could cause tongues to be spoken for this purpose if he were pleased to do so, but no such purpose of it is upheld by the Bible.

Several reasons may be given for believing the gift of tongues is not for the purpose of evangelizing. (1) Probably only Aramaic was necessary to enable them to speak to every person present at Pentecost. These, like Saul of Tarsus, Apollos of Alexandria, and Aquila of Rome, were devout Jews of the dispersion, in all representing fifteen different countries. Yet being Jews, probably all knew Aramaic, the language of the Jews, as well as the language of the particular land in which they dwelt. The Greek language, which had become widely spoken through the conquests of Alexander, would possibly be understood by all of them. If the gift of tongues had been for the purpose of evangelizing, then its exercise on this occasion was superfluous. (2) They began speaking in tongues before the crowd gathered, which was not necessary if

the purpose was to evangelize. (3) Peter's sermon, which was preached after the crowd had assembled as a result of the tongues manifestations, was not in tongues, for all could understand it, and besides it could not have been in more than one tongue. It is not said that any preaching was done in tongues, but that the speaking in tongues consisted in declaring the "wonderful works of God." (4) Paul spoke in tongues extensively (1 Cor. 14:18), yet he did not know the language of the Lycaonians when they said, "The gods are come down to us," and only understood the intent of the people by their actions (Acts 14:11-18). Paul doubtless spoke to them in Greek, the common language of Asia Minor. (5) All of the New Testament, with the possible exception of Matthew, was written in Greek. If this one language was sufficient at that time for the written gospel, why not for the Apostolic Age. (6) The New Testament writers and apostles did not get their knowledge of Greek by a supernatural gift, for their diction is defective, containing barbarisms, localisms, and Hebraisms, as is to be expected in the language of those speaking another than their mother tongue. (7) The New Testament tells of no evangelizing in tongues, and reliable history tells of none since apostolic times. (8) From what we know of God's dealing with men generally, it is reasonable to believe that he will not put a premium on indolence by supernaturally bestowing knowledge which men may as well acquire by natural processes.

What then is the real purpose of speaking in tongues? Paul states that it is for a sign to unbelievers. But in what sense is it a sign? At Pentecost it was the evident manifestation of supernatural power in this respect that was the cause of amazement to the Jews. It is the supernatural element in it that constitutes it a sign. Its value in this respect may be illustrated in a measure by a similar value in other ecstatic demonstrations such as leaping and shouting by those especially blessed in spirit. Like these, speaking in tongues may convince and draw sometimes, and in other instances people may be repelled by it. Its effects in this respect will depend largely upon the particular type of individual unbeliever or the community before which it is exercised. Such a sign was probably of special value at ancient Corinth because similar manifestations were common in the heathen priests there and were generally regarded as proof of a divine possession. But it is probable that in centers of civilization and culture in our day more rational proofs of the

divine element in Christianity has a much stronger appeal.

A secondary benefit that results from speaking in tongues is the edification of the one who speaks (1 Cor. 14:4). This edification is not in the nature of intellectual enlightenment, but in emotional experience. Though those who speak in tongues are edified in this exercise, yet it does not follow that such edification is possible only through speaking in tongues. Speaking in tongues is but one of several exercises by which one's spirit may be similarly built up.

3. **Post-Apostolic Speaking in Tongues**—Justin Martyr, of the second century, mentions personal acquaintance with those Christians who spoke in tongues; and Irenaeus, of the same period, speaks of "many brethren in the church who . . . through the Spirit speak all kinds of languages," probably referring to the instances among the Montanists. The Waldenses and Albigenses of the twelfth to the fifteenth centuries, those much persecuted but devout and earnest opposers of papal error, are said to have had many manifestations of speaking in tongues among them. The Huguenots of France in the seventeenth century had very remarkable instances of speaking in tongues among them. As much might be said of the followers of Edward Irving in London, in the early part of the nineteenth century. Also instances are claimed among the Franciscans, the Jansenites, the early Quakers, in the Irish revivals of 1859, and the great Welsh revivals of 1904. Also, many other examples of speaking in tongues are alleged to have taken place in the last century in America and Europe. The "modern tongues movement" first began to attract attention in Los Angeles, California in 1906.

If the question be asked, Are all these manifestations to be attributed to the Spirit of God? the reply must be in the negative. This is allowed even by those who profess to speak in tongues. Our knowledge of the nature of some of these manifestations is too meager to make possible an intelligent opinion as to the source of them.

The possible sources of speaking in tongues are three: (1) Divine, (2) Satanic, (3) Human. That the Spirit of God may speak through those whom he possesses is not difficult for belief by those who believe the Bible is God's Word. That a demon can speak through those he possesses is evident from the words spoken through the Gadarene demoniac to Jesus, "What have I to do with thee, Jesus, thou Son of the most high God? I adjure thee by God,

that thou torment me not. For he said unto him, Come out of the man, thou unclean spirit" (Mark 5:7, 8). See also verse 9. Here the demon spirit in the man used the vocal organs of the latter to speak to Jesus. Evidently demons can speak through men as well in one language as in another. Probably it was to such speaking in tongues that Paul alluded when he said, "No man speaking by the Spirit of God calleth Jesus accursed" (1 Cor. 12:3). A psychological ground may be found in human nature for speaking in tongues. Knowledge once gained by the mind is never lost, it is said, even though it is not always possible to recollect it. But in moments of excitement an abnormal awakening of the memory may occur so one may be able to repeat words and even long passages he has heard in either his own or a foreign language. This abnormal awakening may also occur in times of danger or illness. Coleridge tells of an uneducated servant girl who, when ill with fever, in her delirium repeated long passages *verbatim* from the Hebrew, Greek, and Latin classics. It was later discovered she had heard these passages read aloud by an aged minister in whose home she had been formerly employed. Likewise one in a state of religious frenzy may thus be able to repeat foreign words and phrases which he has heard, but of which he does not know the meaning.

4. **Not the Evidence of the Holy Spirit Baptism**—Two errors in doctrinal teaching have been characteristic of nearly all factions of the "modern tongues movement." First, they affirm that all who receive the baptism of the Holy Spirit will speak in tongues as the evidence. Second, it is held that the Scriptures make a difference between the gift of tongues and speaking in tongues, or that one may speak in tongues without possessing the gift. These two theories are fundamental to the "modern tongues movement" and give it its character. If one believes these two doctrines and is conscientious, he will feel obligated to seek until he speaks in tongues, however long a time that may be. The belief of them tends to exalt speaking in tongues above everything else.

We do not hesitate to say there is not a single text of Scripture which teaches that speaking in tongues always follows the baptism by the Holy Spirit. Not one of the apostles or inspired writers ever taught it, and not one of the world's great soulwinners ever taught it. The majority of the greatest and most useful preachers of the Christian era have not spoken in tongues; and it is unreasonable to think that these special instruments of God, who themselves

believed they had received the baptism of the Spirit, were deceived, and to suppose many whose lives have been utterly fruitless have received him merely because they are supposed to speak in tongues. The fact that speaking in tongues may result from demon possession or may be properly attributed to human causes is proof that it cannot be a certain evidence of the baptism by the Spirit. It may equally as well be evidence of mere religious frenzy or of one's having a devil as of his having the Holy Spirit.

On only three occasions does the Bible state that speaking in tongues accompanied the outpouring of the Spirit; see Acts 2:4; 10:45; 19:6. Of all the other converts who received the Holy Ghost there is no proof that they spoke in tongues. Those who teach this theory on the ground of these three texts are guilty of the fallacy of unsound reasoning. They generalize on too narrow a basis, as do those who reason that because changes are found to take place within a particular species of plant or animal, all living species, including man himself, have evolved from lifeless matter. As sound reasoning repudiates the idea of evolution as being an unproved theory, so it must likewise reject the theory that tongues are the evidence of the Holy Spirit baptism. There are also reasons for believing tongues manifestations did not usually accompany the outpouring of God's Spirit on people in apostolic times. The first to speak in tongues were the apostles at Pentecost. There was a special reason for this and it was justified by the results. The next who are said to have spoken in tongues were Cornelius and his household. It is reasonable that these first Gentiles to receive the baptism with the Spirit should thus speak in tongues. Peter in speaking of this incident said, "As I began to speak, the Holy Ghost fell on them as on us at the beginning." If all the many thousands who had received the Holy Ghost during the eight years since Pentecost had always received the tongues, why did Peter say, "As on us at the beginning?" Why could he not as well have said, "As he has been baptizing all since the beginning"? Why should Luke thus point back to Pentecost if all had spoken in tongues since Pentecost? Evidently because, as Paul reasons in 1 Corinthians 12:30, all do not speak in tongues.

It was prophecy, not speaking in tongues, that was predicted to follow the outpouring of the Spirit (Joel 2:28), and certainly this is far more valuable. In 1 Corinthians 14:1 Paul reasons that prophecy is superior to speaking in tongues. But why should we

suppose a man with this superior gift has not been baptized with the Spirit, while assuming that another has received the Spirit merely because he manifests the inferior gift of tongues? No outward manifestation is the true evidence of the baptism with the Holy Spirit. Only those unfamiliar with the witness of the Spirit need such an evidence. It is said this baptism is so important there must be some outward evidence. In reply we ask, what could be more important than the salvation of one's soul? Yet conversion is not attested by a physical sign. Paul states that we know we are saved by the double witness of the Spirit of God and of our own spirits, which are not of the nature of outward signs. That the Spirit testifies to his own coming in the same manner is entirely reasonable to believe.

Still another reason why tongues are not the evidence of the baptism with the Holy Spirit is that this teaching makes them a sign to believers. But Paul says they are *not* a sign to believers, but to the unbeliever. A certain writer of the "tongues movement" has admitted that "the doctrine that all are to speak in tongues when baptized in the Spirit is based entirely upon supposition without a solitary "Thus saith the Lord."

In answer to the claim that speaking in tongues as at Pentecost is different from the gift of tongues as at Corinth, it may be said that speaking is the only way to exercise the gift. It has been affirmed by one that "the manifestation of the Spirit" (1 Cor. 12:7) is to be identified with the speaking in tongues at Pentocost, but not with the exercise of the gift of tongues. They say the "manifestation of the Spirit is for all who receive the Spirit, but that the gift of tongues is not given to all. But such a distinction has no support in the Scriptures and clearly bears the marks of having been invented to support the theory that speaking with tongues is the evidence of the baptism with the Spirit. After stating "the manifestation of the Spirit is given to every man to profit withal" (v. 7), the apostle immediately proceeds to show that these "manifestations" are through the different gifts, nine of which he names. "The manifestation of the Spirit" includes all the gifts. The "manifestation" (v. 7) is identical with the "gifts" (v. 4) and the "operations" (v. 6). In the first sentence of the chapter the apostle states that he is writing "concerning spiritual gifts." When nearing the close of the twelfth chapter of 1 Corinthians, Paul summed up his foregoing arguments by stating that God had not given the same

gifts to all in the church, but had distributed them as he willed. Verses 28-30 must be connected with the verses 7-11. It is all one argument. In verse 30 he says, "Have all the gifts of healing? do all speak with tongues?" The implication is clear that the answer must be No. We agree with the apostle that all do not speak with tongues. Therefore, speaking with tongues cannot be the evidence of the baptism with the Spirit.

5. **Proper Attitude Toward Speaking in Tongues**—Two opposite extremes should be avoided in our attitude toward speaking in tongues. We should not fall into the error of the Corinthian church and of some who profess to speak in tongues today by exalting tongues manifestations out of proper proportion to all other operations of the Spirit. The opposite extreme to be avoided is the excluding of all speaking in tongues as being improper or not of God. Paul very well described the proper attitude when he said, "Covet to prophesy, and forbid not to speak with tongues" (1 Cor. 14:39). Keep other gifts more prominent because they are of more value, but allow the speaking in tongues, because it is the operation of God's Spirit and for God's glory. Paul does not urge the speaking in tongues, neither should we urge it. It should not be regarded as proof of deep spirituality in the speaker, as it is the least important of all gifts. The church at Corinth spoke much in tongues, yet it was one of the least spiritual of the New Testament congregations, being "carnal," having division and strife among themselves, tolerating one guilty of incest, and going to law with each other. We should not condemn all speaking in tongues as of the devil nor accept all as being of God.

We are not to understand, however, that Paul's instruction, "Forbid not to speak with tongues," means that the speaker or the church should put no restraint on the exercise of the gift. In the public gathering Paul himself forbids all improper use of it. He lays down four principles for the regulation of the gift as follows:

(1) *Proportionate Value.* It should be regarded as being much less important than other gifts of the Spirit, especially prophecy. "In the church I had rather speak five words with my understanding, that by my voice I might teach others also, than ten thousand words in an unknown tongue" (1 Cor. 14:19). He also says, to have charity alone is better than to have all spiritual gifts without it. Tongues must not crowd out these more important things, but always be subordinate.

(2) *For Edification.* "Let all things be done unto edifying" (1 Cor. 14:26). The public service is for the edification and benefit of all, not a place for one individual selfishly to display his gifts either for his personal edification or to satisfy his own vanity or pride. This was a common error at Corinth as well as among many today. Since speaking in an unknown tongue not understood by the congregation is not edifying to them, reason as well as Scripture teaches that the congregation should not be burdened with such public demonstrations unless one is present who can interpret what is said. "But if there be no interpreter, let him keep silence in the church; and let him speak to himself, and to God" (1 Cor. 14:28).

(3) *Orderliness.* "Let all things be done decently and in order" (1 Cor. 14:40). Orderliness is characteristic of God both in the material and in the spiritual realms. Can we imagine God responsible for, or pleased with, a meeting where several persons lie prostrate and seemingly unconscious on the floor, a number of them at the same time suddenly breaking out in what purports to be unknown tongues? Is such lying prostrate by men and women in the aisles of a public place according to decency? Does order allow such a babel of tongues? Is it becoming to the house of God? "If therefore the whole church be come together into one place, and all speak with tongues, and there come in those that are unlearned, or unbelievers, will they not say that ye are mad?" (1 Cor. 14:23).

(4) *Self-Control.* "The spirits of the prophets are subject to the prophets" (1 Cor. 14:32). Opposed to this statement from Paul is a theory held by many today that those who speak with tongues are under the direct control of the Holy Spirit and are not personally responsible for their particular actions and speaking, and that to interfere with their actions is rebuking the Holy Ghost. They suppose their lack of self-control is proof of the control of the Spirit. The heathen theory is that divine possession excludes the use of reason. It is characteristic of possession by a demon spirit to destroy one's free will and to compel one to do that which he would not. Such loss of self-control may also in some instances be traced to purely human causes. But the Spirit of God never deprives persons of their freedom. God gave us our reason, and his glory does not require that he take it away. His method is to cooperate with our wills, not to overrride them. It has been said,

that "the highest Christian experience is not attained through the abandonment of one's own faculties, the abnegation of one's own personality, the surrender of one's own consciousness." It is unscriptural and unbecoming for a Christian to give himself over unreservedly to a mysterious power and to unconsciousness. God gave us our free will and consciousness and is most glorified by our retaining them. True consecration is not, as some wrongly suppose, a giving away of one's reason and personality. God does not want men to do this. It does not honor him, but rather dishonors him by our giving away that very thing that makes for intelligent, voluntary worship of him. Consecration means rather a continual willingness to exercise our free volitions as God pleases while at all times we retain the power to will and otherwise. This is far more honoring to God than to let ourselves sink into unconsciousness, which is nowhere taught in the Bible.

Chapter VII

DIVINE PHYSICAL HEALING

Works of systematic theology of the past have usually omitted consideration of the doctrine of divine healing of the body, but because of its large place in the Scriptures and especially in view of the special interest in the subject among Christians of the present time, no such work is complete which fails to treat this subject. It is properly discussed under Soteriology because it is one of the benefits of the atonement and an aspect of salvation from the effects of the fall.

I. The Fact of Divine Healing

The actuality of the occurrence of divine healing is not a question of theory but one of fact. Either such healing has actually been effected or it has not. If its reality can be shown, then theology may properly inquire as to the nature of such healing and the conditions under which it is performed. What is the evidence, then, that divine healing is a reality?

1. **Scriptural Examples of Healing**—The several arguments given under the heading Apologetics in proof of the actual occurrence of miracles need not here be repeated. That miracles are possible and probable, that the proof of their occurrence is possible, and that they actually occurred is here assumed to have been already sufficiently proved. The present question is, what is the scriptural evidence that this particular class of miracles, the healing of physical ailments, has occurred?

The Scriptures record instances of healing as performed, not only by Jesus, but also by the apostles and other New Testament preachers, and by prophets of the Old Testament period. Notable among the healings described in the Old Testament are those of Naaman and Hezekiah. The first of these men was a great Syrian military leader and the other one of the greatest kings of Judah. Both were men of intelligence thoroughly competent to judge as to the reality of their diseases and cures. Naaman was afflicted with leprosy, a disease incurable by any human methods then known. But by obedience to the commandment of Elisha, the prophet, in dipping himself seven times in the waters of the Jordan he was instantly cured of the leprosy. Elisha ascribed the healing to the power of God. In view of all the facts the account is entirely

credible. Hezekiah suffered from a severe boil which God told him through the prophet Isaiah would prove fatal. In answer to Hezekiah's earnest prayer he was healed and permitted to live thereafter for fifteen years.

In fulfilment of Old Testament prophecies (Isa. 35:4-6; Matt. 8:16, 17) Jesus healed many. He healed "all manner of sicknesses and all manner of disease among the people" (Matt. 4:23; 9:35). He healed all who came to him. None were turned away. Particular instances of notable miraculous healings by him are: the nobleman's son twenty-five miles away (John 4), Peter's mother-in-law of a fever (Matt. 8:14, 15), the leper (Matt. 8:2), the paralytic (Matt. 9:2), the lame man at the Pool of Bethesda (John 5:5-9), the withered hand (Matt. 12:10), the woman bowed together (Luke 13:10-20), the centurion's servant (Matt. 8:5), the Gadarene demoniac (Mark 5:2), the woman who touched the hem of his garment (Luke 8:48), two blind men (Matt. 9:27, the daughter of the Syrophenician woman (Matt. 15:21), the blind man of Jerusalem (John 9), and blind Bartimaeus (Luke 18:35-43). These are but a few of the many instances particularly described. On various occasions vast multitudes came to him with their sick and diseased and he healed them all (Matt. 9:16).

After the crucifixion of Jesus his apostles continued to perform wonderful healings. Peter healed the lame man at the gate of the temple (Acts 3:2), also Aeneas of Lydda, who was similarly afflicted (Acts 9:34). Paul healed the lame man at Lystra (Acts 14:10), and many at Ephesus and elsewhere (Acts 19:12). Neither was power to heal limited to the apostles as is sometimes affirmed. Stephen and Philip, the evangelist, were instrumental in wonderful healings (Acts 6:8; 8:7). To deny the reality of these miracles of healing is to deny the credibility of the Scriptures. Regardless of the subject or of the nature or severity of the affliction, all were healed who came.

2. **Post-Apostolic Healing**—Contrary to a prevalent idea, divine healing did not cease with the death of the apostles. Because of the early declension of true Christianity and spirituality there came gradually a cessation of divine healing in a great measure, yet reliable history testifies to healings as being common in the second and third centuries, and there is evidence it did not entirely cease at any time, even during the Dark Ages. Justin Martyr, of the second century, describes the casting out of demons in his day as

follows: "For numberless demoniacs throughout the whole world, and in your city, many of our Christian men, exorcising them in the name of Jesus Christ, who was crucified under Pontius Pilate, have healed, and do heal, rendering helpless and driving possessing devils out of the men, though they could not be cured by all the other exorcists, and those who used incantations and drugs" (Apology II, Chap. 6). Origen, of the third century, wrote that "the name of Jesus can still remove distractions from the minds of men, and expel demons, and also take away disease." Tertullian, of the same period, testified to the healing of many. Chrysostom and Augustine also testified to actual instances of healing. Another of the fourth century, Theodorus, of Mopsuestia, is quoted as saying, "Many heathen amongst us are being healed by Christians from whatsoever sickness they have, so abundant are miracles in our midst." That miracles of healing had not ceased as late as the fourth century is affirmed by the historian Mosheim.

At a later period divine healing was also taught and practiced by the Waldenses and Moravians. In post-Reformation times among those whose labors were accompanied by instances of healing were the Covenanters of Scotland, the early Friends, especially in the days of George Fox, the early Methodists, Luther, Wesley, Whitefield, Baxter, Irving, Thomas Erskine, Dorothea Trudell, Blumhardt, Rein, and Stockmayer.

3. **A Present Reality**—Probably at no time since the period of early Christianity has the teaching and practice of divine healing been more common than in recent years. Many miraculous healings are being done in various Christian lands and also among Christians of heathen lands. These healings include the cure of all kinds of diseases, many of the cures being instantaneous and as wonderful as those recorded in the Scriptures. These healings have not been limited to any particular religious body. They have occurred, not only among "holiness" bodies, but in several instances among those of the older and larger Protestant denominations. Of the latter the Anglican Church has given special prominence to it, although healings have been more common in some of the former class. Some persons have been especially instrumental in the healing of the sick. It is not to be assumed that the doctrinal teaching generally of such persons, nor that of the religious bodies with which they are associated, is necessarily correct merely because God is pleased to operate in this respect through them. It

might as well be assumed that the special blessing of God upon an evangelist in soul-winning is evidence that the doctrinal teaching of that evangelist or of his denomination is altogether scriptural.

These present-day healings are often done publicly before many witnesses. They can be and have been critically investigated. It is true that some who claim to be healed are not, and that others receive but temporary relief; but that many are genuinely and permanently cured none can successfully deny. To shut one's eyes to facts is useless. Divine healing is a present-day reality and is not open to question as to its actual occurrence.

II. The Reasonableness of Divine Healing

1. **An Aspect of Christ's Redemptive Work**—We have already shown that death was not the portion of man in the time of his primitive holiness. His body was created essentially mortal, but through the divine provision of the tree of life, death did not become actual. Inasmuch as the eating of the tree of life resulted in the rejuvenation of the body and the overcoming of the tendency to death, it must also have been a preventative or remedy for disease. As death became actual through man's sin, so likewise sickness and disease, which before were but a possibility, now became an actuality. But sickness is not only a result of sin in that sin barred man from the tree of life, the preventative of sickness; sickness and disease are in a considerable measure a natural consequence of sinful indulgence and of the unnatural conditions effected by man's fall into sin. In the condition of their original creation, when God pronounced them "very good," probably men's bodies were not such an easy prey to disease as at the present time.

Because physical disease and pain are the consequence of sin and in a measure a penalty for sin, it is proper to expect provisions in the redemptive work of Christ for the overcoming of physical disease. It is true that redemption is not complete until the resurrection of men's bodies, but the sting of death is now removed so it is "gain" to the Christian rather than a penalty. But reason leads one to believe the great work of Christ's redemption ought to include provisions for deliverance from physical suffering in this life. Unless it does provide for physical healing it is certainly not a complete redemption. But we believe it is a perfect redemption and should therefore expect to find healing for the body therein. And in this expectation we are not disappointed.

The evangelical prophet, Isaiah, in that wonderful fifty-third chapter concerning the atonement, begins by saying "Surely he hath borne our griefs, and carried our sorrows" (Isa. 53:4). The evangelist Matthew quotes these words as follows: "Himself took our infirmities, and bare our sicknessess" (Matt. 8:17). That such a translation of Matthew's quotation is correct is evident from the connection in which he makes the quotation and the interpretation he gives it. That the inspiring Spirit made no mistake in that interpretation in Matthew's gospel is also shown by other renderings of these words in Isaiah 53:4. In his commentary of this text Albert Barnes renders the words in harmony with Matthew's reading. The Septuagint rendering of the preceding verse, instead of "acquainted with grief," is "acquainted with the bearing of sickness." The original word rendered "grief" in both the third and fourth verses of the common version is the same word in the Hebrew. Therefore as it is rendered sickness in the third verse of the Septuagint so the same word in the fourth verse may be properly rendered. According to Dr. Strong's *Exhaustive Concordance* the Hebrew word *choliy,* rendered "griefs" in verse four of the common version, may be translated "disease" or "sickness," and the Hebrew word *makob,* rendered "sorrows" in the common English version, may be translated "pain." With such a reading of Isaiah 53:4 we have still further support of the reading in Matthew 8:17. Also the original words for "bear" and "carry" in Isaiah 53:4 denote, not merely sympathy, but the actual substitution and utter removal of the thing borne. It is a bearing away as in the case of the bearing away of sins by the scapegoat. Therefore as Christ has borne our sins, in some sense he has also borne our sicknesses so that our bearing them is unnecessary. After Matthew tells of how Jesus healed the multitudes of sick persons who were brought to him he said, "He . . . healed all that were sick: that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the prophet, saying, Himself took our infirmities, and bare our sicknesses." According to this inspired statement Jesus healed the sick, not merely in order to give men proof of his divinity, but because that was a part of his redemptive work.

2. **Scripture Promises of Healing**—Divine healing and belief in its reality is reasonable on the ground of the divine promises which are expressed or implied in the Scriptures. These promises are of two main classes—general and specific. By general promises is

meant those which promise whatever one may ask. The specific promises are those which offer healing especially on certain conditions. Examples of general promises are as follows: "All things, whatsoever ye shall ask in prayer, believing, ye shall receive" (Matt. 21:22). "What things soever ye desire, when ye pray, believe that ye receive them, and ye shall have them" (Mark 11:24). "Whatsoever ye shall ask in my name, that will I do" (John 14:13). "If ye abide in me, and my words abide in you, ye shall ask what ye will, and it shall be done unto you" (John 15:7). "Whatsoever ye shall ask the Father in my name, he will give it you" (John 16:23). If these were the only promises of answer to prayer for the sick they alone would furnish sufficient ground for belief in divine healing.

Though Matthew's record of the Great Commission does not specifically promise healing, it is implied in the words "teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you." Jesus taught the apostles to pray for healing and here commanded them to teach others to do so, which implies his intention to answer such prayers.

The gifts of healing are represented in 1 Corinthians 12:9-30 as common in the church at the time Paul wrote. They are said to belong, not merely to apostles, but to whomsoever God might be pleased to give them. These gifts of healing imply the fact of healing. No promise of healing is more specific than that given in James 5:14. "Is there any sick among you? let him call for the elders of the church; and let them pray over him, anointing him with oil in the name of the Lord: and the prayer of faith shall save the sick, and the Lord shall raise him up; and if he have committed sins, they shall be forgiven him" (Jas. 5:14, 15). The power to heal is here said to belong, not merely to the apostles who were soon passing away, but the elders of the church.

3. **The Divine Compassion**—God is father and we are his children. "Like as a father pitieth his children, so the Lord pitieth them that fear him." What normal human father would fail to cure a suffering child if possible? It is possible for God to heal his children and it is reasonable to believe he will do so if they meet the proper conditions and he can do so consistently with their good otherwise. His interest in them is such that he has the very hairs of their heads all numbered (Matt. 10:30). And as he is mindful of the fall of the sparrow, he surely will help one of his

suffering children who "are of more value than many sparrows." In view of his ability as creator of all men, his benevolence, and his compassion, it is reasonable to expect him to heal the sick in answer to prayer. And devout persons do almost spontaneously pray to him for physical healing when sick.

III. Nature of Divine Physical Healing

1. **Definition of Divine Healing**—Divine healing is physical healing by divine power directly manifested in answer to prayer and faith. Because God is the author of nature and imminent in nature and his power is back of all its operations, all healing resulting from the processes of nature is in a sense divine healing mediately effected and one may properly give thanks to God for such healing. Though healing is through the use of natural remedies it may be attributed to God, who has created all those things and given them whatever qualities they possess that are efficacious in curing physical ailments.

But none of these natural processes are divine healing in the sense of the Scriptures and as here used. Divine healing is not natural, but supernatural healing. It is a miraculous manifestation which transcends nature. Though it affects the material body, yet it is not by material means. As to its mode it is like the new birth of which Jesus said, "The wind bloweth where it listeth, and thou hearest the sound thereof, but canst not tell whence it cometh, and whither it goeth: so is every one that is born of the Spirit." And likewise mysterious is the mode of God in the work of supernatural healing. Rationalistic minds, who are ignorant of spiritual operations, persist in attempting to account for it on natural grounds, such as the power of mind over matter, or the result of an effort of the will. But they err by supplying in their own minds a motive or cause which does not exist. Those who have much experience in divine healing know that not infrequently the healing power comes upon the afflicted person while his mind and will are inactive or directed toward other things than his healing.

2. **God's Purpose in Healing**—It has been commonly believed by Christians that the divine purpose in the miraculous healings described in the Scriptures was to show that Christianity is the true religion. This belief is correct as far as it goes. It was important that Christ should give clear evidence that he was the Son of God. Miraculous works of mercy in the healing of the suffering, the giving sight to those born blind, the healing of

lepers, and of those hopelessly afflicted otherwise, were very convincing proof that he was of God. If he was of God his statements were credible. And if he furnished absolute proof that his statements were credible, men could properly do nothing else than believe his claim that he was the divine Son of God. When mighty healings were performed through the name of Jesus by the apostles they were shown to be men of God and their messages, messages of God. Here was evidence of the divine authority of Scriptures, or that they are a divine revelation. More than once did Jesus appeal to his healings as evidence that he was the Christ. The miracles of Jesus and those through the apostles did actually convince men at the time they were performed and have continued to convince men to the present time that Christianity is the true religion. There was special need of such attestation of the divinity of Jesus and of the fact that those were of God through whom revelation was given. But though the need does not exist in the same degree today, yet the need still exists of the evidence afforded by miracles that Christianity is of God. Skeptics are still being turned to faith by miracles as when Nicodemus said to Jesus, "No man can do these miracles that thou doest, except God be with him." Miracles also serve a valuable purpose today in confirming the faith of believers. Doubtless an important purpose of miracles is to help men's faith in God, but this is not the only purpose. Physical healings may have value as types of healing of spiritual ills, but this is not the primary purpose of divine healing.

Jesus healed the multitudes because "he was moved with compassion" for them. He is still as compassionate as at that time, and doubtless this is an important reason for his healing men's suffering bodies. God saves men because he loves them (John 3:16), and he heals them for a similar reason. Yet there are evidently various limitations on the manifestation of this divine compassion, for many sufferers are not cured. Why are some not healed? Evidently some are not healed because it is appointed unto man to die and the time has come when God wills that they depart from this life. Others are not healed because they fail to meet the proper conditions of faith and obedience. It is important to the glory of God and the well-being of men that healing be not dispensed unconditionally and indiscriminately. It is provided only on appropriate conditions as is salvation.

Though it is generally God's will to heal the sick, yet he is more

concerned about men's spiritual and moral excellence than about their physical health; therefore God may try men through allowing them to remain afflicted for a period. In this particular, healing is not parallel with salvation. God's will is always to save the soul, but, though generally, not always to heal the body. Such a view does not ignore those promises of healing which in themselves offer healing to all. The promises of God are often limited or conditioned, not by any statement in immediate connection, but by statements elsewhere in the Bible. If this is not so, in view of James 5:15, then, when a good man dies for whose healing prayer has been offered we are obliged to attribute the lack of healing to unbelief. But unbelief is displeasing to God; therefore one must either displease God to get to heaven or else certainly know God's will so he will not ask for healing. It is better to regard God as having a will concerning us individually at the present time. We may properly believe on the ground of the Scriptures that it is ordinarily God's will to heal us and may pray for it unless it becomes manifest in some way that it is not his will. Healing may be withheld for a time as a test of faith or for some other wise reason. God may as properly try people by physical suffering as by other methods.

3. **God's Method of Healing**—Any attempt to explain the mode of the divine operation in healing is necessarily fruitless. Every miracle is incomprehensible as to its mode. Divine healing is supernatural and the mode of it must be inscrutable to the human mind. It has already been stated that divine healing is not usually or normally through natural processes or humanly applied means. Some persons testify to having prayed for relief in times of suffering and to having been divinely directed, as a consequence, to use certain means which effected their healing. Such testimonies are not incredible, especially in the case of persons who are not enlightened concerning their gospel privileges, but evidently this is not God's usual method of healing as set forth in the Scriptures.

God heals usually by a direct divine efficiency. As in the witness of the Spirit to us or the Spirit's communication of knowledge to us he usually does not employ our physical organs, but directly makes us conscious of that which he would have us know, so in healing God is not dependent upon any physical means or processes, but operates immediately in effecting health. As in the witness of the Spirit one suddenly finds himself in possession of a

conviction that a particular thing is true, so when one is healed he suddenly becomes aware that he is well, but in neither instance is the mode comprehended.

Divine healing may be either instantaneous or gradual. It seems probable the healings recorded in the Bible were nearly all, if not all, instantaneous. Of all the healings described in the New Testament it cannot be positively shown that any were accomplished gradually. Because those healings were described to show the power of God, it was important that only instantaneous healings be recorded. But the Bible does not state that God did not then or will not now sometimes heal gradually. Neither is there any rational ground for excluding gradual healing by divine power. Many persons are so healed today in answer to prayer. This is reason enough for believing God will heal in this manner. To say an instance of healing is gradual is not to say it is indefinite or unreal. One may definitely begin to recover at a particular time from a disease of many years and in few days' time be completely restored. Such healings are not instantaneous, but gradual; yet they are real.

Also, healing may be either partial or complete, or it may be either temporary or permanent and yet be genuine divine healing. Jesus once healed a blind man by two distinct stages. Not infrequently persons today receive partial healing in answer to prayer. Sometimes such persons receive complete healing later, in other instances they do not. Others are temporarily restored and soon after become afflicted again in the same manner. Doubtless much of such incomplete healing is due to unbelief. Many are instantly and completely healed today.

IV. Conditions for Healing

1. **Faith and Prayer**—The conditions for healing are few and simple. The primary and all-important condition is faith. It was unbelief at Nazareth that hindered the performance of many mighty works there. The disciples failed to cure the demoniac son because of their unbelief. Jesus said to one who raised a question as to his ability, "If thou canst believe, all things are possible to him that believeth." "The prayer of *faith* shall save the sick." The faith necessary to healing is not a mere theoretical or intellectural belief in God's power, but a trustful and confident stepping out on the divine promise as applying to the present need. It is a bold reliance upon God to heal a particular ailment at a particular time.

Faith is not a mere arbitrary requirement for healing. Faith is that which connects the healing with God in the consciousness of him who prays. If healing were given by God without faith on the part of him who prays, the person would not have those feelings of gratitude which mean so much to his spiritual well-being and God's glory. Faith for healing is of the same essential nature and is necessary for the same reasons as is faith for other benefits in answer to prayer. Faith is necessary on the part of those who pray and also on the part of the sufferer unless he be for some reason disqualified to exercise faith.

Prayer is not essential to healing as is faith. Jesus and the apostles healed many through their word. Healings are sometimes so done today. The faith of an afflicted person may claim the promises of God and healing may be effected before sufficient time elapses for any formal praying. Yet prayer is a biblical condition for healing. "What things soever ye desire, when ye *pray,* believe that ye receive them, and ye shall have them" (Mark 11:24). "Is any sick among you? let him call for the elders of the church; and let them *pray* over him . . . and the *prayer* of faith shall save the sick" (Jas. 5:14, 15). Prayer has much the same value as does faith in relating the healing to the healer in the consciousness of the one who prays, and is also a help to the exercise of faith. The effectual prayer is a fervent prayer. Sometimes healing is obtained only after much persistence in prayer. Such continuance in prayer is scriptural (Luke 11:5-13).

2. **Anointing with Oil and Laying on of Hands**—The classical text on divine healing is James 5:13-18. There the elders are commanded to anoint the sick with oil in the name of the Lord and pray over him. Such anointing was practiced by Jesus' disciples in their healing of the sick. "And they went out, and preached that men should repent. And they cast out many devils, and *anointed with oil* many that were sick, and healed them" (Mark 6:12, 13). What is the purpose of this anointing of the sick with oil? Evidently the oil in itself has no curative value when merely poured upon the head. Olive oil was that commonly used for purposes of anointing. In special instances a costly perfume was used either mixed with the oil or alone as in the anointing of Jesus at Bethany. But in no case did the oil possess special healing properties. Anointing was common in the Old Testament days. Aaron was inducted into the high priestly office by the process of

anointing. In like manner Saul and David were appointed king over Israel. Oil is represented in the Scriptures as symbolic of the Holy Spirit. When David was anointed, the Spirit of God came upon him from that day forward. The anointing of the sick with oil has the significance of the Spirit and power of God coming upon them to heal them. It is a very apt symbol and is therefore helpful to the faith of those afflicted. It is also an act of obedience, the practice of which helps to give definiteness and strength to one's faith.

Similar in its purpose to anointing of the sick is the laying on of the hands of those who pray for the healing of the sick. Jesus and the apostles often laid their hands upon the sick or touched them as a means to their healing. One of the signs which Jesus said should follow those who believe was that "they shall lay hands on the sick and they shall recover" (Mark 16:18). By the act of laying on of hands by those who are called to pray for the sick there is a symbolic conveying of divine power much as there was a giving of the Holy Ghost by the laying of the apostles' hands upon believers. There is no reason for believing the power of God is actually transmitted by the laying on of hands or that it might not come upon the sick person as well without this physical contact. But as a symbolic transmitting of divine power to the body of the suffering one, it has much value in assisting him to believe, and in making real to his consciousness the fact of the divine operation in his healing. Symbols have always had a big place in true religion and do have in the Christian religion, especially in the established ordinances. They are valuable even to the most devout and intelligent persons because of inability of men in their present state fully to comprehend the reality of spiritual operations.

The anointing of the sick with oil is directed to be performed by the elders especially. Yet the Scriptures do not limit it to them or state that others shall not do it. Naturally they are ordinarily best qualified to do this service because of being more advanced in the religious life and as the divinely constituted leaders in the congregation. The laying on of hands for the recovery of the sick is said to be by those who "believe." It is a proper function for the elders to perform in connection with anointing with oil. But inasmuch as one who is not an elder may have the gift of healing, according to 1 Corinthians 12, there is reason to allow that all such may properly anoint and lay hands upon the sick for their healing.

3. **Attitude Toward Human Remedies**—Does divine healing exclude all human effort for the healing of the sick? If not, to what extent may the sick consistently employ natural means for their relief while they are trusting God to heal them? Doubtless two extremes are possible in relation to these questions. Some pray for God to heal them while their faith is in natural remedies. Others suppose trust in God bars observance of well-known laws of health. Certainly God needs no natural means to bless in effecting men's healing. Jesus and the apostles used none. Divine healing is by spiritual power alone without natural remedies.

The Bible incidentally refers to the inefficacy of human methods of healing in comparison with healing by divine power. It does not state or imply that the efforts of physicians and the use of medicine are displeasing to God. Divine healing is so represented that it is evident it is far superior to human methods of healing. God offers divine healing, but does not require that men accept it. In other words, the Scriptures do not teach that the employment of human methods is sinful. But that it is far better in every respect to be healed by direct divine power than to trust in the many uncertain human methods must be apparent to all. The devout person who is enlightened will naturally prefer to trust in God. Because of the limitations of human wisdom and the uncertainty of the effects of many human remedies, there is necessarily an element of danger in their use. Also the fact that these remedies often fail to cure is strong reason for trusting in the power of the Almighty. Another advantage of being healed by God is the spiritual blessings that it entails.

Yet there is a place for physicians and human remedies. Many sick persons who are outside of Christ or who are without knowledge of their privilege of being divinely cured or for other reasons lack faith to trust in God need the help of skilled physicians. It is unbecoming to those who trust in God for healing to despise or oppose physicians. Many excellent Christian men are engaged in the medical profession and are earnestly endeavoring to benefit suffering humanity. Such should be respected accordingly. They have done much by their surgical skill and by discovering and making known the laws of health to benefit humanity. There is not necessarily incompatibility between their work and prayer for the sick. Especially when they found they could give no relief to the sick, devout physicians have recommended prayer. Doubtless their services are desirable in case of serious

wounds, the loss of a limb, adjustment of fractures or dislocation of bones, or at child-birth.

It has been the experience of many that to the extent their reliance upon God for healing was weak, to that extent they used and trusted in human means. This is usually so. Often not until a definite decision has been made to discontinue the use of medicines has an effective reliance on God's promises been possible. But how far one may go consistently with faith in God in assisting nature by regulation of diet, employment of various appliances, and other remedial efforts is not stated in the Scriptures. It is a matter to be determined by the judgment and conscience of the one concerned. The Bible has drawn no fine line as to limitations in such instances, and it is useless for men to attempt drawing such a line. These principles should govern our attitude, not only towards the use of medicines, but also towards the employment of chiropractors, osteopaths, and similar human means of healing.

V. Objection to Divine Healing

Some objections to divine healing are made by unbelievers who are sometimes more interested in vindicating their unbelief than in discovering truth. Many of their objections are unworthy of being answered and require no answer for fair-minded persons. Of other objections many have been answered in the foregoing discussion. The objection that the age of miracles is past has already been answered. The objection has also been met that the healings described in the Bible were performed only for proof that Christianity is of God and their continuance is no longer needed.

1. **That It Is Similar to Spiritualistic Healing**—Not infrequently the objection is made to divine healing that it is similar in certain respects to the practices of spiritualism, animal magnetism, clairvoyance, etc. It is useless to deny that spiritualistic mediums exercise supernatural power in some instances, whatever degree of fraud they may practice at other times. Evidently they accomplish healings. But these are done by the "spirits of devils working miracles." The power which operates in modern spiritualism is identical with that of Egyptian magicians, the Greek oracle, and the medicine-men of savage peoples. Spiritualists perform healings without material remedies by spiritual power and in this their healing is similar to divine healing. But must the genuine be given up because it has been counterfeited? Is divine healing not more important in order to keep men from being deceived by the devil?

This objection is invalid against the practice of divine healing.

2. **That There Are Failures in Divine Healing**—Instances of failure of persons to be healed for whom prayer has been offered is supposed by some to be a valid objection to divine healing. But if such an objection may properly be made to divine healing, surely there is much ground for objection to medical healing or healing by any other human method. An objection might as well be made to regeneration on the ground that some who pray for it fail to obtain it. The possibility of divine healing is undeniably proved by the many instances of real healing. No failures constitute any valid ground for objection to healing through prayer in view of these. As already shown, the failure to receive healing when prayer is offered may be due to unbelief, to disobedience, or to a lack of persistence or earnestness in praying; or it may be because it is God's will that the sick person should die, or because God is pleased that his faith should be temporarily tested in this way for his spiritual good. But failure of healing on any of these grounds is no argument against divine healing. Especially if it is not God's will that one should recover, no amount of medicine will cure.

Another class of objections made to divine healing on the ground of failure is the sickness of Epaphroditus and Trophimus, Paul's thorn in the flesh, and Paul's recommendation of wine to Timothy for his stomach's sake and because of his frequent infirmities. Paul tells us Epaphroditus was recovered from his affliction and there is no room to believe Trophimus was not healed; their failure may have been due to one of the before-mentioned causes, in which case there could be no reflection on the efficacy of divine healing. The "messenger of Satan" sent to buffet Paul which he also designates "a thorn in the flesh" cannot be proved to have been of the nature of disease or physical weakness. It was for the purpose of keeping him from becoming "exalted above measure" because of the abundance of revelations which God had given him. For other reasons and also because it was designed to keep him humble, not a few have supposed his "thorn in the flesh" was his physical sufferings through persecution and hardship for the sake of the gospel. But whatever it may have been, there is no proof it was of the nature of sickness; therefore it furnishes no ground for objection to divine healing. It is evident from Paul's words that Timothy was troubled with frequent illness, probably as a consequence of a weakness of the stomach.

Paul's fatherly interest in his young and less experienced associate led him to advise Timothy that the water where he was then located was harmful to his health and he should therefore use wine moderately instead. The recommendation had to do with diet rather than remedy. But surely these words of Paul furnish no proper ground for objection to the doctrine of divine healing.

3. **That God Created Herbs for Medicine**—We readily admit that those things of which medicine is made were created by God. But where is the proof that God created these for the purpose of the manufacture of medicine? Not a few men of the medical profession have questioned the value of drugs as a means of curing disease. This lack of efficiency of drugs as remedies for disease is reason for doubt that their use for that purpose is divinely intended. The Scriptures nowhere say they shall not be used by those who desire them, but the Scriptures do offer a better means of healing as God's way, and devout persons who are enlightened as to their gospel privileges will usually choose to trust in God for their healing rather than in any of the uncertain human methods.

PART VI
THE CHURCH, OR ECCLESIOLOGY

Part VI

THE CHURCH, OR ECCLESIOLOGY

Harold W. Boyer, Revision Editor

CHAPTER I

ORGANIZATION OF THE CHURCH

I. Idea of the Church

1. **Sense of the Term**—The word *church* is the rendering in the common English version of the New Testament of the Greek term ἐκκλησία (*ecclesia*). The sense of the English term *church* in the New Testament is determined wholly by the meaning of the Greek ἐκκλησία (*ecclesia*). The latter is derived from a compound term, ἐκ-καλέω (*ek-kaleo*), the latter part meaning to *call* and the former meaning *out of.* Ecclesia, therefore denotes an assembly summoned or called out, a company selected or separated from the multitude. Before it was used of the Christian assembly it had a secular usage of the assembly of the citizens of a Greek city when summoned by the crier. Trench says, "*Ecclesia*, as all know, was the lawful assembly in a free Greek city of all those possessed of the right of citizenship for the transaction of public affairs. That they were *summoned* is expressed in the latter part of the word; that they were summoned *out of* the whole population, a select portion of it, neither the populace, nor yet strangers, nor those who had forfeited their civil rights—this is expressed in the first. Both the *calling* and the calling *out* are moments to be remembered when the word is assumed into a higher Christian sense, for in them the chief part of its adaptation to its more august use lies." Not a mere mob, but only an assembly summoned together was an ecclesia.

The Hebrew word which is rendered "congregation" in the common English version, as in the expression "congregation of the Lord" is in the Greek Septuagint rendered ἐκκλησία (*ecclesia*). Those in the Hebrew church were the descendants of Israel, and were divinely called out from among the nations to be the special people of God.

In the New testament *ecclesia* is found one hundred and fifteen times. In three instances it is used of the Greek assembly, as in Acts 19:32, 39, where it is translated "assembly"; two times it is used of the Hebrew congregation (Acts 7:38 and Heb. 2:12) and translated "church"; and one hundred and ten times it is used of the Christian church. In this latter use it refers to those whom God has called or chosen out from the world. The church of God, then, is simply the company of God's called out ones. "The sense of the term *ecclesia* is invaluable to our understanding the meaning and nature of God's true church.

2. **The Universal Church**—Ἐκκλησία (*Ecclesia*), in its broadest sense, is used of the entire company of those whom God has called in all ages, whether they be on earth or in heaven. It consists of the aggregate of those who have been regenerated and who have responded to his call in separating themselves to be God's peculiar people. These have given God first place in their hearts, lives and loyalties. In this sense the church is but one and is often so represented in the Scriptures. Jesus said, "I will build my church" (Matt. 16:18). The singular number here indicates that the universality of the church is spoken of. "Christ also loved the church, and gave himself for it; that he might sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water by the word, that he might present it to himself a glorious church" (Eph. 5:25-27). Christ is "Head over all things to the church, which is his body" (Eph. 1:22). In Romans 12 and 1 Corinthians 12 the physical human body is used to represent the body of Christ. Of this body Christ is said to be the head. But if the body of Christ were used of the local church, then we have the image of one head with innumerable bodies. Other texts in which ecclesia is used in the universal sense are, "He is the head of the body, the church" (v. 24); also Ephesians 3:10, 21 and Hebrews 12:23. In this general aspect the church is sometimes described as invisible. It is so designated because it has no visible or earthly organization as do local congregations with their meetings and elders, or as do humanly organized denominational churches. This designation does not imply that the universal church is not truly organized with a divine spiritual head to which every member is related. The universal church is not merely the aggregate of all who profess Christianity, but is that company whom Christ has regenerated, in whom his Spirit dwells, and who are thereby joined to Christ and to one another.[1]

3. **The Local Church**—Ἐκκλησία (*ecclesia*) is also used in the Scriptures of the local congregation. This is its most common sense, being so used in ninety-two instances. Examples of this usage are: "the church which was at Jerusalem" (Acts 8:1), "the churches of Galatia" (1 Cor. 16:1), and "the church of God which is at Corinth" (1 Cor. 1:2). The local church is the local embodiment and exhibition of the universal church. It is the company of the regenerate persons of a given community associated together according to the Scriptures for worship and the upbuilding of the kingdom of God. It is not merely an association of persons who have joined themselves together for social, benevolent, or even a religious purpose. A true local church is divinely organized in the sense that it is composed of those who are saved, who all have the same Spirit, and who are all joined to the living Head of the body. Their association and fellowship together is on the basis of this spiritual relationship divinely effected, and by the members' recognition of one another as being so related.

Ἐκκλησία (*ecclesia*) is also used to designate the whole body of disciples or of local churches in a particular region, as in Acts 9:31, "So the church throughout all Judea, and Galilee, and Samaria had peace" (RV). In this use it seems to have a meaning identical with that of the universal church and applies in that sense to the Christians of the region. There is no evidence that the churches in those regions were bound together by any outward organization which differentiated them from other parts of the universal church. The term *church* is used to identify present day, humanly organized denominational institutions, which usage is doubtless in accordance with the original sense of ἐκκλησία (*ecclesia*), but is entirely without Scriptural support.[2/3]

4. **Relation of the Church and God's Kingdom**—Predictions of a coming kingdom of God are common in the Old Testament prophets. Jesus came announcing that the time was fulfilled and the establishment of that kingdom was at hand. He said much in his teaching about the kingdom. Those who are subjects of the spiritual kingdom of God and the membership of the church in its universal aspect, are identical, including only God's children. In the Gospels this spiritual society is called the "kingdom," and is so designated one hundred and twelve times, while the term "church" is used in but two instances. A reverse usage characterizes the epistles, "church" being mentioned one hundred and twelve times, and the "kingdom" twenty-nine times.

Though the membership composing the kingdom and the church is identical, yet the two terms are not entirely identical in meaning; they represent different phases of that spiritual society. The term "kingdom" describes that society in relation to Christ, who rules over it. The term "ecclesia" emphasizes another aspect of it—the relationship of its members to one another as an assembly, or a spiritual brotherhood. In either the kingdom or the church all are included who have been regenerated. "Except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he can not enter into the kingdom of God" (John 3:5). The new birth also inducts men into the family of God, which is the church (1 Tim. 3:15).[4]

II. The Fact of Its Organization

1. **Theories of the Time of Its Organization**—Did Jesus intend that those who accepted his teaching should be joined together in a society, or was it rather his intention that the principles he propounded should result merely in the transformation of the lives of those who accepted them? If he intended that his followers should be associated in an organization, when and by what authority was such organization effected? Those who deny the divine inspiration and unity of the Scriptures sometimes set the teachings of Jesus over against those of the writers of the epistles and affirm that Jesus did not intend an association of his followers, but that this idea first arose among his disciples subsequent to his death. Some other religious teachers of the post-Reformation period, failing to distinguish between the local and universal aspects of the church, have rejected as unscriptural the idea of an organized church. Three principal theories have prevailed as to the time of the organization of the church and the authority to organize it.

The first theory denies that the church was organized during the apostolic period, affirming it existed only in germ during that period and was fully organized during the patristic period or the first six Christian centuries. It assumes the Church Fathers were inspired equally with the apostles in their teaching and acts, and that therefore the organization they effected was according to the will of God. It is the theory of an inspired church of Romanism, but has been inconsistently held by the Anglican Church. The theory is objectionable for different reasons. (1) The Scriptures clearly teach that the church was fully organized during the apostolic period. God intended that it should be increased in

membership, but not that its form should be changed. (2) The form of organization varied greatly during the patristic period, from the simple local congregations of the second century with their elders and deacons, to the fully developed hierarchy of the fifth century with its metropolitans, diocesan bishops, and priests of lower orders. The latter could not have been a natural development from the former. A new principle of organization was introduced. (3) If the form of the organization of the church was to be decided by men after the apostolic period on the theory that those men were inspired as were the apostles, there is no logical reason for assuming that such inspiration ceased with the patristic period. Consistency required the acceptance of the Romish doctrine of an inspired church to supplement and interpret the biblical revelation in all ages. But all Protestants properly reject such a doctrine and accept the Scriptures alone as divine revelation for mankind.

The second theory of the authority for church organization is that God has not given and does not require a particular form of organization of his church, but that it is entirely a matter of expediency to be determined by the particular conditions and needs of a community of Christians. This is the theory held by most of the Protestant denominations. It is unsound because it ignores the fact that Jesus organized his church during his personal ministry and through his especially inspired apostles. As the form of civil government is determinative of its effects on the life of the nation, so the form of church organization affects the sentiments and character of the members. The apostasy of the early church was not first in false doctrinal statements, but in unscriptural church organization.

The third conception as to the authority and time in church organization is that the church was organized by divine authority, its form being determined by Jesus and his divinely inspired apostles, during the first century. No man may properly attempt to change or set aside that form which was the given.

2. **The Fact Stated and Implied in the Bible**—That Jesus intended to build a church he clearly stated in the words, "I will build my church" (Matt. 16:18). During his personal ministry he regenerated those who believed on him. In regeneration they were all made to possess the one divine Spirit by which they became related to one another as members of the spiritual body of Christ and to him as

its head. This was organization. Shortly after the foregoing words of Jesus were spoken, the church was frequently mentioned by the inspired writers as already existing. Much is said of it as an existing institution in the epistles (Acts 5:11; 8:1; 11:26). The day of Pentecost is often pointed to as the time of the organization of the church. Viewed as a body of people brought together through the operation of the Holy Spirit and for the first time established in definite church relationship, this is true. But the church existed in embryonic form, we may say, before Pentecost, for it is certain that men pressed into the kingdom of God from the days of John the Baptist. "The law and the prophets were until John: since that time the kingdom of God is preached, and every man presseth into it" (Luke 16:16). Membership in the kingdom and church are identical, the result of regeneration; therefore during Christ's personal ministry men were becoming members of the church, the universal body of Christ, although as yet that body was not exhibited to the world in concrete, organic form.[5]

During the apostolic period, from Pentecost on, local churches were organized. This is implied by many statements and allusions of the Scriptures concerning the affairs of those congregations. They had elections (Acts 6:5; 2 Cor. 8:19). They had officers, bishops, and deacons (Acts 20:17; Phil. 1:1). They had government (1 Tim. 5:17; Heb. 13:17). They had a recognized membership (Acts 4:23; 1 Cor. 11:33). They gave congregational contributions (Rom. 15:26; 1 Cor. 16:1). They kept a register of widows (1 Tim. 5:9). They exercised discipline (1 Cor. 5:13; 2 Cor. 7:11). All of these are impossible without a measure of organization. However, organization does not necessarily require written records, lists of members, formal choice of officers, or formal accepting of members. Neither must we assume that the local churches were fully organized in all these respects from their beginning at Jerusalem. The New Testament record rather leads to the belief that the completed form of their organization was gradually attained as the need arose. Yet they were organized under the guidance of divinely inspired apostles through whom also the Scriptures were given. As doctrinal truth was gradually revealed as occasion required, so was the organization of the church gradually effected as the need for it arose.

3. **Figurative Representations of the Church**—The fact of the organization of the church is definitely implied in the principal

figures used of it. In Romans 12 and 1 Corinthians 12 it is represented as being like the physical human body. Individual Christians are described as being workers together and helpers in the work of the body as are the eye, the hand, or the foot in the human body. Nothing can be more nearly parallel to the spiritual body of Christ than is the physical body with its several members in which one spirit dwells and over which it rules so that they function together in absolute harmony.

The church is also represented under the figure of a house or building (1 Tim. 3:15). In it God's people are described as "lively stones" "built up a spiritual house" (1 Pet. 2:5). They are said to be "framed together" and "builded together for an habitation of God" (Eph. 2:21, 22). To build together is to organize. Therefore the church is organized. It is also represented by other figures which imply it is organized, as a flock under one shepherd (John 10), and a city (Heb. 12:22), and a family (Eph. 3:15).

III. Nature of Its Organization

1. **Different Forms of Church Organization**—Among the various denominational churches four distinct forms of organization are found. They may be described as (1) monarchical, (2) oligarchical, (3) republican, and (4) democratic; or they may be more specifically designated respectively as the papal, episcopal, presbyterial, and congregational.

Monarchical government is a rule by one alone who has supreme power to legislate and act in all the functions of the government. The Roman Catholic Church, with its pope, who is assumed to be infallible, is the principal representative of this form of church government. However, certain smaller and more recent bodies have practically, if not professedly, been so governed. The oligarchical is a government by a few. Episcopal church government is of this class in that the authority resides in the bishops, a self-perpetuating body which is distinct from and virtually independent of the local congregation. The bishops are a class of higher clergy who exercise authority over the elders and deacons. Examples of this form of church organization are the Church of England and the Protestant Episcopal Church in the United States especially, and also the Methodist Episcopal Church in certain of its aspects. A republican government is one in which the ruling power is vested in representatives elected by the people. The government of the Presbyterian Church is of this class. The

congregation elects the pastor and elders who compose the session, delegates from several sessions compose the presbytery, delegates from the several presbyteries compose the synod, and delegates from these synods constitute the general assembly, which is the supreme authority. It is a form of government built upon the principle of representation. A democratic government in the strict sense is one in which the whole body of the people rule themselves directly. The congregational form of church government is of this type. No power is recognized as superior to that of the local church. This necessarily excludes any larger organization than that of the local congregation. Examples of this form of church organization are the Independents of England, the Congregational churches in the United States, and the Baptist church generally.

All these forms of church organization and government are self-consistent, but they all proceed on a purely human basis. Because the New Testament church is divinely organized and ruled, none of the foregoing systems can of themselves be that set forth in the Scriptures.

2. **The Church Divinely Organized**—Any true idea of the form and nature of the organization of the New Testament church must agree with all the New Testament statements bearing on the subject. It is important that we avoid stressing one aspect of its organization set forth in a particular text of Scripture to the exclusion of another aspect represented in other texts. No truth concerning the true church is more certainly taught in the Bible than that it is divinely organized. In his first mention of the church, Jesus said, "I will build my church" (Matt. 16:18). This is equal to our saying the church of Christ has been divinely organized. It is his because he built it. To organize is to induct and relate the members of a whole to one another and to it. The addition of members are not only divinely accomplished in the original constitution of the church, but such was the only mode of induction subsequently. "By one Spirit are we all baptized [inducted] into one body" (1 Cor. 12:13). "But now hath God set the members every one of them in the body, as it hath pleased him" (v. 18). Regeneration is the method by which the Spirit of God inducts or sets members in the church. If the church is composed of the entire company of the regenerate and is the family of God, as we have defined it to be, in the very nature of things it must be divinely organized in respect to its membership.

But there is also another aspect of organization of the church—the constituting of officers in it. The first preachers of the gospel were divinely called and qualified for their sacred work (Mark 3:14). As much may be said of the apostle Paul (Gal. 1:1). All other ministers of Christ are likewise divinely appointed. "God hath set some in the church, first apostles, secondarily prophets, thirdly teachers, after that miracles, then gifts of healings, helps, governments, diversities of tongues" (1 Cor. 12:28). The sense of this entire twelfth chapter is that men do their particular work in the church because of spiritual gifts which they have received of God. Elders do not have gifts because they are elders, but are elders because their divinely given gifts constitute them such. The same truth is taught in Ephesians 4: "When he ascended up on high, he led captivity captive, and gave gifts unto men. . . . And he gave some, apostles; and some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and some, pastors and teachers" (vv. 8, 11). With such a sense of the constituting of men officers in the true church it is apparent that only God can make one an officer. Therefore the church is divinely organized both as to the induction of members and the constitution of officers.

3. **The Human Agency in Church Organization**—A human agency must be recognized in the organization of the local congregation. The proofs already given that it was an organized body imply that it had a definite membership which was known as such to the members. What, then is the human function in relation to the organization of the local congregation? In seeking to determine this it is necessary to avoid any view that conflicts with the fundamental truth already shown to be clearly set forth in the Scriptures—that the church is divinely organized. If the universal church is divinely organized, the local church, which is but a part of it, must also be divinely organized. But if God organizes the local church, then it is not organized by men. If God constitutes men officers, other men can do no more than recognize what God has done. If God makes men members by miraculously converting them, other members can do no more than recognize such as fellow members of the church. The association, then, of members of the universal church in the local congregation involves on their part the principle of recognition as to the human connection with church organization. Men recognize what God has done. The recognition of elders seems to have been by a formal process of

laying on of hands and prayer in ordination. But there is no proof that members were recognized or accepted by congregations by any formal process or official act.

All the saved and only the saved in a particular community are properly members of the local congregation. Normally the recognized membership of the local congregation is identical with the number of the saved in a particular locality. But because of human fallibility, either on the part of the individual in knowing his duty of associating himself with a local church or on the part of the congregation in discerning who are saved and who are not, error is possible even in the most spiritual church. Examples of this are the recognition for a time of two false members, Ananias and Sapphira, by the church in Jerusalem; of Simon the Sorcerer by the church of Samaria; of certain unworthy persons by the church of Corinth; and of an unworthy member, by the name of Diotrephes, who loved to have the preeminence, by a church which John mentioned. Yet God is pleased that mistakes in accepting unworthy persons should be rectified. When Peter discerned that Ananias and Sapphira were dishonest, or when he found Simon desiring to purchase the gift of God with money, he promptly rejected them. Paul likewise urged the Corinthians to dissociate themselves from those among them who walked disorderly.

But there is a possibility of a local church failing to accept one whom God has accepted. This was true of the church at Jerusalem in relation to Paul when he returned to them after his conversion at Damascus and endeavored to join himself to them. Only when he was especially recommended to them by Barnabas did they accept him.

But there is yet another aspect of the human agency in the organization of the local church to be considered. Because of the social aspect of such an organization, it follows that he who is to be recognized by a congregation as one of its members must first have intentions of associating himself with them. Paul "assayed to join himself to the disciples" at Jerusalem. Only when one voluntarily associates himself with a local church as a member and is accepted or recognized as such by that church can he properly be said to be a member, even though he is saved and a resident of the immediate community where that church meets. This may be shown by a few examples. Suppose three men are converted in a revival meeting at a certain local church. The minister urges their

regular attendance at the services. But the first states he is a resident of another city and will worship with the local church of God in the city where he resides. The second, though truly converted, is untaught religiously and therefore states he will worship at the Roman Catholic church where his family are members. The third agrees to worship with the congregation where he was converted, which he does and is recognized by the congregation there as one of their number. Evidently the first two men are not members of that congregation even though it much desires to accept them as such. The membership of the third man in that congregation is determined by his definitely associating himself with them and their recognition of him as one of them, even though neither the associating nor the recognizing is by a formal act. Or as a further example, let us suppose a Christian man moves into a certain city where there are two local churches of God. Though he lives much nearer to the first, yet he always worships at the second because his presence is more needed there. He not only associates himself with that church as a member, but they recognize him as such. No recognition of him as a member on the part of the first church could constitute him a member there as long as he associates himself with the other congregation. Every Christian is a member of the Kingdom of God, but not of every local Church of God. But no one is properly a member of a local congregation who is not a member of the Kingdom. The latter is the ground for the former.

IV. Organization of Operative Agencies

1. **Operative Agencies Needed in the Church**—With a well-developed state of society and an elaborately organized government as was that of Imperial Rome, it is not surprising that associations of various kinds should have been prevalent in the first Christian century. According to writers of that period, associations were common in every aspect of life as among civilized peoples today. Cooperation among many requires such organizations. The early churches found need of cooperation to accomplish certain results and a consequent need of the organization of agencies to represent the whole church in those endeavors. The church at Jerusalem had certain financial administrations to be cared for. On the recommendation of the apostles they proceeded in an orderly manner to elect seven properly qualified men as a financial committee to attend to this business (Act 6). Other examples are the committee

sent by the church at Antioch to Jerusalem to inquire of the apostles there concerning the observance of the law (Acts 15:2), or the committee appointed by the Gentile churches to bear their gift to the poor saints at Jerusalem (1 Cor. 16:3; 2 Cor. 8:19, 23). In the brief and partial history given in the New Testament of the apostolic church but few instances are mentioned of the organization of such committees, but from what is stated it is evident the churches organized them whenever they were needed for the efficient prosecution of the work, and such agencies were probably common.

Every local congregation will find need of organizing such agencies as the field of its operation broadens. As new branches of work are undertaken, more and more elaborate agencies of this sort will be needed. If the local church property is to be held and controlled by the whole congregation, as it should be, there must be trustees duly appointed in an orderly and legal manner. If benevolent work among the poor is to be done by the church in an efficient manner, a duly appointed committee must be given responsibility of collecting and disbursing such funds. If the local church is to undertake systematic religious educational work, by way of a Sunday school or otherwise, efficiency demands an organization sufficient to insure orderliness in the school and in the curriculum. Besides regular operative organizations in the local church, there will be need of appointment of special agencies for special operations such as the erection of a church edifice. The larger the number of units cooperating, the greater the need of the organizing of reresentative agencies. When the local churches of a region or of an entire country undertake cooperative effort, they have special need of agencies through which to operate. Missionary societies organized by and representative of the local churches of the country are examples of such general agencies. As surely as the Jerusalem church needed the financial committee composed of the seven, and even more surely, if many individual Christians and several congregations are efficiently to cooperate in the supporting of missionaries to unevangelized regions, the constituting of such an agency is imperative. These organizations should be constituted by all those whom they represent or by representatives of the latter. Similar general church agencies are needed for the publication of religious literature, the conducting of schools for the training of ministers, and the controlling of church property used for general church gatherings.

2. **Relation of These Agencies to the Church**—But what is the nature of these agencies and their relationship to the organization of the church? The distinction is clear between the organization *of* the church and organizations effected *by* the church. The distinction is similar to the difference between the relationship between members of a human family and a business organization effected by the members of that family. It is true that when a local church engages in appointing such an agency it must resolve itself into a deliberative body, and it may for good reason not extend the franchise at such times to some who are truly members of the church if its interests require discrimination in this connection against some because of youthfulness or for other reasons. For this reason it cannot be said that the local church in the full sense organizes itself for business.

Operative agencies should be organized only as they are needed to accomplish the work of the church. They are not an end in themselves, but a means to an end. Therefore they should be no more elaborate than the need requires.

NOTES

[1]Many scholars do not agree with the concept of a "universal" church. The Scriptures speak often of the "Church of God" in Jerusalem, Ephesus, Corinth, etc. All the churches (congregations) recognize Jesus Christ as head and all of His followers as brethren. Each church is to have a pastor, and the gifts of the Spirit are distributed in the body as God wills. The Scriptures do not seem to indicate God willed a super (universal) church but that His Spirit would find all the congregations together in holy love, causing them to fulfill His prayer in John 17:11 ". . . that they may be one, as we are."

[2]We must remember that God set forth what he willed. We are often confused by the divided state of Christendom and attempt to somehow fit the New Testament concept into that divided situation. This is an error. We must see the pure and simple plan of God and strive to build according to that divine pattern.

[3]The Scriptures make no provision for a divided, denominational system. God set forth what he willed his church to be; how it was to be organized, who were considered members, and everything else needed for the Church to accomplish what he willed.

It is not easy to purge our minds of the present day denominational system and recognize the divine pattern for the church that bears the name of God. Division was not ordained by God. From the beginning God has willed unity in his body, the Church.

[4]Scholarship must recognize the difference in meaning of the word Kingdom (*Basileia*) and church (*ecclesia*). "Kingdom" denotes sovereignty, royal power, and dominion, and Jesus said of his Kingdom, in John 18:36, "My Kingdom is not of

this world" and he also said, in Luke 17:20, 21, "The Kingdom of God cometh not with observation . . . the Kingdom of God is within you."

The church (*ecclesia*) is the "called out body." By adding the words "of God" to Church, as the Scriptures do, we see the Church God recognizes is His own, bearing His name. The Church is that visible body of believers who have separated themselves to be God's "peculiar" people.

Certainly, in this day of confusion and division, many people have accepted Christ and his reign within them but they have not seen, visibly or otherwise, the New Testament Church.

[5]Many scholars do not accept the idea that the "Kingdom and Church are identical." See the previous footnote. Such Scriptures as 2 Cor. 6:17, "Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord. . . ." certainly indicate that many regenerated people have not discerned the true, New Testament church. These regenerated people are recognized as citizens of his Kingdom.

Chapter II

GOVERNMENT OF THE CHURCH

I. Officers of the Church

The church is represented as having various classes of officers who are its overseers and who are said in some sense to rule over it. Our views of the government of the church are determined in a measure by what the functions of those officers are found to be.

1. **Classes of Officers**—The officers of the New Testament church are described as being of different classes. Of Christ it is said, "He gave some, apostles; and some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and some, pastors and teachers; for the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry" (Eph. 4:11, 12). In writing to the Philippians the apostle mentions their officers as "bishops and deacons" (Phil. 1:1). Also he so designates them in 1 Timothy 3:1-13. Here are at least six different classes of church officers. These may be classified as extraordinary and ordinary. The former class consists of those whose labors do not require that they be associated with a particular congregation, but whose work may be intercongregational or apart from local congregations entirely. The latter class, the ordinary officers, consists of those who are necessary to the proper organization of the local church. The extraordinary officer consist of apostles, prophets, evangelists, and may include teachers.

The apostles were originally twelve in number, probably to correspond to the twelve tribes of Israel to whom they were originally and especially sent. Matthias was only the successor of Judas Iscariot. Paul was later added as a thirteenth apostle whose special duty was to carry the gospel to the Gentiles. In defending his apostolic authority the apostle Paul represents certain qualifications as necessary to those who fill the office. An apostle must have been sent forth by Christ in person (Acts 1:24; Gal. 1:1). He must have seen the Lord in person after he was raised from the dead in order that he may be a witness to that great truth (Acts 1:22, 23; 1 Cor. 9:1). He must have received the gospel directly from Christ without any human intervention (Gal. 1:11-20). To these thirteen apostles of Christ was committed the responsibility of the original establishment of the church and of Christianity. Their office was peculiar to them and had a special purpose. When

they had accomplished that purpose, the office ceased with their death. Because the office was not perpetuated, there is no ground for the assumption that prelatic bishops are the successors of the apostles. It is true the term "apostle" is used in a lower sense of those who first carry the gospel message to a non-Christian people, but the original meaning of the term "apostle" is one sent forth, as an ambassador is sent by a ruler to be his representative to another nation. The original apostles were peculiar in that they were sent to plant Christianity in the whole world. But those who first carry the Christian religion to non-Christian countries are properly called apostles in a secondary sense of the term. All pioneer missionaries are apostles in this sense. But in such a sense of apostle no distinct office in the church is designated.

Prophets of the apostolic church sometimes predicted future events as did those of ancient Israel. Agabus was especially used in such prediction (Acts 11:28; 21:11). But the chief function of the New Testament prophets was to speak the message of God under the special inspiration of the Holy Spirit. They spoke "unto men to edification, exhortation, and comfort."

Their function was principally that of preaching. A special need of the revelation of truth through such specially inspired men was important before the New Testament Scriptures were given as it is not important to us who have the full revelation of the Scriptures; yet there is no proper ground for saying this office ceased with the Apostolic Age, for there is doubtless a need for its exercise at present as for other supernatural manifestations.

Evangelists are itinerant ministers or missionaries. Apostles in the secondary sense may be included in this class, though all evangelists may not properly be called apostles in the lower sense. Evangelists are men who have been called to the gospel ministry, but who are without a permanent local charge and who travel from place to place preaching for short intervals to establish congregations or who endeavor to convert men by preaching the gospel where no congregations exist. Though the word is found but three times in the New Testament (Acts 21:8; 2 Tim. 4:5; Eph. 4:11), the names of several are mentioned who were evidently evangelists, such as Philip, Timothy, Titus, Silas, Apollos, and Luke. Some of these traveled or cooperated with the Apostle Paul. The office of evangelist is permanent in the church.

Teachers are ministers who exercise a special function of

instructing in the truths of religion. The purpose of teaching is to enlighten the intellect rather than especially to move men to action. This is an important office. Jesus occupied himself largely with "teaching" the people, as is stated and as is evident from the nature of his recorded discourses. There were those in the apostolic churches who had special gifts for such work and they may or may not represent a distinct class in the ministry. Teaching appears to be a function of the pastor in Ephesians 4:11, but a distinct office in Romans 12:7. A pastor or evangelist may be a teacher as an apostle may be a pastor or evangelist.

The ordinary or regular officers of the church may be properly designated as (1) elders, bishops, or pastors, and (2) deacons. The qualifications of these are especially enumerated in the pastoral epistles. Paul recognizes them as distinct classes in writing to the Philippians. "To all the saints in Christ Jesus which are at Philippi, with the bishops and deacons" (1:1).

2. **Pastors, or Bishops**—The preachers, or leaders of the local churches, are designated by various terms in the New Testament, as elders, bishops, or pastors. All three of these terms are used of the same office. This is denied by prelatists, who in addition to elders and deacons, the two classes of church officers recognized by others, distinguish a third and higher class of officers in their bishops. On what gound does prelacy make such a distinction? If the distinction between elders and bishops does not rest on biblical grounds, do the Scriptures afford proof that they are identical? These questions lead us to inquire concerning the usage of the original terms.

Of the two terms, "elder" and "bishop" by far the more common is the former, which is the English rendering of the Greek, πρεσβύτερος (*presbuteros*). It is used with reference to church officers thirty-one times and by five different writers in the New Testament, while the term ἐπίσκοπος (*episkopos*), bishop, is found but six times. Therefore the preponderance of the use of the former over the latter is great. Elder is a Jewish term of Greek derivation. The Jews used it of the officers of their synagogs. The use of the term "elder" by the apostolic congregations to designate their leaders was very natural, due to the first Christian assemblies and the apostles themselves being Jewish. It was the most expressive term the language afforded. It was used of all preachers, even of the apostles themselves. They so apply it to themselves in three

instances (1 Pet 5:11; 2 John 1; 3 John 1). Whatever may have been a preacher's particular kind of ministry, whether apostle, prophet, evangelist, pastor, or teacher, he was an elder, or presbyter, which is merely the anglicized form of the Greek term πρεσβύτερος (*presbuteros*). "Elder" indicates the rank of the office, while other terms such as "evangelist," "pastor," "teacher," and also "bishop" denote particular functions connected with it.

The term "bishop" is the rendering of the Greek ἐπίσκοπος (*episkopos*) and means overseer. It is so translated in Acts 20:28. "Take heed therefore unto yourselves, and to all the flock, over which the Holy Ghost hath made you *overseers* [ἐπίσκόπους (*episkopous*)]," or bishops. There is no record of its use by the apostolic church of its ministers until a comparatively late date. Its earliest use is in the preceding quotation from Paul when addressing the elders of Ephesus. It was later used of the elders at Philippi (Phil. 1:1), in the pastoral epistles (1 Tim. 3:1, 2; Titus 1:7), and by Peter of Christ as bishop of souls (1 Pet. 2:25). Only as the churches became more exclusively Gentile in membership and consequently more familiar with strictly Greek usage is "bishop" used to designate elders. The magistrates of the early Greek Colonies were called ἐπίσκοποι (*episkopoi*). It was as natural for the Grecian Christians to call their leaders ἐπίσκοποι (*episkopoi*) as for English-speaking Christians to call them overseers when it is desirable to denote them in relation to their function of directing.

That elders and bishops are not distinct classes of officers, but that the terms are used interchangeably, is evident from a review of their use in the New Testament. In Acts 20:17 we read that Paul "sent to Ephesus, and called the *elders* of the church." In verse 28 he tells them the Holy Ghost had made them *bishops* [ἐπίσκοποι (*episkopoi*)]. Here Paul identifies bishops with elders. The supposition is not admissible that a particular person is referred to as the bishop over the other elders, for Paul is addressing them all. Also the plural form of the term is used, which excludes the prelatical idea of one bishop over the elders of a local church or diocese. Paul addresses "All the saints in Christ Jesus which are at Philippi, with the bishops and deacons" (Phil. 1:1). The plural number here rules out the idea that in this church one bishop ruled over a plurality of elders. Also the fact that there were a plurality of bishops in this one local church and no mention is made of elders while deacons are mentioned is strong reason for believing that to

the apostles the terms were interchangeable. He does use them interchangeably in Titus 1:5-7. "Ordain *elders* in every city. . . . If any be blameless. . . . For a *bishop* must be blameless." In 1 Peter 5:1, 2 the elders are said to be "taking the oversight," or acting as bishops.

That the elders and bishops of the apostolic churches were identical is not only found to be a truth of Scripture by opposers of prelacy, but is also admitted by its supporters, and especially by the early church fathers. Among those of the latter class may be mentioned Jerome and Augustine. Conybeare and Howson, themselves prelatists, say, "These terms are used in the New Testament as equivalents; the former (ἐπίσκοπος) [*episkopos*] denoting (as its meaning, *overseer,* implies) the duties; the later (πρεσβύτερος) [*presbuteros*] the rank of the office" (Vol. 1, p. 434). Dean Alford also admits, "The title ἐπίσκοπος (*episkopos*), as applied to one person superior to the πρεσβύτεροι (presbyteroi), and answering to our bishops, appears to have been unknown in apostolic times." With the foregoing evidence that elders and bishops were identical in the apostolic church, there is no room in the government of the New Testament church for prelacy or any kind of rule which requires grades in the ministry by which some exercise authority over others.

One other important designation of ministers in the New Testament church—pastors—remains to be considered. The term "pastor," from ποίμην (*poimen*), signifies one who feeds a flock. The function is practically identical with that of teaching, and in the list of classes of ministerial functions in Ephesians 4:11 pastors and teachers are regarded as identical. The pastor is identical with the elder or bishop. The elders of Ephesus, who are also said to be bishops, are exhorted to "feed [ποιμαίνειν (*poimainein*)] the church of God" (Acts 20:28). The term "pastor," like "bishop," is synonymous with "elder," and, like "bishop," differs from "elder" in that it denotes a function of the office while elder denotes its rank. After discussing these and other less important designations of the minister, W. H. H. Marsh says, "Of the eight terms defined, elder seems to be the only one specifically denoting the ministry of the word apart from function and relation. All the others seem to refer much more closely to functions and relations than to the title of the office to which they belong" (*The New Testament Church,* p. 477).

The duties of the pastor are as follows: (1) To preach and teach

the Word of God. Paul exhorted the elders of Ephesus to follow his example in this respect. "Apt to teach" is one of the qualifications for the office as described by Paul. (2) To administer the ordinances. In the Great Commission the command to those who preach the gospel is also to baptize. Paul baptized some of the members of the Corinthian church. Philip baptized the Ethiopian. There is no evidence in the Scriptures that any but ministers ever baptized. (3) The government and spiritual oversight of the church. The term "elder" denotes a spirtual ruler. A bishop is one who has the oversight of others. A pastor is a shepherd and is responsible to guide, feed, and protect the flock. The writer to the Hebrews charges them, "Obey them that have the rule over you" (Heb. 13:17). He presides in the assembly of the local church.

3. **Deacons**—The questions which here represent themselves for consideration are relative to the nature of the office and the work of the deacon. That deacons constitute a distinct class of church officers is clear in the New Testament (Phil. 1:1; 1 Tim. 3:1-13). But is the deacon's work of a spiritual nature or does it consist in caring merely for the temporal and material interests of the church? What is his relation to the elder and to the congregation? We can best understand the nature of the work of the deacon if we first understand what the meaning of the term "deacon" is. This word occurs only five times in the English New Testament (Phil. 1:1; 1 Tim. 3:8, 10, 12, 13). It is not a translation of the Greek word διάκονος (*diakonos*), but is this Greek word anglicized and transferred. In the Greek Testament, where the word occurs seventy-one times either in its noun or verbal form, it always carries with it the idea of service, help, subordination. In classical usage the Greek word in its verbal form means, according to Liddel and Scott, "to wait on, serve, do service." The Greek word is often used for servant, either bond or hired. A deacon, then, is a helper, and the word carries with it the idea of service, help, and subordination.

The deacon's work is to assist or help the pastors of the congregations. The apostolic church was a very simple organization. It had its preachers who had the oversight of the congregations, and who were variously designated according to the functions of their office as pastors, bishops, or elders. The different persons who assisted them in any phase of their duties were deacons or helpers. These were not a specially appointed "board,"

but were those who had the ability and disposition to assist the elders. Διάκονος (*diakonos*) was the word in the Greek commonly used to designate those who thus served or assisted; therefore, these servants of the churches and helpers of the pastors were called deacons. Doubtless at first the word was not used in a technical sense, or to designate those in an office. The functions of the office of deacon are well expressed by the word "helps" in the list of spiritual gifts in 1 Corinthians 12:28. Some persons are not pastors in the full sense, yet they have divinely given qualifications that make them excellent helpers for the pastors. These are deacons. They are often called "assistant pastors" or "spiritual workers."

On the ground of the meaning of the term used to designate the office, it is proper to regard the work of deacons as being as great in variety as is that of the pastor. In whatever sphere the elder needs help these may help. If there is need of their services in the financial interests of the church, in caring for the poor, or in other temporal interests of the church, these are properly aspects of their work. But they may also properly assist the pastor in preaching, teaching, praying for those in need of physical or spiritual help from God, or in other functions pertaining to the ministry.

The work of deacons has not uncommonly been assumed to be the administration of the financial and material affairs of the church. The seven men appointed by the Jerusalem church are cited as evidence that such is the specific duty of deacons. But that these men were deacons is only an assumption entirely without scriptural support. *They are nowhere called deacons* in the Bible. Luke mentions them in Acts 21:8, twenty-five years after their selection, which was certainly long after deacons had become common in the apostolic churches, but he does not refer to them as the seven deacons, as he naturally would have done had they been regarded as such, He simply calls them "the seven." They were merely a business committee appointed for a temporary need. Some of these may have been merely dependable, devout lay members such as a local church might elect on a board of trustees. Some of them, apart from their election on this committee, may have possessed gifts and have done such service as constituted them deacons in the usual sense, but it is certain that at least two of these seven men, Stephen and Philip, were among the greatest preachers of the apostolic period, ranking with Paul and Barnabas. One early church writer states that they were all of the Seventy,

therefore were elders. These seven can be regarded as deacons only in the broad sense of the term that they served the church and assisted the apostles by relieving them of certain work of a business nature. This furnishes no ground for confounding their service with the distinct class of church officers of whom Paul writes. Neither is such ground furnished by the word διακονία (*diakonia*), rendered service (Acts 6:1), which might be used of the service rendered by any one. The work these seven men were appointed to perform cannot properly be regarded as an example of the specific duties of the New Testament deacon.

The list of qualifications for the office of deacon given in 1 Timothy 3:8-13 does not furnish any light as to what the functions of the office were. The qualities there given have to do wholly with the character and fitness of the man who fills the office, and are such as should be possessed by any man whom the church trusts to do any important service. The qualifications of deacons described in that chapter are almost identical with those of the elder. If they proved anything as to the nature of the work of the deacon it would be that his work is similar to that of the elder.

II. Nature of the Government of the Church

1. A Divine and a Human Aspect—The functions of government are legislative, judicial, and executive. An absolute ruler combines all of these in his administration of his government. The government of the New Testament church is an absolute monarchy as far as the source of authority is concerned. Christ is supreme ruler of it. Of him it was predicted, "The government shall be upon his shoulder" (Isa. 9:6). He is "the head over all things to the church" (Eph. 1:22). All governmental power is from him. Any ruling authority in the church that does not proceed from him is an usurped authority. The laws by which it is governed are divinely given. The Holy Spirit is the one who adds members to the church and he is the one who cuts them off when they sin. He it is who calls, qualifies, and sends forth his ministers. "The Holy Ghost said, Separate me Barnabas and Saul for the work whereunto I have called them. . . . So they, being sent forth by the Holy Ghost, departed" (Acts 13:2-4). Though he employed human instruments as a medium through which to send them forth, yet they were "sent forth by the Holy Ghost." Christ did not cease to govern his church when he died on the cross, but still lives and rules his church today through the operation of the Holy Spirit. The divine

element is basic in the government of the church, and no view of church government which disregards it can be correct. All else must be conformed to this fundamental idea.

But as was shown concerning the organization of the church, there is not only a divine but also a human aspect in the government of the church. This is clearly recognized by the apostle Paul. Let the elders that rule well be counted worthy of double honor, especially they who labor in word and doctrine" (1 Tim. 5:17). "Remember them which have the rule over you, who have spoken unto you the word of God" (Heb. 14:7). "Obey them that have the rule over you, and submit yourselves: for they watch for your souls, as they that must give account, that they may do it with joy, and not with grief: for that is unprofitable for you" (v. 17). The same is implied in those texts which represent the elders as having the oversight or being directors of congregations (Acts 20:28; 1 Pet. 5:2). The nature of this rule or oversight is implied in a measure in the foregoing texts. They did not make laws for the church, but spoke to them "the word of God." They were not lords over God's people, but were divinely appointed to care for and guide them, and were responsible to God for the salvation of the souls of those under them. Whatever authority they had was only such as had been delegated to them by Christ.

Church government includes, then, both a divine and a human aspect. It is effected by a cooperation of the divine and the human. An illustration of the relation of the divine and human operation in church government is to be found in the giving of the Scriptures. The human writers used their minds and, though seeking to do God's will, they functioned unhampered. Likewise the Spirit of God accomplishes his will in ruling his church through human instrumentality. The Spirit not only uses the elders especially, in ruling the church, but also operates through the various members of the congregation for the same purpose. The sending out of Barnabas and Saul was by the elders at Antioch at the direction of the Spirit. But when a certain member of the church at Corinth had sinnned, the whole congregation was made responsible for the exercise of discipline. Government by the whole congregation is also implied in the words, "If he neglect to hear the church" (Matt. 18:17). Also in discoursing concerning spiritual gifts Paul allows that "all may prophesy" or receive "a revelation" for the congegation even if he is not an elder. These are important elements in

true church government. Therefore in its human aspect the government of the church is both presbyterian and congregational.

Because of the natural fallibility of the human instruments employed in church government, errors may be made. Instead of the Word of God, commandments of men may be preached. The church may for a time reject those whom God has accepted, as in the case of the newly converted Saul and the church at Jerusalem. No system or lack of system can entirely eliminate such errors. But to the extent members of the church keep filled with the Spirit, man-rule will be excluded.

2. **Nature of Ministerial Authority**—Because Christ is the sole source of authority in the church, whatever authority elders may have is from him. But the authority they have is not of that sort on which human government rests, and which inheres merely in the position to which one has been appointed. Neither is the authority of that driving, compelling kind that is common to human government. The authority which Christ delegates to ministers is of the same nature as that which he exercises directly in his dealings with men. He does not compel men to serve him, but influences them to do so by manifestations of goodness and love. Ministerial authority has its basis in the power of elders to influence God's people. This power is determined by the gifts which God has bestowed upon the elders. Though all ministers are of equal grade officially, yet because some have greater gifts than others their influence is wider and they consequently have greater ruling authority. One's gifts may be such that they will wield a proper authority or rule, not merely over one congregation, but over all the church in a large region. This was true of the Apostle Paul especially. Such a view of ministerial authority does not exclude the power of discipline. When the Word of God has been faithfully preached and one professing to be a member of the church willfully disobeys it, it is the duty of the minister and the entire congregation, if he disregards all proper efforts to save him from error, to count him "as an heathen man and a publican." But no penalty can properly be inflicted by them upon him.

There is another aspect of ministerial authority which does not result directly from one's divine gifts and call, but rather from the call or recognition of the local church which the minister serves. It is evident that an elder or a particular local congregation has certain ruling power in that particular congregation which another

elder from a congregation nearby who might be visiting the first-mentioned congregation does not possess, even though both are equally endowed with spiritual gifts. The elder of the first congregation has the authority to call or preside at its meetings, to decide who shall and who shall not preach from its pulpit, and to direct the work of the congregation. It is an aspect of ministerial authority which proceeds directly from the members of the local church by their recognition of him as their elder, whether that recognition is given him by a formal ordination or informally by general assent. Doubtless under normal circumstances such recognition of an elder by a local church should be and is on the ground of spiritual gifts he possesses. That the government of the church is more properly described as divine government than charismatic government is certain from the fact that much of it is effected directly by Christ in relation to the individual members as well as through the giving of special gifts to elders or others. The government of the church is divine and is charismatic to the extent that it is effected *through* gifts given to men.

3. **Number and Choice of Local Church Officers**—Though all the members of the church possess spiritual gifts, yet some possess gifts of such a nature as to constitute them officers of the church. These officers, including elders and deacons, are recognized in the Scriptures as distinct from the members in general (Acts 20:17; Phil. 1:1, 1 Tim. 3:1-13). They were divinely constituted as officers, but their relation to a particular congregation was dependent upon two things: (1) their association with it and (2) its recognition of them in their official capacity as over it, much as one who is truly saved and thus a member of the Kingdom of God becomes a member of a particular local congregation only by his associating himself with it and its recognition of him as a member. One's being an officer in a local church, then, requires not only his being divinely qualified and called to it, but also his being recognized and accepted as such by the local congregation. That acceptance by the congregation may be by the act of ordination, a formal vote, or informal assent. In any case such action is essential to the proper functioning of an officer in relation to a local church.

But how many elders or deacons should a local church be expected to have at one time? From the very nature of the method by which they are developed no fixed number should be expected in every case. The number varies according to the size of the

congregation and the needs. It is certain the local churches of the apostolic period frequently had several elders. In the Jerusalem church "the *elders*" are mentioned (Acts 15:6). The church at Ephesus had "*elders*" (20:17). In the church at Philippi were "*bishops* and *deacons*" (Phil. 1:1). Titus was left in Crete to "ordain *elders* in every city" (Titus 1:5). The sick are instructed to "call for the *elders* of the church" (Jas. 5:14). In these texts is proof of a plurality of elders in each of those local churches. Especially the last text is ground for the inference that a plurality of elders in the local church was common. No clear proof is afforded by Scripture of a church with but one elder. In the Revelation the messages to the seven churches are addressed to "the angel of the church," but it not certain that this refers to the pastor. Probably it does.

History furnishes equally certain proof that the early local churches had a plurality of elders. Polycarp urges the Philippian church to "subject themselves to their presbyters and deacons." Tertullian says of the local church, "Certain approved elders preside." In speaking of the apostolic churches Neander says, "The guidance of the communities was entrusted to a Council of elders" (*History of the Christian Church*, Vol. 1, p. 184).

Doubtless the normal New Testament church today will have a plurality of elders. An important question arises in the present connection as to whether there should be one among them recognized as the "pastor." The "angels" of the churches were probably such. Early church writers state that in the second century the presbyters of the local church appointed one of their own number to preside over them and the congregation, but that he was only first among equals. Yet it is doubtful whether any clear evidence exists that the early churches had but one "pastor" in the modern sense. Probably conditions were such that they did not have the same occasion for a single pastor as seems to be demanded by modern conditions. For economic reasons usually a church today can have but one elder to give his entire time to its service. It has been found an advantage, when it is possible, to have one supported financially by the congregation to devote himself to its care. Even if the support of more than one is possible it has been found an advantage usually for one to be entrusted and charged especially with the responsibility of presiding over and directing the work of the congregation. This makes for efficiency

and insures in a measure against neglect of important work. The Scripture statements are not opposed to such a practice. The elder thus recognized as the special overseer is usually one especially fitted for his work by training, experience, and spiritual gifts. The recognition of such a special pastor, though possible without precedent in the Scriptures, is not opposed by any Scripture teaching and is a good practice if he is not given such a place in relation to other elders in the congregation as to hinder their functioning in the way God would have them. This recognition as the special pastor of one of the divinely appointed elders of a local church is not in disregard to the divine government of the church, but in conformity with it. It is simply allowing him opportunity in a larger measure to do the very work which he has been divinely called and qualified to do.

The choosing of elders in the local church is represented in the New Testament as being, in a measure at least, the work of other ministers. Paul and Barnabas ordained elders in the new churches they established (Acts 14:23). Titus was directed to ordain elders in every city. There is no reason for believing this was done independently of the approval or cooperation of the members of those congregations. In the nature of the case the concurrence of the church is necessary in the appointing or ordaining of elders in local churches. The exact method to be followed in this may vary in different instances and is not pertinent to this discussion.*

Certain questions relative to the choosing of deacons remain for consideration. The nature of the office and work of deacons has been discussed. We now inquire: (1) Are they constituted deacons by God or by election by the church? (2) Are they to be ordained?

With the lack of evidence that "the seven" elected at Jerusalem were deacons we have no Scripture example of the election of deacons. Because of the nature of their work, deacons cannot be made such by election or other human process for the same reason that elders cannot be so constituted. As elders are such because God has called them and given them spiritual gifts for their work, so deacons, or assistant pastors, are such because they are divinely

*It is not uncommon for congregations to have spiritual adivsory committees and these usually include elders other than the pastor who are members of the local church. They meet with the pastor for prayer, planning, and to make recommendations to the church for their consideration.

qualified to be such by those gifts that Paul describes as "helps." The idea of a board of deacons consisting of a definite number whether or not that number be seven is without New Testament support. As a man cannot be constituted a preacher by election, so one cannot be made a deacon by votes. But as a congregation may choose one from those who have already been constituted preachers by God to take the particular responsibility of caring for it, so those who are already constituted deacons by God because of his having given them spiritual gifts may be selected either by the pastor or by the congregation to perform some particular phase of work in which the pastor needs assistance. One such spiritual worker may be appointed to the work of visiting the sick, another to visiting the members of the church having spiritual difficulties, another to visiting the poor, another to leading prayer-meetings, or another to assisting in the Lord's Supper. For the purpose of fixing responsibility for certain work a board may be elected from those who are already deacons. But such a board may not properly assume to rule the congregation and dictate to the pastor.

The Bible makes no mention of the ordination of deacons, inasmuch as the "seven" cannot be said to have been deacons. It does not teach, however, that they may not be ordained. But certainly it is not improper when deacons are appointed to some special service in the church as before mentioned, the same as when lay members or preachers are so appointed, that such appointment should be accompanied by the laying on of hands and prayer. It is even desirable that such recognition should be accorded them.

CHAPTER III

APOSTASY AND RESTORATION OF THE CHURCH

In view of what has been said of the constitution of the apostolic church, it must be obvious even to the casual observer that the nature of the organization and government of the modern church is very unlike that described in the New Testament. A radical departure from the faith and practices of the primitive church has taken place. The church has apostatized from the teachings of the Scriptures and that divine organization and government of it therein represented. This falling away is the ground for the need of a restoration or reformation of the church. The nature of this reformation is determined by the nature of the apostasy. Therefore, in order to understand what should be accomplished in the work of reformation we must first inquire concerning what was the nature of that apostasy.

Since inquiry is properly within the province of systematic theology, no ecclesiology is complete today which omits a discussion of the principles of the constitution of the New Testament church in relation to the teaching and polity of the modern humanly organized churches. The insistent demand of recent years on the part of the Christian world for unity makes such a consideration incumbent upon the theologian of the present time.

I. The Apostasy of the Church

1. **Two Aspects of Apostasy Predicted**—To allay the anxiety of the Thessalonian Christians concerning the near approach of the second advent of Christ, the apostle Paul wrote them, "That day shall not come, except there come a falling away first, and that man of sin be revealed, the son of perdition; who opposeth and exalteth himself above all that is called God, or that is worshiped; so that he as God sitteth in the temple of God, showing himself that he is God. . . . And now ye know what withholdeth that he might be revealed in his time. For the mystery of iniquity doth already work; only he who now letteth [restraineth, ASV] will let, until he be taken out of the way. And then shall that wicked be revealed, whom the Lord shall consume with the spirit of his mouth, and shall destroy with the brightness of his coming: even

him whose coming is after the working of Satan with all power and signs and lying wonders" (2 Thess. 2:3-9).

These words are a clear prediction that an apostasy should come. The original of our word "apostasy" is found in the Greek ἀποστασια (*apostasia*) which is rendered "falling away" in verse 3. That a correct exegesis of these verses describes a great apostasy then future and that this exegesis is common among interpreters is shown by the following quotation from the Pulpit Commentary: "The prediction of St. Paul concerning the Man of Sin made a deep impression upon the early Fathers, and the references to it in their writings are numerous. There is also a comparative unanimity in their sentiments. In general, they considered that the fulfillment of the prediction was future; that the Man of Sin was Antichrist, and an individual; and that the restraining influence was the Roman Empire. . . .

"The reformer in general adopted this opinion. Such were the views of Luther, Calvin, Zwinglius, Melanchthon, Beza, and Bucer; and, among English Reformers, Cranmer, Ridley, Latimer, Hooper, and Jewell. According to them, the apostasy is the falling away from the evangelical doctrine to the traditions of men and the corruptions of popery; the Man of Sin, or Antichrist, is not, as the Fathers conceived, an individual, but the succession of popes; and the restraining power is the Roman Empire, out of whose ruins the papacy arose. The Lutheran Church inserted this opinion as an article in its creed (Article Smalc, ii, 4). In the dedication of the translators of the authorized version of King James, it is assumed that the pope is the Man of Sin; and that monarch is complimented for writing in the defense of the truth, which gave 'such a blow unto that Man of Sin as will not be healed.' And the assertion that the pope is Antichrist and the Man of Sin, forms one of the articles of the Westminster Confession: "There is no other head of the Church but the Lord Jesus Christ; nor can the Pope of Rome in any sense be head thereof, but is that Antichrist, that Man of Sin and son of perdition, that exalted himself in the Church against Christ and all that is called God' (Ch. XXV. 6). . . . Besides the early Reformers, this opinion is advocated by Hooker, Hurd, Newton, Turretin, Benson, Bengel, Doddridge, Macknight, Michaelis, Elliott, and Bishop Wordsworth. . . . In the view of those who regard the pope as the Man of Sin, this prediction was fully verified. No sooner was the restainer removed

than the Man of Sin was revealed. As long as the Roman Emperor continued heathen and resident at Rome, no ecclesiastical power was permitted to exalt itself. . . .

"Are the characteristics of the Man of Sin found in popery? Those who belong to this class of interpreters assert that the resemblance is striking and obvious. An apostasy is predicted, and there is in Romanism a falling away from the pure gospel to the traditions of men; the doctrines of purgatory, transubstantiation, the sacrifice of the Mass, the adoration of the Virgin and the Saints, are adduced as examples. The Man of Sin is represented as opposing and exalting himself against all that is called God or is an object of worship; and this is considered as receiving its fulfillment in the pope exalting himself above all human and divine authority, claiming the title 'king of kings and lord of lords,' applying to himself the words of the psalmist, 'All kings shall bow down before thee,' styling himself universal bishop, and asserting his power to dispose of the kingdoms of the earth. The Man of Sin is said to seat himself in the temple of God, showing himself as God. The temple of God is here understood to be the Christian Church, and the pope places himself in it as its supreme head, the vicar of Jesus Christ. He shows himself as God by claiming divine attributes, as holiness and infallibility; assuming divine prerogatives, as the power of pardoning sins and the opening and shutting of the kingdom of heaven; and using such divine titles as 'Our Lord God the Pope,' 'Another God on earth.' Every pope on his election is placed on the high altar at St. Peter's, and receives the adoration of the cardinals. The coming of the Man of Sin is after the working of Satan, with all power, and signs, and wonders of falsehood. And this is considered as receiving its fulfillment in the false miracles of popery; in the imposition of indulgences and purgatory; in the wonders done by sacred images moving, speaking, bleeding; in the prodigies effected by sacred relics; in the supernatural visitations of the Virgin, and in the pretended power of working miracles which the church of Rome still claims. . . . And, besides, in the other passage where Paul predicts the falling away of the latter times, the marks which he gives find their counterpart in the corruption of popery: 'Giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils; speaking lies in hypocrisy; having their conscience seared with a hot iron; forbidding to marry, and commanding to abstain from meats' (1 Tim. iv. 1-3). Paul repre-

sents the system as working even in his days: 'For the mystery of lawlessness is already working' (ch. ii. 7).

"So that," as Bishop Newton Observes, "the foundations of popery were laid, indeed, in the apostles' days, but the superstructure was raised by degrees, and several ages passed before the building was completed, and the Man of Sin was revealed in full perfection.

"Of course, according to this view of the subject, the complete fulfillment of the prophecy is still future. The destruction of the Man of Sin—that is, Romanism—is also predicted: 'Whom the Lord Jesus will slay with the breath of his mouth, and annihilate by the appearance of his coming' (ch. ii, 8). . . . Upon the whole, on an impartial review of the subject, we cannot avoid the impression that the points of resemblance between the prophecy and Romanism are numerous, varied, and striking. Our forefathers had no doubt as to the application of the prediction, and perhaps they were nearer the truth than we in modern times, who hesitate. Such an opinion may be considered as uncharitable and unjust, and is certainly not in accordance with the more liberal spirit of our age, where popery is viewed as it presently exists, divested of its power to persecute, and as seen in the culture, refinement, and piety of many of its adherents. But when we reflect upon the adominable persecutions of the Inquisition, the monstrous wickedness of the popes prior to the Reformation, the atrocities perpetrated in the name of religion, the crimes committed by the priests, and the general corruption of the whole system; and when we think that it is only the restraining influence of Protestantism which prevents a repetition of such actions, we may see reason, if not to affirm positively, yet to suspect that such an opinion may be founded on truth, and if so, be neither uncharitable nor unjust."

Two aspects of apostasy are described in the prophecy under consideration. (1) A falling away, or departure, from the faith, or teaching, of the New Testament was to take place. The faith and practices of Christians were to undergo a change because of a rejection of the Word of God and a substitution therefore of the traditions and commandments of men. (2) The revelation and exaltation of the 'man of sin' was to result in his usurpation of the place and authority of God in the "temple," or church, of God. This aspect of apostasy doubtless refers to the rejection of the rule

of the Holy Spirit in the church in favor of a system of man-rule.

Besides this more particular prediction of the apostasy, one phase or the other of it is represented in other texts. "Many false prophets shall arise, and shall deceive many. And because iniquity shall abound, the love of many shall wax cold" (Matt. 24:11, 12). "Some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils" (1 Tim. 4:1). "There shall be false teachers among you, who privily shall bring in damnable heresies" (2 Pet. 2:1).

2. **A Rejection of the Teaching of the Word of God**—The substitution of human traditions for the true faith was rapid, though gradual. Christianity had largely departed from the faith by the end of the third century. To set forth in order the various false doctrines and superstitious practices is the function of church history rather than of systematic theology. Our present purpose requires only the citation of such examples as will give an adequate idea of the nature of the aspect of apostasy under discussion.

As early as the third century simple faith in Christ for salvation began to be obscured by many unscriptural rites and ceremonies. Baptismal regeneration gained wide acceptance, and baptism itself not only became changed as to mode and meaning, but was burdened with the addition of a very elaborate ritual. Concerning the observance of baptism in the third century, Rutter says, "Nor was the sacrament of baptism administered to any till the humble catechumen had been publicly exorcised, had acknowledged himself under the influence of a malignant spirit, and had submitted to a long preparation. . . . The catechumen was exorcised for twenty days previous to his baptism, in order to deliver him from the supposed dominion of evil spirits, and durng that time was prepared by abstinence, the knowledge of the Lord's Prayer, and the Articles of Belief, for becoming a member of the church. In imitation of the pagans, the Christians had thought proper to introduce mysteries into the religion of Christ; and the administration of baptism, confirmation, ordination, the celebation of the Lord's Supper, the Lord's Prayer, and a number of other offices were industriously concealed from the catechumen. . . . Confirmation immediately followed the reception of baptism. This ceremony consisted in anointing them with holy oil and the imposition of hands; the former of which practices was probably introduced about the beginning of this century; and to this unction was

ascribed the effect of confirming the soul in all spiritual graces on the part of God and the confirmation of the profession of a Christian on the part of the man. White garments were distributed to the neophytes upon their being baptized, which after being worn eight days were deposited in the church. The believer, who by this rite became incorporated into the society of Christians, was congratulated upon his admission with the kiss of peace, and was presented with a mixture of milk and honey, or milk and wine. After a few other trifling ceremonies, he was permitted to partake of the sacrament of the Lord's Supper, which began in several of the more opulent societies to be administered with much external pomp" (*Church History*, pp. 53-55).

The true significance of the Lord's Supper was also obscured by the doctrines of the sacrifice of the mass, and of transubstantiation. The clergy came to be regarded as a priesthood. Salvation was made to depend upon works of penance and observance of fasts, Easter, and Lent. The doctrine of salvation through the sufferings of purgatory was substituted for the teaching of salvation through faith in Christ alone. Much was said of making the sign of the cross on the forehead on various occasions. Celibacy was enjoined on the priesthood, and special rewards in heaven were offered to others who refrained from marriage, which resulted in monasticism with its attendant corruptions. Image worship, the adoration of Mary, and supplication to the saints were among other God-dishonoring practices. That these teachings and practices constitute a departure from the primitive faith of the church every informed person will admit.

3. **A Rejection of the Rule of the Spirit of God**—Coincident with the departure from the faith was the rise of the man of sin. Indeed, that impious system of man-rule could have had no place except for a falling way from the teaching of the New Testament. The rule of the Holy Spirit in the church was lost sight of and instead a system was originated after the order of the civil government whereby men should usurp the place that rightfully belonged to God. This system of man-rule over the church is the second of the two phases of the apostasy. Both in the prediction of the "man of sin" in the second Thessalonian epistle and also in the symbolic prophecies of Revelation and Daniel it is represented as especially blaspheming God by usurping preogatives which are rightly his. Any system or power that excludes God from ruling over his own

church is especially displeasing to him, and might well be termed a "man of sin." The superstitions and abuses of the papacy are objectionable, but the Scriptures represent as especially so that human ecclesiasticism which usurps the divine prerogative of ruling the church of God, whether that ecclesiasticism be the papal system or another humanly constituted power.

The first steps in the growth of human ecclesiasticism probably appeared to those of that time as harmless innovations, and doubtless were not prompted by altogether evil motives. As men came to think Christ as being absent from his church they assumed the necessity of a humanly constituted government. When they lost sight of the important truth that the authority of the minister has its basis in his divine gifts, they began to recognize positional authority by making the authority to inhere in the position rather than in the man who filled it. The internal bond which unites Christians was disregarded in favor of an external union through human organization with all lines of authority leading to a single human head.

Such an organization was not effected suddenly but by very gradual stages. It was begun in the second century by the distinction of two classes in the ministry, presbyters and bishops, and the exaltation of the bishops over the elders. Concerning the rise of the organization George P. Fisher in his church history says, "The first three centuries witnessed the gradual growth of a hiera'rchical organization. . . . Country churches, formed under the auspices of a neighboring city church, were affiliated with it, and had for their pastor a presbyter of the parent church, subject to its bishop. Rural churches planted independently had each of them its own bishop. The country bishops, for a considerable time, kept up their independence; but most of these churches, before the beginning of the fourth century, were subordinated, like the class of rural churches first mentioned, to the neighboring city community. Thus each city bishop had a jurisdiction covering the town and the vicinity. . . .

"The bishop of the metropolis of each Roman province naturally acquired a precedence over other bishops within its limits. This was owing to the rank of the city, for, generally speaking, it was this consideration, more than any other, that determined the relative dignity of bishops. Another consideration was the fact that, not infrequently, from the provincial capital the gospel was planted

in many other places. The metropolitan arrangement was slow in being introduced in the West, because in that region the cities were comparatively few. The prerogatives of metropolitans were for a long time undefined. The theory of the equality and independence of bishops continued to be held, and on occasions was boldly asserted.

"The hierarchical tendency led to the elevation to a still higher position of the bishops of a few principal cities, which were, moreover, regarded as having been seats of the apostles in a peculiar sense. The designation "archbishop," first applied to all metropolitans, came at length to be a title of these metropolitans of the first rank. They were also, eventually, styled primates or patriarchs. They were, in this period, the bishops of Antioch, Alexandria, and, especially, Rome. . . . The dignity of the metropolitans was enhanced through synods, in which they were the presiding officers. . . .

"The conception of the visible church as one body, together with the exaggerated notion of Peter's precedence among the apostles, created a silent demand for a continuance of this primacy. Where should this be found, where could the central point of episcopal authority be discovered, save at the capital of the world, in the church which, as men were coming to believe, Peter had founded and of which he had been the first pastor? . . . The association of Peter and Paul with Rome made the church there an apostolic see of the loftiest rank. The exalted political importance of Rome, and its transcendent fame among cities, lent an unequalled dignity to its bishop" (*History of the Christian Church*, pp. 56, 57).

Though the primacy of the bishop of Rome was not undisputed until a later date, yet the foregoing quotation shows that the system of which it was logical culmination was developed before the end of the third century. These different gradations of the clergy—presbyters, bishops, metropolitans, patriarchs, and pope-constituted purely human organization and were for no other purpose than human government of the church. The authority of such officers was conferred by a superior, was determined by the position, and was not a result of endowment with spiritual gifts by the Holy Ghost. Such man-rule in the church excluded the rule of the Spirit of God.

The apostasy, then, consisted of a rejection of God's two witnesses (Rev. 11:3), the Word and the Spirit of God, as the rulers of God's people.

II. Sixteenth Century Reformation Partial

1. **A Partial Return to the Bible**—All Protestants look back to the sixteenth century as the time of reformation. Doubtless a great religious reformation took place at that time. Like other great social convulsions, it had been long in preparation. It was but one aspect of a broader movement in breaking away from medievalism. As a result of the invention of printing and the general revival of learning, the Scriptures began to be more widely circulated. Men of letters in western Europe began to read the Scriptures in the original Hebrew and Greek. A great aid to the work of reformation was the translation of the Bible into the vernacular of the countries of western Europe. But the real cause of the reformation was the working of the Spirit of God in connection with the study and preaching of the Word of God.

As one aspect of the apostasy consisted of a departure from the teaching of the Scriptures, so a return to the Scriptures resulted in a rejection of unscriptural doctrines and practices. The great Biblical truth of salvation by faith alone was given special prominence. This necessarily excluded the idea of salvation through purgatory, penance, the mediation of the saints, and other means of salvation by works that had been introduced. Some of the reformers understood and preached more Bible truth than did others. Zwingli had a clearer conception of the nature of the Lord's supper than did Luther. Some had clearer views of the mode and significance of baptism than did many others who accepted the teaching of the reformation. For lack of light the reformers continued to hold certain of the unscriptural doctrines of Romanism. The Reformation, though a great movement of the Spirit of God and far-reaching in its influence, was but a partial return to the teaching of the Scriptures. Many truths such as holiness of life, entire sanctification, divine healing, or unity of Christians which were lost sight of in the early centuries were not recovered by the reformers, and though held by some in a greater or less measure during the post-Reformation period, yet are still unfamiliar to a large proportion of Christians.

2. **Human Ecclesiasticism Continued**—While the departure from evangelical truth was partially overcome by the Reformation of the sixteenth century, yet that other aspect of the apostasy—man rule instead of the rule of the Spirit of God—was perpetuated. It is true the papacy was rejected by the reformers along with the

blasphemous claims of the pope's being the infallible vicar of Christ on earth. The spiritual domination of Rome over men's consciences was broken. But the reformers did not return to the primitive ideal of church organization and government. For hundreds of years men had thought of the church as an externally and humanly organized body. The reformers had no other conception of the church than that which was commonly accepted in their day. They did not originally intend separation from Rome, and only separated when the pope rejected them because of the gospel truth which they taught.

The world church idea gave place to the conception of national churches. The rulers of the various nations of Europe held supreme power except in the affairs of the church in which the pope was the highest authority. The national church demanded a national headship. The kings of the various Protestant countries, who had often been jealous of the ecclesiastical authority of the pope, were glad enough to assume the oversight of these national churches. In a considerable measure they came to exercise authority in the affairs of the church in their respective realms similar to that which had formerly belonged to the pope. And doubtless for lack of better understanding and in conformity with the ecclesiastical ideals of their times, the reformers approved the organization of these national churches headed by their civil rulers.

But these national churches were of the same essential nature as the Romish church as far as the principle of man-rule was concerned. This is true even though they introduced various modifications of forms and usages. They were imitations of the Church of Rome. When the beast religion of Rome was rejected, an image of the beast was set up to claim men's allegiance. See Revelation 14:14. The clergy of these national churches was self-perpetuating as was that of the Romish church and, as a body, possessed legislative, judicial, and administrative authority. In other words, they claimed "the power of the keys," which made their government the same in its essential nature as that of the Roman hierarchy.

3. **Protestant Divisions**—This erroneous conception brought over from Romanism of the nature of the church determined the nature of the early Protestant churches. It was also that which made a place for the organization of sects and the formation of creeds. With the idea that the church was an external union of men by human organization and that the enactment of its laws

and the administration of its government were purely human, founders of sects consistently assumed that they might properly formulate creeds and organize churches. The real cause of Protestant sects is to be found in this wrong conception of what constitutes the New Testament Church. It is often assumed that the divisions of which Protestantism has been so fruitful are the result of insurmountable limitations of human understanding on the one hand and of religious liberty on the other. But the apostolic church was one and it knew nothing of many humanly organized sects; yet the average Christian of that period was as limited in understanding as are men of today, and religious liberty among Christians existed prior to the apostasy as truly as it now exists. Historical facts show that it has not been religious liberty that has caused sects, but the lack of it. Those whose consciences led them to reject an existing creed, in seeking liberty from it and for failure to recognize the divinely given creed have formulated other creeds.

Human creeds not only have their origin in a wrong conception of the church, but are wrong in themselves. They are as productive of sects as sects are productive of them. A human creed, as held by some synod or council possessing authority, is a confession of faith, written out as a form of union by which persons and things are to be tested, approved, or disapproved. But such creeds are altogether without divine authority. No evidence exists that God ever approved of any such attempt by man to produce a rule of faith to govern God's people. In fact, those who formulate such creeds assume prerogatives which properly belong to God and reflect on his wisdom in giving the Scriptures. If a miniature Bible, or a condensed statement of religious truth, were needed, surely the Holy Spirit would have inspired such a one as Peter or Paul to write it. It would not have been left to uninspired men. The Scripture is the only statement ever given which is acceptable to all Christians as a rule of faith. Therefore, the creeds of men result in dividing rather than in uniting God's people. That creeds are not necessary to the union of Christians is evident from the fact that the early church was one without a human creed.

But it is said that creeds are plainer than the Bible. Surely God is able to state the truth more plainly than man; if he did not, he is less benevolent than is man. But God is perfectly wise and good; therefore, he has given exactly such a revelation of truth as man

needs and no human statement of the truth can be clearer than it. Again it is said that creeds are necessary to discipline. But discipline was exercised in the apostolic church before human creeds existed (2 Corinthians 5). But the supporters of creeds further urge that the teaching of their creed is the same as the Bible. If this be true then why not hold to the Scriptures alone, as the creed must be superfluous? Because the Scriptures are complete, any creed containing more, or less, or differing from the Scriptures must be imperfect and objectionable. But if a creed be exactly like the Scriptures, it is not a human creed at all, but the Bible itself.

Not only are the human creeds of Protestantism objectionable, but its denominationalism is also objectionable. Party names are condemned by the apostle Paul. "While one saith, I am of Paul; and another, I am of Apollos; are ye not carnal?" (I Cor. 3:4). For Christians today to denominate themselves Lutherans, Wesleyans, Calvinists, or call themselves by any other name than that which the mouth of the Lord has named is equally dishonoring to God. As a married lady honors her husband by bearing his name rather than that of another, so the church honors Christ by bearing his name whose wife she is, rather than another name. The Scriptures designate the true church as "the church of God" (Acts 20:28; 1 Cor. 1:2; 1 Tim. 3:5); also the "churches of Christ" (Rom. 16:16).

Divisions among Christians are not only objectionable because they are the product of an erroneous conception of the church, because of their human creeds, or because of their unscriptural denominations, but the division itself is wrong. This is evident from the words of Jesus, "Neither pray I for these alone, but for them the words of Jesus, "Neither pray I for these alone, but for them also which shall believe on me through their word; that they all may be one in us: that the world may believe that thou hast sent me" (John 17:20, 21). The will of Christ is here clearly expressed concerning Christian unity. The apostolic exhortations are in harmony with this prayer. "Now I beseech you brethren, . . . that there be no divisions among you; but that ye be perfectly joined together in the same mind and in the same judgment" (1 Cor. 1:10). "Endeavoring to keep the unity of the Spirit in the bond of peace" (Eph. 4:3). At its most spiritual period the early church was "of one heart and one soul." Because all Christians have the same spirit and have been divinely inducted into one body, unity is natural and division is unnatural to them.

Without doubt the many divisions among Christians are condemned, not only by the clear texts already quoted, but by the whole tenor of the New Testament. It is sometimes argued by those who defend sects that they are necessary to keep the church clean, by watching over each other; and also that they are valuable in that they accommodate all classes, so if one cannot conscientiously accept the doctrine of one sect, he can choose from the variety one whose teaching suits him. But those who thus reason show inconsistency by proceeding to persuade all to believe as they do, which is virtually striving to do away with that very means which they say is necessary to the purity of the church and advantageous in causing the largest number to accept Christianity. But no reasoning can furnish a defense for division in view of all that the Scriptures teach against it.

The unity of Christians is desirable for different reasons. First, divisions cause much strife, ill will, and animosity among those who profess to be Christians, which is evidently dishonoring to Christ. Second, in contending for the peculiar tenets of the different creeds they cause waste of time that might better be spent in disseminating the knowledge of salvation to those who know it not. Third, divisions among Christians cause a waste of millions of dollars, in multiplying church-buildings in communities where but one would otherwise be sufficient and in employing and paying several ministers to preach in these places where all might well listen to one, while this money might be used to send missionaries to the unevangelized, to circulate Bibles, or to feed and clothe the poor. Fourth, sects among Christians cause men to disbelieve in Christianity, as Jesus said oneness would cause the world to believe.

Because the existing divisions among Christians are directly contrary to the Bible and a great obstacle to the progress of the kingdom of Christ, all Christians should reject them. Because they are the result of a wrong idea of the church which originated in the apostasy, they should be rejected along with that erroneous theory. In this respect especially the reformation of the sixteenth century was incomplete. A complete restoration of Christianity to the primitive standard is needed.

III. A Complete Restoration

1. **Present Tendency to Unity**—Until the last generation organized sects and humanly constructed creeds have been supposed by

Christians to be perfectly proper and necessary. Division among Christians has been in good repute, and those who opposed it were regarded as dangerous to the welfare of Christianity. But in recent years a radical change in sentiment in this respect has been developing. The Christian world is now calling for unity among the Christians and deploring the existing divisions. Since the first World War this demand of unity has become more insistent. In discussing "recent tendencies" of the church, Williston Walker, Professor of Ecclesiastical History in Yale University, says in his new *History of the Christian Church* (March, 1918), "An outstanding feature of the existing religious situation in the United States and Canada is the decline of denominational rivalries, and the increase of cooperation in religious work. Voluntary associations for corporate Christian endeavor have developed remarkably. Conspicuous have been the Young Men's Christian Association, founded by George Williams (1821-1905) in London in 1844, and since spread throughout the world, and its sister society, the Young Women's Christian Association, organized in England in 1855, and both peculiarly successful in the United States. They have never been more useful than during the World War. . . .

"It is from missions that the strongest impulses to cooperation have come. A powerful force in this direction has been the Student Volunteer Missionary Movement, launched in 1886. The manifest impropriety of transferring denominational divisions to the mission-field has led to large association of similar groups of Christians into single bodies in China, India, and Japan. The essential unity of missionary endeavor was manifest at the World Missionary Conference, held in Edinburg in 1910, the influence of which has been potent. The evils of religious rivalries led, in the United States, to the establishment of the Home Missions Council in 1908, composed of representatives of societies engaged in similar work. This has been followed by the Foreign Missions Conference of North America, the council of Women for Home Missions, and the Federation of Women's Boards of Foreign Missions.

"These associations are voluntary. A federation of a more organic character was created, after considerable preliminary negotiation, by the formation in 1908 of the Federal Council of the Churches of Christ in America, composed of official delegates from its cooperating churches. Its functions are advisory, not legislative or judicial. Its objects are: To express the fellowship and

catholic unity of the Christian Church. To bring the Christian bodies of America into united service for Christ and the world. To encourage devotional fellowship and mutual counsel concerning the spiritual life and religious activities of the churches. To secure a larger combined influence for the churches of Christ in every relation of human life.' The Federal Council now has the support of thirty denominations, including such important bodies as the Northern Baptists, Congregationalists, Disciples, Lutherans (under the General Synod), Methodists, North and South, Presbyterians, North and South, Protestant Episcopalians, and the (Dutch and German) Reformed.

"A movement even more ambitious in its plans was inaugurated by the General Convention of the Protestant Episcopal Church in the United States in 1910, aiming at an ultimate world conference on faith and order, which may effect the reunion of Christendom. The object has received the support of a majority of American Protestant bodies to the extent of official representation in several preliminary conferences which have been held, and an American delegation has urged cooperation in Great Britain with success. The World War has delayed the progress in other countries that was hoped [for]" (pp. 588, 589).

The foregoing statement shows at least the prevalence of the disposition for cooperation and even for organic union among Christians. But evidently in view of what has been said of the divine constitution of the church, all efforts at bringing Christians together through union of humanly organized churches is unscriptural in itself, is not that unity for which Jesus prayed and to which the apostles exhorted. If the principle of human ecclesiasticism by which the sects originated is wrong, no further application of the principle in a super organization for the union of those sects can make the principle or the resulting organization scriptural. Yet these efforts at union of the sects indicate a present-day tendency, and devout Christians, though they may for a time mistakenly hope for unity through these erroneous methods, will when enlightened welcome the true Bible unity.[1]

2. **A Complete Reformation Predicted**—As Inspiration foretold the apostasy from the faith and the rise of the "man of sin," so likewise has it clearly predicted a complete restoration of the church. The subject is of sufficient importance to be worthy of a place in Scripture and prophecy. In fact, the prophecy of the

apostasy is in itself reason for expecting a prediction of recovery from that condition.

In Daniel and Revelation are given at least five distinct series of symbolic prophecy, each of which clearly points out an apostasy and a complete restoration. These are, first, the dragon and beast religion (Revelation 12, 13) and the final triumph of the church in the fall of Babylon (Revelation 14:1-9); second, the pure woman, her seclusion in the wilderness (Revelation 12), and the restoration represented by the 144,000 on Mount Zion (Revelation 14:1-6); third, the holy city trodden down and the slaying of the two witnesses (Revelation 11), God's Word and Spirit, and the reformation in the resurrection of the witnesses (Rev. 11:11-14); fourth, mystery Babylon the great and her harlot daughters (Revelation 17) and the restoration of the church represented by the announcement that Babylon is fallen and God's people are called out of her (Rev. 18:1-4); fifth, the fourth beast and the reign of the little horn (Daniel 7) and the later triumph of the kingdom of Christ (Dan. 7:26, 27; 2:34, 35). Space forbids a full exegesis of these texts, but the reader is referred to an able treatment of the subject, *The Last Reformation* by F. G. Smith, published by the Gospel Trumpet Company, Anderson, Indiana.[2]

In addition to the symbolic prophecies referred to, a plain prediction of the restoration of the church is given in the Old Testament as follows: "And it shall come to pass in that day, that the light shall not be clear, nor dark: but it shall be one day which shall be known to the Lord, not day, nor night: but it shall come to pass, that at evening time it shall be light" (Zech. 14:6, 7). Probably more impressive than anything we might say on this text is the following note from the Bible commentary of Thomas Scott, who wrote a century ago, before the present reformation movement began, which gives added value to his interpretation: " 'In that day,' under the Christian dispensation, for a long season, the light would neither be 'clear nor dark'; it would be greatly obscured by ignorance, heresy, superstition and idolatry; yet not wholly extinguished; and the state of the church would be much deformed by sin and calamities; yet some holiness and consolation would be found. This period could neither be called a clear bright day, cheered and illuminated by the shining of a summer's sun; nor would it be dark, as if the sun were set, or totally eclipsed: but it would contain a great mixture of truth and error, of holiness and

sin, of happiness and misery. Yet it would form one day, and never be interrupted by a night of total darkness. It would also be known unto the Lord, as to the degrees of its light, and the term of its continuance; and he would watch over it. But his people would hardly know whether to call it day or night, or a compound of both; yet at length, towards the evening of the world, 'the Sun of Righteousness' would break forth, and shine with unclouded splendor, dispelling the gloom of ignorance, heresy, idolatry, and superstition; and illuminating the church, and the earth, with knowledge, righteousness, peace, and consolation. (Marg. and Marg. Ref. r-u.-Notes, Isa. 9:6, 7, v. 7. 30:26. 60: 15: 22. Dan. 2:44, 45. 7: 8: 11:31-45. Hos. 3:4, 5. 6:1-3. Rev. 11:3-14. 19:11-21. 20:1-6). . . . No longer would they . . . be divided into a number of sects and parties: but they would be all of one mind, to worship that one 'name of the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost,' into which all Christians are baptized. This interpretation evidently accords with various other prophecies, both in the Old and New Testament, and with the history of the Christian church, which records the fulfillment of those prophecies."

But the idea of a complete restoration from the apostasy is not only found in Scripture prophecy; such a restoration is actually being effected by a present-day movement which is affecting the entire Christian world.

3. **A Return to the Scriptures**—As the apostasy rejected the Word and the Spirit of God, the rightful rulers of God's people, for human traditions and human ecclesiasticism, so two aspects of reformation are necessary, the rejection of human creeds and of human ecclesiasticism in favor of the Word and Spirit of God. Creeds have fallen into disfavor generally. Throughout the Christian world may be discerned a growing tendency to repudiate them. Rationalists substitute for creeds their own speculations, but devout Christians are returning to the Scriptures as the source of truth.

In theory the Reformation of the sixteenth century accepted the voice of the Scriptures instead of the voice of the Romish Church. In some degree the Scriptures actually were so accepted. But with the perpetuation of human ecclesiasticism, human creeds soon began to supplant the Scriptures as the rule of faith for Christians. As a result the truth has often been obscured, and such limitations have been placed upon Christians' faith that further light was

excluded by the creedal statements to which men were bound. The rejection of creeds and the exaltation of the Scriptures to their rightful place is resulting in bringing Christians to a standard of truth acceptable to all. Even though all may not see alike on every point immediately, yet with the elimination of creeds which are divisive in their nature, and the teaching of the truth of the Scriptures by Spirit-filled ministers, the natural result is for Christians to come into "the unity of the faith, and the knowledge of the Son of God."

4. **Rejection of Human Ecclesiasticism**—In view of what has been said of the nature of the church, it is evident that complete restoration of the church must include the rejection of human ecclesiasticism. Christian unity can never be attained by means of human organization. No union of the sects can effect it. A federation of the denominations would be merely to effect a world-church similar in nature, as far as human organization and government is concerned, to the Romish Church prior to the sixteenth century. A superorganization for the purpose of uniting the sects would be but another step in human ecclesiasticism. Moreover, since many true Christians are not members of any sect, such a federation of the sects would not include all true Christians as does the New Testament church. Also it would include many persons which are unconverted and consequently not members of the church of God.

Christian unity is inconsistent with human ecclesiasticism. To have the former, the latter must be rected. To reject this means for Christians to separate themselves from humanly organized churches, or to cease to be members. Such is the only attitude they can take that is consistent with the teaching of the Scriptures. Those who so separate themselves stand where salvation placed them and where the early church stood. When a company of them associate themselves for worship they constitute a true local church of God and any other Christian who likewise repudiates human ecclesiasticism will find no walls about that local church which in their nature exclude him. He can subscribe to their creed, which is the Scriptures. He can approve their church government, which is by the Holy Spirit.

Such a repudiation of human ecclesiasticism is actually taking place. The true church is being restored. This present reformation is not of men, but of God. A comparison of this movement with

former great movements of God shows its similarity as to method. In the early church when the proper time came for carrying the gospel to the Gentiles the Holy Ghost began to lead many persons to that undertaking. Stephen advocated it in Jerusalem. Philip preached to the Samaritans and was led supernaturally to the Ethiopian. Peter was directed to Cornelius, and certain unnamed Christians converted many Gentiles at Antioch. After all this the Holy Ghost sent forth Paul and Barnabas from Antioch to the conquest of the Gentile worlld. The Reformation of the sixteenth century was not accomplished by Luther, but by God through many. Wyclif and Huss received the divine inspiration for such a reformation long before Luther's time. In his own time Luther was but one among several reformers such as Zwingli, Calvin, and thousands whose names are unknown to history but whose hearts were stirred by the divine Spirit that wrought the Reformation.

At the present time there is a general movement of God among Christians for unity, as has been shown. As in the Lutheran Reformation there were many who had the impulse of reformation yet whose efforts were inconsistent with God's methods, so now there are those who see the need of reformation but attempt it by unscriptural methods. Yet the Spirit is actually gathering out a people from the humanly organized churches who are standing in the Bible church alone as did the primitive saints. If it be objected that they must necessarily constitute a sect themselves, let it be said in reply that they may as truly stand in the church of God only, apart from humanly organized sects, as did the early Christians. If they repudiate that human ecclesiasticism which is the fundamental cause of sect organizations, their association together does not constitute them a sect, but they are members of the true catholic church.

NOTES

[1]There have been many developments with Christendom since 1925, when this book was published. While organic unity is far from becoming a reality, there is much evidence of desire on the part of many for spiritual unity and cooperation. Let God be praised and may His people press on in prayer and effort. How beautifully Daniel S. Warner wrote:

"Brighter days are sweetly dawning,
O the glory looms in sight!
For the cloudy day is waning,
And the evening shall be light."

[2]Since 1925 other significant books, pamphlets, and articles have also been published by the Gospel Trumpet Co. which is now named Warner Press, Anderson, Indiana.

Chapter IV

ORDINANCES OF THE CHURCH

The New Testament ordinances are certain divinely appointed outward observances which are significant of spiritual truths of the gospel. The Old Testament religion was one great system of outward ceremonies. These have been abolished. The Christian religion also has its symbolic rites, fewer and simpler than those given by Moses, but more expressive. Romanists hold a much larger number of ordinances than do most Protestants. Their ordinances, or sacraments as they are called, are seven in number: ordination, confirmation, matrimony, extreme unction, penance, baptism, and the eucharist. The first five of these are not properly classed with the two latter as ordinances. The criteria of an ordinance have been well described by Harvey as, "1. An outward symbol divinely appointed to represent a great fact or truth of the gospel and the personal relation of the recipient to that fact or truth. 2. A divine requirement, making its obligation universal and perpetual." The first five sacraments of the Romish church as above named lack in whole or in part these criteria.

From an early date the ordinances were regarded as efficacious in actually conferring saving grace upon those who participated in them. This view has persisted to the present time, not only among Roman Catholics, but also in various Protestant communions. It is so represented in their statements of faith. But neither the Scriptures nor reason furnish any ground for supposing salvation may be obtained by any physical means. The common sense of mankind instinctively repudiates the idea that any magical efficacy exists in any outward rite that of itself can confer spiritual grace. But though the ordinances do not confer grace, yet they are evidently a *means* of grace. They are a means of grace in the same sense as is the preaching of the gospel. In the Christian ordinances God has set forth certain fundamental truths of religion. In the preaching of the gospel these truths are addressed to the ear, but in the ordinances they are represented to the eye in visible form by means of material symbols. Augustine well said, "A sacrament is the word of God made visible." As preaching is instrumental in salvation and in spiritual edification, so are the ordinances. Because they are divinely given representations of certain central truths of

Christianity no variation in the form of their observance from that represented in the Scriptures is permissible. Any such perversion of the forms of the ordinances is as objectionable as to change the words of the Scriptures. If we have no authority to change the words of Jesus, "Ye must be born again," certainly we have no right to change the form of baptism by which the new birth is symbolized.

Christians are under obligation to keep the ordinances because their observance is divinely enjoined. The commandments to keep them are not of the nature of moral precepts, but are positive precepts. Like all positive precepts, the divine requirement is the only ground of obligation. Moral duties are obligatory upon us because of the very nature of things, but not so are positive duties. Obedience to positive commandments requires a literal performance of the specific action enjoined in the spirit of true obedience. These are facts overlooked by antiordinance advocates. They also assume that all ordinances were abolished at the advent of the Holy Ghost. They suppose the ordinances represented as being done away in Colossians 2:14-22 are the Christian ordinances. But verse 16 shows clearly that these were the Old Testament ordinances which were concerned with meat, drink, holy days, new moons, and Sabbath-days. That the New Testament ordinances are not included is evident from the fact that they are constantly enjoined and observed after the death of Christ. The great Commission specifically commands baptism for all who believe among all nations (Matt. 28:19). Peter commanded Cornelius and his household to be baptized (Acts 10:47, 48). Ananias told Paul to "arise and be baptized" (Acts 22:16). The thousands converted at Pentecost were commanded by Peter to be baptized (Acts 2:38). Philip baptized the Samaritans (Acts 8:16) and also the Ethiopian (v. 38). Paul baptized certain Corinthians (1 Cor. 1:13-17). That these apostolic preachers were not in error concerning the observance of ordinances after Pentecost is certain from the fact that years after that time the Lord himself made known to Paul how the Lord's Supper is to be kept (1 Cor. 11:23).

I. Baptism

1. **The Form of Baptism**—In the light of the clear statements of the Scriptures on the subject, Christian baptism is here conceived of as immersion of a believer in water in token of his having previously been regenerated. That immersion is the true form of baptism may be shown by several distinct classes of proofs.

(1) *The Original Word.* We are dependent principally upon the meaning of the words employed by the Bible for its meaning, as is true of any other written record. But the term "baptize" is not a translation of the original word, but is that original term transferred and anglicized. To determine the meaning of the word in our English Bible we must therefore inquire concerning the sense of the Greek term, which is βαπτίζω (*baptizo*).

In the absence of evidence to the contrary it is proper to assume that the writers of the New Testament employed this term in its usual sense. What that was is known from the Greek classics and the Septuagint. The classics use the term βαπτίζω (*baptizo*) or its derivatives only to express the idea of immersion or entire covering of the person or thing of which it is used. βαπτίζω (*baptizo*) is defined "to dip in or under water" by Liddell and Scott, who are acknowledged lexical authorities in classical Greek. A leading classical editor, Dr. Anthon, says of *baptizo,* "The primary meaning of the word is to dip or immerse; and its secondary meanings, if it ever had any, all refer in some way or other to the same leading idea. Sprinkling, etc., are entirely out of the question." The most eminent authorities on the usage of the classics have ever agreed with the foregoing quotations. In the Septuagint version of the Old Testament, βαπτίζω (*baptizo*) is used two times: Naaman "*dipped* himself seven times in Jordan" (2 Kings 5:14); and "transgression overwhelms, or immerses, me" (Isa. 21:4). In neither of these texts is any ground furnished on which to question that immersion is the sense of βαπτίζω (*baptizo*).

With no evidence of any other sense of the term either in the classics or the Septuagint, the presumption is clear that the New Testament sense βαπίτζω (*baptizo*) is to immerse. That this is its sense is the testimony of the highest lexical authorities, as the following quotations show. Liddell and Scott: *Greek-English Lexicon*—"βαπτίζω, to dip in or under water." Thayer: *Greek-English Lexicon of the New Testament*—"βαπτίζω, properly, to dip repeatedly, to immerge, submerge." Green: *Greek-English Lexicon of the New Testament*—" βαπτίζω (*baptizo*), to dip, immerse." Greenfield: *Greek Lexicon of the New Testament*—" βαπτίζω (*baptizo*), to immerse, immerge, submerge, sink." Sophocles (a native Greek and professor of Harvard University): *Lexicon of the Greek of the Roman and Byzantine Periods* " βαπτίζω (*baptizo*), to dip, to immerse, to sink. There is no evidence that Luke and Paul and the other

writers of the New Testament put upon this verb meanings not recognized by the Greeks." Scores of other Greek lexicons might be quoted, many of them by men whose church creed supports sprinkling for baptism, but all of them agree with the foregoing quotations. In further support of this sense of the original word for "baptize" might be cited multitudes of other quotations by eminent scholars in etymological dictionaries, Bible dictionaries, encyclopedias, religious encyclopedias, and quotations from the Greek classics, the church fathers, different versions of the New Testament, noted commentators, great theologians, and historians of high authority. But these would constitute a volume in themselves and space forbids their citation here. All attempts to show that the word has another meaning than immersion are labored arguments from alleged exceptional usage and that in the New Testament the word is used out of its ordinary meaning. But historical, biblical, and philological proofs are against such reasoning. If the act of baptizing were by sprinkling, then we should expect that the inspired writers would have used that common Greek term ῥαίνω (*rhaino*) which means "sprinkle." If pouring were intended the ordinary word ἐκχέω (*ekcheo*), meaning "pour," should have been used. But neither of these words is ever used of Christian baptism. To say the Holy Spirit passed by these two words and employed a word which commonly meant "immerse" in the sense of sprinkle or pour is to reflect severely on his divine wisdom.

But the most certain proof of the meaning of the term Βαπτίζω *(baptizo)* is that found in the New Testament itself. The constructions in which the word occurs, the conditions under which the act was performed, what is said of the act itself, and figurative uses of the term all furnish evidence of immersion. These proofs will appear in what follows.

(2) *Prepositions Used With The Term.* Thirteen times Βαπτίζω *(baptizo),* with the term expressing the element, is used with the preposition ἐν *(en),* translated *in.* Examples are as follows: "And were all baptized of him *in* [ἐν *(en)*] the river of Jordan" (Mark 1:5); "I indeed baptize you *with* [ἐν (en), "in," ASV] water. . . . He shall baptize you *with* [ἐν (en),"in," ASV] the Holy Ghost" (Matt. 3:11). In common usage ἐν *(en)* has the sense of *in.* In the first of the foregoing quotations this translation is required by the context. In the last two the element used is the

question under consideration; therefore *with* may be used, but evidently *in* is a better rendering, for which reason it is given in the Revision, even though many of the revisers held sprinkling as Christian baptism.

Another preposition is used in connection with the Greek term for baptize in Mark 1:9: "Jesus came from Nazareth of Galilee, and was baptized of John *in* Jordan." Here the Greek preposition rendered "in" εἰς *(eis)* and is properly translated *into* as is done in the margin of the Revised Version. Εἰς *(eis)* signifies motion from without to within. Therefore the river of Jordan was not sprinkled or poured upon Jesus, but he was immersed in it.

(3) *Circumstances for baptizing.* It is frequently specifically stated in connection with the baptisms described in the New Testament that they occurred where there was a body of water sufficient for immersion, from which the inference is clear in connection with other evidence that the mode was immersion. John usually baptized in the Jordan, which was the largest river of Palestine, varying in width from seventy-five to one hundred and fifty feet and in depth from three to twelve feet. Again it is said that John baptized in Enon because there was "much water" there. But if he had been sprinkling people there would have been no need of his restricting his ministrations to the Jordan or Enon. He might have baptized at almost any point in Palestine. But "much water" was a reason for his baptizing in those particular places. The inference is clear that the much water was needed for immersion.

As Philip and the Ethiopian journeyed along the desert road leading from Jerusalem to Gaza they came to "a certain water," a body of water. It was large enough for both men to be able to go down into it. Three roads lead from Jerusalem to Gaza. The one through Hebron passes many streams and pools ample for immersion. Tradition holds that the great fountain of Bethzur, on another road, is the place of the eunuch's immersion. But a third road which passes through Beit Jibrin and is in some places desert is referred to by Dr. Robinson as probably the road in question and the water which he says he saw standing in the bottom of an adjacent wady is evidence that the immersion of the eunuch might well have taken place here. (See *Researches,* Vol. II., note 32.) The fact that Paul and Silas took the Philippian jailer out of his house to baptize him is also ground for believing that he was immersed. See Acts 16:32, 34.

It is said of Jesus when he was baptized that he came "up out of the water." Concerning the baptism of the Ethiopian by Philip it is stated that "they went down both into the water"; and when the baptism was accomplished it is said, "and when they were come up out of the water." In both these instances the baptism was performed while the subject was in the water, most naturally implying immersion. But it is objected that εἰς *(eis),* into and ἐκ *(ek),* out of, mean only *to* and *from,* that they do not imply an actual entering of the water, but only coming near it and withdrawing. But the same word is translated "into" in Matthew 25:46, "These shall go away into [εἰς *(eis)*] everlasting punishment: but the righteous into [εἰς *(eis)*] life eternal." If the objection be valid, this latter text gives no assurance of heaven to the righteous and no certainty of punishment to the wicked. Jesus was "baptized of John in [εἰς *(eis)* into] the Jordan." That εἰς *(eis)* and ἐκ *(ek)* when used in contrasted relation mean into and out of is affirmed by Winer, Meyer, Farrar, Olshausen, Bloomfield, and Campbell.

(4) *Other Scripture Proofs.* The figurative usage of the term "baptize" also furnishes evidence of the form of the literal baptism. Jesus said, "Are ye able . . . to be baptized with the baptism that I am baptized with?" (Matt. 20:22, 23). Also, "I have a baptism to be baptized with; and how am I straitened till it be accomplished!" (Luke 12:50). Here Christ's sufferings at the time of his betrayal and death are presented as being so overwhelmingly great as to be termed a baptism of suffering. It is the magnitude of the suffering that constituted it a baptism. This is clearly implied in the words of James and John. But if baptism consisted in merely a few drops of water sprinkled upon the subject, the figure would be wholly incongruous. There would be no proper comparison. But the idea of the body overwhelmed by water is a striking figure of the intense agony of Gethsemane and of Calvary which came upon him in overwhelming measure. In commenting on this expression Lange says, *"To be baptized":* An image of the depth and intensity of his suffering, like a baptism performed by immersion."

"All our fathers were under the cloud, and all passed through the sea; and were all baptized unto Moses in the cloud and in the sea" (1 Cor. 10:1, 2). Here the words "under" and "through" tell the exact position of the Israelites when they are said to have been baptized. As Israel was under the cloud and within the limits of the sea, which stood like a wall on either side, so baptism is a

passing under the water. Alford says: They "entered by the act of such immersion into a solemn covenant with God, and became his church under the law as given by Moses, God's servant—just as we Christians by our baptism are bound in solemn covenant with God. . . . The allegory is obviously not to be pressed minutely, for neither did they *enter* the cloud nor were they *wetted* by the waters of the sea; but they passed under both, as the baptized passes under the water."

Throughout the sixth chapter of Romans the apostle seeks to show that one who has been regenerated should not commit sin. He reasons thus: "Know ye not, that so many of us as were baptized into Jesus Christ were baptized into his death? Therefore we are buried with him by baptism into death; that like as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life" (v. 3, 4). Here the apostle states that the Christian cannot consistently sin, because he has died to the life of sin and has risen to a new life in Christ. As Christ died, was buried, and arose to a life of glory in heaven, so the Christian's separation from sin and regeneration in order to begin a new life of holiness is symbolized by the figurative burial and resurrection; therefore, the mode of baptism as Paul knew it was immersion, which is comparable both to Christ's death and resurrection to holiness. That the passage under consideration is descriptive of the mode of primitive baptism is admitted by leading commentators, including some of those whose denominations favor sprinkling. Conybeare and Howson say, "This passage cannot be understood unless it be understood that the primitive baptism was by immersion." Dr. Shaff says, "All commentators of note (except Stuart and Hodge) expressly admit, or take it for granted, that in this verse . . . the ancient prevailing mode of baptism by immersion and emersion is implied as giving additional force to the going down of the old man and the rising up of the new man."

(5) *The Testimony of History.* The writings of the early church fathers furnish conclusive evidence that baptism was by immersion in the early Christian centuries. The quotation of a few passages from very many left us by the early fathers is sufficient proof. Tertullian says of baptism, "A man is let down into the water, and while a few words are spoken is immersed." Hermas says, "This seal is water, into which men descend appointed to death, but

from which they ascend appointed to life." Clement says in *A Fragment from Eusebius,* Book IV, chapter 62, "A Christian is one who knows God, who believes in Christ, who possesses the grace of God, and who has been dipped in the sacred laver." Basil, A. D. 320, "Imitating the burial of Christ by the baptism; for the bodies of those immersed are, as it were, buried in the water."

All reliable church historians concur in stating that immersion was the primitive mode of baptism. In writing of the first century Fisher says in *History of the Christian Church,* p. 41: "The ordinary mode of baptism was by immersion." Mosheim, *Ecclesiastical History,* Vol. 1, Part II, Chapter 5: "In this [the first] century baptism was administered, in convenient places, without the public assemblies; and by immersing the candidates wholly in water." Neander, *Church History,* Vol. 1, Section III, Part IV: "In respect to the form of baptism, it was in conformity to the original institution and the original import of the symbol, performed by immersion, only in cases of the sick by sprinkling." Shaff, *History of the Apostolic Church,* Vol. II, Book IV: "Finally, as to the outward *mode* of administering this ordinance; immersion, and not sprinkling, was unquestionably the original, normal form." Colemen, *Christian Antiquities,* Chronological Index: *"Immersion* or *dipping.* In the primitive church this was undeniably the common mode of baptism. The utmost that can be said of sprinkling in that early period is, that it was, in case of necessity, permitted as an exception to the general rule." From the foregoing and many other fathers and church historians who might be cited, it is clear that sprinkling or pouring was not considered valid except in case of the impossibility of immersion. And G. P. Fisher states that there is no record of sprinkling or pouring for baptism until the second century, which was when ritualism began to become prominent.

An erroneous idea is all too prevalent that sprinkling supplanted immersion as baptism from the time sprinkling began to be practiced. The fact is that in the Eastern churches it has never supplanted immersion and in the West immersion was the *common mode of baptism until the thirteenth century.* Thomas Aquinas, who was a leading theological writer of the Church of Rome in the middle of that century, though defending sprinkling, said, "The symbol of Christ's burial is more expressively represented by immersion, and for that reason this mode of baptizing is *more*

common and commendable. . . . It is safer to baptize by immersion because *this is the more common use.*"

Hagenbach, *History of Doctrines,* Vol. 2: "From the thirteenth century, sprinkling came into more general use in the West. The Greek church, however, and the Church of Milano still retain the practice of immersion." Brenner (A Roman Catholic), *Historical Exhibition of the Administration of Baptism from Christ to Our Times:* "Thirteen hundred years was baptism generally and regularly an immersion of the person under the water, and only in extraordinary cases a sprinkling or pouring with water; the latter was, moreover, disputed as a mode of baptism, nay, even forbidden."

Romish theologians do not pretend to hold that sprinkling has the support of Scripture or that it was practiced by the early church, but regard it as valid solely on the ground that the church has the right to change ceremonies. The reformers continued the practice of sprinkling because it had become the common mode in their day. Yet Luther in his *De Sacramento Baptismi,* and Calvin in his *Institutes,* state that immersion was the original and scriptural mode. In the English church where immersion was the common mode prior to the Reformation, that mode was continued until 1549, when sprinkling began to be admitted for weak children. The law of the English church even to the present day recommends immersion as the regular mode, but the practice of it has become the exception. Though the Presbyterian Church teaches and practices affusion as baptism, yet Dr. Lightfoot, who presided over the Westminster Assembly when the Confession of Faith was formed, states that a change of one vote would have made immersion rather than pouring the rule of the Presbyterian Church (*Works,* Vol. 13, p. 299). So great was the number of those who favored immersion in the Westminster Assembly.

(6) *Practice of the Eastern Churches.* The Greek churches have always practiced immersion and do at the present time. They baptize infants, but always by the mode of immersion. In some of these churches Greek has always been the vernacular; therefore, they have been better qualified to define the meaning of the term and less liable to vary their practice from its true significance. Their rigid adherence to immersion and absolute repudiation of other forms is a strong argument for their practice being the biblical and primitive form. *The Russian Catechism* of the Greek Orthodox Church says on baptism: "This they hold to be a point

necessary, that no part of the child be undipped in water." In *Ancient Christianity,* Chapter XIX, Coleman says, "The Eastern Church has uniformly retained the form of immersion as indispensable to the validity of the ordinance, and they repeat the rite wherever they have received to their communion persons who have been baptized in another manner."

(7) *Evidence of the Baptisteries.* A class of material proofs of the early practice of immersion is that of the ancient baptisteries found in all parts of ancient Christendom. These are found in the churches themselves or in an adjacent building for the purpose. These date as early as the fourth century and as late as the thirteenth. In his work on *Baptism and Baptisteries,* Dr. Cote states that these are in diameter sometimes as much as twenty-five feet and in depth usually more than three feet. Doubtless these ancient baptisteries were made and used for immersion. Their size and proportions, also the steps by which one might descend into them, are clear evidences that they were not intended for sprinkling or pouring.

(8) *Objections to Immersion Considered.* The large amount of positive evidence that immersion is baptism is reason enough for passing by any objection to the validity of that mode. Those who practice other modes almost all admit that immersion is valid baptism. But they affirm that this is not the only valid mode. They allow that immersion was practiced by the apostolic church, but hold that it was not uniformly practiced. In support of their theory they attempt to show that the term **Βαπτίζω** *(baptizo)* may include sprinkling, as well as immersion. But they fail to prove this point and in view of the strong proofs to the contrary already stated we need not take space here for a detailed discussion of their reasoning.

A common objection to immersion is that the mode is not essential and that a little water applied to the believer is as good as if he were immersed in much. It is reasoned that even though primitive baptism was immersion, yet because it is but an outward rite the church has the right to change its form. But God has not granted to any man the liberty to change any divinely instituted ordinance. Because baptism is designed to symbolize certain gospel truths, to change its form so that it fails accurately to represent those truths is not less objectionable than to change the words of Scripture, which are another divinely chosen means of exhibiting

the truth. As strict adherence to the divine form was important to the proper construction of the Mosaic tabernacle (Heb. 8:5) because it was symbolic, so strict adherence to the divinely given form of baptism is important to Christian baptism.

Again it is objected that immersion is inconvenient and sometimes dangerous. But there is no reason for believing God makes man's convenience the first point of importance in establishing ordinances. Doubtless most, if not all, of the many ceremonial requirements of the Mosaic law were inconvenient for observance. This must have been true of the observance of the Sabbath by the busy farmer, or of the great loss of time in making three annual pilgrimages to Jerusalem to the great feasts, also of the many cleansings and sacrifices required. It may rather be reasoned that in giving a positive command to test man's obedience, God would especially choose one that would involve inconvenience to those who observe it. Yet opposers of immersion are liable to overstress the inconvenience of immersion. Those who believe in immersion do not usually find its observance a matter of great inconvenience. Likewise the danger of going into the water is often overestimated by objectors to immersion. No ill effects as to health are found to follow the practice of immersion by those who practice it, and it sometimes brings physical benefit. If one is dying or too sick to be immersed, he is under no obligation to be baptized. It is not a saving ordinance; therefore, if its observance is not possible it is not required.

But it is further objected that immersion would have been impossible in some of the baptisms described in the Scriptures. The objector affirms that for lack of time John the Baptist could never have immersed all the multitudes who came to be baptized by him, and that there was neither enough time nor sufficient water in Jerusalem to immerse the three thousand converts on the day of Pentecost. In reply let it be remarked first that if the same words are repeated in each instance, but little if any more time will be required for immersing a peson than is needed to sprinkle him. No figures are given as to the exact number baptized by John, for which reason the objector cannot properly say he could not have immersed all whom he is said to have baptized. As to the time necessary for the baptizing of the three thousand at Jerusalem, if all the ministers, the Twelve and the Seventy, whom Jesus had employed prior to that time were present, which is probable, there

would have been but thirty-seven persons for each minister to immerse. Even if only the Twelve were engaged in their baptizing the entire three thousand might easily have been baptized in a few hours' time.

It is certain that in Jerusalem there was no lack of water in which to immerse them, as has often been wrongly affirmed. Jerusalem has no large stream near it, but it has many large pools or artificial lakes, any one of which might have served for the immersion of the three thousand. The Bible mentions some of these pools by name. The dimensions of six of them are given in feet by Dr. Robinson as follows: "Pool of Bethesda 360x130x75 deep; Upper Gihon 316x200 to 218x18 deep at the ends; Lower Gihon 592x245 to 275x35 to 42 at the ends; Pool of Hezekiah 240x144; Pool of Siloam 53x18x19 deep; The Kings Pool 15x6" (*Researches,* Vol. 1, pp. 328-348). The gradually descending sides of these by successive platforms afford convenience for bathing or baptizing.

(9) *Sprinkling and Pouring.* As the Greek Βαπτίζω *(baptizo)* has been shown to signify immersion, so the common Greek terms signifying sprinkle and pour are never used of Christian baptism. Uncritical persons sometimes attempt to find support for sprinkling for baptism in certain texts in which the word "sprinkle" occurs. "So shall he sprinkle many nations." According to the preceding verse it is Christ who is to sprinkle those nations. But baptism is performed by the preachers. The text does not state that this is a baptism, nor is the sprinkling said to be with water. As the ceremonial cleansings under the Mosaic law were accomplished by the sprinkling of the sacrificial blood upon the altar of God, so Christ's blood is represented as sprinkled upon men's hearts in order to effect their cleansing from sin. See Hebrews 12:24; 10:22; 1 Peter 1:2. That the text under consideration refers to such sprinkling is evident from the preceding verse in which the sufferings of Jesus are described. Another text supposed to teach sprinkling as baptism is Ezekiel 36:25, 26. "Then will I sprinkle clean water upon you, and ye shall be clean; from all your filthiness, and from all your idols, shall I cleanse you. A new heart also will I give you." The sprinkling here, as in the preceding text, is divinely accomplished. It evidently is not a mere sprinkling of water, which could not cleanse from moral filthiness and idols. Only the blood of Christ can do this.

The argument for pouring as baptism is principally a reasoning from analogy. The Holy Spirit baptism is said to be by a pouring out of the Holy Spirit on the subject; therefore, it is reasoned that water baptism must be by a pouring out of water upon him who is baptized with water. The argument will not stand careful scrutiny. First, such a conclusion ignores all the positive proofs which have been set forth that baptism is immersion. Second, the supposed analogy does not exist. The Holy Spirit is a person, not a mere substance that may be measured and separated as water. Therefore the pouring out of him must be figurative. In the discussion concerning the baptism by the Holy Spirit in a former chapter, the nature of the outpouring of the Spirit was shown to be literally only an overwhelming measure of his working in and through the subject. It is properly represented as a baptism and an outpouring when contrasted with the operation of the Spirit through men in a lesser degree in pre-Christian times. As in immersion in water one is overwhelmed, so in the baptism by the Holy Spirit his operation and influence is in overwhelming measure.

(10) *Trine Immersion.* Trine, or threefold, immersion has been practiced not only by certain Protestant bodies, but has been widely practiced in the Eastern churches from an early date. Doubtless the two extra dips were added when the simple act of baptism began to be surrounded by that elaborate ritual which has been described as marking the early stages of the apostasy.

But the Scriptures do not require or favor trine immersion. Those who practice it depend for scriptural support upon the baptismal formula as found in the Great Commission. "Go ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost" (Matt. 28:19). They assume that three acitons are here commanded because baptism is to be in the names of the three persons. But the construction requires no such interpretation, neither are similar constructions elsewhere so interpreted. The simplest and best disproof of the trine immersionist's interpretation of this text is its comparison with parallel construction in other texts. "And I say unto you, That many shall come from the east and west, and shall sit down with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, in the kingdom of heaven" (Matt. 8:11). As three distinct persons are named in the baptismal formula, so three distinct persons are named in this text. As an act is enjoined in relation to each of these persons of the

divine Trinity, so is an act to be performed in relation to each of the patriarchs named. But if a separate immersion is required for each member of the Trinity, then there must be three sittings down in the kingdom of heaven, for the construction is the same. Those coming into the kingdom must sit down first with Abraham, arise and sit down with Isaac, and again arise and sit down a third time with Jacob. But all who are familiar with the use of language know no such repeated sitting and rising is taught. Likewise trine immersion is not taught in the baptismal formula.

"For whosoever shall be ashamed of me and of my words, of him shall the Son of man be ashamed, and he shall come in his own glory, and in the Father's and of the holy angels" (Luke 9:26). Here is an elliptical sentence of similar construction to the baptismal formula. If the latter teaches three dips, the former must teach three distinct comings of Christ—the first in his own glory, the second in the Father's glory, and the third in the glory of the angels. But we know it does not teach three comings of Christ, and therefore deny that the Commission enjoins trine immersion.

Further reason for rejecting trine immersion is that the apostles usually baptized only in the name of the Lord Jesus. "Be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ" (Acts 2:38). Others were baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus (Acts 10:48; 8:16; 19:5). With such a formula trine immersion is excluded. Also since baptism is symbolic of cleansing from sin and of a death to sin, burial, and resurrection to newness of life a plurality of immersions is incongruous with that symbolized. Had Jesus intended three immersions he would have so plainly stated it, as repetition in Old Testament ordinance is clearly specified. Because he has not commanded three dips we have no obligation to so practice and should not so practice baptism.

2. **Subjects of Baptism**—The question as to who are proper subjects for baptism, like the question concerning the mode, has been the subject of much controversy. The unscriptural practices which have led to differences concerning both of these points had their beginning in a departure from the faith in the early period of the great apostasy. The principal question for consideration under this heading is concerning the baptism of infants.

(1) *Only the Regenerated Eligible.* Throughout the New Testament, baptism is represented as being for those who have been already regenerated, or who have repented and believed, which are

the conditions for and which imply regeneration. It may be assumed that John the Baptist refused to baptize certain impenitent Pharisees and Sadducees (Matt. 3:8, 9). On the day of Pentecost, "Peter said unto them, Repent, and be baptized every one of you" (Acts 2:38). All those who were baptized were believers. "When they believed Philip preaching the things concerning the kingdom of God, and the name of Jesus Christ, they were baptized, both men and women." (Acts 8:12). Those who were baptized were old enough to understand and believe the gospel message—they were "men and women." They believed before they were baptized. "And many of the Corinthians hearing believed, and were baptized" (Acts 18:8). It was even after Paul and Cornelius had received the baptism of the Holy Ghost that they were baptized. Because repentance and faith are prerequisite to baptism, infants cannot be proper subjects for baptism.

(2) *Arguments for Infant Baptism Considered.* If elaborate argument is desirable in refuting infant baptism it certainly cannot be because it is supported by strong arguments, but only because of the tenacity with which it is held by its adherents. Its validity is maintained on a variety of grounds, some of which are contradictory to others. Romanists profess to hold it only on the authority of their church and deny that it has any biblical support. They charge Protestants who practice infant baptism with inconsistently following tradition in violation of the Protestant profession that the Scriptures are the proper rule of faith. Luther and other reformers admitted that infant baptism has no New Testament authority, yet they taught and practiced it. Many Protestants endeavor to find support for it in the Abrahamic covenant. Some endeavor to find Scripture precepts or example supporting it, while many careful thinkers deny that it can be so upheld, though they allow it on other grounds. If the practice has any sound scriptural basis, one would suppose all who practice it would have reached a fair measure of agreement as to that basis. The absence of such agreement is ground for the inference that no such scriptural basis exists. If God had intended infant baptism it is proper to suppose he would have given clear directions concerning it in the Bible.

Matthew 19:13-15 is supposed to support infant baptism. "Then were brought unto him little children, that he should put his hands on them, and pray: and the disciples rebuked them." But this text

states that these little children were brought, not to be baptized, but that he might lay his hands on them. There is no hint that Jesus baptized them. Were it true that he had been practicing infant baptism, surely on this occasion near the end of his ministry his disciples would have understood that little children might properly be brought to him for that purpose. The fact that they forbade the bringing of the infants to Jesus is proof that he had not practiced or ordained infant baptism. Another text used to support infant baptism is Acts 2:38, 39. "Repent, and be baptized everyone of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins, and ye shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost. For the promise is unto you and to your children." But although referring to children (v. 39) it is not baptism that is promised, but the "Holy Ghost." Therefore if "children" here means infants, then these may receive the Holy Spirit with all that is implied in receiving him. But "children" here is used in the sense merely of posterity. It is often so used in the Scriptures.

Much is made also (by those who favor infant baptism) of the baptism of households such as that of Lydia (Acts 16:15), of the jailer (vs. 32-34), and of Stephanas (1 Cor. 1:16). It has been assumed there were infants in these households and that they baptized on the faith of the parents. But there is no evidence there were children in any of these families. The members of Lydia's family are described as "brethren" (v. 40), and therefore were not infants. A mother of infant children would scarcely be engaged in business as was Lydia. The jailer's entire family was old enough to believe (v. 34), therefore were not infants. The members of the household of Stephanas are said to have "addicted themselves to the ministry of the saints" (1 Cor. 16:15), which implies that they were not infants. Surely these texts prove nothing as to infant baptism. Also the argument for baptism of the entire household on the faith of the parent proves too much, for then must not only infants be baptized but all older sons, daughters, and servants, whether willing or unwilling, saved or unsaved.

A favorite argument for infant baptism with many of its advocates is that the covenant of God with Abraham is perpetual; the new as well as the old dispensation is founded on it. As the natural descendants of Abraham with their natural offspring were included in that covenant and were entitled to circumcision, so the spiritual children of Abraham with their natural children are included in

the covenant and are entitled to baptism. This argument is unsound and faulty in that it fails properly to carry out the analogy. A more correct method of reasoning is that as the natural children of Abraham and their natural offsprings are in the covenant and therefore should be circumcised, so the spiritual children of Abraham (believers) and their *spiritual* children are included in the covenant and therefore are worthy of baptism. Thus stated the method of reasoning is correct and the conclusion is correct. But when so stated it no longer lends support to infant baptism, but is antagonistic to it. Also, no proof exists that baptism is a substitute for circumcision in any sense such as that the terms for admission to one are also the terms of admission to the other. This is clear from the fact that only males were circumcised and both males and females are baptized. There is no ground for the assumption that the faith of natural parents entitles children to baptism.

Professor Moses Stuart, himself a supporter of infant baptism, admits, "Commands or plain and certain examples in the New Testament relative to it I do not find."

(3) *Objections to Infant Baptism.* No proof can be produced that infant baptism was practiced prior to the third century. Tertullian, in his work *De Baptisma,* which was written near the year 200 A. D., strongly opposed the baptism of children, referring not merely to newborn infants but rather to children somewhat older. Certainly if he considered such were not to be baptized, the baptism of infants was not a common practice. In his *Commentary on Acts,* Meyer says, "Concerning infant baptism, there is no witness before Tertullian, and it did not become general until after the time of Augustine. In his *Church History,* Vol I, p. 401, Shaff says in speaking of the post-Nicene age, "Notwithstanding the general admission of infant baptism, the practice of it was by no means universal."

Proof has been previously given that the New Testament teaches that only believers are proper subjects of baptism. The Great Commission as given by Matthew requires that before one is baptized he is first to be taught or made a disciple, and Mark says, "He that believeth and is baptized." Infants cannot be scriptural subjects for baptism because they are incapable of being taught and also of believing.

A well-founded objection to infant baptism is that it is useless to

those who receive it. When it began to be practiced it was held to be the means of salvation. It is still so held by Romanists and some others. But the majority of evangelical Christians reject baptismal regeneration, and the idea that unbaptized infants are lost. It is sometimes argued that baptism places the child under the seal of the covenant and makes more probable his conversion later. But no evidence can be given that the conversion of those baptized in infancy is more probable than is the conversion of other children who have not been baptized in infancy. Not only is it a useless practice but it is also a positively harmful one. Those baptized in infancy too often trust in that baptism as a means of salvation and therefore fail to get awakened to the necessity of repenting of sin and believing on Christ for salvation. Another evil consequence is the large proportion of unconverted church members who are such because of baptism in infancy. A third evil of infant baptism is the perversion of the ordinance so it fails to symbolize the divine truth intended. The lesson it teaches is consequently lost.

3. **Purpose of Baptism**—The full benefit to be derived from the observance of baptism is not merely the spiritual blessing that results from obedience to a positive commandment of God. Like other ordinances, baptism has a purpose. Only as the true significance of baptism is understood by the subject can he realize the full value of the rite. It may be said that in some sense it is a salvation from sin. "Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins" (Acts 2:38). "Arise, and be baptized, and wash away thy sins" (22:16). But in what sense is baptism a cleansing from sin? Evidently it is not a real cleansing from sin, for various reasons.

First, it is clear from the Scriptures that salvation is, in its nature, not dependent upon any outward rite. Our sins are not washed away by the baptismal waters, but by the blood of Christ (Rev. 1:5; 7:14). That blood is applied on the conditions of repentance and faith (John 3:18; Acts 13:39; 1 John 5:1). Also, it would be objectionable that one's salvation should be made dependent upon the act of another. If one should truly repent and believe on Christ for pardon, but no qualified person was available to immerse him, who will dare to say that if such an one should die unbaptized he would be lost? The penitent thief on the cross had no opportunity for baptism, but Jesus assured him of salvation

nevertheless. Again, baptism is not a means to nor a prerequisite to salvation. The Apostle Paul was converted and even received his call to preach on the Damascus road (Acts 26:13-18). Three days later at the hands of Ananias he received the Holy Ghost, "whom the world cannot receive." It was after all this that Ananias urged his baptism to wash away his sins. But his sins had certainly been washed away prior to that time. Therefore, the washing away of sin here intended can be only a ceremonial cleansing. Another example of conversion and of the reception of the Holy Spirit prior to baptism is that of Cornelius. He was devout; he feared God, prayed always, gave much alms, and was a "just man." Later he received the Holy Ghost. Still later Peter baptized him.

The outward washing by water in baptism is a symbolic washing from the defilement of sin. It is salvation in figure as were some of the Old Testament ordinances. After speaking of the salvation of Noah in the Ark from the flood, which is represented as a figure of our salvation from sin, the Apostle Peter says, "The like figure whereunto even baptism doth also now save us" (1 Pet. 3:21). Here baptism is specifically represented as a figurative salvation and not the real cleansing from sin.

Baptism has still further significance. It represents the death and resurrection of Christ as the procuring cause of salvation, and is symbolic of the accomplishment of that purpose in the person who is baptized (Rom 6:4). It points to both Christ and the believer. It is fitting that the atonement of Christ should be indicated in this rite as the means of salvation. The immersion and emersion from the water of the subject is his testimony to the world that he has died to sin and the world, and that he has been resurrected to a new life of holiness in Christ. But, as is brought out by the Apostle Paul, the rising from the watery grave of baptism is a public testimony of belief in the great truth of the resurrection of the body.

Only as immersion is practiced, however, are these great truths represented. Those who pervert the mode lose in a great measure the significance and benefit of baptism, however sincere they may be in its observance. Not only because its practice is commanded, but especially because of its significance, its proper observance is important and should not be neglected.

4. **The Essentials of Baptism**—A few things are necessary to the validity of baptism while many others often connected with the

rite are not necessary. A running stream or natural body of water in which to baptize is not essential. Doubtless the baptisms in Jerusalem were in artificial pools, as that city possesses no natural stream or pools sufficient for baptizing. Immersion in a baptistery in the house of worship is valid baptism. The position of the body is not important. The action in baptizing may be either forward or backward. It is usually performed backward, as in a burial, by single immersionists. The administrator of baptism need not be an ordained minister. However, in the nature of things and also according to the examples of Scripture it is properly the work of ministers when they are available. The particular formula in the Commission need not be repeated *verbatim* in baptizing. The New Testament baptisms were often performed in the name of the Lord Jesus. Neither is the validity of baptism dependent upon the extent of the subject's knowledge of the significance of baptism, or other divine truth. Nor is one's baptism invalid because of a lack of understanding and support of correct Scripture doctrine in all respects on the part of the administrator.

The essentials are: (1) That the subject be truly regenerated; (2) That he be entirely immersed in the water; (3) That he be immersed in the water in the name of the Trinity, or of Christ, and emersed therefrom; (4) That the subject believe the administrator to be a Christian. The subject can have no further responsibility than this concerning the administrator. Only as baptism meets these requirements is it valid.

II. The Lord's Supper

The Lord's Supper is properly so designated (1 Cor. 11:20) because it was instituted by him and is in some sense a partaking of him. It is also called the communion supper (1 Cor. 10:16) because of the common participation of Christians in it, and it is called the eucharist because of the giving of thanks (1 Cor. 11:24). The Lord's Supper is here conceived to be the eating and drinking by Christians, when assembled for the purpose, of the broken bread and poured out wine which are symbols of the broken body and shed blood of Christ, through which we have spiritual life.

1. **A Christian Ordinance**—The institution of the Lord's Supper is described at length in four passages. (Matt. 26:25-30; Mark 14:22-26; Luke 22: 19, 20; 1 Cor. 11:23-29). The fullest statement concerning its institution and observance is that by the Apostle Paul. While eating the last Passover with his disciples, Jesus took

bread from the table, gave thanks to God, and parting it gave it to his disciples, telling them to eat it. Then he took wine and distributed it among them. These were to be understood as symbols of his body and blood. This rite was to be observed in commemoration of his death.

That Jesus intended in that first communion supper to establish a rite for universal and perpetual observance is shown by his words, "This do in remembrance of me" (Luke 22:19). The very fact that it was to be observed as a memorial is proof that it was to continue to be celebrated after his death. Its perpetual observance as an ordinance is clearly enjoined by the Apostle Paul, who wrote the 1 Corinthian epistle almost thirty years after Jesus' death. "For as often as ye eat this bread, and drink this cup, ye do show the Lord's death till he come" (1 Cor. 11:26). Yet further evidence that the Lord's Supper is an ordinance is found in the fact that the apostolic churches did observe it (Acts 20:7; 1 Cor. 10:16; 11:20). Also, in all subsequent ages among almost all Christians it has been regarded as an ordinance obligatory on all Christians.

2. *Method of Observance*—The essentials of the Supper are six: blessing, breaking, pouring, giving, eating, and drinking. The omission of any of these would deprive the rite of its true character and significance. Both the synoptists and Paul gave very special mention of the blessing, or, as Luke and Paul say, the giving of thanks. There is no scriptural ground for the common assumption that the blessing was of the bread. God was blessed, or thanked, for the elements of the Supper. That this blessing was a giving of thanks is stated in Luke 22:19 and in 1 Corinthians 11:24. In the records of Matthew and Mark it is said of the wine that Jesus gave thanks. Nothing is said of blessing it. And according to many respectable manuscripts, Matthew and Mark also state that Jesus gave thanks for the bread. On the account by Matthew, Adam Clarke says, "But what was it that our Lord blessed? Not the *bread,* though many think the contrary, being deceived by the word *it,* which is improperly supplied in our Version. In all the four places referred to above, whether the word 'blessed' or 'gave thanks' is used, it refers not to the *bread,* but to *God,* the dispenser of every good." Because this blessing affords no evidence that the elements were blessed by Christ or by men in the communion supper, there is less ground on which to rest the unscriptural theories of the nature of the Supper such as transubstantiation and consubstantiation.

The breaking of the bread and pouring out of the wine are necessary to signify the breaking of his body and shedding of his blood in atonement. But also it is necessary that the bread be parted that it may be distributed to and eaten by the participants. Because of the nature of the flat, Oriental loaves the bread was broken, not cut. The essential thing is that the bread be parted for distribution, whether it be broken or cut. Jesus' body was cut rather than broken by the nails and the spear. The eating and drinking are essential in that they signify the relation of the individual to the atonement of Christ. The communion is in both kinds—the bread and the wine. The Romanists in withholding the cup from the laity pervert the ordinance and deny to them the benefit of this aspect of the rite.

The elements Jesus used were unleavened bread and the juice of the grape. That the bread was unleavened is certain from the fact that at the time of the Passover no leaven was permitted to be found in the houses of Israelites. Whether the absence of leaven in the communion bread, which is symbolic, not only of the sinless questionable. But inasmuch as leaven is commonly a type of sin in Scripture symbols, it is appropriate that it should not be used in the commion bread, which is symbolic, not only of the sinless Christ, but also of his holy church. Most careful students of the subject affirm that the common wine of Palestine in Jesus' time, as at present, contained a small per cent of alcohol. Though it cannot be proved that Jesus did not use such, yet doubtless fermentation of the communion wine is not necessary to the validity of the ordinances, and because of the prevalence of the sin of drunkenness in modern times and strong sentiment against intoxicants, unfermented grape juice is preferable.

It is stated that Jesus and his disciples sang a hymn after the supper (Matt. 26:30), but that hymn was probably the last half of the great *hallel* (Psa. 113-118, according to Edersheim and others), and was connected with the Passover rather than the Lord's Supper. While the singing of an appropriate hymn may form a proper closing for the Lord's Supper, yet it is not an essential of it. Though it is called a supper and was instituted by Jesus in the evening, yet there is nothing in the nature of it, and no principle or precept of Scripture, that limits its observance to a particular period of the day. Concerning the frequency of the celebration of the Supper the Scriptures are silent. A daily (Acts 2:46) and a

weekly (Acts 20:7) observance are assumed to have been practiced, but there is no certainty in either instance that this ordinance is referred to, and if so there would be no ground for assming that such practices are precedents for us to follow. It should not be observed so frequently that it becomes common and unimpressive; neither should it be observed so seldom that its value is missed. Fixed times for its observance are important to avoid its neglect.

It should be celebrated in the assembled church, not by the individual in solitude. Only in the company of others can its observance "show forth" the truth intended. The proper administrators of this ordinance are the divinely appointed officers of the church, the elders and deacons. In the absence of these, however, other devout members of a congregation may be appointed to administer it.

All who are regenerated and therefore members of the church are eligible to partake of the communion supper. Those who walk disorderly are unworthy to partake of it (1 Cor. 11:19), because they are not saved. A common view is that only baptized persons are fit to participate in the communion feast. Those religious bodies who hold baptismal regeneration or who make baptism the mode of entrance to the church consistently conform to that view. But if regeneration precedes baptism and makes one a member of God's church, then in the nature of the case every regenerated person is worthy to partake of the emblems of the broken body and shed blood of Christ. "Closed communion" in the modern sense of the term, which excludes all who are not members of and do not accept the creed of a particular denomination is without scriptural support. On the other hand, those should not participate in the communion supper who have not been converted, or who have blackslidden and openly live a disorderly life.

3. **Purpose of the Supper**—The Lord's Supper is, like baptism, an outward act symbolic of spiritual experience. As sins cannot be cleansed away by literal water in baptism, so the soul cannot be fed in any literal sense with material bread and wine. The purpose of the rite is to represent to the participant and also to others a great and fundamental truth of religion and the participant's relation to that truth that they will be vividly impressed with its reality. Like baptism, the observance of this ordinance has value as does the preaching of the Word of God. As the reading of the Scriptures or hearing them preached edifies the soul, so does the

observance of the ordinance edify, and even in a greater measure. Of what then is this ordinance symbolic?

(1) The broken bread and the wine poured forth are symbols of the atoning sufferings and death of Christ. "As often as ye eat this bread, and drink this cup, ye do show the Lord's death till he come." In themselves, apart from their use, they represent the fact of Christ's atonement. (2) The eating of the bread and drinking of the wine by the participant is symbolic of the personal trust in the atonement of Christ, for his individual salvation and for the sustenance of his spiritual life, the continuation of his acceptance by God. The partaking of the elements symbolizes, not only the fact of our appropriation of the atonement of Christ, but also the method of that appropriation, which is by union with Christ himself. (3) It is a commemoration of the death and sufferings of Christ. "This do in remembrance of me." When a devout person looks upon the symbolic broken body and shed blood of his Savior and in partaking of them is forcibly reminded that his Savior's sufferings were for him, his love and gratitude to Christ are increased. This ordinance is a monument of a great event. As the Passover of the Mosaic dispensation was predictive of the great truth of sacrificial atonement, so the Lord's Supper is commemorative of the same truth. (4) It is also representative of the unity of Christians in the one body, the church. "For we being many are one bread, and one body; for we are all partakers of that one bread" (1 Cor. 10:17). As the many fractions of that one loaf are eaten by many, by which they become united in the eating of the one loaf, so because all Christians have partaken of the one Christ and he dwells in all are they all one body. Whatever other benefits may be derived from the observance of this holy rite, at least these truths are symbolized by it.

4. **Erroneous Views**—This rite has been for many centuries the subject of much error and of fierce controversy. Both Romanists and Protestants have greatly perverted the truth concerning it. The chief point of error is relative to the manner in which Christ is present in the bread and wine, or the meaning of the words, "This is my body. . . . This is my blood." Here Romanism has erred and here was the point of controversy between the reformers, Luther and Zwingli.

The Romish view is that of transubstantiation. The theory that the bread and wine of the communion supper become, through

priestly consecration, the real body and blood of Christ was first set forth in orderly statement in the ninth century, but not until the Fourth Lateran Council, 1215, did it become a dogma of the Roman Catholic Church. As it was later set forth by the Council of Trent, the doctrine includes five main points: (1) When the priest speaks the words of consecration over the elements they instantly cease to be bread and wine except in appearance—color, form and taste—and in substance are entirely changed into the real body and blood of Christ just as they existed upon the cross. (2) Because the body necessarily contains the spirit, not only the real body and blood but also the soul and divinity of Christ are contained in the consecrated elements. (3) Because these material elements contain the whole Christ, body, soul, and divinity, therefore, in the mass the priest offers a proper sacrifice in atonement for sin, which is equally effectual with the death of Christ on the cross in propitiation for sin and in securing divine favor. (4) The elements which have thus become truly Christ are to be worshiped and adored as is God. (5) Because the entire Christ is in each particle of the elements, the receiving of the bread is the receiving of the entire Christ, body, blood, and soul; and because there is danger of the spilling of the blood in the cup if served to the laity, it is to be reserved for the clergy only.

These five points all rest on the theory of transubstantiation. The disproof of it is the disproof of all the other points. For scriptural support the doctrine depends chiefly upon two texts. (1) "Except ye eat the flesh of the Son of man, and drink his blood, ye have no life in you" (John 6:53). But these words have no reference to the Lord's Supper, as is evident from their having been spoken long before it was instituted. (2) "This is my body"; "This is my blood" (Matt. 26:26, 28). If these words are to be understood literally, then the doctrine of transubstantiation is scriptural. But no proof exists that they are to be so interpreted. A common meaning of the verb *to be* is *to signify,* or *to represent.* This is true in all language and especially in the Bible. Paul said, "That rock *was* [represented] Christ." "The seven candlesticks are [symbolize] the seven churches." "This is [signifies] the Lord's passover." So likewise, "This is [represents] my body," or "this is [a symbol of] my blood." Such an interpretation is required because a literal one is excluded by the fact that when these words were spoken Jesus was sitting with the disciples at the table in his

body. It had been absurd for the disciples to think that the bread and wine he had given to them were his body and blood. Also, after its consecration and when eaten, the bread is still called bread by Paul. "We are all *partakers* of that one *bread*" (1 Cor. 10:17). "As often as ye *eat* this *bread*" (11:26). The theory of transubstantiation of the elements contradicts the evidence of the senses and any scientific test that can be applied. If we cannot trust our senses in distinguishing the nature of the elements, how can we trust our senses of sight and hearing in reading or hearing the words of Christ concerning the Supper? The theory is also objectionable in that it denies the completeness of Christ's past atonement by offering another. This is unscriptural presumption. The theory has no support either in the Scripture or in reason, but only in the authority of the Romish Church.

According to the Lutheran and High Church view, the bread and wine do not cease to be bread and wine at their consecration, but the communicant in partaking of them also partakes of the real and corporeal body and blood of Christ, which, in an inexplainable manner, is *in* and *with* the consecrated bread and wine. This view is known as consubstantiation. It is objectionable because it rests upon the same misinterpretation of Scripture as does the Romish doctrine of transubstantiation. According to Luther, the theory of consubstantiation requires the essential omnipresence of the body of Christ. But if this be true, as Dr. A. H. Strong has well said, "We partake of it at every meal, as really as at the Lord's Supper."

A third erroneous theory of the sense in which Christ is in the Supper is that advanced by Calvin and known as the mystical presence theory. He denied any corporeal presence of the body and blood of Christ in the Supper, but held that his human nature was dynamically present, and that this mystical presence feeds the soul of the communicant. Even though this view denies the corporeal presence of Christ in the elements, yet it rests on the same erroneous literal interpretation of the words, "This is my body." If these words mean literally it *is* his body, then they do not mean it represents his body. But flesh and blood do not exist in any mystical sense. As already shown, the true sense of the words is that the bread and wine represented his body and blood. There is no more a mystical partaking of Christ in the Supper than there is a mystical cleansing of sin in water baptism. As baptism is

representative of an inward cleansing, so the eating of the elements of the Lord's Supper is representative of our salvation through appropriating by faith the benefits of Christ's atonement.

III. Foot Washing

While the washing of one another's feet by Christians, in conformity to the example and injunction of Jesus (John 13:2-17), has not been so generally regarded as an ordinance as have baptism and the Lord's Supper, yet it has been practiced in obedience to that commandment, as a rite, by many throughout the past Christian centuries as well as at the present time. As the mode and purpose of baptism and the Lord's Supper were much perverted at an early date, so was also the practice of foot washing among Christians. Yet the practice, in obedience to Jesus' commandment, has ever persisted among Christians.

Tertullian, who wrote near the close of the second century, mentions foot washing as a common practice of the Christians of his time in obedience to the commandment of Jesus. "The post-Apostolic age understood the example thus given [by Jesus] to be mandatory. Augustine *(Epist. ad Januarium)* testifies that it was followed on Maundy Thursday by the Church of his day" (Shaff-Herzog, *Encyclopedia of Religious Knowledge*). Bernard of Clairvaux recommended foot washing and regarded it as being a sacrament. Though the practice has been greatly perverted, yet it is still observed both in the Greek Orthodox and Roman Catholic Churches each year on the Thursday preceding Easter, by the higher clergy or other persons of rank. At that time it is practiced by the patriarch of Constantinople, the pope, a number of bishops, monastic superiors, and (until recent years) the emperors of Russia and Austria, and the kings of Spain, Portugal, and Bavaria. Each of these washed the feet of twelve priests or twelve old men invited for the purpose. It was the evident insincerity in the practice on the part of these dignitaries that led Luther to oppose the practice as "that hypocritical foot washing, in which one stoops to wash the feet of his inferior, but expects still more humility in return." Doubtless such opposition from one so prominent in the early molding of Protestant practices and beliefs has had a great influence in excluding the practice among Protestants.

Yet not a few Protestant bodies have practiced it. M'Clintock and Strong say, "The Church of England at first carried out the letter of the command." Until the reign of James II the English

kings washed the feet of the poor on Maundy Thursday. The practice of foot washing in the Church of England has long since fallen into disuse. The Anabaptists were very strongly in favor of foot washing, regarding it as an ordinance on the ground of John 13:14 and 1 Timothy 5:10. It was also observed by the early Moravians in connection with their love feasts. It is practiced as an ordinance at present by the Mennonites, Church of the Brethren, Winebrennarians, many of the smaller Baptist bodies, and the Church of God (Anderson, Indiana). Therefore, including the older communions the majority of Christians are members of churches which practice foot washing in some manner.

1. **The Injunction of Jesus**—The leading text of Scripture bearing on foot washing among Christians is that found in John 13:2-17. The washing of the disciples' feet by Jesus took place on the occasion of the last Passover supper. The expression "and supper being ended" (v. 2) may better be understood to mean the preparation of the supper being ended, for by comparison of what follows in this chapter with the accounts of the Synoptic Gospels the foot washing evidently preceded the eating of the supper. Probably there was strife among the disciples as to who should have the places of honor at the table when they began to take their places, which may have been the immediate cause for Jesus' doing what he did. "He riseth from supper, and laid aside his garments; and took a towel, and girded himself. After that he poureth water into a basin, and began to wash the disciples' feet, and to wipe them with the towel where-with he was girded. Then cometh he to Simon Peter: and Peter saith unto him, Lord, dost thou wash my feet? Jesus answered and said unto him, What I do thou knowest not now; but thou shalt know hereafter. Peter saith unto him, Thou shalt never wash my feet. Jesus answered him, If I wash thee not, thou hast no part with me. Simon Peter saith unto him, Lord, not my feet only, but also my hands and my head. Jesus saith to him, He that is washed needeth not save to wash his feet, but is clean every whit: and ye are clean, but not all. For he knew who should betray him; therefore said he, Ye are not all clean. So after he had washed their feet, and had taken his garments, and was set down again, he said unto them, Know ye what I have done to you? Ye call me Master and Lord: and ye say well; for so I am. If I then, your Lord and Master, have washed your feet; ye also ought to wash one another's feet. For I have given you an example, that

ye should do as I have done to you. Verily, verily, I say unto you, The servant is not greater than his Lord; neither he that is sent greater than he that sent him. If ye know these things, happy are ye if ye do them" (John 13:4-17).

The act of Jesus was a literal washing of their feet. He then said, "Know ye what I have done to you?" implying that they did not and therefore going ahead to explain. He told them that as he had washed their feet so they "*ought* to wash one another's feet. For I have given you an example, that ye *should* do as I have done to you." The words "ought" and "should" imply obligation or duty. That obligation was to wash the feet of one another as he had washed theirs. He washed theirs literally; therefore their duty was literally to wash the feet of one another. An "example" is for imitation, and to imitate his example is literally to wash the feet of one's brother.

Much is made of discriminating between foot washing as a Christian practice and as an ordinance. That the practice is commanded is clear and Christians are obligated to do it. Probably the question of whether it is to be termed an ordinance is not so important as it has sometimes been assumed to be by those who do not practice it. It is noticeable that those who deny that it is an ordinance usually fail to observe it as a practice and therefore fail to keep a plain commandment. But reasons exist for believing it is an ordinance. It has the criteria of an ordinance, as given by Dr. Harvey in a quotation at the beginning of this chapter. From what may be know from baptism and the Lord's Supper, the marks of an ordinance are: (1) That it be instituted by divine authority; (2) That it be an outward act practiced by Christ; (3) That it be divinely enjoined to be practiced by all Christians perpetually; (4) That it represent an important religious truth and the Christian's relation thereto. As surely as these marks are to be found in baptism or the Lord's Supper, they are to be found in the institution of foot washing.

There can be no doubt that Jesus instituted foot washing as a Christian practice. Jesus himself practiced it in giving an example to his disciples. It is symbolic of the great religious truth that Christians humbly serve one another through love. He also clearly commanded his disciples to wash one another's feet. And what he commanded the first disciples to observe is commanded to all Christians, for he told them to teach others "to observe all things,

whatsoever I have commanded you" (Matt. 28:20). In comparison neither baptism nor the Lord's Supper has surer marks of being an ordinance than does foot washing. Jesus himself states that he had washed their feet; his act is described in greater detail than is his baptism or the institution of the Supper; he said it was an example that they should follow; he said they ought to do it; and finally he told them they would be happy if they did do it. No such promise as this is connected with either of the other ordinances.

The teaching concerning foot washing is so clear, and the injunction to Christians to observe it so definite, that many devout Christians feel obligated to practice it even though their denomination ignores it. Probably the omission of it by so many Protestant bodies is partly due to the influence of Luther, who rejected the literal observance of it because of his objection to the hypocritical practice of the pope in pretending to observe it. The omission of the observance of foot washing by Protestants has led to many objections on their part of the obligation to observe it. Though these objections are often unworthy of those who make them, yet a consideration of the principal ones is proper at this point.

2. **Objections to Foot Washing Considered**—Doubtless the most common objection to foot washing as a Christian practice is that the washing of feet was an ancient Oriental custom resulting from the wearing of sandals. Evidently there is some similarity between that washing of feet for cleanliness and this washing which Jesus performed and commanded. Also the common Oriental bathing with which Jesus was familiar was similar to Christian baptism, and the eating of bread and drinking of wine at ordinary meals among the Jews of Jesus' time was similar to the eating of bread and drinking of wine at the Lord's Supper. But in no case was the Christian rite identical with the common custom. If foot washing is to be rejected on the ground of the Oriental custom, then consistency requires that baptism and the Lord's Supper be rejected also on similar grounds. In reality the old custom of washing feet for cleanliness has no more to do with that feet washing Jesus practiced and commanded in the upper room than the common custom of bathing or eating supper has to do with the other ordinances.

That this which Jesus did was not the common custom is certain from an examination of that custom. Examples of the custom are

found in Genesis 18:4; 19:2; 24:32; 43:24; Judges 19:21; 2 Samuel 11:8. In all of these instances the washing was for cleanliness and comfort and each person washed his own feet. In but one instance (1 Sam. 25:40, 41) is there mention of one washing the feet of another person. Abigail offered to wash the feet of the servants of David. It was an expression of deep humility. Doubtless in some instances the rich and powerful had servants wash their feet as they did also their hands and heads. Peter evidently supposed at first that Jesus was following this custom in washing his disciples' feet and objected on the ground that it was not proper that the master should wash the servant's feet. When Jesus insisted on washing his feet, Peter, still assuming that Jesus was practicing the social custom, consistently offered to allow Jesus to wash his hands and head also. But Jesus told him that because he was already bathed, "clean every whit," including his feet, he did not need his hands and head washed, but only his feet. He told Peter that he did not understand what was being done to him; therefore it was not the common custom with which Peter was familiar. But Jesus said, "Thou shalt know hereafter," after the washing was completed. When he had finished washing their feet Jesus sat down and told them the significance of what he had done, and commanded them to wash one another's feet. It was not the common custom of washing for cleanliness. No careful thinker will object to foot washing as an ordinance on this ground. The weakness of this objection reminds one of the weakness of the objections to immersion as the true mode of baptism, which are resorted to to uphold an unsound position.

A second objection is that Jesus washed their feet because their feet were dirty, in support of which the latter part of verse eleven is pointed to, "Ye are clean, but not all." It is assumed that the sense in which they were not all clean was that their feet were not clean. Those who so interpret this expression show that they have not carefully read the context. The preceding clause of the sentence plainly states that they were "clean every whit." But the following verse shows positively what is the sense of the words "ye are clean, but not all." "For he knew who should betray him; therefore said he, Ye are not all clean." Judas was defiled in heart. Jesus first affirmed that they were "clean every whit" as to their bodies. Then suddenly passing to the question of their moral cleanness, he stated that they were all clean from sin except Judas. Clean feet

are not washed for cleanliness. The washing of their feet was for a religious purpose.

A third objection is that this act of Jesus was to teach the disciples humility. Doubtless this is true, according to Jesus' own words at the time. We readily admit this, and affirm that it will serve the same purpose when practiced today. If it was needed then to teach disciples their proper relation to one another, it is equally necessary today. Therefore, allowing the objection, if its observance was not positively commanded and if it did not bear the clear marks of an ordinance, its practice would be desirable for the sake of its lesson.

A fourth objection is that it is but an example of all charitable works and therefore the doing of good works is a proper substitute and the very thing commanded. Support of this objection is sought in 1 Timothy 5:10, where the qualifications are named for those widows who are to be supported by the benevolences of the church. "If she have brought up children, if she have lodged strangers, if she have washed the saints' feet, if she have relieved the afflicted, if she have diligently followed every good work." The objector assumes that because it is here listed as a good work it must therefore not be an ordinance. But both home duties and religious duties are good works. Paul here enumerates examples of both classes. The washing of the saints' feet is the only one of the ordinances that could be named here which a widow could be obliged to practice. She was not eligible to baptize people or to administer the Lord's Supper. But she was duty bound to wash the saints' feet, and if she had not done so was not a worthy object for the church's care.

That the foot washing of this text is not the common foot washing of hospitality is clear from the text itself. It does not say, "if she have washed the feet of her children," or "of the strangers she lodged," or "of the afflicted she relieved," but "if she have washed the *saints'* feet. Good deeds are to be done to both saints and sinners indiscriminately. But this foot washing is to be done to the saints, by one saint to another. This agrees exactly with Jesus' words to his disciples, "Ye also ought to wash *one another's* feet." It is a practice peculiar to Christians, therefore not a social custom. Moreover, those whose feet Jesus washed were clean already, and it is not a good work, but a waste of time, to wash clean feet unless it be a religious rite or for another purpose than

was the common custom. But as already shown, Jesus performed and commanded the specific act of washing one another's feet, and no substitution of other good deeds constitutes obedience to that commandment.

A fifth objection is that because of our dress and customs being different from those prevalent in Palestine in Jesus' day, foot washing is undignified and inconvenient. The same argument has equal weight, however, against baptism by immersion. It is much more inconvenient to prepare to be immersed than to prepare to have one's feet washed. And how undignified it is to be plunged under the water and to come out possibly strangling and with one's clothes dripping and disordered. Yet millions who omit foot washing strongly support immersion. But dignity is determined altogether by one's education and viewpoint. Certainly the sexes should separate themselves from one another for the observance of the rite of foot washing, but when this is done the practice is not open to the charge of either impropriety or a lack of Christian dignity. And as to inconvenience, no more time is required to arrange for observing this ordinance than for the Lord's Supper or baptism. But if it were especially inconvenient, that would be no ground for assuming that God consulted men's convenience when instituting the ordinances.

A sixth objection is that most of the New Testament writers make no mention of foot washing. In reply we say, if it is clearly set forth in but one place the obligation to observe it is as binding as if it were mentioned often. It is described at length and definitely enjoined in John's Gospel. The Synoptic Gospels make no mention of Jesus' washing his disciples' feet. But neither do they say anything of Jesus' teaching concerning the new birth. If the absence of mention of foot washing by them is reason for rejecting foot washing, it logically follows that the teaching for regeneration must be rejected for the same reason. Foot washing is not mentioned in the Acts of the Apostles, but the Lord's Supper is clearly referred to only once. (Acts 20:7), and that mention is but incidental. In all the twenty-one epistles foot washing is mentioned only in 1 Timothy 5:10, but in all those epistles the Lords' Supper is also mentioned but once (1 Cor. 11). It would doubtless not have been mentioned there except for the wrong observance of it which Paul sought to correct. Had there been a similar perversion of the observance of foot washing, we may well suppose it

would have been likewise mentioned. The Scriptures do not set forth doctrine formally, but rather incidentally. This ordinance is mentioned in the first epistle to Timothy because there was occasion for referring to it. Had there been other occasions there would have been other mention of it.

3. **Significance of Foot Washing**—As is true of the other ordinances, this rite has a purpose. Like them it is designed to teach a spiritual truth. It instructs by means of an object lesson. We may say of this as Augustine said of the other ordinances, "It is a kind of visible word." In this it bears an intimate relation to the preaching of the Word of God. As was true of the Lord's Supper, the significance of this rite was made known when it was instituted. "Ye call me Master and Lord: and ye say well; for so I am. If I then, your Lord and Master, have washed your feet; ye also ought to wash one another's feet. . . . The servant is not greater than his Lord" (John 13:13-16). It teaches the important lesson of humility, that we are not to seek to be served, but to serve our brethren. It signifies our true relation to each other—at our brethren's feet as their servant. The humility and service here represented are possible only by love. And love is the greatest of all virtues. God is love. This then is worthy to be represented by a Christian ordinance as are the great truths represented by the other ordinances. Each of the three ordinances illustrates an important relationship. Baptism shows we are dead to the *world.* The communion supper shows our relation to Christ as our Savior. Foot washing shows our relationship as servants of each other.

NOTES

[1]It may be helpful to observe that we have three basic relationships in life: our relationship to God, to the world, and to one another. God ordains three ordinances, one for each basic relationship. Our relationship to God is renewed from time to time in different ways but Communion, when observed in the Spirit, renews this relationship as nothing else could possibly do.

A man who has been born again is one who has died to the world of sin and walks as a newborn person, not to return to sinful ways. Baptism certainly is the witness to this great experience. Since dying to self and the world and being born again is intended to be a one-time experience to last forever, baptism as an ordinance is normally practiced but once.

We who have been redeemed have a continuing experience with one another and the washing of feet expresses the proper attitude we should hold. How beautifully Paul expresses this in Romans 12:10: "Be kindly affectioned one to another with brotherly love; in honor preferring one another."

PART VII
LAST THINGS, OR ESCHATOLOGY

Part VII

LAST THINGS, OR ESCHATOLOGY

Arlo F. Newell, Revision Editor

From the Greek term meaning "last" comes the name eschatology which is given to that division of theology that treats concerning the intermediate state, the second coming of Christ, the resurrection of the dead, the final judgment, the end of the world, the future punishment of the wicked, and the future blessedness of the righteous. The subjects here to be considered are important because only on the ground of their reality do the subjects previously discussed have any special concern for us.

. . . . . .

CHAPTER I

THE LIFE AFTER DEATH

I. Immortality of the Soul

The subject of immortality, though not directly belonging to the doctrine of last things, yet underlies that doctrine, and it is important that it be proved at this point. It has already received some consideration, but more complete proofs are now desirable. These proofs are of two main classes—rational and scriptural.

1. **Rational Evidences**—If there be no substance but matter, and if mental operations be dependent upon the organized matter of the brain, then when the physical body, including the brain, dies and is disorganized, the mind ceases to be and conscious existence ends. But if spirit and body are distinct substances, the latter may be dissolved without necessarily affecting the conscious existence of the former. That spirit and body are two distinct substances, entirely different in their nature, has been sufficiently shown in a previous division. But though the distinction between mind and matter as to their essential nature is necessary to the survival of the spirit after the death of the body, yet this distinction does not

necessarily require that the spirit be immortal. There can be no immortality apart from such a distinction, but the mortality of the mind at the time of the dissolution of the body is conceivable. If the fact that the mind is an immaterial, simple substance were proof of its immortal conscious existence, as some have reasoned, then the argument might seem to prove the immortality of the immaterial principle in brutes as well as in men.

(1) *Sense of Moral Obligation Looks to the Future.* As man intuitively recognizes himself as under moral obligation, so he intuitively believes in a life beyond this life. The fact of moral responsibility implies immortality. Every moral man, whether good or bad, believes he shall be rewarded if he does that which is good and shall be punished if he does that which is evil. This is implied in the feeling of moral obligation. The moral nature of man looks to the future in this respect. But it is evident, even to the casual observer, that men are not rewarded or punished according to their deserts in this life. The righteous man struggles stedfastly against temptation to evil, he unselfishly sacrifices personal advantage for the happiness of his fellow men, and because of supreme love for God he lives for the Divine glory, yet not infrequently throughout life he suffers from disease and poverty, is persecuted for righteousness' sake, and possibly dies the death of a martyr. He does not receive the reward in this life his goodness deserves. Shall he not receive it in a future existence? Justice and reason unite in affirming that there is a future life where he will be properly rewarded.

Likewise the wicked man sometimes sins and prospers. While he blasphemes God and oppresses his helpless neighbor he spreads himself like the green bay-tree, and closes his earthly life in peace while committing atrocious crimes. He does not receive his just punishment here. Men naturally expect he will receive it in a future life. If there were no life after death wherein the good man would be rewarded and the bad man punished, reason would require that there ought to be.

(2) *Inferred from the Soul's Powers.* The human soul has capacities for indefinite improvement. Every man has powers that are never developed. Most men feel they are capable of attainments far beyond what their time and opportunities ever enable them to realize in the limits of this life. A large portion of the race dies in infancy with its soul's powers almost wholly undeveloped. Often

even the greatest men believe themselves to be possessed of abilities many times greater than they have developed. It is reasonable to believe that infinite wisdom in creating these powers capable of unlimited increase has provided opportunity for such advancement in an unlimited existence beyond this life, inasmuch as the present life affords no such opportunity.

(3) *Earthly Life Alone Not a Satisfaction.* If it were true that our earthly life is the full measure of our existence we might well inquire, "What doth it advantage me?" For most men life would be without any real advantage if conscious existence forever ends with death. Yet doubtless this life, whatever be one's condition, is a blessing and something desirable. But we affirm that it is esteemed to be such because of what is believed to be beyond it. For most persons this life alone has so large a measure of trouble and sorrow intermixed with its joys that the words of the Preacher may well be appropriated to describe it: "Vanity of vanities, all is vanity." If this short earthly life be bounded by two eternities of non-entity, if in a few short years we shall cease to be forever, then what advantage is present existence? In such a case, whatever blessing this life may bring, it is not a satisfaction. The blessings of life are estimated in view of immortality. As men always estimate the advantage of material wealth, not according to the advantage they expect to derive from it at a future period of this life, so the best things of the earthly life are thought of in relation to their worth to us beyond this life. If there were no future existence, life would indeed be an enigma.

(4) *Universality of the Belief.* Men everywhere and in all ages have been believers in a future life, though that belief has sometimes been obscure. The belief has been as universal as religion, and religion is common to all nations. Only in philosophic speculation has man's immortality been questioned. The universality and persistence of this idea is to be accounted for only on the ground that such belief is natural to man. The universality of this belief, like that of the idea of the existence of God or of moral obligation, is best explained on the ground that it is an intuition of man's nature.

It is sometimes said that men expect a future life because of their desire for it. But that this desire is not that which leads men to expect a future life is evident from the fact that wicked men who expect future punishment do not desire continued existence

after death. Also the righteous, like Paul, sometimes expect and desire the future life without caring for the earthly life. A more reasonable view is that men's instinctive desire for a future life is divinely implanted and that God implanted it in man's nature because, as is true of all other divinely implanted desires, he has made provisions for its gratification. The witness of man's nature in this respect is the testimony of Him who made the nature.

In addition to the foregoing arguments is the value of belief in immortality. This alone is ground for holding it to be truth. Faith in a future life leads men to perform noble deeds, and to live good lives. The truth of immortality is that which gives meaning to the great truth of salvation through Christ.

2. **The Teaching of Scripture**—Though Christians appreciate the value of rational evidences of immortality, yet they are not dependent upon them for ground for their faith in this truth, but find the surest and fullest proof of the doctrine in the Scriptures. Immortality, like many other truths, is more clearly revealed in the New Testament, but it is by no means absent from the Old, as has been sometimes erroneously affirmed. Although few texts of Scripture directly affirm the immortality of the soul, it is clearly implied throughout the Bible. It is implied in the idea of reward for goodness and punishment hereafter. These truths are ever present in the Scriptures. But for a more definite exhibition of the teaching of the Scriptures a few texts which affirm or imply the continued conscious existence of the spirit after death are here cited. Proofs of the survival of the spirit after the dissolution of the body are to most men sufficient evidence of immortality.

When the Sadducees, who denied the resurrection, came to Jesus with a question relating thereto, Jesus answered them with an argument based on the words of God to Moses at the burning bush, "I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob. God is not the God of the dead, but of the living" (Matt. 22:32). From the present tense in this Old Testament text Jesus reasoned that Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob were still alive, though their bodies had been buried for hundreds of years in the cave of Machpelah. At one stroke Jesus not only refuted the error of the Sadducees concerning the resurrection, but did so by showing the fallacy of their more fundamental error in denying that the soul still lives when the body dies. The reasoning of Jesus cannot be mistaken. God is not the God of the dead, but of the living.

After the death of their bodies God was still the God of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob. Therefore they were still living. But as their bodies were not living it must be that their souls were living. Jesus' reasoning was sound. But not only did the souls of these patriarchs live after their bodies died, for on the same occasion Jesus said, "For *all* live unto him" (Luke 20:38). The souls of all men are immortal.

Jesus also taught the immortality of the soul in his account of the rich man and Lazarus. "And it came to pass, that the beggar died, and was carried by the angels into Abraham's bosom: the rich man also died, and was buried; and in hell he lift up his eyes, being in torments, and seeth Abraham afar off, and Lazarus in his bosom" (Luke 16:22, 23). Here both Lazarus and the rich man died. Immediately after death the former is said to have been comforted and the latter is represented as having been tormented, which certainly implies that both were conscious. The rich man could also speak and remember. This is represented as having taken place in the world of departed spirits. It cannot refer to their condition beyond the judgment and after the resurrection, because the five brothers of the rich man were still living on earth and in danger of going to that place. It is a matter of little difference whether this account be regarded as a real history or a parable. In either case its doctrinal teaching is the same. It would be as impious to charge Christ with so misrepresenting the truth in his parables as to mislead men, as to say he did not faithfully represent the truth in his literal teaching. This account in any case clearly teaches that men's souls continue to live after death.

The words of Jesus to the dying thief also clearly teach that the soul continues to live after death. "Jesus said unto him, Verily I say unto thee, Today shalt thou be with me in paradise" (Luke 23:43). The body of the thief, like that of Jesus, died on the cross and was buried. It was their spirits which went to paradise. The very idea of being in paradise implies a state of felicity and therefore of conscious existence. And that state was to be entered, not thousands of years later as soul-sleepers and annihilationists affirm, but the very day on which they died—"today."

The text clearly teaches that the penitent thief was to enjoy conscious blessedness in another world on the very day his body died. This leaves no room for the theories of a soul-sleep nor that of annihilationism.

Paul also believed and taught the doctrine of immortality of the soul. "Therefore we are always confident, knowing that, whilst we are at home in the body, we are absent from the Lord; (for we walk by faith, not by sight:) we are confident, I say, and willing to be absent from the body, and to be present with the Lord" (2 Cor. 5:6-8). Here the apostle represents the soul as absent from the body. But he says that when he, his soul, is absent from the body, it is present with the Lord, which certainly implies that it has not ceased to exist, as annihilationists affirm. Therefore the souls of the dead have continued uninterrupted existence after death. Also the apostle desired to be absent from the body that he might be present with the Lord. It is not conceivable that such a man as Paul should have desired a soul-sleep or unconsciousness rather than the life of "rejoicing always" which he lived. Therefore the souls of the righteous after death have conscious existence. This text also is fatal to the theories of soul-sleeping and annihilationism.

Again Paul says, "For me to live is Christ, and to die is gain. . . . For I am in a strait betwixt the two, having a desire to depart and to be with Christ; which is far better: nevertheless to abide in the flesh is more needful for you" (Phil. 1:21,23,24). Existence is always preferable to non-existence. This is especially true of a joyful existence. In this same epistle the apostle says, "I rejoice"; and again and again he exhorted the Philippians to rejoice. It has been termed the "rejoicing epistle." Life was no burden to Paul, but he did desire to be with his Lord rather than "to abide in the flesh." To be with the Lord, however, does not mean annihilation, but existence, and that existence with Christ to be preferable to Paul's earthly life must necessarily have been conscious existence. Here again is the divine testimony against the theory of soul-sleeping and annihilation.

That the doctrine of immortality of the soul is taught in the Old Testament is shown by the first text we cited on the subject, in which Jesus appeals to the Old Testament in confuting the Sadducees. The ancient men of faith "confessed that they were strangers and pilgrims on the earth" (Heb. 11:13; Gen. 47:9). When Jesus came, the worldly sect of the Sadducees were the only ones among the Jews who denied the doctrine. The Pharisees and Essenes strongly affirmed it. Doubtless, however, Jesus "brought life and immortality to light" in the sense that he set the doctrine in a clearer light than was true of it before his coming.

3. **Theory of Conditional Immortality**—This theory is entirely distinct from that of annihilation of the entire man with the dissolution of the body as held by materialists, and from the theory that the soul continues to exist after death, but is in a state of unconscious slumber until the resurrection of the body. The continued conscious existence of the soul after death sufficiently refute these theories. The theory of conditional immortality affirms that only the souls of Christians are immortal and that the unconverted die utterly with the death of their bodies. It is said that immortality is lost through sin and recovered by faith in Christ. According to this theory the sinner absolutely ceases to exist at death, as is held by the materialistic theory of annihilation. Those who hold conditional immortality usually profess to hold it on biblical grounds and in order to allow for a general judgment they affirm that the wicked will be brought again into being to be judged and again annihilated.

This theory is held as a result of a misapprehension of the sense of certain texts of Scripture which represent the sinner as spiritually dead and the righteous as having spiritual or eternal life. The theory assumes that life always means merely existence and that death means always a cessation of existence. Examples of the texts used to support this theory are the following: "That whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life" (John 3:15). "He that believeth on the Son hath everlasting life: and he that believeth not the Son shall not see life" (John 3:36). "My sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me: and I give unto them eternal life" (John 10:27,28). "The gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord" (Rom. 6:23). "God hath given to us eternal life, and this life is in his Son" (1 John 5:11).

For a proper interpretation of these and other texts used to support the theory of conditional immortality it is important first to determine the sense of the terms "eternal life," "everlasting life," and "death." If the two former expressions always meant endless existence merely, and the latter merely cessation of existence, then they would furnish support for the theory. But they include more than these, as is evident from both the Scriptures and reason. To confound the experience of spiritual life with endless existence or spiritual death with cessation of the soul's existence, is to fail to distinguish between a condition of the soul and its nature. Natural

life is a state in which the soul is united with the body. Spiritual life is a state in which the soul is united with God, which is its normal sphere and necessary to its happiness. If one continues in holiness, that happy condition is endless. Natural death consists in the separation of the soul and body. Spiritual death is the separation of the soul from God.

That this is true is evident from Romans 7:9, where Paul says, "Sin revived and I died." The consequences of sin were certainly not physical death, as Paul's body did not die. He died spiritually, but his soul, or spirit, did not cease to exist nor to be conscious. The spirits of all sinners in this life are as truly conscious as are those of the righteous, and are equal in their natural powers to those of the righteous. They retain their moral and religious natures. This is evident from the functioning of their consciences in a measure and their sense of obligation to love and serve God. But the sinner is spiritually dead in that his sins have separated him from God and he is therefore out of his normal sphere. As spiritual death is separation from God, so spiritual life is union with God. Though eternal life includes endless existence, yet the primary sense of it is union with God.

That immortality is not conditional on one's being righteous is evident from Jesus' teaching that the souls of both the righteous and wicked continue in conscious existence after death, as is clear in the case of the rich man and Lazarus. Also the wicked are punished without end after the judgment. That this is not annihilation will be shown later. The Bible furnishes no ground for the idea that when the child reaches the age of moral responsibility and sins his soul ceases to exist; yet this must be true if spiritual death is what this theory assumes it to be. The theory is not only unscriptural but also unreasonable. Reason alone furnishes ample proof that the sinner, who is in the state of spiritual death, has a living soul with all the natural powers belonging to it.

II. The Intermediate State

The fact of the continued existence of the soul after death and the truth of the resurrection of the body and the reuniting of the soul with it imply an intermediate state. Between the close of the present life and the beginning of the final state the spirit is in a condition different from that of this life or that beyond the resurrection. Though it has conscious existence it is disembodied. Whether it is blessed or punished and regardless of where these

disembodied souls abide, the fact of an intermediate state is certain.

1. **Questions of an Intermediate Place**—An intermediate *state,* or condition of the dead, does not necessarily imply an intermediate *place* between earth and the places of final destiny. On the question of an intermediate *place* two main views are held among Christians. One view is that at death the disembodied souls of the righteous and wicked go directly to the places of everlasting blessedness and of torment respectively. The other view is that they do not go at once to the places of final destiny, heaven and hell γεεννα [gehenna], but await the day of judgment in an intermediate place called Hades, one part of which is designated Paradise or Abraham's bosom and is a place of happiness for the righteous; the other part being called hell, or lower Hades, and sometimes Tartarus, and is a place of punishment. The question of an intermediate place of itself has little practical value for Christian thought, but is chiefly of speculative interest. However, men's natural interest in the place of their future abode has led them to hold radically different views. With the exception of the Church of England, the leading Protestant bodies disallow the theory of an intermediate place.

2. **Not a State of Purgatory**—The intermediate state is not one of purgatorial suffering for sin. The Romish doctrine of purgatory assumes that when memebers of the Roman Catholic Church who are not perfect, but only guilty of venial sins, die, their souls pass into a place called purgatory, where they suffer for the purpose of expiation and also for purification from the defilement of those sins. According to the traditional doctrine, this suffering is from literal fire and is in intensity and duration proportionate to one's sinfulness. When one has suffered sufficiently for this expiation and purging he passes on to heaven. He may remain in purgatory for a few hours or for thousands of years. In consistency with the Romish principle of the power of the keys it is assumed that the priest has power to remit the penalty for sins and release souls from purgatory. It is affirmed that the sufferings of purgatory may be alleviated or their duration shortened by the prayers of the saints and especially by the sacrifice of the mass.

The doctrine of purgatory is in strict harmony with other Romish principles. According to these, the atonement of Christ is efficacious in saving from eternal death only. For all one's postbap-

tismal sins satisfaction must be made by the sinner by good works and penance, and one may enter heaven only when such satisfaction is made. If it is not accomplished in this life it must be effected after death. This is the ground for the doctrine of purgatory. But the eucharist is held to be a sacrificing of Christ anew for sin by way of atonement as was his death on the cross. This is assumed to be efficacious for the pardon of sins committed after baptism, and to secure the forgiveness of those for whom the priest offers it. On this ground it is said that the priest has power to deliver souls from the sufferings of purgatory.

Romanists do not usually attempt to support the doctrine of purgatory on scriptural grounds, but rather on the authority of the church and especially the views expressed by some of the Church Fathers concerning purification by fire, and expiation by sufferings after death. To whatever extent these may have held such views, they evidently did not receive them from the Scriptures, but probably from the Grecian philosophers, especially Plato, who boldly advocated the idea of purification by fire. The Romish doctrine is objectionable, not only because it fails of scriptural support, but especially because it contradicts the Bible. It denies that the atonement of Christ is sufficient to save from all sin, and that salvation is only by the grace of God through Christ. Such denial is clearly contrary to Scripture. We are not saved by our own sufferings, for Christ suffered in our stead. The whole system of doctrine which leads up to, and provides the ground for, the doctrine of purgatory is wrong. The souls of dead believers spend no part of the intermediate period in purgatorial suffering for sin.

3. **Not a State of Probation**—That disembodied souls are not in a state of probation between death and the judgment is a clear implication of the Scriptures. If they were given opportunity for salvation after death, then those texts are meaningless which urge the importance of our being saved now and which warn of awful doom if the present offer of mercy is not accepted. The Scriptures are replete with warnings against such neglect. "How shall we escape, if we neglect so great salvation?" (Heb. 2:1-3). "He that believeth on him should not perish, but have everlasting life" (John 3:16). "He that believeth on him is not condemned: but he that believeth not is condemned already" (v. 18). "He that believeth not the Son shall not see life" (v. 36). "For we must all appear before the judgment seat of Christ; that every one may receive the

things done in his body, according to that he hath done, whether it be good or bad" (2 Cor. 5:10). "For as many as have sinned without law shall also perish without law" (Rom. 2:12).

These and many other texts state or imply that repentance, faith, and obedience in this life are the ground for future reward or punishment. We are represented as the subjects of reward or punishment only for our deeds in this life. If our probation continued throughout the intermediate state, then the deeds of that state being much more numerous for the large majority of the race, and therefore for them far more important, ought rather to be made the principal ground for our final retribution rather than the deeds of this life. But the Scriptures are absolutely silent about a probation after death. This silence in such a connection is of itself ground for saying there is no such opportunity of salvation hereafter. In Jesus' discourse concerning the rich man and Lazarus, he represents the good and the wicked as separated by an impassable gulf. No hint is given of the possibility of its ever being passed over.

One text especially has been depended upon as implying a probation after death. "For Christ also hath once suffered for sins, the just for the unjust, that he might bring us to God, being put to death in the flesh, but quickened by the Spirit: by which also he went and preached unto the spirits in prison; which sometime were disobedient, when once the long-suffering of God waited in the days of Noah, while the ark was a preparing, wherein few, that is, eight souls were saved by water" (1 Pet. 3:18-20). This text is assumed by some to teach that Jesus' disembodied spirit went to Hades while his body lay in the tomb, that he preached the gospel in Hades in order that souls there who had been impenitent during their earthly life might be afforded an opportunity to be saved, and that therefore all those who die in sin will be given an opportunity to be saved after death. This is all gratuitous assumption. Before this text can properly be understood to teach a second probation it must be shown: (1) that Christ preached to these spirits after they were disembodied rather than during their earthly life; (2) that the "prison" is Hades; (3) that the preaching consisted in an offer of pardon; (4) that he offered salvation to any other than to these antediluvians, specifically mentioned; and (5) that if he did he will therefore give a like opportunity of salvation to all who die impenitent. Evidently this text is no proof that the intermediate state is a probationary condition.

The true meaning of this text must be admitted to be obscure. We may be certain it does not support a second probation, but probably the true interpretation is too uncertain to admit of dogmatism. Two principal views are held concerning it. According to one view the latter part of verse eighteen should read, "quickened *in* the spirit." Then it was Jesus' personal disembodied spirit which went to Hades and there proclaimed the fact of his atonement for sin to the unbelieving antediluvians who died in rejection of God's message. As held by many, this view does not imply that another chance of salvation was offered to those to whom the preaching of Jesus was directed, nor that such preaching is heard by all men. This interpretation is confronted by various difficulties. (1) Because a second probation is inadmissible, this proclaiming of the accomplishment of his atonement by Jesus has no apparent purpose, but is a useless proclaiming. (2) This interpretation has no support in any other place in the Scriptures, but is rather contradictory to their general tenor. (3) Jesus did not go to the place of wicked spirits when he died, but to paradise or heaven.

The other view, which seems to avoid these difficulties and is more acceptable to many, is that either by the Holy Spirit, if the rendering of the common version be followed, or by his own personal spirit, the Logos, according to the Revised Version, Christ preached to the antediluvians through Noah while the ark was being constructed. The preaching was done before they died, but they were dead when Peter wrote of it (1 Pet. 4:6). Their being in prison may be understood as meaning either that they were imprisoned in Hades when Peter wrote or that they were bound by sin, in the prison of sin, when the preaching was done. Such an interpretation has been ably advocated by Dr. Adam Clarke in his Commentary (unrevised edition). It seems to meet with fewer difficulties than the interpretation first given. It does not contradict any other statement of the Bible.

CHAPTER II

MILLENARIANISM

The term "millennium" is used in theology to designate a supposed future period of universal righteousness during which Christ will reign on the earth. In duration this period is supposed to be one thousand years, on the ground of Revelation 20:1-6, and therefore the theory is called millenarianism, from the Latin, or chiliasm, for the Greek, both of which have reference to one thousand.

I. Two Theories Distinguished

Two opposing theories are prevalent concerning the millennium: postmillennial and premillennial. They are so designated in relation to the second coming of Christ. The first holds that his advent will be postmillennial, or after the millennium; the other supposes his coming will be premillennial, or will precede the millennium. According to the first view, the converting of the world is the cause of, or at least it prepares the way for, the advent of Christ; according to the other view, the coming of Christ is the cause of the conversion of the world.

1. **Postmillenarianism**—Postmillenarians hold that the kingdom of Christ was established at his first advent, that through existing agencies—especially the preaching of the gospel and the operation of the Holy Spirit—world-wide righteousness will be effected. This condition will continue for a long period, but its duration is not necessarily an exact thousand years, nor do its advocates all pretend to hold the theory on the ground of the twentieth chapter of Revelation. During this period Satan is supposed to be restrained, but at its close he will be loosed for a short period, after which Christ will come to raise the dead, judge the world, and destroy the earth.

2. **Premillenarianism**—Premillenarians hold that the kingdom of Christ does not yet exist, but that it will be established at his second advent. They affirm that present agencies will fail to convert the world, and that wickedness will increase until Christ comes, when it will be supernaturally suppressed. Great diversity of views exists among advocates of the premillennial coming of Christ as to events and the order of their occurrence.

Only by consulting a particular teacher of the theory may that teacher's peculiar views be known, but the theory as most com-

monly held by evangelical Christians is generally as follows: The present preaching of the gospel will not accomplish the conversion of the world, but is intended only as a witness to make the nations subject to judgment and to gather out the elect. Wickedness will continue to increase until the advent of Christ, which is declared to be very near at hand. Christ will come secretly and raise the righteous dead and these with the righteous who are alive will be caught up somewhere in the air, where they will be with Christ for a period, the length of which is affirmed by some to be seven years. During the time the righteous are in the air the living wicked on earth will endure a period of great tribulation under the rule of a personal anti-christ. After this coming of Christ already described, which is said to be *for* his saints and is called "the rapture," it is held that he will come *with* his saints, which coming is called "the revelation." Then he will bind Satan and by supernatural manifestations of power and glory convert Israel and the majority of the wicked. The Jews will be gathered to Palestine, where Christ will establish his throne and rule over all the world with special advantage to the Jews. At the end of the millennium Satan will be loosed for a short time, after which will occur a second resurrection, that of the wicked dead, who will then be judged. Lastly the earth will be burned up.

The foregoing is believed to be a fair representation in general of the theory as held by its leading advocates. The postmillenarian view is here considered less objectionable than the other theory. As held by many, postmillenarianism includes nothing more than an exaggerated idea of what we may properly expect the present preaching of the gospel to accomplish. Therefore it is of little if any practical concern to us. But this cannot be said of the premillennial theory. This theory represents a distinct school of Scripture interpretation which is highly revolutionary in nature. It affects some of the most important points in Christian doctrine. It is subversive of the whole aim and mission of the church. Its advocates become so obsessed with it that they believe they find reference to it on almost every page of the Bible. These are reasons enough for the present consideration of premillenarianism, to which this chapter is principally devoted. The following criticism of this theory is to be understood as directed wholly against its principles and not against its advocates, many of whom are doubtless earnest and devout Christians.

II. History of Millenarianism

1. **The Idea Among the Jews**—Christians originally borrowed the idea of a millennium from the Jews, but in its widest sense the idea was not original with the Jews. Various heathen nations—Egypt, Babylon, Persia, Greece, and Rome—had an idea of a future golden age of the world when evil would be suppressed. Zoroastrianism expected a thousand-year period to follow the downfall of hostile powers, which period was connected with a resurrection of the dead. The later Jewish conception of such a period would naturally be colored by these views of a similar period held by the nations about them. The Jewish conception, however, was based principally upon the Messianic predictions of the Old Testament. There the Messiah was represented as executing judgment upon the enemies of Israel, as reestablishing the throne of David at Jerusalem in great splendor, as exalting Israel, and as ruling ove the Gentiles. Then the wilderness would blossom as the rose, the soil would be very fertile and nature especially prolific, while wild beasts would become docile, and wars would cease among men.

Because of a literal interpretation of these prophecies, the Jews generally expected the Messiah to establish an earthly kingdom. Such was the common expectation of the Jews at the time of Christ. Even the apostles held such a veiw only a short time prior to Jesus' ascension, in spite of the fact that he had taught again and again that the kingdom is not of this world. The rabbinical writers held some very exaggerated notions of the material benefits of the reign of the Messiah. The earth was to yield many thousandfold, and grain, fruit, and flesh were to be provided in immeasurable abundance.

But Jesus disappointed those carnal hopes. He neither established nor promised such an earthly kingdom. In the words of the New Schaff-Herzog *Encyclopedia of Religious Knowledge,* "The teaching of Christ is not millenarian." As much may be truly said of the teachings of the epistles of the New Testament. The apostles taught a present spiritual kingdom of Christ.

2. **Millenarianism in the Early Church**—Though the teaching of Jesus and of the apostles was not millenarian, yet the theory found much support among Christians in the second century and the early part of the third. Of the early church fathers it was held by Barnabas, Papias, Justin Martyr, Ireneus, and Tertullian. The

millennial views of these fathers were identical with those held by the Jews, except that they were given a Christian setting. It is not difficult to understand how millenarianism found entrance into Christian thought. The first Christians were Jews. They had been accustomed to anticipations of millennial glories in connection with the Messiah's reign. When they accepted Jesus as that Messiah and yet found their dreams unrealized, they very naturally transferred those millennial glories in their thinking from the first to the second advent of Christ. They found the New Testament teachings concerning Christ's coming again in glory and the resurrection of the dead not difficult to harmonize with their millennial hopes.

Papias, whose views were shared by Ireneus, assumed there would be wonderful material benefits in the millennial age. Ireneus wrote, "The days will come in which the vines shall grow, each having ten thousand branches, and in each branch ten thousand twigs, and in each true twig ten thousand shoots, and in each one of the shoots ten thousand clusters, and on every one of the clusters ten thousand grapes, and every grape when pressed will give five and twenty metretes of wine" (about two hundred and twenty-five gallons from each grape).

But though some eminent fathers held millenarianism, it was *never generally accepted.* Montanism, which gave much prominence to millenarianism, was condemned by different synods of Asia Minor as heresy about 160 A. D. Dr. C. A. Briggs says of chiliasm, "The mass of writers as well as churches, speaking through their local assemblies, bishops, and patriarchs either show an entirely different conception of eschatology, or else, as in the great churches of Rome, Alexandria, and Asia Minor, they condemned the heresy; so that before the First Ecumenical Council of Nice, chiliasm had been suppressed in all parts of the Christian Church." That it was not generally accepted from an early date is evident from the fact that the four greatest early church symbols—the Apostles' creed, the Nicene, the Constantinopolitan, and the Athanasian—all exlude it by affirming a single resurrection of the dead, including both the righteous and the wicked. Origen rejected millenarianism and Augustine in identifying the kingdom of God with the church excluded it. From his time it ceased to be held almost entirely for many centuries.

3. **Modern Premillenarianism**—Premillenarianism came into temporary prominence in the year 1000 A. D. due to the theory

held by some that that date ended the one thousand years of Revelation 20. Also belief in it accompanied the fanaticism of the Anabaptists after the Reformation. Several other outbreaks of premillennial teaching might be cited during the eighteenth and nineteenth centuries, but is has not been the common belief among Christians. The creeds of the leading denominations either exclude it or give it no support. Another revival of millenarianism has come in recent years. In the ranks of its advocates are a few eminent religious leaders. The theory is being zealously propagated in "prophetic conferences," by elaborate charts purporting to show the plan of the ages, by books, and by periodicals. Some truly able Christain scholars are supporters of premillenarianism. However, the large majority of Biblical scholars do not support it. It is not supposed that the question is to be determined by the "weight of scholarship," but what is here said is merely to offset the claim that all great Biblical scholars are premillennialists. Neither is it true that all who reject premillenarianism hold the views of the higher critics. Before the rise of the modern school of criticism Christians generally rejected premillarianism.

III. The Kingdom of Christ

The expression "kingdom of Christ" is identical in meaning with "kingdom of God" and "kingdom of heaven." As it is used in the New Testament it means the spiritual kingdom of God, as distinguished from God's rule over the universe or the kingdom of literal Israel. The kingdom of God, as to its subjects, is identical with the church. It is the rule of God in the hearts of his people. The question of the kingdom of Christ, especially the nature and time of the establishment of the kingdom, is determinative of the scripturalness of premillenarianism. That theory rests on the assumption that the kingdom is an earthly, material kingdom, and that its establishment is yet future and to take place at the second advent. If it can be shown that the kingdom of God is a spiritual, not a literal, kingdom, and that it is already in existence, having been established at the first coming of Christ, the theory of premillenarianism is disproved, not only in these two particulars, but also in all its other aspects, which have these for their basis.

1. **Nature of Christ's Kingdom**—Jesus said to Pilate, "My kingdom is not of this world: if my kingdom were of this world, then would my servants fight, that I should not be delivered to the Jews: but now is my kingdom not from hence" (John 18:36). This

is a clear statement as to what the kingdom of Christ is not. It is not a political and materialistic kingdom with certain geographical territory and which needs to be upheld by the power of human arms and war. Jesus acknowledges by using the present tense "is" that he has a kingdom, but it is a heavenly, spiritual kingdom.

The Jews expected the Messiah to set up a material, earthly kingdom. It was with that in mind that the Pharisees came to inquire of Jesus. "And being asked by the Pharisees, when the kingdom of God cometh, he answered them and said, The kingdom of God cometh not with observation: neither shall they say, Lo, here! or, There! for lo, the kingdom of God is within you" (Luke 17:20, 21, ASV). Jesus here clearly teaches that his kingdom is not of such a nature that it may be seen outwardly, but is spiritual in its nature. It already existed, as is evident from his use of the present tense, but it is within men's hearts and does not consist in material things. Here Jesus specifically sought to correct the misconception of these inquirers that the Messianic kingdom was a literal one. How strange that men today contradict his plain statement by affirming that his kingdom is materialistic in its nature! Paul also taught likewise against the idea of a material kingdom. "The kingdom is not meat and drink; but righteousness, peace, and joy in the Holy Ghost" (Rom. 14:17).

The kingdom which Christ preached was of such a nature that it, instead of material benefits, might be sought in the age when he lived (Matt. 6:33). Its nature was such that men might voluntarily enter it at that time. "Every man presseth into it" (Luke 16:16). Admission to it was by means of the new birth. "Except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom" (John 3:5). It is evident that a spiritual birth cannot induct one into a literal kingdom. During Jesus' day men did enter the kingdom. "Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye shut up the kingdom of heaven against men: for ye neither go in yourselves, neither suffer ye *them that are entering* to go in" (Matt. 23:13). These words would be meaningless if applied to a future earthly kingdom. The teachings of the parables of Jesus to which the kingdom of heaven is likened are incongruous with the idea of an earthly kingdom.

2. **Predictions of the Time of Its Establishment** The time of establishment of the kingdom is clearly predicted in the second chapter of Daniel. Nebuchadnezzar had a dream in which he saw

a great image with a head of gold, breast and arms of silver, belly and thighs of brass, and legs of iron, and feet part of iron and part of clay. A stone "cut out of the mountains without hands" struck the image on the feet and broke, not only them, but the entire image to pieces. In interpreting the dream Daniel said to Nebuchadnezzar, "Thou, O king, . . . art this head of gold" (Dan. 2:37). But the context shows clearly that not merely Nebuchadnezzar himself was the head of gold, but rather the Chaldean Empire, of which he was the first ruler. "And after thee shall arise another kingdom inferior to thee, and another third kingdom of brass, which shall bear rule over all the earth" (v. 39). The two world empires immediately following the Chaldean, were the Medo-Persian, and the Grecian. "And the fourth kingdom shall be strong as iron" (v. 40). The fourth universal empire counting from the Chaldean was the Roman, which is well described as being strong as iron.

Daniel explained the breaking of the image by the stone to signify that, "*In the days of these kings* shall the God of heaven set up a kingdom, which shall never be destroyed: and the kingdom shall not be left to other people, but it shall break in pieces and consume all these kingdoms, and it shall stand forever" (v. 44). But four kingdoms are mentioned in this chapter, the last of which was the Roman. Not later than the time of the Roman Empire was the kingdom of God to be set up. But the Roman Empire has long since passed away. Therefore, the kingdom of God has evidently already been established.

But those who expect the establishment of the divine kingdom in the future, especially premillenarians, assume that "these kings" (v. 44) are the ten minor kingdoms which grew out of the Roman Empire, that these are still in existence, and that therefore the divine kingdom has not yet been established. They suppose the toes of the image represent these minor kingdoms as do the ten horns of the fourth beast described in Daniel 7. But this is not so stated. Moreover, the claim that these toes were intended to represent ten kingdoms is wholly gratuitous. In the expression "these kings" (v. 44) "these" must have for its antecedent the kings already mentioned. No ten minor kingdoms are mentioned; therefore it must refer to those which are mentioned. As already shown, it clearly predicts the setting up of the kingdom of God in the days of the Roman Empire.

Also, it was not only the feet that were broken to pieces by the little stone, but "then was the iron, the clay, the brass, the silver, and the gold, broken to pieces together, and became like the chaff of the summer threshing-floors" (Dan. 2:35). But how could those former kingdoms be destroyed by the kingdom of God in the days of the feet or the latter part of the Roman Empire? Certainly, as political powers they had long since ceased to be. Also the destruction of civil governments is not the divine purpose, for God has ordained them. But false religion is a proper subject of Scripture prophecy, and the kingdom of God in its very nature is designed to destroy them. Those ancient world empires were more than political powers. They were upholders of heathen religions. While the political power of those empires preceding the Roman had vanished, the false religion they supported was all included in the Roman Empire. Therefore when the little stone destroyed the paganism of Rome the same false religion of the preceding governments was overthrown.

In Isaiah 9:6,7 is a prediction of the coming of Christ. A child was to be born. This is clearly a prediction of the first coming of Christ. He was to be the "Prince of peace" and to rule on the "throne of David." As David rules over Israel, God's people in ancient time, so does Christ rule over Christians, who are God's people now. There is no hint in this prediction that the rule of Christ is to take place at any other time than at the first advent when the child was born. It is a prediction concerning the first advent. Luke 1:32, 33 concerning Christ sitting on David's throne is to be similarly understood.

3. **Christ's Kingdom Established at His First Advent**—In the beginning of the ministry of John the Baptist and of Jesus they proclaimed "the kingdom of heaven is at hand" (Matt. 3:2; Mark 1:14, 15). It had been promised from the time of Isaiah seven hundred years before. When Jesus came it ceased to be in the future and had arrived; it was "at hand." If after only seven hundred years of waiting it could be said to be at hand, that proclamation could not possibly mean it would not be established for yet nineteen hundred years or more. If the words "the kingdom of heaven is at hand" do not mean it was established at the first advent of Christ, then the words are misleading.

Jesus often spoke of the kingdom as then existing. "From the days of John the Baptist until now the kingdom of heaven

suffereth violence, and the violent take it by force" (Matt. 11:12). "The law and the prophets were until John: since that time the kingdom of God is preached, and every man presseth into it" (Luke 16:16). Both of these verses clearly imply the existence of the kingdom. That men were in the kingdom implies its existence. The foregoing and other texts state some were in it. "Who . . . hath translated us into the kingdom of his dear Son" (Col. 1:13). "I John, who also am your brother . . . in the kingdom . . . of Jesus Christ" (Rev. 1:9). The implication is clear in these verses that the time of the setting up of the kingdom is not in the future.

The kingdom of God came in the days of the apostles. When speaking of them Jesus said, "There be some of them that stand here, which shall not taste death, till they have seen the kingdom of God come with power" (Mark 9:1). Probably this refers to his manifestation in his majesty at the transfiguration, which is described immediately following. But whenever it was fulfilled, the declaration is clear that the kingdom of God was to be manifested during the first century, while the apostles yet lived. Jesus affirmed before Pilate that he was then a king and then had a kingdom, but it was not an earthly one. All of these texts agree exactly with the prophecies discussed which teach the divine kingdom was set up at the first advent. Because it is already set up and is a spiritual kingdom, the theory that it is an earthly, material kingdom to be established in the future is necessarily false and unscriptural.

IV. Hermeneutic Principles

Correct understanding of the teaching of the Scriptures is dependent upon the observance of sound principles in their interpretation. Interpretation is as necessary to the understanding of the Scriptures as of any other book. While it is true "the meaning of Scripture is Scripture," it is also true, as Peter said, that in the Bible are "some things hard to be understood." The business of the preacher is to interpret, or rightly divide the Word of God (2 Tim. 2:15). Philip interpreted to the Ethiopian eunuch the prophecy of Isaiah which the eunuch by himself was unable to understand. The teaching of Jesus and of the apostles is largely interpretation of the Old Testament. No systematic discussion of biblical hermeneutics is here attempted, but only of such principles as are vital to our present subject.

1. **Literal or Figurative Interpretation**—The Scriptures, like most other Oriental literature, contain much of figurative and

symbolic language. The speech and literature of the modern Western world makes use of figures and symbols to some extent, but the Jews thought and taught much in word pictures. Therefore their literature, both inspired and uninspired, abounds in that which appeals to the eye and the imagination. Jesus spoke often in parables. Whatever difficulties for interpretation may attend the figurative mode of expression of thought, it evidently has much advantage in making truth vivid and impressive.

Most interpreters of the Bible have recognized both the literal and figurative elements in it. Even Origen recognized this plain sense of Scripture, but in conformity with his theory of its multiple meaning he also interpreted all Scripture allegorically. This "spiritualizing" has been generally rejected as dangerous and unreasonable, and is not to be confused with the recognition of symbols where they exist. But premillenarians hold a principle of literal interpretation which is an extreme opposite to that of the spiritualizing of Origen. They especially interpret literally those texts relating to Christ's kingdom and Israel's glory. They profess to be very much shocked because others do not interpret their favorite texts likewise. They affirm that they are giving superior honor to the Word of God by interpreting it literally at these points. They sometimes go so far as to charge all who disapprove of their extreme literalizing with holding the views of the destructive higher critics. But a spiritual truth is as real as a literal one. God is a pure spirit, incorporeal, yet his existence is as real as is that of a man who has a material body. Likewise a truth may be as truly expressed figuratively as literally.

Examples of spiritual interpretation abound in the Bible itself. Malachi closed his prophecy with a promise that God would send Elijah to reform Israel before the Messiah should come. It must have shocked the literalists of Jesus' day when Christ said of John the Baptist, "If ye will receive it, this is Elias, which was for to come" (Matt. 11:14). Paul recognized a spiritual Israel (Gal. 3:29; Rom 2:28, 29) also spiritual children of Abraham (Rom. 4:11, 16) and interprets Old Testament texts as referring to them. Elaborate symbols are interpreted in detail in the Book of Daniel, where beasts symbolize empires and horns kings and kingdoms. The Book of Revelation is a book of symbols; candlesticks are churches (Rev. 1:20), and heads and horns represent kingdoms (Rev. 17: 10, 12). But the premillennial teacher affirms that we may properly

interpret symbolically only in those instances where inspiration has so interpreted or indicated the existence of symbols. We deny the validity of any such principle for interpreting Scripture. Uninspired speech and literature does not always stop to indicate that figures and symbols are being used when they are employed; neither does the Bible. Even premillennialists will, for the most part, forsake this principle when confronted with certain texts. For example, Jesus said of the communion bread at the last supper, "This is my body" (Matt. 26:26). No literal interpretation nor hint that they are to be literally understood is given of these words in the Bible. Doubtless the Bible does not always literally "mean what it says." It rather means what it signifies.

2. **Historical Interpretation**–Scripture must be interpreted in the light of its context, the purpose of the particular writing, the veiwpoint of its writer, the time when he wrote, and the condition of those to whom he wrote. Each of the inspired writers wrote his message for a practical purpose to certain men living in his day. To understand any text of Scripture we must know its proper historical setting. To interpret the Bible as if all parts are on the same level in that they were originally addressed to us by writers who had our time and circumstances in mind is to go far astray. Particular verses cannot properly be employed in support of a doctrine except as their context and historical setting allow such sense. Minds obsessed with a particular doctrine, whether or not it be scriptural, frequently think they find support of it in almost every chapter of the Bible. They bring together many texts entirely separate from their context and thus seek to prove their doctrine by interpreting them contrary to their historical setting. Such a method of handling Scripture is highly objectionable and misleading.

But this sort of misinterpretation of Scripture has been common among teachers of premillenarianism. Blackstone's *Jesus Is Coming* is especially open to criticism in this respect. He finds the Old Testament, especially the prophecies, filled with references to Christ's second coming. We should never think of these as possibly having such a sense unless a premillenarian had told us; for example, Deuteronomy 33:2 and Hosea 6:3. The prophets and Israel were not especially concerned about an event so remote as the second advent. A matter of far more immediate concern to them was the first advent of Christ. The coming of the promised

"seed" of Abraham, who would bless the world; the advent of the great "Son of David," who would bring salvation to men—this was that to which the devout of pre-Christian times looked forward. "The Old Testament prophetic passages," says Dr. Snowden, "obviously refer to the first coming of the Messiah, the only coming that had yet risen above the horizon of the prophets, and it is only by a feat of athletic exegesis that these references can be heaved over the first into the second coming." (*The Coming of the Lord,* p. 38). Only by literal interpretation of symbolic texts and by interpreting many texts apart from their historical setting can premillenarianism find support in many texts.

V. Revelation 20:1-6

Premillenarians find the foundation for their doctrine in this text. Whatever other texts may be appealed to in support of the doctrine, they must all be interpreted in relation to this one. Leading advocates of the theory admit this text is the ultimate support of it. It is the only text that says anything about a thousand years' reign with Christ. If the interpretation of this text which is given by premillenarians be the correct one then the doctrine is scriptural, but if this text does not teach the doctrine then it is taught nowhere in the Scriptures.

1. **Millenarianism Not Taught**—Revelation 20:1-6 declares the dragon is bound a thousand years, during which time certain of the righteous are said to reign with Christ. On its surface this text may appear to teach millenarianism, especially to one who already has the idea in his mind. But upon a more careful examination it is apparent no such doctrine is contained in it. A literal interpretation of the text is essential to its furnishing support for millenarianism. But it is located in what is generally conceded to be the most highly symbolic of all the books of the Bible, and this text is itself as highly symbolic as is any in that symbolic book. Correct principles of hermeneutics absolutely forbid a literal interpretation of this text in total disregard of its context. The premillenarian interpretation of this is a striking example of improper literal interpretation by the teachers of it. That the text under consideration is not to be literally interpreted and that it does not teach the millenarian doctrine is held by the large majority of the most devout and careful thinking of evangelical writers. Dr. Miley says on this text: "This may be said, first, that the passage contains not a word respecting any advent of Christ, nor a word respecting his

reigning personally on the earth. Further, it is in a highly figurative or symbolical book, and is itself highly symbolical. Consequently the construction of the theory of the advent on such ground is without the warrant of any principle of doctrinal formation, and the more certainly so as there are many explicit texts on the subject" (*Systematic Theology*, Vol. 2, p. 443). This is but an example of statements by many eminent theologians of different denominations, including A. H. Strong, Minor Raymond, H. C. Sheldon, A. A. Hodge, Adam Clarke, and J. H. Snowden.

Not only is literal interpretation of this text a violation of sound hermeneutic principles, but its implication of an earthly, literal reign of Christ and two physical resurrections is contrary to other plain texts (John 5:28, 29; Dan. 12:2). One plain text of Scripture is enough to support a doctrine, but if a text is generally admitted to be symbolic and obscure, it should be interpreted in accordance with plain texts, not they in accordance with it.

But even if a literal interpretation of the text were permissible it would still not give the support to the millenarian theory it is usually supposed by its advocates to afford. Much of that theory is read into the text rather than out of it. Nothing is said in the passage under consideration about the second advent of Christ. That is *assumed* to take place at the time of the events here described. There is no proof the angel of verse 1 is Christ. He always appears in his own person unsymbolized in the Revelation, as in chapter 19:11-16. Again it is assumed that the dragon is the literal devil. But in the twelfth chapter he is said to have seven heads and ten horns and with his tail to draw the third part of the stars of heaven and to cast them to the earth (Rev. 12:3, 4). In chapter 17:10-12 those heads and horns are said to be kingdoms. Who can suppose Satan, the archfiend and an evil spirit, has these kingdoms for heads and horns, or that he has a tail capable of the great feat here prescribed? The terms "serpent," "devil," and "Satan" are themselves symbols of an antiChristian power.

Again, this text says nothing of a reign on the earth. The reign was to be "with Christ," and Christ is in heaven. Still further, there are no resurrected bodies in this part of the chapter. They are "souls" of those he headed who are to reign with Christ. Moreover, not all the righteous dead are said to reign with him, but only those who were "beheaded for the witness of Jesus, and for the word of God." Finally, in clear contradiction to the millenarian

theory that the first resurrection is of the bodies of the righteous dead, the fifth verse declares that the *living again of the rest of the dead* after the thousand-year period is the "*first resurrection.*" In view of all of these difficulties, this text, which is supposed to be the foundation of it, certainly furnishes no adequate ground for the doctrine.

2. **Exegesis of Revelation 20:1-6**—The text in question is capable of a symbolic meaning and with the proof that it is properly so interpreted the literal interpretation and this text as a support of millenarianism are excluded. Space forbids an elaborate discussion of the text with full proof of each statement. For this the reader is referred to works dealing particularly with the subject (*The Revelation Explained,* F. G. Smith)*.

Only one dragon is mentioned in the Revelation. He is first introduced in chapter 12:3 as *a* great red dragon having seven heads and ten horns. In every other mention of him, as in chap. 20:2, he is called *the* dragon as being already known. We have already seen that he cannot be the personal devil. His heads and horns, which in chapter 17:10-12 are described as being kingdoms, identify him with the pagan Roman Empire, with its seven supreme forms of government and the ten minor kingdoms growing out of it. This interpretation of the dragon of Revelation 12 has been commonly held by exegetes employing the historical method of interpreting the Revelation. The dragon was bound in the sense that the religious power of paganism was broken by early Christianity. The time he was to remain bound is represented as a thousand years, which is symbolic of a long period of time. Though men continued to be deceived by other false religious powers, yet when the paganism of Rome was overthrown it ceased to deceive them.

During this period in which the pagan power was bound the souls of the martyrs reigned with Christ. That reign took place, not on earth, but in heaven. These souls are disembodied spirits, which are never symbolized in the Revelation. (See Rev. 6:9-11). These disembodied souls of martyrs reigning with Christ are symbolized when in their embodied condition in chapter 12:5 as a man-child which the dragon sought to devour and which was caught up to God and to his throne. In chapter 12:5 they are represented as being born, here as being resurrected (v. 6). This first resurrection is conversion. (Eph. 2:1; Col. 2:13; John 5:24, 25;

1 John 3:14). Those who have had part in the first resurrection are said to be "blessed and holy" (v. 6). It is salvation that makes men so. It is called the "first" resurrection in contrast with the resurrection, though they were disembodied spirits and the bodies of them were in their graves. But the first resurrection is continued after the thousand-year period (v. 5). This fact entirely excludes the premillenarian theory of a first resurrection of the righteous and another one of the wicked a thousand years later. During the thousand-year period while the pagan power was bound the papacy held sway and salvation work was less common than in the early Christian centuries. Therefore those who have had part in the first resurrection, or have been regenerated, are represented as two groups, one before and one after the thousand years.

With the rise of modern infidelity and opposition to the Bible and Christianity the same dragon power that withstood Christianity in the early centuries is again appearing. The thousand-year period is in the past rather than in the future.

VI. Objections to Premillenarianism

Much ground for objection to premillenarianism is afforded by what has already been said. The theory originated among earthly-minded Jews, who rejected and crucified Christ because he did not come in worldly glory as they had supposed he would do. It has been generally rejected by the church during the ages and is generally regarded today as unscriptural, especially by most biblical scholars. Christ's kingdom was established at his first advent, therefore is not to be set up in the future. It is described as being spiritual in its nature, therefore cannot be a literal, earthly one. Neither the teachings of Jesus nor any of the epistles contain one word about a millennium. Revelation 20:1-6 has been found not to teach a literal reign of Christ on earth as held by millenarians, but is symbolic of events which are already past. Still other important objections remain to be stated.

1. **No Double Resurrection**—Premillenarianism requires and holds two literal resurrections, one of the righteous before the millennium and another of the wicked at its end. They assume that these are taught in Revelation 20:1-6, but we have already shown that assumption to be erroneous. Blackstone attempts to show (*Jesus Is Coming,* p. 59) that two resurrections are recognized throughout the Bible by the use in the Greek text of ἐκ (*ek*) from among, or out of—in relation to the resurrection of the

righteous. He affirms that by the use of this word only in relation to the resurrection of the righteous, they are represented as raised from among the dead ones, implying that some dead ones are not raised up at that time. Dr. David Brown in his *Second Advent* says this distinction "will not bear an hour's examination of the Greek Testament." Dr. Snowden says, "The expression 'resurrection of the dead' (without *ek*) is not only applied expressly to the resurrection of both classes, but specifically to that resurrection which is peculiar to believers (1 Cor. 15:42), and even to the resurrection of Christ himself (Acts 26:23). Not only so, but the same Greek preposition (*ek*) occurs in other passages where no one would think it means 'from amongst,' as in John 6:26, 'because ye ate of the loaves,' and Galatians 3:7, 'they that are of faith.' In most cases this preposition is translated simply 'from' and has no such meaning as this unscholarly premillenarian interpretation seeks to place upon it" (*The Coming of the Lord,* p. 176). Any one familiar with the common Greek usage of the term in question will readily recognize the weakness of the argument based upon it.

Not only does the theory of a double resurrection fail to find support in the use of the Greek term discussed in the foregoing paragraph and in Revelation 20:1-6, but the general teaching of Scripture concerning the simultaneous resurrection of both righteous and wicked excludes it. "The hour is coming, in the which all that are in the graves shall hear his voice, and shall come forth; they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of damnation" (John 5:28, 29). At a particular "hour" or time "all" the dead, both good and evil, shall be raised up. "So man lieth down and riseth not: till the heavens be no more, they shall not awake, nor be raised out of their sleep" (Job 14:12). Men are to be raised only at the time when the heavens cease to be, according to this text. No room is allowed for the resurrection of the righteous a thousand years before that time. "There shall be a resurrection of the dead, both of the just and unjust" (Acts 24:15). But one resurrection is here mentioned; the word is in the singular number. Yet that resurrection is to include both the just and unjust. In Revelation 20:11-15 is a description of the last judgment scene. "And I saw the dead [not those who had been living in resurrected bodies a thousand years], small and great, stand before God; and the *books* were

opened: and another book was opened, which is the book of life: and the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works." These verses teach oneness of the judgment and also of the resurrection for both the good and evil. Only by a forced interpretation of these four passages can their plain teaching of oneness of the resurrection be avoided.

2. **No Restoration of Judaism**—Many things predicted of Judah and Jerusalem have never been literally fulfilled. But the principle of literal interpretation which is held with so great tenacity by premillenarians requires that these shall be literally fulfilled. In conformity with the requirements of their logic, premillenarians affirm that these predictions will be accomplished in a restored Judaism, that Christ shall rule over the Jews in Jerusalem, the temple shall be rebuilt, and all its system of ceremonies and sacrifices again instituted. That bloody animal sacrifices should again be offered to God on an altar for a thousand years is shocking to most Christian readers of the epistle to the Hebrews and of the writings of Paul, in which such sacrifices are constantly represented as being a shadow of the sacrifice of Christ for the sins of the world, and as having passed away when that which they predicted was accomplished. Even some premillenarians are evidently shocked by such an idea. Though their logic requires such return to Judaistic practices, yet some of them inconsistently refuse to admit its reality. But many of them, including several of their highest authorities, unhesitatingly teach the reestablishment of the entire ritual of Mosaic sacrifices.

Probably no higher or more widely recognized authority on premillenarianism can be cited that Dr. G. Campbell Morgan. In writing on "The Golden Age" he says, "Palestine, reinhabited by the nation of Israel, is to be redivided; and each tribe will return, not to the section of land previously occupied, but to a portion which stretches from the seaboard across the land. Jerusalem is to be rebuilt, and will possess a temple far larger and more magnificent than before, the size of which is given by Ezekiel. The city will not merely be the seat of rule exercised over Israel; but the metropolis of government for the worldwide worship of God. In the past its sacrifices and oblations pointed on to Christ; but these, restored in the millennium, will be offered in memory of the work which Jesus accomplished on the cross" (*God's Methods with Man,* pp. 117-118).

An attempt is here made to show these alleged sacrifices of the millennial age, which are supposed to be described in Ezekiel 40-48 and Isaiah 66:20, 23, are to be offered, not for atonement, nor for a type of it, but as a memorial of the accomplished atonement of Christ. But such a theory cannot be admitted, for in Ezekiel 43:19, 20, it is said, "Thou shalt give to the priests . . . a young bullock for a sin-offering. And thou shalt take of the blood thereof, and put it on the four horns of it, and on the four corners of the ledge, and upon the border round about: thus shalt thou cleanse it and make atonement for it" (ASV). If in that future age these offerings are thus to be offered for sin then the inspired writer to the Hebrews was in error in saying, "We are sanctified through the offering of the body of Christ *once for all"* (Heb. 10:10); and *"by one offering for sin"* (v. 18). How much more reasonable to recognize the symbolic element in these prophecies, and the glory there predicted as pertaining to the glorious church of God in the Christian dispensation! Such an interpretaion accords perfectly with the entire New Testament.

3. **No Three Comings of Christ**—Doubtless the Scriptures teach two advents of Christ to this world, one of which is past and the other in the future. Premillenarians, however, expect yet two comings of Christ in the future. Of these future comings, they affirm that he will first come to resurrect the dead saints and catch up into the air with them those saints who are yet living. This coming is called by premillenarians "the rapture," which means to be caught up. At a latter time, they affirm, he will come again *with* his saints, when he will be visible to all. This is called "the revelation." (See Blackstone, *Jesus Is Coming,* p. 75). The idea of these two supposed future comings of Christ is an essential element of their theory.

They depend for support of this distinction principally upon I Thessalonians 4:14-17. "For if we believe that Jesus died and rose again, even so them also which sleep in Jesus will God bring with him. For this we say unto you by the word of the Lord, that we which are alive and remain unto the coming of the Lord shall not prevent them which are asleep. For the Lord himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God: and the dead in Christ shall rise first: then we which are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall we ever be with the Lord." The whole purpose of the apostle in

writing these words was to tell the order of God's dealings with the righteous at Christ's coming and thus allay the fears of those to whom he wrote about their dead brethren. The wicked are left out of the consideration entirely. Therefore the statement that "the dead in Christ shall rise first" has no reference to the time of their resurreciton in relation to the resurrection of the wicked, but as is clear from the following verse it is "first" in relation to those righteous living at Christ's coming, who will then be caught up together with the resurrected righteous who have died. This text gives support neither to a double resurrection nor to two future comings of Christ.

But, it is argued by Blackstone, Christ must first come *for* his saints before he can come *with* them. This is to deny that the spirits of the righteous dead are now with Christ in heaven, which Paul affirms (2 Cor. 5:8; Phil. 1:21). All which Christ is to accomplish when he comes in the future can and will be accomplished at one coming. The Bible teaches but one future advent of Christ. With the disproof of three advents, two resurrections, and a millennium, no ground remains for affirming four judgments, as is done by premillenarians.

4. **No Great Tribulation**—According to premillenarians the period between the supposed rapture and revelation, which they usually regard as seven years in duration, identifying it with the seventieth week of Daniel 9:27, will be a time of great tribulation to the wicked, who are to be left on the earth during that time. They described this period in many details and appear to have almost superhuman knowledge concerning it. (See Blackstone, *Jesus Is Coming*, p. 98). But the whole idea is an ungrounded assumption. Various texts are supposed to refer to it, but no true exegesis of them finds any such meaning. The "great tribulation" of Matthew 24:21 refers to the great suffering of the Jews at the destruction of Jerusalem, which is certainly the point of discussion beginning with verse 15. There is no reason for understanding that this or other texts appealed to in this connection teach such a period of trouble as they are assumed to teach.

5. **No Personal Antichrist**—During the period of great tribulation, premillenarians hold that the world will be ruled by a personal antichrist. They regard the antichrist power described in 2 Thessalonians 2:3-12 as being the one who shall rule during the "tribulation." He is supposed to be a person rather than a spirit of

antichrist, because he is called "that *man* of sin." But "man" does not always refer to a person. It may refer to a power or a body of people. An example of such a use is found in Ephesians 2:15 where the church, that body composed of both Jews and Gentiles, is called "one new man." In a former chapter this "man of sin" was shown to be the papacy. Such has been the common Protestant understanding of it.

Antichrist is not to arise in the future. He has already come. "And every spirit that confesseth not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is not of God: and this is that spirit of antichrist, wherefore ye have heard that it should come; and even now already is it in the world" (1 John 4:3). The inspired writer here uses the term in its broad etymological sense of being opposed to Christ. Whatever is opposed to Christ is antichrist. Here the premillenarian objects that it is said that only the *spirit* of antichrist is now in the world. But the same writer says more. "As ye have heard that antichrist shall come, even now are there many antichrists; whereby we know that it is the last time" (1 John 2:18).

6. **No Need, Time, Nor Place for Millennium**—God has a purpose in all he does. In all that premillenarians hold concerning the supposed reign of Christ on earth, there does not apear an important purpose to be attained. No millennium is necessary to the salvation of men. Perfect conditions for probation of free moral beings now exist. The lack of divine compulsion on the one hand and the drawing of God's Spirit on the other hand, along with man's freedom, make the choice of salvation and a life of holiness possible without making it necessary. If more miraculous, divine manifestation were more conducive to the salvation of men and yet consistent with their moral freedom, then the lack of those manifestations in this present age reflects on the goodness and holiness of God. To whatever extent men may be constrained by supernatural manifestations of power in a future age to serve God, to that extent they cease to serve him freely. But God's glory demands that men serve him from free choice. "Whosoever will" may be saved now. Even the Jews can have no better opportunity for salvation in the future.

No millennium is needed for man's happiness. Surely the imaginary joys of a millennial age cannot exceed the blessedness of heaven. Therefore a millennium can afford no advantage in human happiness over the entrance of the righteous to heaven instead.

Neither is a millennium needed for the divine glory. Christ rules the physical universe now, and also the moral universe. He rules in the moral realm, not by depriving men of freedom and compelling them to do good, but by his bringing them to account for their acts, which is the highest form of government. Wickedness prevails now only as God permits it in consistency with his moral government. But every kneee shall bow to him, in the day of final retribution.

The scriptural order of events at the advent of Christ allows no time for a millennium. When Christ comes all the dead will be immediately raised (John 5:28, 29); they will be raised by the "trump of God" (1 Thess. 4:16), which is the "last trump" (1 Cor. 15:52). There is no trump after the last. Then the eternal state begins. When Christ comes the judgment will take place and men shall at once enter upon their eternal states (Matt. 25:31; 2 Thess. 1:8; Matt. 16:27).

Neither do the Scriptures allow any place for a millennium. The earth is to be destroyed on the occastion of his coming. This is clear from 2 Peter 3:4-12. The "coming" of the Lord (v. 4) is called the "day of the Lord" (v. 10). The apostle states that the earth and the works in it will on that day be burned up. This leaves no place for a thousand-year reign of Christ on earth at his coming.

VII. Premillenarian Questions

1. **The Earth Full of the Knowledge of the Lord**—To understand many predictions of the world-wide worship of Jehovah, it is important to remember that the true religion was in olden times confined to the people of Israel. By the preaching of the gospel to the Gentiles the knowledge of the true religion has spread over the earth. "All the ends of the world shall remember and turn unto the Lord" (Ps. 22:27). "All the ends of the earth shall fear him" (Ps. 67:7). These merely predict the salvation of persons in the remotest nations of earth, and the prediction is being fulfilled today. That this is the correct interpretation is certain from Paul's interpretation in Acts 13:47 of a similar expression found in Isaiah 42:6. In Isaiah 2:2 it is said of the mountain of the Lord's house that "all nations shall flow unto it." The "mountain of the Lord's House" is the church. What is said of it was to take place in the last days, which is the present Christian dispensation (Heb. 1:2). Not only the Jews, but men of all nations are now included in God's church. The worship of the true God is becoming worldwide. "The earth

shall be full of the knowledge of the Lord, as the waters cover the sea" (Isa. 11:9). It is no longer confined to the Israelitish nation, but is now the heritage of all nations. Such an interpretation of these texts has New Testament support.

2. **Universal Peace, Blessings, and Prosperity**—The question is sometimes asked, When shall men "beat their swords into plowshares, and their spears into pruning-hooks?" (Isa. 2:4). According to the context, this is to take place among those who are in God's church. Regeneration makes men peaceable. The same idea is expressed in the prediction of peace among animals (Isa. 11:6-9). "They shall not hurt nor destroy in all my holy mountain," which means the church. Through salvation men are made peaceable. In Isaiah 35:1 is the statement that "the desert . . . shall blossom as the rose." In verse 6 we read, "In the wilderness shall waters break out, and streams in the desert." But when shall this be? In that same verse and the preceding one is the prediction that "the eyes of the blind shall be opened, and the ears of the deaf shall be unstopped. Then shall the lame man leap as an hart, and the tongue of the dumb sing." Jesus' answer to the messengers of John the Baptist is practically an application of the text in Isaiah 25 to his own time. Doubtless the beautiful words of the prophet are a figurative representation of the blessings of the kingdom of Christ at the present time.

Space does not allow a consideration of other texts of Scripture which premillenarians frequently interpret in support of their theory. What has been said under "Hermeneutic Principles" and the examples of interpretation in foregoing pages sufficiently show, not only that another than the premillenarian interpretation is reasonable, but also the correct one. Certainly the many conclusive arguments which show the falsity of the theory are exclusive of any strained interpretations of texts in support of it.

NOTES

*Published by Gospel Trumpet Co., Anderson, Ind.

Chapter III

CHRIST'S SECOND ADVENT AND ITS CONCOMITANTS

The great events of Christian eschatology are the second advent of Christ, the resurrection of the dead, the general judgment, and the end of the world. Like all future events, the reality of these cannot be naturally known. Yet we have *good* ground for our belief in them in the many predictions of their occurrence in the Scriptures. The extent to which we may know the order of events at Christ's advent and their nature in detail is determined by the nature and purpose of Scripture prophecy.

Not uncommonly have interpreters of the biblical prophecies assumed that those predictions were of the nature of inverted history by which God has given to us a plan in detail of all the future events there predicted. Such interpreters, in whose ranks are many premillenarians, set forth elaborate schemes of eschatological events, describing in detail the several stages of the process, often by means of complex diagrams, and frequently going so far as to set the time when Christ will come. That some of these are erroneous has been shown by the failure of their accomplishment at the time set. Prophecy is not primarily for the purpose of instruction. Evidently it does afford a certain amount of instruction, but such is subordinate to its primary purpose, which is moral impression.

Much may be known of the nature of unfulfilled prophecy relative to Christ's second advent, and prophecy in general, by a careful study of that which relates to his first advent, which has been fulfilled. Concerning the first advent of Christ, it was predicted that he would be a prophet like unto Moses, a priest greater than Aaron, and a king mightier than David. He was to reign in righteousness and great glory, and wonderful works were to be accomplished. Viewing those predictions in the light of their fulfillment, it is clear that they have been fulfilled in detail in a wonderful manner. But until they were fulfilled but few of the details were ever correctly understood even by the most spiritually-minded. With all the instruction Jesus had given his apostles, they still exptected him to set up an earthly kingdom after his resurrection. But the failure of the devout Jew properly to understand

those prophecies of Jesus' first advent did not deprive him of the religious and moral benefit which God intended they should afford. They awakened in him anticipation and hope of future deliverance and by so doing led him to be prepared for the events predicted. So the predictions of the second advent have practical value principally in influencing men to be ready to meet Christ at his coming. The leading purpose of these prophecies is to make a general impression conducive to spiritual excellence, not to furnish us a plan in detail of the future. Much is left in obscurity concerning the second coming and concomitant events.

I. The Second Coming of Christ

We are living between two advents of Christ into this world. At the first he appeared incarnate to reveal the way of salvation and to make atonement for sin. He will come again at some future time in great power and glory to raise the dead, judge the world, and destroy the earth. The questions of special interest in connection with his second advent are concerning the fact, the nature, and the time of his coming.

1. **The Fact of His Coming**—That Christ will come again to the world is the common belief of Christians of all schools of thought. Infidels may scoff and say, "Where is the promise of his coming? for since the fathers fell asleep, all things continue as they were from the beginning of the creation." But those who believe the New Testament have abundant proof that Jesus will surely come again. "If I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you unto myself" (John 14:3). "As the lightning cometh out of the east, and shineth even unto the west; so shall also the coming of the Son of man be" (Matt. 24:27). "The Lord himself shall descend from heaven" (1 Thess. 4:16). "Our conversation is in heaven; from whence also we look for the Savior, the Lord Jesus Christ" (Phil. 3:20). "Unto them that look for him shall he appear the second time without sin unto salvation" (Heb. 9:28). Very many other texts might be cited in proof of the fact of a future advent of Christ into this world. That advent is represented in the Scriptures as necessary to the accomplishment of other important events, especially the resurrection, the judgment, and the end of the world.

2. **The Nature of His Coming**—Though the fact of the Lord's coming is generally held by Christians, yet all do not allow a future personal coming of Christ. This has been denied by those

who favor the "liveral theology." A leading representative of this view, W. N. Clarke, says, "No visible return of Christ to the earth is to be expected" (*An Outline of Christian Theology*, p. 444). He finds the promised coming of Christ in all the different special divine workings since the ascension of Christ to heaven, and especially in the outpouring of the Spirit on the day of Pentecost.

Doubtless the expression "coming of the Lord" is used in the Scripture in other senses than of his personal, visible coming. The disciples saw the "Son of man coming in his kingdom" (Matt. 16:28). At the transfiguration Christ the king was revealed in his majesty though his kingdom was not fully established until Pentecost. In the statement "I will not leave you comfortless: I will come to you" (John 14:18), the coming of the Holy Spirit is doubtless referred to. Also the personal second advent of Christ cannot be meant when in the message to the church of Pergamos he said, "Repent, . . . or else I will come unto thee quickly" (Rev. 2:6). Another text that cannot refer to the second personal advent is Matthew 10:23, "Ye shall not have gone over the cities of Israel, till the Son of man be come." Certainly Christ has often come during the last nineteen hundred years in this sense of special manifestations of his workings. But such a sense of his coming cannot properly be thought of as the only mode of it. The Scriptures also clearly teach a second, personal, visible coming of Christ which is yet future.

As the straining eyes of the wondering disciples saw their ascending Lord rise higher and higher until a cloud finally obscured him from their view, two angels said to them, "Ye men of Galilee, why stand ye gazing up into heaven? this Jesus, which is taken up from you into heaven, shall so come in like manner as ye have seen him go into heaven" (Acts 1:11). As the ascension was visible and personal, so will be his second advent, according to these words. "Hereafter shall ye see the Son of man sitting on the right hand of power, and coming in the clouds of heaven" (Matt. 26:64). "Then shall all the tribes of the earth mourn, and they shall see the Son of man coming in the clouds of heaven with power and great glory" (Matt. 24:30). "Behold, he cometh with clouds; and every eye shall see him, and they also which pierced him: and all kindreds of the earth shall wail because of him" (Rev. 1:7). Only a greatly strained interpretation can find in these texts other than a personal, visible, future coming of Christ. The coming in the clouds, with glory and power, with all the angels, with the spirits

of the righteous dead (1 Thess. 4:14), and "with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God" (1 Thess. 4:16) all are congruous only with a personal coming of Christ.

There can be no doubt that the apostles understood that Christ would return to earth in person. Even rationalistic interpreters admit this, but assume that they were mistaken and consequently were disappointed. The apostles and early Christians were "looking for that blessed home, and the glorious appearing of the great God and our Savior Jesus Christ" (Titus 2:13). "Our conversation is in heaven; from whence also we look for the Savior, the Lord Jesus Christ" (Phil. 3:20). "Unblameable in holiness . . . at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ with all his saints" (1 Thess. 3:13). The visible, personal advent of Christ was the great object of their expectation. They expected this because Jesus had clearly promised it. To interpret the predictions of the second advent of Jesus as a spiritual coming is as unreasonable as it is for modern rationalistic Jews to interpret the predictions of the first coming of Christ as a spiritual coming the way they are now doing. As his first advent was personal, so is the second coming of Christ to be personal.

Matthew 24:34 has been assumed to be opposed to the idea of a second personal coming of Christ. "This generation shall not pass, till all these things be fulfilled." Three events are under consideration in this chapter: the destruction of Jerusalem, the second advent, and the end of the world. Whether it has any bearing on the nature of the second coming is dependent in a measure on whether "all these things" have reference to the second advent, or only to the destruction of Jerusalem. If the latter is meant, then that event occurred forty years later and during the generation living when Jesus spoke these words. But if "all these things" have reference to the second advent, the text still does not bar the idea of a personal advent of Christ. The Greek term rendered "generation" may be translated "race." Then it is a prediction that the Jewish race will endure until the second coming of Christ. Such a prediction is appropriate and harmonious with the context, which represents awful tribulation as coming upon the Jews. Certainly the text is too obscure to furnish a valid ground of objection to the personal advent, which is clear in other texts.

3. **The Time of His Coming**—The time when Christ will return to earth is fully known to God. Being possessed of complete prescience, he must necessarily have knowledge of this as of all

other future events. That he does know it is affirmed by Paul. "He hath appointed a day, in which he will judge the world" (Acts 17:31). To "appoint" means to "determine" or "set."

But while God knows the time of the second coming of Christ, it is known to no man. "Of that day and hour knoweth no man, no, not the angels of heaven, but my Father only" (Matt. 24:36). To most men living when he comes, the advent of Christ will be unexpected. It is not to be preceded by any great change in the natural order of things. "As the days of Noah were, so shall also the coming of the Son of man be. For as in the days that were before the flood they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noah entered into the ark, and knew not until the flood came, and took them all away; so shall also the coming of the Son of man be" (Matt. 24:37-39). In this text the moral state of the world at Christ's coming is not under consideration. It merely shows that as that awful catastrophe came suddenly and without warning, so the second advent will be unexpected by the world at large. "The day of the Lord will come as a thief in the night" (2 Pet. 3:10). It will come when not expected and find many unprepared. A knowledge of the time of the Lord's coming is not important to men. Their ignorance of the time when they will be called upon to give account for their deeds is harmonious with the best conditions of probation. Men ought always to be ready to meet him.

However, the fact that no man knew in Jesus' day when Christ will come is no proof that some of the righteous may not have certain premonitions of his coming immediately before the event. Though the antediluvians were not expecting a flood when it came, yet Noah was divinely informed of it. Jesus' use of this illustration does not necessarily imply that the righteous will be forewarned of Christ's coming, but it is not inharmonious with such an idea. But evidently whatever might be made known to the righteous as to the near approach of the end of the world, it will be inconsistent with proper conditions of probation for the world at large. It will not be such knowledge as will make possible dependable prophecies of the exact time of the end. All such prophecies may well be regarded as unworthy of belief.

4. **The Signs of His Coming**—The discourse in Matthew 24 and 25 is Jesus' answer to the three questions of his disciples "When shall these things be [the destruction of the temple]? and what

shall be the sign of thy coming, and of the end of the world?" (Matt. 24:3). As the disciples evidently thought of these events as simultaneous, so Jesus answered the questions without indicating clearly in all cases of which event he spoke. He gave some practical information about the sign of the destruction of Jerusalem and urged his disciples to flee from the city when that sign was seen. But no clear sign was given by him by which the near approach of the end of the world may be known. Jesus rather devoted the larger part of his discourse to warning them always to be ready, for the time of his coming they could not know.

There are, however, in various places in the New Testament predictions of events to take place before the end of the world. As long as those events have not taken place the end is not yet. This was Paul's argument to the Thessalonians (2 Thess. 2:3-8). Christ was not to come until there first came a "falling away" or an apostasy. Not only in this text, but also in other places, especially in the symbolic prophecies of Daniel and the Revelation, is this great apostasy foretold. In these two books of the Bible and elsewhere are also predictions of a restoration from the apostasy, a time when the gospel light would again shine (Zech. 14:6,7). Again Jesus said, "This gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations; and then shall the end come" (Matt. 24:14).

Doubtless the great apostasy has come. This bar, then, to the advent of Christ does not now exist as in Paul's day. The restoration of truth predicted is also being accomplished. We are now in the "evening time," but the extent to which "it shall be light," or how long the evening time shall continue we have no means of knowing. Now as never before in the history of Christianity is the gospel being preached to all nations. The length of time that will elapse before the world shall be evangelized can only be conjectured. Doubtless the means of travel and communication provided by modern invention will mean much in hastening the spread of the gospel. But we are not told how thorough must be that evangelization of the world, neither can we be certain that the end will come immediately when it is accomplished. Therefore it may be properly said that we cannot determine by any signs except in a very general way the time of Christ's second coming.

II. The General Resurrection

1. **The Fact of a General Resurrection** —The doctrine of a resur-

rection of the dead is commonly believed by Christians, though there are differences of understanding concerning what is signified by the expression. No doctrine has a surer basis in the Scriptures than has this. The words "general resurrection" have reference to the resurrection of all the dead, both the wicked and the righteous, as distinguished from the resurrection of Christ, of others by Jesus or holy men of the past, or of a resurrection of the righteous first and of the wicked at a later time. A general resurrection is taught by the Bible. "Many of them that sleep in the dust of the earth shall awake, some to everlasting life, and some to shame and everlasting contempt" (Dan. 12:2). "The hour is coming, in the which all that are in the graves shall hear his voice, and shall come forth; they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of damnation" (John 5:28, 29). "There shall be *a* resurrection of the dead, both of the just and unjust" (Acts 24:15). All these texts clearly teach a general resurrection. The same truth is definitely implied in "at the last day" (John 6:39, 40, 44, 54). There is no day after the last day, and evidently no resurrection can take place a thousand years after the last day. But the singleness of the resurrection has been already shown in the preceding chapter and need not be further discussed here.

The resurrection will take place coincident with the second coming of Christ. "When the Son or man shall come in his glory, and all the holy angels with him, then shall he sit upon the throne of his glory: and before him shall be gathered all nations: and he shall separate them one from another, as a shepherd divideth his sheep from his goats" (Matt. 25:31,32). That the dead will be raised at the time of the second advent is clear from 1 Thessalonians 4:16, also 1 Corinthians 15:23. These two texts and the whole of 1 Corinthians 15 discuss particularly the resurrection of the righteous, because conditions required the discussion of only that, but with the singleness of the resurrection proved, these texts for the most part are applicable to the subject of the general resurrection.

The fact of the resurrection is clearly taught by revelation, but cannot be otherwise known. All attempts to show that reason requires it are fruitless. It cannot properly be reasoned that the resurrection of the body is necessary to the future life of the soul. Neither may it be properly said that because the body is a sharer in probation, it must therefore be raised in order to share in future

retribution. The body is but an instrument of the spirit and in no wise responsible for the acts done by it. Though reason cannot furnish evidence of a resurrection, yet with the Scripture supporting the doctrine it may readily be reasoned that it is advantageous in making more real to the average person the truth of future existence and in inspiring hope of life hereafter.

2. **The Nature of the Resurrected Bodies**—The resurrected body is a material body, though it is greatly different from natural bodies in that it is immortalized and glorified. If that be not a material body which is to exist in the future, then there is no resurrection. The very idea of resurrection implies that that be raised up which has fallen down or died. The spirit does not die, but has continuous conscious existence after death; therefore it cannot be the subject of the resurrection from the dead. Only the body dies; therefore only it can be raised from the dead. If it be objected that "it is sown a natural body; it is raised a spiritual body," let it be said in reply that it is spiritual only as to state and as distinguished from the "natural body." The resurrection is a transformation, not a transubstantiation, as would be true if the essence of the resurrected body were spirit rather than matter. Also if it were of the same essence with the spirit, then would the spirit be incorporated in a spirit.

The resurrection of Christ is both a proof of the fact and an example of the nature of the general resurrection. "Now is Christ risen from the dead, and become the first-fruits of them that slept" (1 Cor. 15:20). His dead body was laid in the tomb. When he was resurrected that body disappeared from the tomb. It, not another body, was raised from the dead, as was evident from the scars from the nails and from the spear in it. It was a material body that could be known through the senses of sight and touch, as only matter can be known.

The entire fifteenth chapter of 1 Corinthians is devoted to the discussion of the fact of the resurrection and the nature of the resurrected body. It is addressed to Grecian Christians who were meeting the Gnostic philosophy. This philosophy assumed that matter is essentially evil and that disembodied spirits are much happier without bodies; therefore it was said "there is no resurrection of the dead." In answering the objectors' question, "With what body do they come?" Paul does not disallow the materiality of the resurrected body, as he would have done had such an

admission been according to the truth, but he rather shows that the body is so changed that it ceases to possess objectionable qualities. "It is sown in corruption; it is raised in incorruption; it is sown in dishonor; it is raised in glory; it is sown in weakness; it is raised in power; it is sown a natural body; it is raised a spiritual body" (vv. 42-44).

We can know but little concerning the essential nature and powers of the resurrected body. We have nothing in experience with which to compare it. The Scripture tells us somewhat concerning Jesus' resurrected body, but we have no means of knowing how much of the phenomena recorded of it is to be attributed to its essential nature and what was the result of his divine power such as he displayed before his crucifixion, as when he walked on the water. Neither do we know what changes may have occurred in it at the ascension. His being able to enter a room with the doors closed and to vanish similarly may have been in spite of the essential nature of his body. We know the resurrected bodies will be immortal; "Neither can they die any more" (Luke 20:36). Matter as we now know it is so constituted internally and so conditioned externally that it is subject to dissolution. God will so change the resurrection body as to internal constitution and so condition it that it will be incorruptible. In view of the power of God to do this, the immortality of matter is not impossible. The resurrected body is raised in "glory," whatever that may mean. It may reasonably be assumed from the words "It is raised in power" that the resurrected body will be free from all defects and mutilations. Christ's body bearing the scars was probably an exception for a special purpose.

3. **The Question of Identity**—In some sense the resurrection body will be identical with the body which is placed in the grave. If the body in which we die is not the subject of the resurrection, then that future body will not be a resurrected body, but a new creation. But the Scriptures teach a resurrection of dead bodies, not a transmigration of spirits to newly created bodies. That this is true was exemplified in Christ, who was the first fruits of them that slept. His dead body which was laid in the tomb was raised to live again. Jesus said to those who required a sign, "Destroy *this* body, and in three days I will raise *it* up again." He did not say he would find or create another body if the first were destroyed.

But there may be distinguished an absolute identity and also a

proper identity. An absolute identity requires every particle of which the body is composed at a particular time. A proper identity requires only such a degree of sameness as is true of the body at widely separated periods of the present life. We are told that each seven years throughout life every atom in the body is exchanged for another. If we meet a friend after a lapse of ten or twenty years we recognize him though he has an entirely new body as to the matter of which it is composed. Yet in a proper sense he possesses the same body as formerly. It is practically identical as to shape, size, and appearance. It is identical in a real sense. This at least illustrates the possibility of practical identity of the resurrection body with that which dies without its being absolutely identical.

III. The Final Judgment

1. **Truth of a Future Judgment** Almost no religious idea, unless it be the truth of the Divine existence, has been more generally believed by all men than that of a future judgment. Underlying this truth are the ideas of the justice of God, his moral government, and human probation. The very nature of probation is such that the execution of judgment is implied. That judgment cannot be executed in full until the close of probation is also implied. Fully to punish sin during the probationary period would be to cause men to refrain from sin for fear of punishment rather than from love for God and righteousness. A future judgment beyond this life is a requirement of reason especially because of the lack of a full execution of justice in the present state. The righteous do not always receive in this life the reward of their righteousness, nor are the wicked fully punished according to their iniquity. Because justice is not accomplished here, there will be a time of judgment beyond this life.

The Scriptures very definitely set forth the fact of a future judgment. "The Lord knoweth how to deliver the godly out of temptations, and to reserve the unjust unto the day of judgment to be punished" (2 Pet. 2:9). "He hath appointed a day, in the which he will judge the world in righeousness by that man whom he hath ordained" (Acts 17:31). "We shall all stand before the judgment seat of Christ" (Rom. 14:10). "It shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom in the day of judgment, than for thee" (Matt. 11:24). The people of Sodom had long since died, but Jesus here represents their judgment as yet future. It will be coincident with the advent of Christ. The most elaborate and specific account of

the judgment given in the Bible is that contained in Matthew 25:31-46, where it is represented as taking place immediately following the second coming of Christ. "The Son of man shall come in the glory of his father with his angels; and then he shall reward every man according to his works" (Matt. 16:27). "The Lord Jesus Christ, who shall judge the quick and the dead at his appearing and his kingdom" (2 Tim. 4:1).

The judgment will take place after the general resurrection. "For the hour is coming, in the which all that are in the graves shall hear his voice, and shall come forth; they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of damnation" (John 5:28, 29). The distribution of reward and punishment subsequent to the resurrection implies the judgment. "And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God; and the books were opened: and another book was opened, which is the book of life: and the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works. And the sea gave up the dead which were in it; and death and hell delivered up the dead which were in them: and they were judged, every man according to their works" (Rev. 20:12, 13). The statement that the sea gave up the dead which were in it implies the resurrection. Subsequent to that the judgment is said to occur. It is to occur at the end of the world. "Let both grow together until the harvest: and in the time of harvest I will say to the reapers, Gather ye together first the tares, and bind them in bundles to burn them: but gather the wheat into my barn. . . . The harvest is the end of the world. . . . So shall it be at the end of the world: the angels shall come forth, and sever the wicked from among the just" (Matt. 13:30, 39, 49).

It is not a protracted process, but a definite time, a *day*. "Day" here signifies a definite time whether it be longer or shorter than twenty-four hours. "Every idle word that men shall speak, they shall give account thereof in the day of judgment" (Matt. 12:36). Several of the foregoing texts describe it as being a "day."

Various unscriptural theories are held concerning the judgment: (1) that the day of judgment is the gospel dispensation; (2) that the judgment of each individual is God's rule over him throughout this life; (3) that the judgment day is a future millennial age when Christ will judge the world in the sense of ruling over it; (4) that the only judgment is the natural consequence of good and evil in

the sense of reward and punishment; (5) and the rationalistic view that there will be no time of general manifestation of righeousness, but that judgment consists only of rewarding or punishing men. The Scripture texts cited sufficiently refute all these theories.

2. **Nature of the Final Judgment**—The future judgment will be a general judgment in the sense that all men, both good and evil, will be judged at the same time. No rational evidence of a general judgment is possible, but the Scriptures are replete with such proofs. Several texts concerning the future judgment already quoted represent it as a general judgment. This is especially clear in the discourse of Jesus recorded in Matthew 25:31-46. "When the Son of man shall come in his glory, and all the holy angels with him, then shall he sit upon the throne of his glory: and before him shall be gathered all nations: and he shall separate them one from another, as a shepherd divideth his sheep from the goats: and he shall set the sheep on his right hand, but the goats on the left. Then shall the King say unto them on his right hand, Come, ye blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world. . . . Then shall he say also unto them on the left hand, Depart from me, ye cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels" (vv. 31-34, 41). Certainly these words are intelligible only as interpreted of a general judgment.

We are dependent principally upon the foregoing words of Jesus and upon the description given in Revelation 20:11-15 for whatever we may know concerning the manner of the final judgment. In both texts the judgment is represented as being conducted as court trials were commonly conducted by Oriental kings and rulers of that time. The judge, Christ, is to sit upon a great white throne of glory. As officers of the law arrest men and bring them before the judge, so the angels will bring all men before Christ for judgment. Rewards and punishments are meted out according to their works and the Revelator represents them as judged "out of the books." To what extent are these descriptions figurative and to what extent do they describe the actual manner of the final judgment? Doubtless the account in Revelation 20 is symbolic as is the Book of Revelation in general. The account by Jesus in Matthew 25 is probably best understood as a parable or a figurative representation. There has been much speculation in the past concerning the manner in which the judgment should be arranged so the

countless millions of earth shall be able to gather before the throne of the judge. That throne has usually been assumed to be visible from a large portion of the earth, as is the sun. But this is only speculation. That any such literal process of adjudication as described will take place in which the judge will converse with the different groups is doubtful. These descriptions of the judgment scene are designed to teach great moral truths, not the outward form of the proceedings. Doubtless those descriptions set forth the truth of a real judgment and are calculated to make a deep impression on men's minds as to the solemnity of it, but only speculation is possible as to the exact manner of it, and speculation is useless.

Christ will be the judge. "The Father judgeth no man, but hath committed all judgment unto the Son" (John 5:22). It is appropriate that he who is the Savior of men and who died to save them should be their judge. He who was tempted in all points like as we are, who is qualified to sympathize with us and yet is infinite in all perfections, is well qualified justly to judge the world. The subjects of the judgment are all men. Probably the evil angels who are delivered "into chains of darkness, to be reserved unto judgment" (2 Pet. 2:4) will be judged at the time men are judged.

3. **Object of the Final Judgment**—The question may well be asked, If immediately after death retribution comes upon men, if the righteous are comforted in Paradise as was Lazarus, the beggar, and if the wicked are tormented in hell as was the rich man, then what can be the value of a general judgment? Doubtless these retributions are according to men's characters; consequently character must be known to God and to the individual who is rewarded or punished at the time of his death. Therefore, the final judgment cannot properly be thought of as a time for the ascertainment of character. Probably the object of it is not revealed. We are assured of the fact of a general judgment when Christ comes, and we believe in it because it is taught by the Scriptures. We believe in it even if we cannot explain it.

Though we may be unable to give all the reasons for a general judgment and possibly not the principal ones, yet some reasons for it are apparent. It will be a time, not for the ascertainment of character, but for the manifestation of it. Then God will assign *just* retribution. It will furnish a declaration of the uprightness of God to all moral beings as does the death of Christ now. A general

judgment is unnecessary to the distribution of just reward and punishment. All of that might be effected between God and the individual alone. But for the full and complete exhibition and proclamation of divine justice toward all moral beings, fully to make known the glory of the divine administration, a general judgment is important.

4. **Standards of the Final Judgment**—Jesus said of those who rejected his words, "The word that I have spoken, the same shall judge him in the last day" (John 12:48). Paul said, "For as many as have sinned without law shall also perish without law: and as many as have sinned in the law shall be judged by the law" (Rom. 2:12). The Word of God is the primary standard of judgment. In the nature of things men are obligated to obey whatever commandments God has given them. But they are responsible and amenable to God's law only so far as that law has been given to *them.* Only those to whom the Mosaic law was given shall be judged by it. Only those who know the teachings of the New Testament as the law of God may properly be judged by it. Merely to have lived during the dispensation of one or the other of these laws does not of itself make one amenable to that law. The unevangelized people of the present time are, as were also the non-Hebrew peoples of pre-Christian times, obligated to conform to whatever other laws God may have revealed to them as individuals or as groups, as in the case of the family of Noah, but they are especially to be judged by the law of their moral nature written in their hearts.

But no revealed law can be an absolute standard of judgment, because of human limitations. The mere possession of a copy of the Bible cannot make one amenable to its absolute standard of conduct. The person may lack opportunity to study it or to hear it expounded thoroughly, or he may lack intellectual capacity fully to comprehend its principles and precepts. Also he may lack opportunity to do or to refrain from doing what it enjoins. The standard by which men will be justified or condemned in the final judgment is identical with that standard by which their consciences approve or disapprove acts in this life. That standard accords with the Word of God only to the extent one has knowledge of the Word, and it is variable as a consequence of one's learning more of the will of God or what one supposes is the will of God. It is not determined by what the individual wishes to believe, but by what he does understand to be the will of God. Therefore God will

approve or condemn men at the final judgment as their consciences approve or condemn them. They will be judged according to their hearts' attitude and the motive for their acts in this life rather than according to the conformity or lack of conformity of the acts with any external standard.

But a special element, the grace of Christ, will furnish a ground of judgment for those who have trusted in it for the pardon of past sins. Though conscience condemned them for violation of its recognized standard of right, yet God will approve them in the final judgment. But the merits of Christ will be a ground of judgment only for those who trust in him. All others will be judged in accordance with that standard which binds their individual consciences.

IV. End of the World

By the end of the world is meant the destruction or future conflagration of the earth. The disposition which shall be made of the earth after the close of the earthly history of the human race is of no theological importance and is only of speculative interest.

1. **Truth of the Destruction of the Earth**—The following are some of the passages of Scripture setting forth the destruction of the earth. "Of old hast thou laid the foundation of the earth: and the heavens are the work of thy hands. They shall perish, but thou shalt endure: yea, all of them shall wax old like a garment; as a vesture shalt thou change them, and they shall be changed" (Psa. 102:25, 26). "The heavens shall vanish away like smoke and the earth shall wax old like a garment" (Isa. 51:6). "Heaven and earth shall pass away" (Matt. 24:35; Mark 13:31; Luke 21:33). "The world that then was, being overflowed with water, perished: but the heavens and earth, which are now, by the same word are kept in store, reserved unto fire against the day of judgment and perdition of ungodly men. . . . The day of the Lord will come as a thief in the night; in the which the heavens shall pass away with a great noise, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat, the earth also and the works that are therein shall be burned up. . . . Nevertheless we, according to his promise, look for a new heaven and a new earth, wherein dwelleth righteousness" (2 Pet. 3:6-13). "I saw a great white throne, and him that sat on it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away; and there was found no place for them" (Rev. 20:11). "I saw a new heaven and a new earth: for the first heaven and the first earth were passed away; and there was no more sea" (Rev. 21:1).

Even though some of these texts could be interpreted as referring to great revolutions in church and state, yet evidently that by Peter must be understood literally. He places the earth's future destruction by fire in distinct antithesis with its former destruction by water. As the one was a literal destruction by literal water, so the other will be a literal destruction by literal fire. With this evidence that this text represents a literal destruction of the earth, the fact so established becomes proper ground for the literal interpretation of other texts teaching a destruction of the earth.

The time of the destruction of the earth is to be when Christ comes again (2 Pet. 3:4, 10), and at "the day of judgment and perdition of ungodly men" (v. 7).

2. **Extent of the Destruction of the Earth**—The earth is to be "burned up." But this is not saying the matter of which it is composed shall cease to exist. Combustion produces a chemical change in matter, but the matter continues to exist in the form of ashes and gases. When the earth was formerly destroyed by water its materials did not cease to exist. It may be reasoned by analogy that its destruction by fire, which is described as an analogous event, does not mean annihilation. The earth and heavens are to "pass away." This expression might be understood to mean annihilation, but not necessarily. Many material things are said to pass away that are only destroyed as to their physical or chemical form. There is no proof either in the Scriptures or in experience that any substance which God created has ever been annihilated.

However, the Scriptures may without violence be interpreted to mean that the earth will be annihilated. If the natural law of the indestructibility of matter be appealed to, it may be replied that in the destruction of the earth natural law will be transcended. Certainly he who created matter is well able to cause it to cease to exist if he so chooses. Whether the destruction of the earth is an annihilation of its substance or only a destruction of its orderly forms in probably not revealed and is therefore unknowable by us. Not a few of the church fathers and reformers did not understand the destruction of the earth to mean the annihilation of its matter.

Another question in connection with the extent of the destruction to follow the judgment is whether the whole material universe will pass away. The heaven and the earth are to pass away. The term "heaven" may include the material universe or it may include merely what pertains to our earth. Thoughtful minds find difficulty

in believing the whole vast physical universe was created merely to furnish a place for man's probation, and that when that short period is ended it will all be destroyed.

Evidently we do well not to be very dogmatic concerning an event for the knowledge of which we are entirely dependent upon Scripture prophecy, and which, as already shown, is not intended to give full information as to the nature of events. The past fulfillments of Scripture prophecies have often been very different from what men were led to expect by a literal interpretation. In other instances such prophecies have been literally fulfilled in minute detail. Doubtless we cannot be certain as to the details of the destruction of the earth, but of the reality of the event there need be no question.

CHAPTER IV

THE FINAL DISPENSATION

The logical culmination of true Christian theology is the doctrine of future retribution. Future punishment of the wicked and reward of the righteous are implied in many of the doctrinal truths already discussed. They are implied in the justice of God, the moral nature of man, his probation, the atonement of Christ, the offer of salvation, the duty of the church to propagate the gospel, future existence, the second coming of Christ, and the final judgement. If all these are true, the doctrine of future reward and punishment must be true. But more direct and specific evidences of future retribution are available.

I. Future Punishment

1. **Proofs of Future Punishment**—To shrink from the idea of future punishment because of its fearful character is human. But to deny the reality of future punishment because of the awfulness is as unreasonable as to shut one's eyes to the realities of sin, oppression, pain, and misery of this world because of their terribleness. The moral excellence of men here requires that they have in view the solemn truth of punishment hereafter. The doctrine of future punishment is supported by both scriptural and rational proofs.

The Scriptures represent the punishment of the wicked as taking place after the close of this life. "The rich man also died, and was buried; and in hell he lift up his eyes, being in torments" (Luke 16:22, 23). The wicked will be punished when Christ comes again. "For the Son of man shall come in the glory of his Father with his angels; and then he shall reward every man according to his works" (Matt. 16:27). "The Lord Jesus shall be revealed from heaven with his mighty angels, in flaming fire taking vengeance on them that know not God, and that obey not the gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ; who shall be punished with everlasting destruction from the presence of the Lord, and from the glory of his power; when he shall come to be glorified in his saints" (2 Thess. 1:7-10). The future punishment of the wicked will be coincident with the blessedness of the righteous.

The wicked will be punished after the general resurrection. "And many of them that sleep in the dust of the earth shall awake, some

to everlasting life, and some to shame and everlasting contempt" (Dan. 12:2). "The hour is coming, in the which all that are in the graves shall hear his voice, and shall come forth; they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of damnation" (John 5:28,29).

The wicked will be punished after the final judgment. "Then shall he say unto them of the left hand, Depart from me, ye cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels" (Matt. 25:41). "And these shall go away into everlasting punishment" (v. 46). "For as many as have sinned without the law shall perish without law . . . in the day when God shall judge the secrets of men by Jesus Christ according to my gospel" (Rom. 2:12, 16). The wicked will be punished after the destruction of the earth. "The harvest is the end of the world; and the reapers are the angels. . . . The Son of man shall send forth his angels, and they shall gather out of his kingdom all things that offend, and them which do iniquity; and shall cast them into a furnace of fire: there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth" (Matt. 13:39-42). "But the heavens and the earth, which are now, by the same word are kept in store, reserved unto fire against the day of judgment and perdition of ungodly men" (2 Pet. 3:7).

Reason also furnishes conclusive evidence that punishment awaits the wicked beyond this life, for which reason not uncommonly have non-Christian religions strongly supported the doctrine of future punishment. Government implies law, and law implies the infliction of penalty for its violation. The truth of a divine moral government is shown by man's inherent sense of moral obligation. The fact of divine government, in the light of God's perfect holiness, implies, not only an exact rewarding of righteousness, but also a punishment of sin in exact proportion to the degree of its sinfulness. If justice is not thus perfectly executed in the world, then it must be done in the future life.

That men are not rewarded or punished in this life according to their deserts must be evident to any observing mind. Frequently the righteous spend their lives in suffering and poverty while the wicked man lives and dies in health and prosperity. Punishment may be suffered only in three modes: in body, in mind, and in estate.

As to physical suffering, it is usually of the nature of legal penalties or by visitation of God. Civil government often fails for

various reasons to bring the violator of its laws to justice. Because of human limitations, its inflictions are not always according to exact justice. Innocent men are sometimes imprisoned or executed. Many sins, such as blasphemy, are of such a nature that their perpetrators are not amenable to the civil law and therefore are not punished by it. Physical suffering is evidently many times not of a penal nature, and certainly men are not diseased or injured physically according to their deserts. Some of the most godly persons are diseased and suffer greatly throughout life. Men's moral character cannot be known by the state of their physical health. Very wicked men sometimes live many years, without ever knowing disease or physical pain.

Doubtless sin brings a measure of mental suffering in this life, but often that is not in proportion to the degree of guilt. Present remorse for sin cannot be the full measure, nor even any considerable part, of the just penalty for sin. This is evident from the fact that a man with a tender conscience who commits but one sin feels great remorse, while another whose conscience is hardened persists in the most heinous sins throughout life with little if any feeling of remorse. Usually the more one sins the less remorse he feels.

Neither can men's characters be known by the amount of their earthly possessions. It is true poverty may sometimes overtake one as a consequence of one's sins. But frequently evil men prosper in material possessions as did Dives, while the righteous, like the beggar Lazarus, live and die in poverty. Doubtless exact justice is not meted out to individuals according to their deserts in this world. To reward and punish men here in such a sense that every sin would immediately bring the exact reward or punishment it deserves would be incongruous with present probation and subversive of it in a considerable measure. Because full and exact justice is not executed in this life, the truth of the perfect divine government requires the punishment of sin hereafter.

2. **Nature of Future Punishment**—The future punishments of the wicked are represented as being by "everlasting fire" (Matt. 25:41), by their being cast out into a lake of "fire and brimstone" (Rev. 21:8) or a "furnace of fire" (Matt. 13:42), into "outer darkness" (Matt. 8:12), or into "blackness of darkness" (Jude 13), as "no rest day nor night" (Rev. 14:11), as the "second death" (Rev. 21:8), and as "eternal destruction from the face of the Lord" (2 Thess. 1:9, ASV).

The question which now arises is, Are these literal descriptions indicating the actual form of punishment of the wicked or are they figurative? To regard them as being figurative expressions is not to deny the reality of future punishment. There is no more reason to suppose the fire of hell is literal than to suppose heaven has streets paved with literal gold. There appears to be no more ground for assuming the fire of future punishment is literal fire than for supposing the worm which does not die is a literal worm. The purpose of the Scripture expressions is to represent the awfulness of future punishment. A comparison of the different representations show that they cannot be literal, because some of them are mutually exclusive of each other. Darkness and fire cannot be coexistent, for the nature of fire is to dispel darkness; neither can that punishment be literal death or cessation of being and yet be "no rest." The idea of eternal destruction is likewise not literally consistent with itself.

Future punishment is to be regarded in three aspects: (1) the loss of infinite good; (2) the suffering naturally resulting from sin; and (3) positive penal infliction. The loss of good includes the loss of all the good things of the present life, exclusion from the presence of God and the possibility of his spiritual blessings now possible, the withdrawal of the Spirit of God, through whose agency alone salvation is possible, consequent utter reprobation and hopelessness of separation from all good, and especially the loss of the eternal blessedness of heaven. If future punishment consisted only in this loss it would be infinite. But it also includes positive suffering. The finally lost will be the slave of his unrestrained sinful passions, will be tormented by the malignity and selfishness of evil associates totally abandoned to wickedness, will suffer the remorse of a guilty conscience, and will be tormented by endless despair.

Not a few persons assume that the natural consequence of sin is the full measure of future punishment. Such a view might be harmonized with the Scriptures, but it seems more in harmony with the representations of that punishment as set forth in the Scriptures to regard it as including positive penal inflictions also. Whatever these are they are not physical torments, for the fire of hell is prepared for the punishment of the devil and his angels, who have no physical bodies. This is another reason why it cannot be literal fire. Doubtless we cannot know the exact nature of the positive future punishment for sin, therefore should not be dog-

matic, but should leave it to be determined by a just God at the proper time. The repulsive overstatements of Christian apologists have too often resulted in the revulsion of many from the whole idea of future punishment.

Future punishment, though infinite in duration, is not infinite in degree nor is it infinite at any particular time. Endlessness of future punishment does not in any sense require that it be infinite in intensity, as the endlessness of the line of the circumference of a circle does not mean it is infinite in breadth. That future punishment is not infinite in intensity is certain from the scriptural teaching of degrees of punishment. The degree of one's guilt is determinative of the degree of one's punishment. Likewise the degree of the individual's guilt is determined by the degree of his understanding of the divine requirements. "That servant, which knew his lord's will, and prepared not himself, neither did according to his will, shall be beaten with many stripes. But he that knew not, and did commit things worthy of stripes, shall be beaten with few stripes" (Luke 12:47, 48). Jesus said of Capernaum, "It shall be *more tolerable* for the land of Sodom in the day of judgment, than for thee" (Matt. 11:24).

Future punishment will consist of conscious suffering, not annihilation. We have previously shown that immortality is not a gift of divine grace through Christ and conditional on faith in him, therefore peculiar to believers. This theory of conditional immortality looks for support to those texts of Scripture which represent future punishment as eternal death and everlasting destruction. These texts have already been explained to mean, not cessation of conscious being, but rather a wretched and impoverished state of being. The idea of annihilation of the wicked at death is incompatible with that of everlasting punishment and especially with those references to the worm that "dieth not" and the smoke of torment ascending forever. The theory of the extinction of being as constituting the future punishment of the wicked is excluded by the truth of degrees of punishment. If punishment were annihilation at death all would suffer alike and degrees of suffering would be excluded.

According to one form of the annihilation theory, the powers of the wicked are gradually weakened because of sin until they finally cease to be. This assumes that sin is necessarily destructive of intellectual powers, which is not according to experience. Men's

moral characters cannot be judged by the degree of their intellectuality. Some of the world's brightest intellects have led vicious lives. Also, if this theory were true, the greater one's sin the quicker he would be freed from punishment.

Another view of annihilation assumes that the wicked will not be annihilated at death, but will first suffer according to their deserts and then be annihilated. In separating the punishment from annihilation this theory denies endless punishment and therefore is unscriptural.

3. **Place of Future Punishment**—The Scriptures represent the future punishment of the wicked as being in a place which is called "hell" in the common English Bible. In the Revised Version the original Hebrew word *sheol* and the Greek terms ᾅδης (*hades*) and γέ-εννα (*gehenna*) are usually retained either in the text or the margin. The theory that these terms refer merely to the grave or to the valley of the Son of Hinnom outside Jerusalem is too unscholarly to deserve any extended notice or serious refutation. Even a casual reading of the Scriptures affords abundant disproof of it. The inspired writers employed these figures and such words as their language afforded to designate the place of the eternal abode of the wicked.

Though spirits are immaterial, they are capable of localization. Human spirits in this life are localized in physical bodies. Demon spirits are likewise localized in the bodies of demoniacs. Even disembodied spirits must dwell in some place. As certainly as the righteous will enjoy blessedness in a place called heaven, so the wicked will be punished in a place we call hell. Doubtless hell is a condition, but it is also a place. The wicked shall be turned or cast into it (Ps. 9:17; Matt. 10:28; Mark 9:45).

Hell as a place must correspond to the condition of those who go there. It is represented as being a place of fire, of outer darkness, and an abyss, but as already shown, these are but figures. We cannot look beyond the figures by which inspiration has been pleased to represent it to us. To attempt a description of its actual nature would be but speculation. Yet it is certainly a literal place as is heaven.

As to its location we are not informed by the Scriptures and cannot know otherwise. The Bible represents heaven as being up and hell as being down. That heaven is away from this earth is evident from the fact that Jesus went up or away from it at the

ascension. Hell is doubtless best thought of as away from the earth. It is represented by the Scriptures as being down, in accommodation to the ancient theory that the earth is flat and in conformity with the prevalent Jewish and pagan conceptions of the location of the place of the spirits of the dead.

4. **Duration of Future Punishment**—The duration of the punishment of the wicked is represented in the Scriptures by the expressions "everlasting punishment" (Matt. 25:46), "everlasting fire" (v. 41), and "everlasting destruction" (2 Thess. 1:9). The words αἰών (*aion*) and αἰώνιος (*aionios*) rendered "everlasting" in these texts and eternal elsewhere are sometimes said not to mean endless duration. We allow they are sometimes used to express merely a very long period, or the greatest duration possible to the subject to which they are applied. But though they do not etymologically necessitate endless duration, yet this is their true sense, and so are they used in the Scriptures. Because they express the longest possible duration of the subject to which they are applied, when they are applied to the immortal soul they mean endless duration. No words afforded by the Greek language express the idea of endless duration when applied to the punishment of the wicked if these do not. They are used to express the endless duration of God (1 Tim. 1:17), of Christ (Heb. 13:8), and of the Holy Spirit (Heb. 9:14). Doubtless in these connections they are properly understood to mean eternal duration. They are also employed to express the duration of the future blessedness of the righteous. If the happiness in the future life is endless, the punishment of sinners there is also of endless duration.

Other biblical statements also clearly imply eternal punishment for the wicked. The fire of hell is described as "unquenchable" (Luke 3:17), and as "the fire that never shall be quenched" (Mark 9:45). These statements can only mean that the punishment of the wicked never ends. This is certain from the added expression "where their worm dieth not" (v. 48). The endlessness of future punishment is also implied in the statement of Jesus that between the rich man and Lazarus was fixed an impassable gulf. It is further implied in the teaching that it had been better for the sinner if he had never been born. If after a period of suffering, however long, an eternity of blessedness awaits the wicked, then their being born is, after all, a blessing of inestimable value.

That the Scriptures teach endless punishment of the wicked is

evinced by the unanimity with which Christians in all ages have so believed. This doctrine has been stedfastly held by the Greek and Roman Churches and by all great historical Protestant bodies. The most notable modern theological writers unite in support of it. This can be accounted for only on the ground that the doctrine is unmistakably clear in the Scriptures. Certainly Christians do not believe this doctrine because of any hardheartedness or wish that any of their fellow beings should so suffer.

Men shrink from the idea of eternal punishment. That generous souls should do so is but natural. It is not evidence that they love sin or are enemies of righteousness. That God has similar feelings seems probable from the many expressions of yearning, entreaty, and warning which indicate his reluctance to punish sinners. But such feelings are also experienced by many relative to the infliction of penalty by civil or other human governments. If the infliction of penalty is to be determined by such feelings, all government must be subverted.

We who are ourselves the subjects of the divine government, and whose knowledge of the conditions and requirements of the moral universe is so limited, are not qualified to judge independently of the Scriptures as to what is the just penalty of sin. Much of perplexity exists in regard to government in all its human forms. Not only is this true in determining the penalties for violation of civil law, but even in the government of a family of little children most parents find much perplexity relative to punishment for wrong doing. Surely if in these things government is a problem to us, we are not qualified to instruct God concerning the conduct of the moral universe. A fact of much significance in this connection is that the Scriptures are thoroughly self-consistent in representing both the sacrifice of Christ in atonement for sin and the future punishment for sin from which that sacrifice is intended to save as being equally infinite. According to both, God regards sin as being of infinite demerit.

Possibly a rational justification of eternal punishment is impossible because of the limitations of human knowledge. Thomas Aquinas and others have reasoned that, because sin is committed against an infinite being, it must be of infinite demerit. In our opinion this theory fails of its purpose because it equalizes all sins, while the Scriptures make the degree of their sinfulness to depend upon the degree of the understanding of the will of God by him

who sins. The correct measure of sin is subjective, not external. Instead of the principle of Aquinas here stated, we might as well reason that, because he who sins is finite, no sin he may commit can have more than finite demerit.

Again it is reasoned that the atonement is limited to this life; therefore, because salvation is not offered in the future life, punishment must be endless. The just duration of punishment is not determined by the offer of grace, but by the extent of one's guilt. The explanation here suggested in justification of endless punishment fails to explain.

A more satisfactory rational justification of eternal punishment is that the moral responsibility of men does not end with this life, but that they become confirmed in wickedness, therefore sin eternally, and consequently deserve to be punished eternally. This makes future punishment to be, not for the sins of this life merely, but for future sinning also. The sins of the present life are the ground only for the beginning of the endless punishment of the future. It is true that the Scriptures do not represent future punishment as being for other than the sins of this life. This may be due, however, to the practical aim of the Scriptures to warn men against persisting in sin here. Yet no rational evidence exists that the lost are morally responsible still and that all are confirmed in sinning so they will always continue to sin. If, however, it be assumed that they are so conditioned that they cannot cease from sin because of a lack of power, their sinning is of necessity and ceases to have demerit.

Like some other great Christian truths, everlasting punishment, though not contradictory to reason, cannot be proved by reason. But, as already shown, it is unmistakably a truth of the Scriptures, and because of this is consistently believed by Christians. A proper preaching of this doctrine is not a hindrance to the progress of Christianity, but is important as a warning to men. Though not the highest motive for the renunciation of sin, yet the fear of punishment is a proper motive, and multitudes who have forsaken sin for this reason have later come to serve God because of supreme love to him. A hard, feelingless preaching of everlasting torment may repel sinners, but a solemn warning against it by one moved by divine love has been and still is effective in awakening and saving men. No exaggeration of physical torments is to be favored, yet the doctrine may properly be presented in biblical figures even without ordinarily stopping to explain they are such.

II. Future Blessedness

1. **The Truth of Future Blessedness**—A happy existence awaits the righteous beyond this life as surely as punishment awaits the wicked. This is a truth of both the Scriptures and reason. In the Scriptures it is represented as being "eternal life" (Matt. 25:46), an "eternal weight of glory" (2 Cor. 4:17), knowledge (1 Cor. 13:8-10), worship (Rev. 19:1), association with holy men and angels (Heb. 12:23), and as communion with God (Rev. 21:3). Future reward is constantly represented in the Bible as the portion of those who faithfully endure present testing. From the divine justice, goodness, and fatherhood we properly reason that rewards await the righteous. The righteous do not get just reward of their goodness here, but many of them suffer much instead, while spending their lives for the glory of God and the benefit of their fellow men. Surely God will not leave such goodness unrewarded. Future reward for righteousness is implied in the idea of present probation. Though the righteous deserve a measure of reward, yet their blessedness hereafter is to be thought of as being largely through God's grace through Christ.

2. **The Place of Future Blessedness**—Future blessedness is to be experienced in heaven. Heaven is certainly a condition, but it is also a place. It is a material place, for only a material place may be the abode of material bodies, which the resurrected bodies of the righteous have been already shown to be. Also the resurrected body of Jesus which ascended to heaven was a material body. The heaven in which these beings with material bodies dwell cannot be merely infinite space. The righteous are not to spend eternity in solitude, but will be associated together and be with God and the angels. To affirm that heaven is a material place is not, however, to say it is gross material such we now know subject to change and disintegration. It may be glorified, incorruptible material similar in nature to that of our resurrected bodies. But even disembodied spirits may be localized. In this life men's spirits are localized in their bodies. Demon spirits and the Holy Spirit are sometimes so localized. The spirit of the dying thief on the cross Jesus said was to go to paradise. The angels and God are localized, in that heaven is their abode. The Scriptures represent heaven as a place under the figures of a house, a mansion, a city, and a new earth.

We cannot know the location of heaven, except that it is somewhere away from this earth. Not a few have assumed that it

will be located on this earth. Such suppose the new heavens and new earth will be constructed from the materials of this earth after its future destruction. Such a view cannot be supported by the Scriptures. They rather represent it as now existing elsewhere. God and the angels now dwell there. Jesus ascended to heaven in the sight of his apostles, and "gazing upward," they watched him go. The righteous "depart" to be with Christ. When Jesus was about to go to heaven, he told his disciples he was going away to prepare a place for them and that he would come again and receive them to that place, that they might be with him. The place is to be prepared before Christ comes again; therefore, this earth cannot be that place.

3. **The Nature of Future Blessedness**—The happiness of the righteous in heaven will consist of various elements. (1) They will be secure from the possibility of being forever lost. (2) They will be free forever from all earthly sorrow and pain. "God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain" (Rev. 21:4). They shall no longer be tempted by sin, nor troubled by sinful surroundings. (3) They shall then know God as they are now known of him. "They shall see his face," and "see him as he is." If present experiences of the glory and love of God give joy unspeakable and full of glory, what must the bliss of heaven be! If here where they "see through a glass darkly," communion with God is indescribably satisfying, what "bliss beyond compare" will the joys of heaven be when they abide forever in God's holy presence! They shall then praise, and worship him perfectly. (4) Also the righteous shall there have happy intercourse and joyful fellowship with holy angels, the patriarchs, prophets, apostles, and all the holy and truly great. If holy fellowships in this life afford great pleasure, eternity in such society will be heaven indeed. (5) Still another element of future blessedness will be the opportunity for indefinite enlargement of all faculties. We may well believe the righteous will live and learn forever there.

What all the other elements of future blessedness will consist of we may not know, but doubtless the beauty of the place will add much to it. The beauty of heaven is represented to us in the Scriptures in figures. The most beautiful things imaginable are employed to represent it. It is represented as a beautiful garden through which flows a "pure river of water of life, clear as crystal."

On each side of the river grows "the tree of life" bearing twelve kinds of fruit each month. Heaven is also represented as being a beautiful house, a mansion which Jesus has gone to prepare and in which he will dwell with his people. It is also represented as a wonderful city, walled according to the ideal of cities in ancient time, with foundations of the most precious stones, walls of jasper, and gates of pearl, while the streets and city are of "pure gold, like unto clear glass." Heaven is also represented as "new heavens and a new earth, wherein dwelleth righteousness" (2 Pet. 3:13).

What the reality is which these wonderful figures represent is probably beyond the capacity of our finite minds to comprehend even if it were literally described. "Eye hath not seen, nor ear heard, neither have entered into the heart of man, the things which God hath prepared for them that love him" (1 Cor. 2:9).

A

Adoption 353
Advent, Christ's second 542
Alford, Dean, bishop and presbyter 441
Angelology 213
Angels 213
  Existence and nature of angels ... 213
  Good angels 215
  Evil angels 217
Animistic superstition not the source of the idea of God 21
Anointing, with oil 415
Anthon, baptism 472
Anthropological Argument for theism 36
Argument from man's intelligence 36
Argument from man's freedom 37
Argument from man's moral nature 37
Argument from man's religious nature 38
Anthropology 224
Antichrist, no personal 529
Antiquity of man 224
Antitheistic theories 41
Apollonarians 286
Apollogetics, Christian 57
  Definition of 57
  Importance of 58
  History of 58
Present-day task of 60
  Nature and classification of evidences 62
Apostasy and restoration of the church 451
  Two aspects of apostasy predicted 451
  Lutheran reformation partial 459
  A partial return to the Bible 459
  Human ecclesiasticism continued 459
  Protestant divisions 460
  A complete restoration 463
A priori argument for theism 39
Arione 294
Arminian theory of sin 273
Assurance of salvation 354
  Fact of assurance 354
  Nature of assurance 355
  Witness of God's Spirit 356
  Witness of our spirits 358
  Assurance in relation to doubt 359
Athanasian Creed 164
Athanasius 164
Atheism 41
  Meaning of 41
  Unreasonableness of 42
  Possibility of 42
Atonement of Christ 298
  Sense of reconciliation 298
  Fact and doctrine of atonement 299
  Theories of pardon without atonement 300
  Biblical statements about atonement 302
  Atonement in the Old Testament sacrifices 312
  Elements in the doctrine of atonement 315
Attributes of God 137
  Nature and classification of God's attributes 139
  Relation of God's Attributes to his essence 140
  Classification of attributes 140
Augustinian theory of sin 272
Augustine, foot-washing 497

B

Baptism, Water 472
  Mode of baptizing 472
  The original word 473
  Prepositions used with "baptize" 474
  Circumstances for baptizing 475
  History of the mode 477
  Practice of the Eastern churches 479
  Evidence of the baptisteries 480
  Objections to immersion considered 480
  Sprinkling and pouring 482
  Trine immersion 483
  Subjects for baptism 484
  Purpose of baptism 488
  Essentials of baptism 489
Baptism with the Holy Spirit 380
  Expressions representtive of it 380
  A definite experience 381
  Distinct from regeneration 381
  Results of the baptism with the Spirit 383
Benefits of the atonement 318
  Unconditional benefits 318
  Conditional benefits 322
Biblical theology 2
Birth, New 346
Bishops 439
Blessedness, Future 567
  Truth of future blessedness 567
  Place of future blessedness 567
Nature of future blessedness 568
Body, Resurrection of the 546

Born again....346
Brenner, baptism....479
Butler, Joseph.... 61

C

Calvinistic predestination....330
Causation, Law of.... 25
Chalcedon, Creed of....286
Chalmers, theory of creation....191
Charismata....391
Christ, Divinity of....170
  Called God....171
  Called Jehovah....173
  Eternal....174
  Immutable....175
  Omniscient....176
  Omnipotent....176
  Creator....177
  Judge of men....177
  Worship acepted by him....178
Christ, Offices of....298
Christ, Person of....283
  Doctrine of Christ's person....283
  Two natures in Christ....286
  Two natures in one person....290
  Christological errors....293
Christ, Predictions concerning.... 97
Christian Evidences.... 57
  Nature and classification.... 62
  Probable not demonstrative.... 62
  Rational and authenticating.... 62
  Main classes of.... 62
  Presumptive evidences.... 63
Christological errors....293
Christology....283
  Elements of the doctrine....284
  Creedal statements....284
Christ's second advent....542
Church, The....423
  Organization of the Church....423
  Sense of the term....423
  Universal church....424
  Local church....425
  Relation to God's kingdom....425
  Time of the church's organization....426
  Figures, representing the church....428
  Nature of its organization....429
  Different forms of church organization....429
  The church divinely organized...430
  Human agencies in its organization....431
  Organization of operative agencies....433
  Church, Government of the....437
  Officers of the church....437
  Divine and human aspects of church government....444
  Nature of ministerial authority...446
  Number and choice of church officers....447
Clarke, W. N., Christ's second coming....543
  Definition of God....140
Coleman, baptism....480
Collateral evidences of Christianity....112
  Effects of Christianity on society....117
  Rapid spread of Christianity....120
Communion supper....490
Conditional benefits of the atonement....322
  Salvation from sin conditional....322
  Special providence through prayer....324
  Future blessedness....325
Conditionality of salvation....322
Conn on embryology and evolution....202
  On origin of species....202
Conscience....244
  Discriminating function....245
  Impulsive....246
  Retributive aspect....247
Constantinopolitan Creed....182
Consubstantiation....494
Conybeare and Howsin, bishops and presbyters....441
Cope, E. D., on evolution....196
Cosmological argument for theism.... 24
Council of Constantinople....165
Create, Sense of the term....187
Creation and evolution....196
Creation, God's work in....185
  Matter created out of nothing...186
  Creative work not necessary to God....188
  The Genesis record....189
  Creative days and geologic periods....189
  Agreement of Moses and science.... 194
Creationism, Theory of....237
Credibility of the New Testament.... 76
  Accepted by those familiar with the events.... 76
  Writers possessed requisites for credibility.... 77
Creedal statements about Christ...284

D

Dana on the order of

creation 194, 195
Darwin, Charles 47
On origin of species 202
Deacons 442
Death, Life after 507
Demoniacs 219
Demonology 217
Demon possession 219
Demons 217
Devils 217
Depravity, a ground for a two-fold cleansing 370
Depravity in the regenerated 371
Depravity, Native 263
Derangement of the moral nature 264
Loss of the Holy Spirit 266
A bent to sin 266
Extent of native depravity 266
Question of total depravity 266
Degree of depravity 267
Proofs of native depravity 267
Depravity of the race 257
Derangement of the moral nature 264
Design argument for theism 28
Objections to 34
Design in nature 30
Dichotomy 231
Dispensation, final 558
Divine physical healing 405
Divine revelation necessary 64
As standard of right 64
For pardon of sin 64
To understand providence and prayer 65
Divine Trinity 162
Divinity of Christ 170
Divine titles 171
Divine attributes 174
Divine works 177
Worship accorded to Christ 178
Divinity of the Holy Spirit 179
Doctrines, Perfect 101
Dogmatic theology 2
Duality of human nature 231

E

Earth, Destruction of the 555
Extent of the destruction of the earth 556
Ebionites 293
Ecclesiasticism, Human 468
Eccesiology 423
Elders, Plurality of, in local church 446
Election 332
Elements of human nature 230
Dual constitution of man 231
Theory of trichotomy 233
How man is superior to the brute 235
End of the world 555
Erroneous sources of theology 8
Errors, Alleged in the Bible 128
Historical 129
Scientific 129
Moral 132
Contradictions 133
Eschatology 507
Ethical attributes of God 141
Eucharist 490
Eutychians 295
Evans, Wm., on inspiration 128
Everlasting punishment 564
Evidences of God's existence 24
Evidences of Divine revelation 57
Evolution, Creation and 196
Evolution not God's method of creation 196
Evolution and the Scriptures irreconcilable 198
Facts reconcilable with progressive creation 200
Objections to the evolution theory 203
Evolution hypothesis 46
Exegetical theology defined 1
Existence of God 17
Rational proofs of 24
Experimental evidences of Christianity 112
Nature of experimental evidences 112
Effects of Christian experience on consciousness 113
Effects of Christian experience on character 114
Effects of Christianity at death 116
External Evidences of Christianity 68

F

Fairhurst on evolution 199, 203
Faith, Salvation by 330
Fall of the race 248
Final perseverance 336
First cause argument for theism 24
Fisher, G. P., growth of the hierarchy 457
Miracles 79
Five points differentiating between Calvinists and Arminians 330
Foot-washing 497
History of foot-washing 497

The command of Jesus 498
Objections considered 500
Significance of foot-washing.....504
Foreknowledge of God 147
Forgiveness of sin.....343
Free Agency 248
Question of freedom vital to theology.....248
Leading theories of the will.....249
Proofs of free will.....250
Objections to free will answered 251
Real freedom 253

G

General judgment.....550
Genetic law mode theory of the transmission of depravity 277
Genuineness of the New Testament 68
Method of showing it 69
Affirmed by the church fathers .. 69
Insured by careful canonization 71
Early adversaries never denied it..... 72
Geologic periods, Creative days and 189
Gift of tongues 394
Gifts of the Spirit 391
Nature of Charismata 391
Not given alike to all 392
When spiritual gifts may be received 393
Glossolalia.....394
Gnostics.....293
God, Definition of 140
Attributes of 140
God, Existence of..... 17
Origin of our idea of 17
Universality of the idea of God 19
Necessity of the idea of God..... 20
Government, Divine, of the world 206
Government of the church 437

H

Hagenbach, baptism 479
Hamilton on the knowledge of God 137
Hands, Laying on of 415
Healing, Divine physical 405
Fact of divine healing 405
Postapostolic healing.....406
A present reality.....407
Reasonableness of divine healing.....408
Nature of divine healing 411
Conditions for healing.....414
Anointing with oil 415
Attitude toward human remedies.....417
Objections to divine healing 418
Heart, New 348
Heaven.....567
Hell 563
Historical theology defined..... 1
Hodge, definition of God 140
Early church creeds 165-66
Inspiration..... 126-27
Holiness of life 360
Holy Spirit 179
Personality of 179
Divinity of.....181
Procession of 182
Human Conditions for Salvation 337
Faith in Christ 338
Repentance 339
Obedience 340
Human nature argument for theism 36
Hume's argument against miracles 81

I

Immersion is baptism 472
Immortality, Question of 239
Man's body created mortal.....239
The Soul is immortal.....240
Immortality of the soul 507
Rational proofs 507
Teaching of the Scriptures 510
Theory of conditional immortality 513
Incarnation, Divine 286
Infant baptism 485
Inspiration of the Scriptures.....124
Fact and nature 124
Proof of inspiration 124
Theories of inspiration 124
True nature of inspiration.....126
Objections to inspiration.....128
Integrity of the New Testament 73
Evidence from ancient manuscripts..... 73
Corroboration of ancient versions and quotations 74
Corruption of the Scriptures not possible..... 75
Intermediate state.....514
Intermediate place 515
Not a state of purgatory 515
Not a state of probation 516
Internal Christian evidences 101
Perfect doctrines.....101

Perfect adaption to man's needs 103
Perfect morals 105
Style and incidental allusions 107
Intuition, the source of the knowledge of the Divine existence 17
Nature of intuitions in general ... 17

J

Jewish theories of inspiration of the Scriptures 125
Predictions concerning the Jews 94
Judgment, Final 550
Truth of a future judgment 550
Nature of the final judgment 552
Object of the final judgment 553
Standards of the final judgment 554
Justification 342
Sense of the term 342
Forgiveness and remission 343
Basis for justification 344

K

Kenotic Christology 296
Kingdom of Christ 523
Nature of Christ's kingdom 523
Predictions of time of its establishment 523
When Christ's kingdom established 526
Knowledge of God,
Possibility of 137
God an object of knowledge 137
Extent of man's knowledge of God 138
How God may be known 138

L

Languages of the Scriptures 108
Last things 507
Le Conte, definition of evolution ... 197
Literary style of the Scriptures 108
Lord's Supper 490
Lutheran Christology 295

M

Main divisions of theological sciences 1
Man, Doctrine of 224
Man, Original state of 241
Primitive man of lofty grade 241
Constituted relatively perfect 241
Not a barbarian 242
In the Divine image 244
Man superior to the brute 235
Man's nature, Constituent elements of 230
Materialism 44
Antitheistic character 44
Fruitless attempt to account for thought 44
Reasoning from analogy defective 45
Matter created out of nothing 186
McClintock and Strong, footwashing 497
Mechanical dictation theory of inspiration 125
Metaphysical attributes of God 141
Unity 141
Spirituality 142
Immutability 143
Eternity 144
Omnipotence 145
Omnipresence 146
Omniscience 147
Method of theology 10
Mill on the knowledge of God 137
Millenarianism 519
History of millenarianism 521
Literal or figurative interpretation 527
Historical interpretation 529
Revelation 20:1-6 530
Objections to millenarianism 533
Premillenarian questions 539
Miller, Hugh, on reconstruction theory of creation 192
On creation and science 194
Miracles as Christian evidence 78
Possibility and probability of miracles 79
Miracles provable by testimony 80
Proofs that miracles occurred 81
Evidential value of miracles 88
Counterfeit miracles 89
Modern miracles 89
Mode of the transmission of original sin 272
Theories of original sin 272
Unscriptural theories of transmission of original sin 273
Law of genetic transmission 277
Mohammedan theories of the inspiration of the Koran 125
Monistic aspects of pantheism 43
Moral attributes of God 150
Holiness 151
Justice 153
Love 155
Mercy 158
Truth 160

Moral nature of man, Original.....241
Morals, Perfect.....105
Mysticism 8

N

Native depravity.....263
Natural inspiration theory 125
Natural theology 3
Naturalistic evolution 46
Difficulties of 49
Fails to account for the origin of the universe..... 49
Fails to account for the origin of life 50
Fails to account for man's body..... 51
Fails to account for the origin of mind..... 52
Naturalistic and theistic evolution 48
Nature a source of theology 6
Nature, Evidence of design in..... 30
Nature and works of God 137
Natures of Christ, Two 286
Necessity of the idea of God..... 20
Nestorians.....294
Nevius, J. L., on demon possession 219
New Testament..... 68
Genuineness 68
Integrity..... 73
Manuscripts 73
Versions..... 74
Credibility..... 76
Nicea, Council of 164
Nicene Creed.....164

O

Officers, Classes of church 437
Ordinances of the church 471
Ontological Argument..... 39
Organization of the church.....423
Origin of our idea of God 17
Origin of Souls 236
Original moral nature and state of man 241
Original righteousness 254
Nature of original righteousness.....254
Proofs of original righteousness.....256
Original sin, Nature of.....263
Sense of original sin.....263
A derangement of the moral nature.....264
A loss of the Holy Spirit 266
A bent to sin a result of depravity 266
Mode of transmission of original sin 272

P

Paley, William 61
Pantheism 43
Definition of 43
Monistic aspects of 43
Defects of 44
Pardon of sin 343
Pastors.....439
Pelagian theory of sin 272
Pentecostal movement.....398
Perseverance Absolute final 336
Person of Christ 283
Personality of the Holy Spirit 179
Polytheism 42
Meaning and origin of..... 42
Different aspects of 42
Possession, Devil 219
Postmillenarianism 519
Pouring as baptism 482
Practical theology defined..... 2
Prayer and divine providence.....211
Predestination.....330
The Calvinistic theory 330
Election 332
Preexistence, Theory of.....236
Premillenarianism 519
Present reformation 463
Present tendency to unity 463
Complete reformation predicted 465
A return to the Scriptures.....467
Rejection of human ecclesiasticism.....468
Presumptive Christian evidences ... 63
Probability of divine revelation..... 63
Necessity of divine revelation 64
Expected divine revelation characterizes the Scriptures ... 66
Probation, original.....257
Probation needed for moral excellence 257
Positive probationary law.....258
No injustice in Adam's probation.....258
Procession of the Holy Spirit 182
Prophecy as Christian evidence 90
Nature of the argument..... 90
Objections to the argument..... 92
Predictions concerning the Jews 94
Predictions concerning Christ..... 97
Protestant divisions 460
Providence, God's work in 205
Natural providence 206

Supernatural providence 209
Pulpit Commentary
the apostasy 452
Punishment, Future 558
Proofs of future punishment 558
Nature of future punishment 560
Place of future punishment 563
Duration of future
punishment 564
Purgatory 515

Q

Qualifications for study of
theology 12

R

Rapid spread of early
Christianity 120
Hindrances to its spread 120
Means employed inadequate 121
Rapidity of its spread
unparalleled 121
Rationalism 9
Realistic mode theory of the
transmission of depravity 274
Reconciliation 298
Sense of reconciliation 298
Redemption, Application of 318
Unconditional benefits of the
atonement 318
Conditional benefits of the
Atonement 322
Reformation of the
Sixteenth Century 459
A partial return to the Bible 459
Human ecclesiasticism
continued 459
Regeneration 346
Ground of the need 348
Nature and effects 350
Present regeneration 351
Baptismal regeneration 351
Religion and theology 1
Remission of sin 343
Repentance 339
Representative mode theory of
the transmission of depravity 275
Resurrection, General 546
Fact of a general resurrection 546
Nature of resurrected bodies 548
The question of identity 549
Resurrection of Christ,
Proof of the 86
Revealed, theology 2
Revelation the source of
theology 7
Righteousness of God 151
Righteousness, Original 254
Robinson, pools for baptizing 482
Roman Catholic traditions 8
Rutter, observance of baptism
in third century 455

S

Sacrifices, Reconciliation in
Old Testament 312
Animal sacrifices typify Christ ...312
Old Testament sacrifices
were expiatory 313
Salvation, Wrong theories of 300
Impossibility of pardon 300
Forgiveness by divine
prerogative 301
Pardon on repentance 301
Sanctification, Entire 369
Sense of the term 369
Need of a second cleansing 370
Distinction between regeneration
and sanctification 374
Proofs of a second cleansing 375
For the converted 375
For the church 377
An entire sanctification 377
Coincident with the Holy Spirit
baptism 377
Two cleansings in types 378
Nature of entire sanctification ...380
Effects of sanctification 381
A definite work 382
Attainable in this life 383
Conditions for sanctification 384
Assurance of sanctification 384
Satan 217
Science, Agreement
of Moses and 194
Scriptures, Inspiration of 124
Second cleansing 370
Second coming of Christ 542
The fact of his coming 542
Nature of his coming 542
Time of his coming 544
Signs of his coming 545
Sheldon, divine omnipresence 146
Evolution 205
Sin, Freedom from 360
Sinlessness of life 360
Sense of the Scriptures 360
Definitive sense of sin 363
Why holy living is denied 364
Objections considered 366
Sin, Origin and nature of 258
The first temptation 258
Man's fall and its effects 260
Nature of sin 261
Sin not a divine method 262
Original sin, Nature of 263
Society, Effects of Chris-

tianity on 117
The gospel promotes universal brotherhood 118
The gospel sanctifies marriage and family relationships 119
Socinian Christology 296
Sonship 353
Children of God 353
Sonship by adoption 353
Sonship by birth 354
Soteriology 283
Soul, Immortality of the 507
Souls, Origin of 236
Theory of preexistence 236
Theory of creationism 237
Theory of traducianism 238
Sources of theology 6
Spencer, Herbert
The Knowledge of God 137
Watch argument 39
Spiritual gifts 391
Sprinkling as baptism 482
Strong, inspiration 128
Realistic mode theory 274
Sully, James, on evolution 196
Supper, the Lord's 490
A Christian ordinance 490
Method of observance 491
Purpose of the Supper 493
Erroneous views 494
Systematic theology defined 2
Systematization of theology 11

T

Teleological Argument for theism 28
Terminology of theology 12
Tertullian, foot-washing 497
Theism 17
Theodicy, Problem of 157
Theology, Definition of 1
Contents 1
Idea of 1
Religion and 1
Main Divisions of 1
Other designating terms used with 2
Uses of term as to extent 3
Exegetical 1
Historical 1
Systematic 2
Practical 2
Natural 2
Revealed 2
Dogmatic 2
Biblical 2
Importance of 3
Sources of 6
Method of 10
Qualifications for the study of ... 12
Theology proper 137
Tongues, Gift of 394
Nature of New Testament glossolalia 394
Purpose of speaking in tongues 396
Postapostolic speaking in tongues 398
Not evidence of Holy Spirit baptism 399
Proper attitude toward tongues 402
Total depravity 266
Tyndall on matter 50
Traducianism, Theory of 238
Transmission of depravity, Mode of the 272
Transubstantiation 494
Tribulation, No great 537
Trichotomy, Theory of 233
Trine immersion 483
Trinity, Divine 162
Biblical elements of the doctrine 162
The doctrine in early church symbols 163
The doctrine stated 166
Mystery of the Trinity 167
Bible proofs of the Trinity 168

U

Unconditional benefits of the atonement 318
Individual existence 318
Possibility of universal salvation 319
Salvation for those dying in infancy 319
Power requisite for probation ... 320
Unity of the human race 224
Antiquity of the race 224
Race distinctions and unity 227
Physiological argument 228
Psychological argument 229
Philological argument 229
Biblical argument 230
Unity of the Scriptures 107
Universality of opportunity for salvation 325
Christ died for all men 326
Salvation is for all men 327
The gospel is to be preached to all 328
God wills the salvation of all 328
Universality of the idea of God 19
Universe as an effect 27

V

Virgin birth of Christ 289

W

Walker, tendency to unity 464
Washing of feet 497
Westminster Confession, predestination 331
Will, Freedom of the 248
Winchell on creation 194
Witness of the Spirit 354
Works of God 185
World, End of the 555
Wright, George Frederick, on evolution theory 200

WINEBRENNER THEOLOGICAL SEMINARY

LIBRARY
WINEBRENNER THEOLOGICAL
SEMINARY

83- 0366

BT
75
.B97
1982
C.1

Byrum, Russell Raymond
Christian theology.

DATE DUE

FACULTY
APR 21
APR 8
MAY 29 1991
MAY 11
OhioLINK

WINEBRENNER THEOLOGICAL
SEMINARY LIBRARY
701 E. Melrose Avenue
Findlay, Ohio 45840

WINEBRENNER SEMINARY
BT75 .B97 1982 wimai
Byrum, Russell Raymon/Christian theology
3 0733 00006 5102
0366
WINEBRENNER SEMINARY LIBRARY

ISBN 0-87162-252-1